Caxtons chronicle

The prologue.

In ſomoche yͭ it is neceſſary to al creatures of Cryſten relygyon / oꝛ of fals relygyon / oꝛ gentyles and machomites to knowe theyꝛ prynces / oꝛ prynces that reygne vpon them / ⁊ them to obeye. So it is comodyous to knowe theyꝛ noble actes ⁊ dedes / ⁊ yͤ cyrcūſtaūce of theyꝛ lyues. Therfoꝛe in yͤ yere of our loꝛde. M.CCCC.lxxxiii. the .xxiii. yere of the reygne of kynge Edwarde yͤ fourthe at ſeynt Albons / ſo yͭ all men may knowe yͤ actes namely of our noble kynges of Englonde / is compyled togyder this boke / ⁊ moꝛeouer is trāſlated out of latyn into Englyſſhe / fro yͤ begynnynge of the woꝛlde / yͤ lygnage of Cryſte fro Adam tyl it be comen to Dauyd / ⁊ fro Dauyd yͤ kynges of Iſraell ⁊ of Iewes / yͤ hye byſſhops in theyꝛ dayes wͭ yͤ Iudges ⁊ prophetes. The .iiii. pꝛincypall realmes of the woꝛlde (yͭ is to ſaye) Babylon Perces / Grece / ⁊ Rome / ⁊ all yͤ emperours of Rome / oꝛ Popes / by oꝛdꝛe ⁊ theyꝛ names / ⁊ many a notable fader / wͭ certayne of theyꝛ actes / as moꝛe playly enſueth. And here ben reherſed yͤ names of auctours yͭ trāſlated theſe cronycles ſpecyally. Gelfraye Mūmoth monke in his boke of Brute / ſeynt Bede in yͤ actes of englonde. Item Bede in his boke of tymes Gyldas in yͤ actes of Brytayne. Wyllyā of Malmeſbury mōke in yͤ actes of kynges of Englonde ⁊ byſſhops. Calfridus of yͤ actes of Emperours and byſſhops / ſeynt Auſtyn de ci. dei. Tit⁹ Liui⁹ de geſtis romanoꝝ. Martyn penytēcyary to yͤ pope his cronycles of emperours ⁊ byſſhops / ⁊ namely Theobald⁹ cartuſienſis cōteynynge in his booke yͤ progreſſe of al notable faders / fro yͤ begynnynge of yͤ woꝛlde vnto his tyme / wͭ yͤ notable actes of yͤ ſame.

¶ In this newe tranſlacyon ar conteyned many notable ⁊ merueylous thynges And thoſe ben alledged by auctoryte of many famous clerkes. And yͭ euery man may knowe how theſe cronycles bē oꝛdered / ye ſhall vnderſtande yͭ this boke is deuyded into .vii. partyes. Of the whiche yͤ fyrſt parte conteyneth fro Adā tyll Brute came into Brytayne. The ſecūde parte conteyneth frome Brute came fyrſte into Englōde vnto yͤ cytee of Rome was buylded by Romulus. The .iii. pte cōteyneth ſyth Rome was buylded vnto Cryſt was boꝛne of our lady vyrgyn Mary. The .iiii. from thenſe vnto the comynge of yͤ Saxons into Englonde. The .v. parte frome thens / vnto the comynge of Denes. The .vi. parte frome thens vnto yͤ comynge of the Noꝛmans. The .vii. parte fro yͤ Noꝛmans vnto our tyme / whiche is vnder yͤ reygne of kynge Edwarde yͤ fourth .xxiii. yere / whoſe noble cronycles by cuſtome may not be ſene.

¶ And ſo in euery parte of theſe .vii. partyes ben ſhewed yͤ moſt ⁊ neceſſary actes of all the kynges of Englonde ⁊ theyꝛ names wryten aboue in yͤ margent yͭ euery man maye fynde them ſoone. And afoꝛe yͤ kynges of Englondes actes be wryten / ther is wryte the lygnage of cryſte frome Adam tyll yͭ cryſte was boꝛne of our lady / wͭ the hye byſſhop and iudges yͭ were in that tyme / ⁊ certayne of theyꝛ actes neceſſary tyll it be come wher Cryſt was boꝛne. And after yͭ Cryſt was boꝛne ⁊ Peter was pope of Rome is ſhewed by oꝛder yͤ names of all yͤ popes ⁊ emperours of Rome afoꝛe ⁊ after / with certayne of theyꝛ actes breuyately / ⁊ many other dyuers thynges / ⁊ merueyles ī thoſe menes dayes fallynge. And it is ſhewed euery thynge ī his place how many yere it fell after the begynnynge of the woꝛlde / ⁊ how longe afoꝛe yͭ Cryſt was boꝛne. And whan yͭ I come to Cryſt was boꝛne then it is wryten how longe ony thynge fel after the Natyuyte of cryſt. And this is yͤ oꝛdꝛe of this boke / ⁊ of thynges ſpoke of

AND as to men deſyrynge to haue a very knowlege of theſe Cronycles or of ony other it is neceſſary to knowe .vi. thynges. ¶ The fyrſte is yͤ ſtates of thynges/ ⁊ thoſe be two. One is frõ yͤ begynnynge of yͤ worlde vnto Cryſte/ yͤ whiche is called the ſtate of Deuiacion. ¶ The ſecũde is from Cryſt to yͤ ende of the worlde/ yͤ whiche is called the ſtate of Reconſiliacyon. ¶ The ſecũde thynge is the dyuyſyon of tymes/ ⁊ thoſe ben thre. One is afore yͤ lawe of Moyſes/ and another is vnder the lawe of Moyſes/ another is vnder yͤ lawe of grace after criſt deyed. ¶ The thyrde is yͤ gouernynge of kyngdoms. And as for yͤ ye muſt knowe that though there were foure pryncypall kyngdomes/ that is to ſaye/ of Babylon of Perſees/ of Grekes/ ⁊ Romaynes. Neuertheleſſe as to yͤ cours of yͤ worlde/ ⁊ yͤ ordre of holy ſcrypture the fyrſte gouernynge was vnder faders frõ Adam vnto Moyſes. The ſecunde vnder Judges frõ Moyſes vnto Saul. The thyrde vnder kynges from Saul vnto Zorobabell. The fourth vnder byſſhops/ frõ Zorobabell vnto Cryſt. ¶ The fourth is yͤ dyuerſyte of lawes/ and thoſe were fyue. The fyrſte was yͤ lawe of nature/ ⁊ yͤ was comyn to all men. The ſecunde is yͤ lawe of cuſtome of Gentyles whan yͤ vnder kynge Nyno begã yͤ people to worſhyp fals goddes. The thyrde is vnder yͤ lawe wryten roſe yͤ lawe of Jewes whan Circumcyſyon deuyded yͤ Jewes from other people. The fourth is vnder Cryſt roſe yͤ lawe of cryſten men/ whan feyth ⁊ grace of the ſacramentes enfourmed yͤ lyfe of men. The ſyxth vnder Machomet roſe yͤ lawe of Saraſyns and Turkes. ¶ The fyfthe is yͤ nobleneſſe or vnnobleneſſe in dedes. ¶ And as to theſe/ it is to knowe yͤ .vii. perſones ben redde/ of whome the dedes many tymes are hadde in mynde in hyſtoryes. That is to wytte/ of a prynce in his realme/ of a knyghte in batayle/ of a Judge in his place/ of a byſſhopp in the clergy/ of a polytyke man in the people/ of an huſbande man in the houſe/ and of an abbot in his chyrche. And of theſe are wryten many tymes/ the laudes of good men/ ⁊ the punyſſhementes of yͤ curſed men. ¶ The ſyxth is the true countynge of the yeres. And to that/ it is to be knowe that there were .viii. maner of nombrynge or countynge of the yeres. Thre after the Hebrewes. Thre after the Grekes. One of the Romayns. And one now is after the cryſten men. The Hebrewes thre maner of wyſe begynneth theyr yere. After the Hebrewes there is the yere vſuall begynnynge at January/ the whiche they vſe in couenaũtes ⁊ bargẽs makynge. And yͤ yere leyfull begynnynge at Marche yͤ whiche they vſe in theyr cerymonyes. And the yere Emergens frome May begynnynge whan they were frome Egypt they vſe in theyr cronycles ⁊ calculacyons. ¶ The Grekes nombreth theyr yeres thre maner of wyſe. Fyrſte to yͤ glorye and Joye of theyr vyctory counteth theyr yeres frome yͤ deſtruccyon of Troy The fyrſte/ the ſecunde/ the thyrde/ ⁊ the fourth. ⁊c. ¶ Thenne after the chyualry began at the hyll of Olympus they notyfyed yͤ yeres after yͤ ſame Olimpiadum. And what Olimpiades is ye ſhall knowe after in the boke. The thyrde whan they began to haue lordeſhyppe of all the worlde they notyfyed theyr yeres theſe maner of wyſe. In yͤ yere of yͤ reygne of Grekes the .iiii. the .x. the .xv. ⁊c. as it is open in the boke of Machabeorũ. ¶ Then after yͤ Romayns gouernynge yͤ worlde counted and nombred theyr yeres (ab vrbe cõdita) ¶ The laſte of all Cryſten men coũteth theyr yeres frõ the incarnacyõ of Cryſt. And bycauſe we ben Cryſten men

desunt aliqua —

, he trowed ꝥ he had ſeen a wylde beeſt/ ⁊ ſayd to his mayſter ꝥ he ſholde ſhote ⁊ ſo he ſlewe Cayn. wherfoꝛe foꝛ anger he ſlewe ꝥ chylde alſo. And it is to be knowen that all craftes oꝛ ſcyences lyberall/ oꝛ hāde craftes/ oꝛ of phyſyke ſeruynge to ꝥ curyoſyte of men are redde ꝥ they were foūden in the chyldꝛen of Lameth. And foꝛ they dꝛadde the perylle to come of ꝥ flood ⁊ of ꝥ fyꝛe. Therfoꝛe Tuball graued ꝥ ſame craftes in .ii. pylers. The one was of marbyl ⁊ ꝥ other of tyle oꝛ brycke. Tubal foūde fyꝛſte ꝥ crafte to worke golde ⁊ ſyluer ⁊ yꝛō. And was ꝥ fyꝛſt grauer ꝥ euer was. ¶ Jabe foūde fyꝛſt Tētoꝛia foꝛ ſhepperdes/ and pauylyons foꝛ other men. ¶ Juball foūde fyꝛſt ꝥ craft to playe vpō an harpe ⁊ oꝛgās/ ⁊ other muſycal inſtrumentes he vſed. ¶ Noema founde fyꝛſt ꝥ crafte foꝛ to weue lynnen ⁊ wollen cloth/ and to dꝛawe thꝛede of woll ⁊ flexe. And afoꝛe that tyme ꝥ people vſed ꝥ ſkynnes of beſtes foꝛ theyꝛ clothes.

¶ Anno mūdi. M. vi. C. xiii. Et ante xp̄i natiuitatē. iii. M. v. C. lviii.

The ſhyp of Noe had in length .iii. hondꝛed cubytes/ in bꝛede .L. in altytude .xxx. (Vide plura. geñ. vi.) ¶ Knowe ye after doctours/ ꝥ a couenyent peyne this tyme was oꝛdeyned to ꝥ worlde. Foꝛ the lechery haboūded ꝥ which defouled mēnes bodyes. And there by water ꝥ erth was waſſhed ⁊ clenſed/ in ſygne of ꝥ pꝛomyſe ꝥ god made to mā ꝥ there ſholde neuer be ſuche a flood agayne. ¶ And the Rayne bowe hathe two pꝛyncypall coloures ꝥ whiche repꝛeſent ꝥ two Judgementes. The water coloure repꝛeſenteth the flood ꝥ is paſſed. The fyꝛe colour betokeneth ꝥ Judgement to come ⁊ fyꝛe by the whiche we certaynly abyde in ꝥ ende of this worlde bycauſe couetyſe ſhal haboūde by fyꝛe it ſhalbe bꝛente. As golde ⁊ ſyluer by the fyꝛe is wonte to be clenſed.

¶ Here begynneth the ſecunde aege of the worlde duryinge to Abꝛaham.

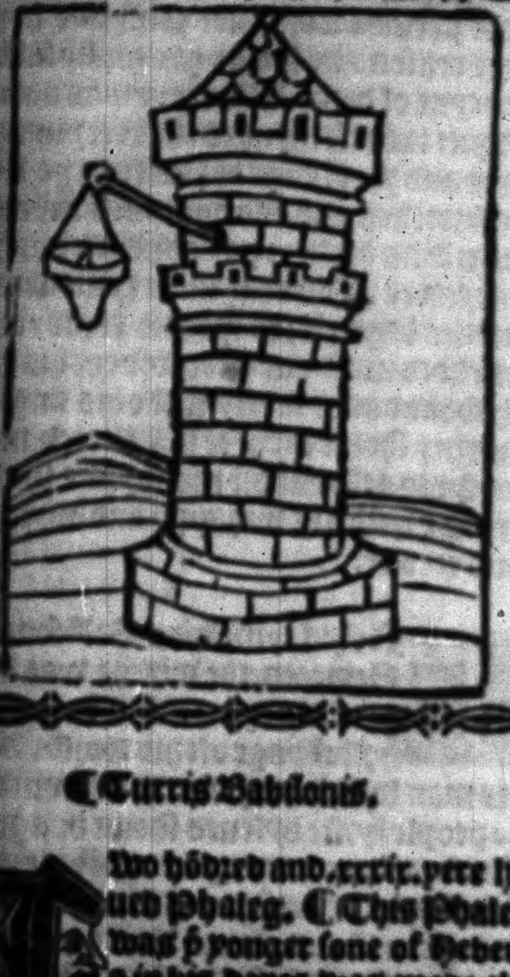
This Noe was a ryghtwyſe man ⁊ foūde grace ayenſt god. Whan Noe was .v. hondꝛed yere of aege he had goten Cham/ Sem/ ⁊ Japhet. That tyme by the cōmaūdement of god he began to make a ſhyp. And he made it perfyte in an hondꝛed yere. And ꝥ .C. yere complete oure loꝛde appered to hym ⁊ cōmaunded that he wᵗ his wyfe ⁊ his chyldꝛen ⁊ ꝥ wyues of them ſholde entre the ſhyppe wᵗ all maner of beeſtes/ ⁊ al maner of foules alſo. ⁊c. And anone ꝥ flood came ⁊ ſtode aboue all hylles .xv. cubytes (Vide pla geneſi. vii.) ¶ After ꝥ floode a greate dꝛonkēneſſe betyde vnto Noe. And thꝛoughe occaſyon of that dꝛonkēneſſe he bleſſyd his two ſones. Sem ⁊ Japhet/ foꝛ ꝥ faders honour ꝥ they had to hym/ ⁊ foꝛ ꝥ honeſt ſhame that they couered mekely theyꝛ faders mebꝛes whā he was ſlepynge. And his ſone Cham foꝛ his ſcoꝛnynge ⁊ his vnreuerēce he curſed. ¶ And hereafter ſeyt Auſtyn is made ꝥ fyꝛſte mencyon of bondage and of nobleneſſe cōtrary to it. Foꝛ Noe ſayd ꝥ Cham ſholde be ſeruaunt in boundage to Sem ⁊ Japhet foꝛ his vnreuerēce. Neuertheles ye ſhall not trowe ꝥ all that deſcended of Cham were vnnoble men and of no power. For they began fyrſt to be myghty men of yͤ erth. As it is open of Nemroth ⁊ yͤ kynge of Chanaan and Aſcorum. Nor alſo of Sem ⁊ Japhet were vertuous ⁊ noble men/ whā almoſt euerychone fell to the cryme of ydolatry/ and were ofte tymes oppreſſed of other men. But this bleſſynge ⁊ curſynge hath a reſpecte to vertu and vyce/ for the whiche a man is called truely a noble man or an vnnoble man. For he that is vertuous is a noble/ and he that is vnuertuous is not noble ¶ The ſame maner of wyſe tho that foloweth the feythe of Abraham rather were called his chyldren than the Jewes/ the whiche carnally deſcended frome hym. Neuertheleſſe they hadde a ſpyrytuall pryuylege of god/ for the faders merytes ⁊ his bleſſȳge. And of theſe iii. ſones of Noe he beynge a lyue after yͤ Iſtory of Phyloſ were borne. xxiiii. M. and. vii. C. men wout womē ⁊ chyldren. And they hadde on them thre Prynces/ Nemroth/ Jectan/ and Suphen.

¶ Anno mundi. ii. M. ii. C. xiii. Et ante criſti natiuitatem. ii. M. vi. C. lvii.

SEm ſone to Noe yͤ. ii. yere after yͤ flood gate Arphaxat ⁊ other whyles he is called Melchyſedech. The whiche after yͤ flood made yͤ cytee of Sale ⁊ now is called Jeruſalē. ¶ Cham his broder obteyned Affrycam ⁊ gate ſones twayne. Chus and Meſraym. And theſe two gate ſones and doughters/ and many a regyon. They enhabyted vnknowen to vs in occydentall ynde. ¶ Japhet was broder vnto Cham/ and was bleſſed of his fader/ and this Japhet had. vii. ſones/ as Gomor/ Magog/ Maday/ Janam/ Tuball/ Moſog/ and Iras. And theſe. vii. gate ſones and doughters/ and of theym came many a regyon. Vide plura Geneſis. xv) ¶ Arphaxat ſone to Sem lyued CCCC. and. xxx. yere. And gate Elam/ Aſſur/ Lude/ and Aram/ and they gate many chyldren (vt pꝫ Geneſis). ¶ This Aſſur bycauſe he wolde not rebell ayenſt god in the edyfyenge of the toure of Babylon/ as Nemroth dyd/ therfore he was dryuen vnto the londe of Senraas lōde/ whiche was ryght ſtraunge to hym/ and was not before enhabyted. The whiche was called after his name Aſſuria. And there he edyfyed a Cytee afterwarde named Niniue/ the whiche was the Metropolytane of all the kyngedome of Aſſurioruꝫ. ¶ Thus ſone to Cham was fader to Nemroth. This Nemroth was a gyaūt of ten cubytes longe. And he beganne to be myghty in the worlde/ and he is called a boyſtous hunter before god. This man beganne that wretched vyce of couetouſneſſe by his tyranny/ with the whiche vyce euermore after this worlde is fulfylled And the pryncypalleſt kyngedome that he hadde was Babylon. And he had Archade/ Edyſſa/ Selencia/ and the londe of Sennaar. ¶ Sale ſone to Arphaxat lyued. cccc. ⁊. xxxiii. yeres. And of hȳ in ſcrypture is nothynge wryten/ but that Moyſes nombred hym in the lyne that cometh of Cryſte. This Sale gate a ſone yͭ was named Heber. The whiche after the Hebrewes hadde the ſpyryte of prophecye. And of this Heber the Hebrewes ben named. For the Hebrewes tōgue bode alone in his houſe in the confuſyon of yͤ langage And that language was called mannes language/ the whiche euery man vſed afore the toure of Babylon was buylded. ¶ This Heber hadde two ſones and one was called Jectan through enſample of Nemroth deſcendynge fro Cham toke yͤ prynceſhode vpon the chyldren of Sem. And he had. xiii. ſones. ¶ But theſe people after Jerome are not knowen of vs.

for ferueſſe of the countre / or mutacyon and chaungynge of the people / or els of ſome other maner cauſe.

¶ Anno mundi.ii.M.vi.C.xliii. Et ante xpi natiuitatē.ii.M.v.C.lvi.



¶ Turris Babilonis.

Two hōdred and.xxxix. yere lyued Phaleg. ¶ This Phaleg was yͤ yonger ſone of Heber / & in his dayes was made the confuſyon of Langages. For in his houſe abode yͤ olde tōge alone / & yͭ was Hebrewe. Wherfore after ſeyne Auſtyn / in hȳ appered a greate ſtedfaſtneſſe of ryghtwyſenes / for this houſe was fre of that peyne / as not cōſentynge to yͤ buyldynge of yͤ toure (Et ſcd; aug.) ther was lxxii. generacyons / & ſo there were.lxxii. langages. ¶ Jactan broder to Phaleg of Sem / Nemroth prynce of Cham / Subphen of Japhet / theſe thre prynces with theyr people gadered them togyder in yͤ felde of Sennaar / dredynge the flood to come agayne ſayd. Let vs buylde a tour yͭ ſhall reche to heuen. ꝛc. Ge.xii. Our lorde ſeynge yͤ folyſſhnes of the people confounded theyr tongues for theyr ſynnes. In ſomoche yͭ none vnderſtode other / & ſo they were dyſperpeled throughe all the worlde. Of yͤ malyce of this Nemroth bokes ben wryten full. And after yͤ cōfuſyō of yͤ langage he went to yͤ lande of Perſe & there he taughte them to adoure yͤ fyre as god. He lefte his ſone Belus in Babylon / whiche ſucceded after hym. And ſoo his progeny optayned yͤ realme after many yeres. In this tyme began many kȳgdomes / & yͤ moſte of all thoſe kyngdomes was yͤ kyngdome of Scitay. But there were ſo many rude people in it yͭ the cyte was not worſhypped / yet was it a myghty regyon of dyſtaunce. And aboute this tyme began the kyngedome of Egypte / yͤ whiche was chaūged many tymes with dyuers alteracyons. And alſo it is ſpokē of many tymes in ſcrypture. ¶ Nobylyte or gentylmen began aboute this ſayde tyme. And this nobleneſſe or gentylmen was ordeyned for many cauſes. ¶ The.i. cauſe was neceſſyte / for whan mankynd grewe ſore / and men were prompte and redy to do hurte and domage to other / it was very neceſſary to withſtāde yͤ great malyce of the curſed and wycked people agaynſt good and ryghtwyſe men. Ther of a man is called gentylman / or a noble man / as before other in vertues notable. Wherof ſeynt Jerom ſayth. J ſe nothȳg elles in nobleſſe / or in gentylmen / but yͭ they are bounden in a certayne neceſſyte that they ſhall not recede frō the vertue / and the gentyleneſſe of theyr noble aunceſtours. ¶ The ſecūde was yͤ dyuers worſhyppȳg of yͤ people / for no man worſhyp then/ but as it is naturall reaſon gaue. ⁊ they knewe not veryly what they ſholde worſhyp/ for they were ſo dull of wyt that they coude pōdre no great thynge/ but yͭ was publyſſhed by yͤ comȳ people. Wherfore it was expedyent for theyr peas to be kepte yͭ they ſhold haue prynces of noble byrth. ¶ The thyrde cauſe procedeth of ſome ſynguler ſtrength. Many tymes yͤ comynalte were greued thrugh enmyes comȳge vpon them. And then they ſayde yͭ who ſomeuer wolde preſerue them from theſe perylls he ſholde haue yͤ ryght of noblenesse for hym ⁊ for his heyres for euermore. And in this maner of wyſe many ar redde to be noble men. ¶ The fourth cauſe of noblenesse was haboundaūce of godes. Somtyme yͤ people were holden wͭ great penury of mete ⁊ drynke. And then they toke thē ⁊ theyrs to ſome ryche man yͭ thrugh yͤ couenaūte they ſhold tempre yͤ great ſtreytnes of theyr hongre/ ⁊ after yͭ they ſholde knowe hym as theyr lorde ⁊ a noble man. Alſo there be foūde certayne noble men by yͤ prouyſyō of god/ though they were but fewe/ yet ſome abode ī vertu/ as Dauyd and ſome fayled anone/ as Saul ⁊ Jeroboam. And it is redde yͭ many were noble men by tyranny. Of yͤ whiche ſome were dyſtroyed anone. And ſome abode in ſtablenes/ as paynyms might.

¶ Anno mundi.ii.M.ix.C.x.v. Et ante xpi natiuitatē.ii.M.ii.C.lxxxiiii.

Saruk lyneally deſcēded from our forefader Adam to Abrahā. And Nachor was his ſone/ and he lyued an.C and.xlviii.yere. ¶ And aboute this tyme ydolatrye began to encreace myghtely/ ⁊ yf ye reuolue ⁊ loke the hyſtoryes/ ye ſhal fynde/ that thre thynges pryncypally dyd brynge mē to the ſynne of ydolatry/ yͭ is to vnderſtande/ the affeccyō whiche they had to deed men. Pryde and flaterynge agaynſt theyr prynces. And the dylygence of artyfycers and crafty men about ſculptures or grauynges. Wycked fendes thē entred into ydolles and gaue anſweres to the people. And theſe wycked ſpyrytes confyrmed yͤ errour of the people myghtely. In ſomoche that what ſomeuer maner of perſone wolde not confyrme hym to the reaſon/ he ſholde greuouſly ſuffer the peyne of dethe. Alſo there was added and put to theſe thynges the deceyuynge laude and prayſynge of Poetes/ the whiche wretches and alſo dampned mē into heuen with al theyr gay aourned wrytȳges exalted. And that ſame tyme whan deuylles began for to ſpeke ſo fayre/ and ſo meke to man/ our good lorde of his grete haboundaunt mercy ſende his angels that they ſholde ſpeke to his elected men inuyſybly/ leſt that all mankynde ſholde peryſſhe with his vnhappy and myſcheuous errour.

IN this tyme was Belꝰ ſone to Nemroth/ the whiche was kynge of Babylon. And he was yͤ fyrſte kynge of this world. And this man was he whome thē errour of the people fyrſte byleued ſholde be a god/ wherfore there were dyuers people that named hym dyuerſly/ for ſome called hȳ Bell/ ſome Baall/ ſome Baalym/ ſome Beelphagor/ and ſome Belſabub. And this vnhappy errour ſtode in mankynde more than two thouſande yere. ¶ Ninus ſone to Belus the ſecunde kynge of Babilō ⁊ of Aſſurioꝝ reygned.lii.yere/ ⁊ this Ninus deſyred for to haue lordſhyp ⁊ worſhyp. And to that entēt yͭ he myght be lorde of all the coūtrees aboute hym/ he gaue batayll to all that dwelled aboute hym. And bycauſe that tyme yͤ people were rude and had not yͤ connynge of ſyght our loꝛde. Judas gate Phares and Phares Eſron/ ⁊ of theſe men lytell is hadde in ſcrypture/ but Math reherſeth them. ¶ Bel' in this Phares dayes was kȳg of Aſſurioꝛ/ oꝛ of Babylon/ ⁊ he was ẏ.x. kynge/ vnder whom Yſaac deceſſed. Athlas ẏ great aſtronomyer was this tyme ẏ whiche is lykened to bere vp heuen on his ſholders/ bycauſe of his knowynge in ſterres. ¶ Sarapis was ẏ.iii. kȳge of Argiuoꝛ/ oꝛ of Grecoꝛū/ ⁊ this Sarapis was otherwyſe called Apis/ ⁊ he came in to Egypt with a myghty nauy/ ⁊ ther deceſſed/ ⁊ was made of ẏ blynde gentyles the Egypcyens ẏ greateſt god ymonge thē. And ẏ tyme began a merueylous ſuperſtycyon in ydolatry of a calfe of two colours/ whiche they called Apem/ ⁊ ẏ calfe deyed/ ẏ deuylles procured a lyke calfe to that foꝛ to be made ẏ they myght deceyue the rude people. And after ẏ the chyldꝛen of Iſraell dyd ſo in lyke wyſe (de ps) And what thynge coude be moꝛe wretched/ oꝛ lewde in man hauynge reaſon. ¶ Arg' was the.iiii. kynge of Grekes/ after who the ẏ noble cytee of Arg' toke his name. Cycrophes edyfyed Athenes in Grece/ ⁊ this cytee was ẏ nouryſher of lyberall ſcyence/ and of many phyloſophers/ yet they were deceyued by deuylles/ ⁊ great ſuperſtitiō ī ẏ cytee was made (vide aug'. ẏ mirabili fabulā repeties) ¶ Omogires was ẏ fyꝛſte mā ẏ put oxen to ẏ ploughe. ¶ Belus this tyme was kynge of Babylon/ ⁊ he was the.x. kynge of ẏ regyon/ ⁊ vnder hym deyed Yſaac. ¶ Pharao was kȳge of Egypte whiche receyued Joſeph ⁊ exalted hym foꝛ the interpꝛetacōn of his dꝛemes (vide iſtā pulcherrimaq; hiſtoriā gen. xlii.) ⁊c. ¶ Amithus was ẏ.xii. kynge of Babylon/ vnder whome deyed Joſeph a bleſſyd man in chaſtyte. ¶ Pharao Omnophis aboute Eſroms dayes was kȳge of Egypte/ ⁊ this Pharao knewe not Joſeph ne none of his kynred/ ⁊ he cōmaunded the chyldꝛen of Iſraell to be dꝛowned/ as it is had (Exodi.i.) ¶ Ye clerkes may loke that boke/ and we lay folke wyll loke in Cronycles/ but aboute this tyme the ſtoꝛy of Exodi began.

¶ Anno mūdi.iii. M.v.C.xliiii. Et ante xpi natiuitatē. M.v.C.lx.

ARam ſone to Eſrom of the lyne of Cryſt was about this tyme/ ⁊ he gate Amynadab/ ⁊ Naaſon/ of thes men is lytel wrytten in ſcrypture/ ⁊ therfoꝛe I procede to other. ¶ Job ẏ holy mā enſāple of all pacyence this tyme was boꝛne of ẏ lyne of Nachoꝛ bꝛoder to Abꝛaham/ ⁊ he lyued many yeres/ ⁊ after ẏ god had aſſayed hym in his pacience he lyued an.C.⁊ xl. yere (ẏ aug. gre. ⁊ .lix) Moyſes about this tyme was boꝛne/ ⁊ the chyldꝛen of Iſraell were in greate perplexyte/ ⁊ Moyſes was put in the water to be dꝛowned. And aboute this tyme was boꝛne Safr' was ẏ.xiiii. kynge of Babylō/ ⁊ Moyſes was boꝛne vnder hym in Egypte. ¶ Cycrops was ẏ fyꝛſt kynge of Athenes. And after ſeynt Auſtyn the Grekes wꝛote many leſynges in theyꝛ ſtoꝛyes ẏ tyme/ foꝛ of a lytell thynge they make a great fame foꝛ to ſhewe theyꝛ cōnynge/ foꝛ ther was ẏ vnyuerſyte of Grekes.

¶ Anno mundi.iii. M.vi.C.lxxviii. Et ante xpi natiuitatē. M.v.C.xl.

THis tyme was Amynadab of Cryſtes lyne ſone to Aram/ whiche after Moyſes wt a full fayth entred in to ẏ reed ſee/ ⁊ dꝛadde not whan many a hondꝛed were ferde leſt they ſholde be dꝛowned And therfoꝛe he deſerued to bꝛynge foꝛth ẏ kynges lygnage/ of whō deſcēded oure loꝛde Jhū cryſt. Moyſes was ẏ fyꝛſt iuge of Iſraell ÿ euer was/ ⁊ he was Iudge. xl. yere. This Moyſes was ÿ moſte excellent prophete ÿ euer god made/ ⁊ ÿ moſt notable wryter of ſtoryes/ ⁊ of his lyuynge heuen ⁊ erthe ſpeketh. For he ſawe oure lorde face to face/ whiche here I ſcrypture was none founde but he and Poule the apoſtle. ¶ Aron ÿ fyrſt byſſhop lyued a. C. xxiii. yere/ this Aron was called of god in to the dygnyte of ÿ hye preeſt/ or of a byſſhop ⁊ was ordeyned ÿ eternall teſtamẽt to hym ſelfe ⁊ them ÿ came after hym/ for ÿ great power of preſthede. Whã he was a. C. xxiii. yere of age he dyed/ ⁊ was buryed in the hyll of Hor. And his ſone Heleazar⁹ ſucceded in ÿ byſſhopryche. ¶ Pharao Boccaris this tyme was kynge of Egypte/ ⁊ this Pharao wolde not here the cõmaundement of god/ ne delyuer ÿ chyldren of Iſraell/ wherfore he was punyſſhed wt. x. plages (vt pz exo) And after he wt al his hoſt were drowned in ÿ rede ſee. ¶ Naſon ſone to Amynadab was prynce of ÿ trybe of Iuda in ÿ deſerte/ ⁊ aboute this tyme the lawe of god was gyuẽ in ÿ hyll of Synay/ and the boke of Leuitici was wryten/ ⁊ another boke was called Numerũ/ ⁊ ÿ tabernacle was ordeyned. The boke of Deuteronomium was made. Balaam was prophete and was ſlayne.

¶ Anno mũdi. iii. M. vii. C. xxxv. Et ante xpi natiuitatẽ. M. iiii. C. lxxiiii.

SAlmon of the lygne of cryſt was aboute this tyme/ ⁊ had a wyfe that hyght Raab. Moyſes aboute this tyme deceſſed/ ÿ water of flome Iordan was dryed/ Ierycho was take/ ÿ ſonne ſtode in ÿ fyrmament vnmeuable (Hiſtoria li. Ioſue ⁊ Iudicũ) Ioſue ſecõde Iudge of Iſraell was a myghty mã i batayll/ ⁊ ÿ fyrſt in deſerte/ he ouercame Amalech ⁊ after Moyſes of god he was ordeyned Iudge of Iſraell/ of whome the batayles ÿ workes/ ⁊ the relygyous lyfe/ ye maye ſe in the boke of Ioſue wryten. ¶ Eleazar was the ſecõde byſſhop. And he ⁊ Ioſue deuyded the lande of promyſſyõ to ÿ chyldren of Iſraell. Of hym deſceded almoſt all ÿ byſſhoppes vnto Cryſt. ¶ Othoniel of ÿ trybe of Iuda was ÿ. iii. Iudge. And this mã delyuered ÿ chyldrẽ of Iſraell by batayll from ÿ realme of Meſopotomie. This mã toke Axam to his wyfe/ ÿ whiche aſked ÿ vale landes/ aboue ⁊ beneth of her fader Caleph (vt pz iudiciũ. i.) ¶ Aoth was the. iiii. Iudge of Iſraell. This mã ſubdued Eglon ÿ kynge of Moab/ ⁊ delyuered ÿ chyldrẽ of Iſrael. This was a myghty mã in batayll/ ⁊ he uſed ÿ one aſwell as ÿ other for his ryght hãde. Aboute this tyme ÿ kynge of Ytaly begã ⁊ many tymes theyr names be chaũged of ÿ whiche progeny ÿ romaynes ſhewe more clerely. ¶ Ianus was ÿ fyrſt kynge in Ytaly/ ⁊ afterwarde of ÿ rude gentyles he was worſhypped as god/ ſaynge hym to haue two faces. For they worſhypped his feeſt in ÿ begynnynge of ÿ yere/ as he were ÿ ende of ÿ laſt yere/ ⁊ ÿ begynnynge of the fyrſt. And of hym ÿ moneth of Ianuary hathe his name. ¶ Amictus was ÿ. viii. kynge of Babylon vnder whome Ioſue deceſſed.

¶ Anno mũdi. iii. M. vii. C. lxxv. Et ante xpi natiuitatẽ. M. iiii. C. xxiiii.

BOos ſone to Salmon of the lyne of Cryſte was this tyme/ but of hym is lytell wryten/ ſaue that Mathew nombred hym in the genealogye. As doctours ſaye/ there was made ſkyppynge of names betwyxt Boos ⁊ Obeth. For at the leſt betwyxt thẽ were. ii. C. lxxii. yere. The whiche tyme to one man maye not be referred/ and therfore here many thyn ges is ſpoken or I come to ẏ lyne of criſt agayne (Nicholaꝰ de ly. ſt q̄ ſūt. iij. boos buꝰ poſt aliū) ¶ Sāgar was ẏ. v. iudge of Iſraell / but he lyued no yeres. ¶ Delbora was ẏ. vi. iudg / this Delbora was a woman / ⁊ for ẏ grace of her ꝓphecy was geuē to her honoure ẏ ſhe iudged Iſrael. She by ẏ cōmaūdemēt of god called Barach ẏ he ſholde go fyght wt ẏ enmyes of Iſraell / ⁊ ẏ chyldren of Iſrael gate ẏ victory agaynſt Iabyn ẏ kynge of Chanaan and Cyſaram ẏ prynce of his chyualri / ⁊ he deſtroyed them (de prz iudicium. iiij) ¶ Phenies was biſſhop / ⁊ this Phenies yet a yōge mā for goddes ſake ſlewe many lecherous men / and therfore our lorde was pleaſed wt hym. ¶ Saturnꝰ this tyme was kynge of ytaly ⁊ he was ẏ ſecunde kynge there / this Saturnꝰ is ſayd / to come fro ẏ londe of Cretens in to ytaly / who by ydolatrie through a meruaylous kyndenes they ſayd he was no man but a god. And yet they ſayd that he reygned vpon thē as theyr kynge. And he taught them to donge theyr feldes. And of Saturnus ẏ Romayns were called Saturnian. ¶ Picus was ſone to Saturnus ⁊ or he was kynge in ytaly / he was kynge in Laurētum / and after his deceſſe of ẏ Gentyles was worſhypped for a god.

¶ Anno mūdi. iij. M. viij. C. lxxv. Et ante xp̄i natiuitatē. M. CCC. xliiij.

Of Gedeō ẏ. vij. iudge of Iſraell was this tyme / this Gedeon ſubdued. iiij. kynges. Oreb / zebee / zeb / ⁊ Salmana. And he ſubdued Madean to Iſraell. (Vide plura Iudicū. vi. vij. ⁊. viij.

Bocci was byſſhop in Iſraell then ¶ Abimalech ẏ. viij. iuge in Iſraell was naturall ſone to Gedeon. And he was not called of god / but malycyouſly take on hym ẏ preeſthode of Iſraell. And he ſlewe. lxx. of his bredren / wherfore he ended his lyfe myſcheuouſly (de prz iudicū) ¶ Tola was ẏ. ix. iudg of Iſrael. And this man guyded hym after ẏ olde gouernaūce of iudges by ẏ maner of dyreccyō ⁊ coūſell more than by dominacōn. ¶ Bocci was byſſhop about this tyme but of hȳ lytell is wryten. ¶ Iay ẏ. x. iudge of Iſrael had. xxx. ſones / whome he made prynces of. xxx. cytees. And bycauſe there were good mē ⁊ ruled to the pleaſure of god Therfore in the dayes of thoſe two men. Iſraell drewe to our lorde. And therfore al thȳge came ⁊ was in ꝓſperite ⁊ welth.

Fanus was the. iiij. kynge of ytaly ⁊ he was kynge of Laurētum both. Latinus was kynge in ytaly after Fanꝰ and of this Latinus was called ẏ kyngdom of Latinoꝝ. And Carmētes doughter of Euander founde fyrſt latyn letters. ¶ Tauranꝰ about this tyme was kyng of Babylon or of Aſſiriorum / ⁊ vnder this man Troy was deſtroyed fyrſte. The occaſyon of the batayle of Troy began for a lytell thynge. In ſo moche as Lamydon kynge of Troy receyued not Hercules ⁊ Iaſon with due honoure as they ſholde haue ben receyued / and of ſo lytell a treſpace how many harmes and hurtes grewe. ¶ Sibylla delphica afore the batayle of Troye prophecyed how a chylde ſholde be borne of a vyrgyn without a mānes ſeed. ¶ Lamydō kynge of Troy was ſlayne / and his doughter Exiona was taken into Grekes londe For ẏ whiche folowed myghty batayle and mooſt ferdefull myſcheues. (vyde hyſtoriā troianam) Hercules with Iaſon deſtroied Ilion or Troy ẏ whiche anone after was buylded of Priamus ſone to Lamydō. This Hercules dyde many merueylouꝰ thynges and many myghty batayles. And infynyte leſynges ben fayned on hym. At the laſt whan he had ouercome moche people he was betrayed by a ſherte yͤ Deyanira his wyfe ſent hym enpoyſoned/ ⁊ for grete payne he brente hymſelfe/ ⁊ afterwarde of yͤ Gentyles was taken for a god.

¶ Circa annū mundi. iii. M. ix. C. lxxv. Et ante xp̄i natiuitatē. M. ii. C. xxiiii.

AFter the deth of Jayr iuge of Iſraell the people of Iſraell added newe ſynnes to theyr olde. And our lorde toke them in to yͤ power of yͤ Philiſtyens and to yͤ chyldren of Amō. xviii. yere and they were gretely oppreſſed/ ⁊ then they cryed to our lorde. ¶ Then Jepte was eſpyred with almyghty god ⁊ faught agaynſt Amon ⁊ ſedycyous people of yͤ hyll of Effraym. And for an vnprudent voyce he ſlewe his owne doughter folyſſhly/ ⁊ dyd ſacryfyce to god wͭ her (Judicū. xi. ⁊. xii) ¶ Ozy this tyme was byſſhop in Iſraell and he was of yͤ ſeed of Aron by the lyne of Eleazari/ yͤ whiche deth/ through yͤ prouyſyon of god yͤ byſſhopryche tourned to the lyne of ytamar aft. C. ⁊. xx. yere/ in yͤ whiche lyne Hely was the fyrſt hygh byſſhop. And Abiathar was yͤ laſt ¶ Ebalſā was iudge in Iſrael. vii. and he was the xii. iudge ⁊ he was named otherwyſe Booz yͤ whiche wedded Ruth. ¶ Abialon yͤ xiii. iudge of Iſraell was iudge. x. yere. And vnder theſe tymes yͤ chyldren of Iſraell were quyete. And therfore none notable thynges were done in theſe dayes. ¶ Abdon. yͤ. xiiii. iudge gouerned in Iſrael. viii. yeres. And about this tyme the hyſtory of Ruth was wryte. ¶ Autamas in this tyme was kyng of Aſſeriū ⁊ Priamꝰ kyng of Troy ſone to Lamedō yͤ buylded his Cyte agayne merueylouſly ſtronger. And began batayle wͭ yͤ Grekes vnto his owne hurte. And he had a ſone was called Hector a lyſfull gētyll ſone by his wyfe Ecuba. This man was faythful ⁊ wyſe ⁊ incōparable of ſtrength ⁊ nobylneſſe. This Priamus had an other ſone yͤ was called Paris yͤ whiche toke a way fro yͤ londe of Grekes Helena wyf to Menelaus yͤ kynge. ¶ Agamenon the kyng broder to Menelaus yͤ leder of all yͤ Grekes hoſte faught agaynſt Troy/ ⁊ at the laſt he wā yͤ cyte falſly/ and to yͤ Grekes mooſt ſhame ⁊ ſclaūder yͤ myght be. For certaynly yͤ myght be called an vnhappy batayl where no man gyueth louynge to yͤ Grekes but euery mā repreueth ſhame

ENeas was kynge in ytaly thre yere. And this Eneas after yͤ Troye was deſtroyed of the Grekes came in to ytaly with. xx. ſhyppes/ ⁊ dyde myghty batayl there. And this man had wedded Priamus doughter Cūſaram. And he was made a god through the errour of the comyn people/ and of this man came Julius ceſar ⁊ Octouianus Auguſtus. ¶ Ulixes an eloquent man amonge all yͤ Grekes after many peryllis on yͤ ſee wēt home to his Penelopem/ yͤ mooſte faythfull and the mooſt chaſt woman yͤ is red of. And the Grekes peryſſhed wretchedly after that they hadde deſtroyed Troye bothe on yͤ water and on yͤ londe as they wente homewarde agayne. ¶ And that was yͤ prynſypal date of theyr wrytynge after that hyſtorye. For they wrote theyr hyſtoryes ⁊ other wrytynges (ſic anno. i. vel ſcdo. ⁊c. poſt Troiam captam.) And yͤ was the thyrde yere of Abden iuge of Iſraell.

¶ Circa Annū mundi. iiii. M. xxv. Et ante xp̄i natiuitatē. M. C. lxxiiii.

OBeth of cryſtes lyne ſone to Booz is rehercED in Mā. ¶ Sampſon yͤ fyfteeth iudge reygned. xx. yere/ this Sampſon was the mooſte ſtrongeſt man that euer was/ ⁊ he delyuered Iſrael from yͤ Philiſtes/ ⁊ for his merueylous ſtrẽgth men trowed he had ben Hercules (⁊ eius mirabilia opera vide iudicũ.xiij.)

¶ Anno mundi.iiij.M.lxxv. Et ante xp̄i natiuitatẽ.M.C.xiiij.

IEſſe ſone to Obeth of the lyne of Cryſt/ otherwyſe called yſay fader to Dauid this tyme lyued a notable man in honeſte. No kyng ne great gouernoure But of hym many tymes is made mencyon in holy ſcrypture. For of hym deſcended cryſt our/ ſauyour. ¶ This tyme Ely was iudge ⁊ byſſhop in Iſrael. The whiche had.ij.ſones Ophni ⁊ phinees/ ⁊ for he corrected them not ſuffycyently he ⁊ they were punyſſhed bothe of our lorde. For they were ſlayne of the Philiſtiens. And Ely fell of his ſete ⁊ brake his necke ¶ This Ely was iudge next after Sampſon/ ⁊ not of yͤ lynage of Arõ/ that was hyghe byſſhop of god electe/ but of ythamar/ yͤ lynage dured an.C.⁊.xx.yere. In yͤ whiche lygnage Ely was fyrſt byſſhop and Abiathar yͤ laſt (Uide plura.i.regũ)

This tyme Saul was kynge I Iſraell after yͤ mayſter in his hyſtoryes/ ⁊ Joſephus in his viij.boke. This Saul was fyrſt kynge in Iſraell/ ⁊ reygned.xx.yere/ yͤ whiche or he was kynge was a good man ⁊ electe of god/ but afterward wretchedly he fayled: ⁊ he was ſlayne ⁊ his thre ſones in yͤ hylles of Gylbop ¶ In the tyme of Saull Samuell was iudge ⁊ prophete in Iſraell/ an holy mã/ ⁊ borne of a barayne moder many a daye And he mynyſtred for oure lorde from a chylde to his age. And was not hyghe byſſhop/ but he iuged Iſrael all yͤ dayes of his lyfe. And was yͤ very prophete of god. Two kynges he enoynted. Saull. fyrſt/ and after Dauyd. This Samuell alone ⁊ Moyſes are redde yͤ they prayed for theyr ennmyes in all yͤ olde Teſtament Of this Samuel ⁊ Saul be dyuers opynyõs ¶ Iſyder ſayth yͤ Samuel ⁊ Saul ruled Iſraell.xl.yere. ¶ And Joſephus in his.viij.boke.⁊ yͤ mayſter in his hyſtoryes ſaye Samuel to be iudge.xij.yere alone. And after hym Saul to reygne.xx.yere. (Plura vide primo regũ).

AScan⁹ yͤ.vij.kyng of ytaly was ſone to Eneas/ ⁊ buylded yͤ Cyte of Albion. And he was called yͤ kynge of Albanoꝝ. This Aſcan⁹ gate Siluius yͤ viij.kynge of ytaly/ the whiche Siluius was fader vnto Brute kynge of Brytayne/ now called Englonde. And I leue of the kynges of ytaly/ for they dyde but lytell noble thynges tyll it be comen to Romul⁹ ⁊ Rem⁹ yͤ Rome buylded. And then ſhal thoſe kynges come agayne/ ⁊ now to procede to yͤ cronycles of Englande for yͤ which namely this boke is made. ¶ And Venys and Padua were buylded about this tyme of the reſydue of the Troyans ¶ Homere the greate poete about this tyme was/ yͤ whiche wrote ⁊ fayned gloryouſly many a leſynge.

¶ Incipit regnum Brytãnie: nunc dicitur Anglia.

¶ Here may ye ſe
how Englonde
fyrſte began
at Albyon.
Albyon.

¶ Fore that I wyll ſpeke of Brute/ it ſhall be ſhewed how the londe of Englonde was fyrſt named Albion/ ⁊ by what encheſon it was ſo named.

Of the noble londe of Sirrie/ there was a royall kynge ⁊ myghty ⁊ a man of great renōme ẏ called was Dyocleſyan ẏ well ⁊ worthely hym gouerned ⁊ ruled through his noble chyualry. So that he cōquered all ẏ londes about hym ſo that almoſt all ẏ kynges of ẏ worlde to hym were attendaūt. ¶ It befell thus ẏ this Dyocleſyan ſpoyled a gētyll demoyſell ẏ was wonder fayre ẏ was his emes doughter Labana And ſhe loued hym as reaſon wolde/ ſo ẏ he gate vpō her .xxxiij. doughters of ẏ whiche ẏ eldeſt was called Albyne. And theſe demoyſelles whan they came vnto aege became ſo fayre ẏ it was wonder/ wherof Dyocleſyan anone lete make a ſompnynge/ ⁊ cōmaūded by his letteres ẏ al ẏ kynges ẏ helde on hym ſholde come at a certayne daye as in his letteres were cōteyned to make a feeſt royall. At whiche daye thyder they came/ ⁊ brought wt them admirals/ prynces/ dukes/ ⁊ noble chyualry. The feeſt was royally arayed/ ⁊ there they lyued in Joye ⁊ myrthe ynough ẏ it was wonder to wyt. And it befell thus ẏ Dyocleſyan thought to mary his doughters ymonge all thoſe kynges ẏ were at ẏ ſolempnyte. ¶ And ſo they ſpake ⁊ dyde ẏ Albyne his eldeſt doughter and al her ſyſters richely were maryed to .xxxiij. kynges ẏ were lordes of greate honour at this ſolēpnyte. Whā this was done euery kyng toke his wyf and lad them ī theyr owne cōtree ⁊ there made thē quenes. ¶ And it befell thus afterwarde ẏ this dame Albyne became ſo ſtoute ⁊ ſo ſterne ẏ ſhe tolde lytell pryce of her lorde/ ⁊ of hym had ſcorne ⁊ deſpyte/ ⁊ wolde not do his wyl/ but ſhe wolde haue her owne wyll in dyuerſe maters. And al her other ſyſters euerichone bare them ſo euyl ayenſt theyr lordes ẏ it was wonder to wyt. And for as moche ẏ them thought ẏ theyr huſbondes were not of ſo hye parentage come as theyr fader. But thoſe kynges ẏ were theyr lordes wolde haue chaſtyſed them with fayre manere vpon al loue ⁊ frendſhyppe ẏ they ſholde amēde theyr ſelfe wylled condicyōs. But all was for noughte/ for they dyde theyr owne wyll in all thynge that them lyked and had of power. Wherfore thoſe .xxxiij. kynges vpō a tyme ⁊ ofte tyme bet theyr wyues. For they wende ẏ they wolde haue amended them and theyr tatches and wyckedneſſe. But of ſuche condycyons they were ẏ for fayre ſpeche ⁊ warnynge they dyde all the worſe/ and for betynges eftſones moche the worſe. Wherfore the kynge that had wedded Albyne wrote ẏ tatches and condycyons of his wyfe Albyne/ and the letter ſende to Dyocleſyan his fader. And whā ẏ other kȳges herde that Albynes lorde had ſende a letter to Dyocleſyan/ anone they ſende letteres ſealed with theyr ſeales ẏ condycyons and tatches of theyr wyues. whan the kynge Dyocleſian ſawe ⁊ herde ſo many playntes of his doughters he was ſore aſhamed ⁊ became wōderly angry ⁊ wroth towarde his doughters: ⁊ thought how he than myght amēde it ẏ they ſo myſdyde And anone ſent his letteres to the .xxxiij. kynges that they ſholde come to hym and brynge with them theyr wyues euerychone at a certayne daye. For he wolde there chaſtyſe them of theyr wyckedneſſe yf he myght in ony manere wyſe. Soo that the kynges came all at that tyme ⁊ daye that tho was ſet bytwene hym ⁊ the kynges. Dyocleſyan receyued theym with moche honoure/ and made a ſolempne feeſt to all that were vnderneth his lordſhyp. And ẏ thyrde day after ẏ ſolēpnyte the kyng Diocleſyā ſend after his .xxxiii. doughters ẏ they ſholde come ⁊ ſpeke wᵗ hym in his chambre. And whan they were come he ſpake to thē of theyr wyckedneſſe ⁊ of theyr crueltee/ ⁊ ſpytfullyy them reproued ⁊ blamed ⁊ dyde ſaye to them. That yf they wold not be chaſtyſed they ſholde his loue loſe for euer more ⁊ whan ẏ ladyes herde all this they became abaſſhyd ⁊ greatly aſhamed/ ⁊ to theyr fader they ſayd ẏ they wolde make all amēdes and ſo they departed out of theyr faders chambre. And Albyne ẏ was ẏ eldeſt ſyſter ladde them all to her chambre/ ⁊ tho made to voyde all ẏ were therin ſoo ẏ no perſone was ymonge them but ſhe ⁊ her ſyſters togyder. Tho ſayd Albyne. My fayre ſyſters well we knowe ẏ the kynge our fader vs hath reproued ſhamed ⁊ deſpyſed for bycauſe to make vs obedyēt to our huſbondes. But certes ẏ ſhall I neuer whyles ẏ I lyue/ ſyth that I am come of a more hyer kynges blode thā myn huſbonde. And whan ſhe had thus ſayd all her ſyſters ſayd ẏ ſame. And tho ſayd Albyne. Well I wote fayre ſyſters ẏ oure huſbondes haue complayned vnto oure fader vpō vs/ wherfore he hath vs thus foule reproued ⁊ dyſpyſed/ wherfore ſyſters my coūſell is ẏ this nyght whā our huſbondes ben a bed all we wᵗ one aſſent do kytte theyr throtes/ ⁊ then we may be in peas of them. And better we may doo this vnder our faders power than other where elles. And anone all ẏ ladyes conſented ⁊ graūted to this coūſel. And whā nyght was come/ ẏ lordes ⁊ ladyes were to bed. And anone as theyr lordes were a ſlepe/ they kyt al theyr huſbondes throtes/ ⁊ ſo they ſlewe them all. Whā ẏ Diocleſyan theyr fader herde of this thynge he became furiouſly wrothe agaynſt his doughters ⁊ anone he wolde them al haue brente. But all the barōs and lordes of Syrrye counſayled not ſo for to do ſuche ſtraytneſſe to his owne doughters/ but ſholde voyde ẏ londe of them for euermore/ ſo ẏ they neuer ſholde come agayne/ ⁊ ſo he dyde. And Dyocleſyan ẏ was theyr fader anone cōmaunded them to go into ſhyppe/ ⁊ delyuered to them vytayles for halfe a yere. And whan this was done all the ſyſters wente in to the ſhyppe ⁊ ſayled forth in ẏ ſee/ ⁊ betoke all theyr frēdes to Apolyn that was theyr god/ ⁊ ſoo lōge they ſayled in ẏ ſee tyll at the laſte they came ⁊ arryued in an yle ẏ was all wyldernesse. And whā dame Albyon was come to that lōde and all her ſyſters. This Albyne wente fyrſte forth out of the ſhyppe and ſayd to her other ſyſters For as moche as I am ẏ eldeſt ſyſter of this company/ ⁊ fyrſt this londe haue taken ⁊ for as moche as myn name is Albyne I wyll ẏ this londe be called Albion after myn owne name. And anone all her ſyſters graūted to her wᵗ a good wyl. Tho went out all the ſyſters of ẏ ſhyp ⁊ toke ẏ londe Albyon as theyr ſyſter called it and there they went vp ⁊ downe/ ⁊ founde neyther man ne woman ne chylde/ but wylde beeſtes of dyuerſe kyndes. And whan the vytayles were diſpēded ⁊ fayled they fed them with herbes ⁊ fruytes in ẏ ſeaſon of ẏ yere/ ⁊ ſoo they lyued as they beſt myght/ ⁊ after ẏ they toke fleſſhe of dyuerſe beeſtes and became wonder fat. And ſo they deſyred mannes cōpany/ ⁊ mannes kynde thē fayled. And for hete they wexed wonder couragyous of kynde ſo that they deſyred more mannes company than ony other ſolace ⁊ myrth. Whan ẏ deuyll that perceyued wente by dyuerſes countrees and toke a body of the ayre ⁊ lykynge nature ſhed of man ⁊ came in to Albion and lay by tho womē ⁊ ſhed tho natures vpon them ⁊ they conceyued ⁊ after broughte forth gyauntes. Of whiche one was called Gogmagog/ ⁊ another Longeryghā. And ſo they were named by dyuerſe names ⁊ in this maner they came forth and were borne horryble gyauntes in Albion And they dwelled in caues and in hylles at theyr wyll. And had the londe of Albion as them lyked vnto ẏ tyme that Brute arryued ⁊ came to Totnes ẏ was in ẏ yle of Albion ⁊ there this Brute conquered ⁊ ſcōfyted ẏ gyauntes aboue ſayd.

¶Explicit prima pars.

¶Here begynneth now how Brute was goten/ ⁊ how he ſlewe fyrſte his moder ⁊ after his fader And how he cōquered Albyon/ ẏ after he named Brytayne after his owne name ẏ now is called Englond after the name of Engyſt of Saxonie. This Brute came into Brytayne about the .xviii. yere of Hely.

BE it knowen that in the noble cyte of greate Troy there was a noble knyght and a mā of greate power ẏ was called Eneas. And whan ẏ cyte of Troye was loſt ⁊ deſtroyed through them of Grece. This Eneas with all his meyny fled thēs and came to Lambardy. That tho was lorde and gouernoure of that londe a kynge that was called Latyne. And another kynge there was ẏ was called Turocelyne that ſtrongely warred vpō this kynge Latyne/ ẏ oftentymes dyde hym moche harme. And whan this kyng Latyne herde that Eneas was come he receyued hym with moche honour/ ⁊ hym with helde for aſmoche as he had herde of hym/ ⁊ wyſſe well that he was a noble knyght and a worthy of his body ⁊ of his dedes. This Eneas helped kynge Latyne in his warre. And ſhortely for to telle/ ſo wel and ſo worthely he dyde ẏ he ſlewe Turocelyne/ ⁊ dyſcomfyted hym ⁊ al his people. And whā al this was done kyng Latyne gaue all ẏ londe that was Turocelynes to this noble man Eneas in mariage with Lauyne his doughter ẏ moſt fayreſt creature that ony man wyſt. And ſo they lyued togyder i Joye and myrth all the dayes of theyr lyfe tyme. ¶And after Aſcanius ſone to Eneas wedded a wyfe/ and vpon her he gate a ſone ẏ was called Syluyne. And this Syluine whā he coude ſome reaſon of man vnwetynge his fader ⁊ agaynſt his wyll aqueynted hym with a damoyſell that was coſyn to Lauyne that was kȳge Latynes doughter the quene that was Eneas wyfe/ and brought the damoyſell with chylde. And whan Aſcanius his fader it wyſt/ anone lette enquyre of the wyſeſt mayſters and of the greteſt clerkes what chylde the damoyſel ſholde brȳge forth/ and they anſwered and ſayde/ that ſhe ſholde brynge forth a ſone that ſholde kylle bothe fader and alſo his moder. And ſo he dyde. For his moder deyed in berynge of hym. And whā this chylde was borne his fader lete calle hym Brute. And the mayſter ſayde that he ſholde do moche harme and ſorowe in many dyuers places/ and he ſholde come to greate honoure and worſhyppe. This kynge Aſcanius deyed whan god wolde/ and Siluyne his ſone receyued ẏ londe/ and made hym wonderly well beloued ymonge his people. And ſoo whan Brute ẏ was Siluynes ſone was .xv. yere olde he wente vpon a daye with his fader for to playe and ſolace. And as Brute ſholde haue ſhot vnto an herte his arow myſhapped and glāced/ ⁊ ſoo there Brute ſlewe his fader.

¶How Brute was dryuen out of the londe/ and how he helde hym in Grece.

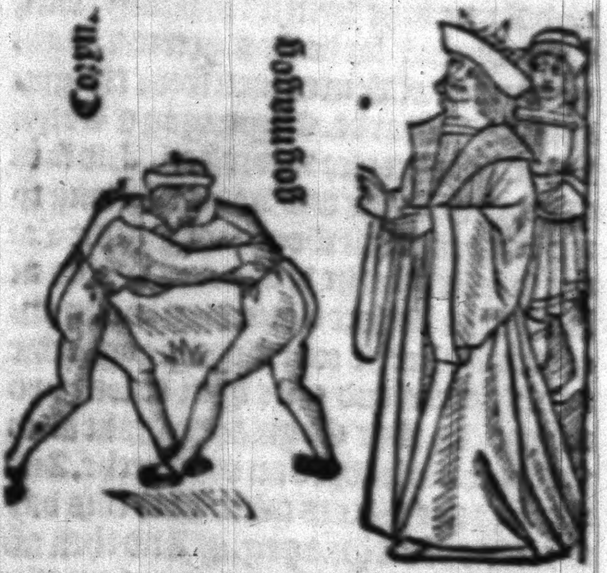
AND whan this myſchaunce was befall/ all the people of the lande made ſorowe ynough/ ⁊ were ſore an angred. And for yͤ encheſon therof they droue Brute out of the lande/ ⁊ wold not ſuffre hym ymonge them. And whā he ſaw yͭ he myght not there abyde/ he wēte frō thens in to Grece/ ⁊ there he founde. vii. M. men yͭ were of the kynred of Troye/ ⁊ were come of great blode as the ſtory telleth yͭ whiche were in thraldome of kyng Pandras of Grece/ for the deth of Achylles yͭ was ſlayne at Troye. This Brute was a fayre man ⁊ a ſtronge ⁊ a huge of his aege/ ⁊ of gladde chere ⁊ ſemblaunt/ And alſo worthy of body/ ⁊ was wel beloued ymonge his people. This kyng pan was herde ſpeke of his goodnes ⁊ condycyōs/ ⁊ anone made hym dwell with hȳ So yͭ Brute became wonder preuy ⁊ moche beloued with the kynge/ ⁊ dwelled lōge tyme with the kynge. So at the laſte they of Troye ⁊ Brute ſpake togyder of kynrede/ ⁊ of aquayntaunce/ ⁊ there cōplayned them vnto Brute of theyr ſorow ⁊ of theyr bondage/ ⁊ of many other ſhames yͭ the kyng Pādras had them done And vnto Brute they ſayd vpon a tyme/ ye be a lorde of our lygnage/ ⁊ a ſtronge mā/ ⁊ a myghty be ye our capytayne and lorde/ ⁊ we wyll become your men/ ⁊ fulfyll all your cōmaūdemētes/ ⁊ brynge vs out of this wretchednes/ ⁊ bondage/ and we wyll fyght with the kyng for trouthe with yͤ grace of yͤ great god we ſhall hym ouercome/ ⁊ we ſhall make you kynge of this lande/ ⁊ to you do homage/ ⁊ of you we ſhal holde for euermore. Brute hadde tho great pite of theyr bōdage that they were brought in. And preuely wente thē frome the kynges courte. And tho they yͭ were of Troye went ⁊ put them in woddes and into mountaynes/ and helde thē there. And ſende vnto kyng Pādras that he ſholde gyue them lycence for to departe ſafely oute of his realme and kyngdome/ for they wolde no longer dwell in his bondage. Whan the kynge Pandras herde this he was ſore vexed and anoyed. And tho ſwore that he ſholde ſle theym euerychone. And ordeyned a great power/ and wente toward them for to fyght with thē But Brute and his men manly them defended and fyerſly fought And ſlewe al yͤ kynges men that none of them eſcaped ⁊ toke the kynge and put hym in pryſon/ ⁊ ordeyned counſayll ymonge them what they myght do with the kyng. And ſome ſayd that he ſholde be put to dethe. And ſome ſayd that he ſholde be exyled out of the lande. And ſome ſayd that he ſhold be brent And tho ſpake a wyſe knyght that was called Membrus and ſayd to Brute and to all theym of Troy. yf kynge Pandras wolde yelde hym and haue his lyfe/ I counſayl that he gyue vnto Brute yͭ is our duke and our ſouerayne his doughter Gennogen to wyfe/ and i mariage wͭ her a hondred ſhyppes well arayde. And all his treaſour of gold ⁊ ſyluer/ of corne and of wyne And as moche as we nede of one thynge and other And thē go we out of this lande/ and ordeyne vs a lande els where. For we nor none of oure kynred yͭ come after vs ſhal neuer haue peas here in this lande ymonge theym of Grece. for we haue ſlayne ſoo many of theyr knyghtes and of other frendes yͭ euermore warre and contacte ſhall be ymonge vs. Brute tho and al his folke conſented wel to that counſayll. And this thynge they tolde to kynge Pandras. And he for to haue his lyfe graunted with a good wyl aſmoche as they demaunded. And anone gaue vnto theyr chefe capytayn Brute Genogen his owne doughter vnto wyfe. And an hondred ſhyppes wͭ aſmoche as them neded of al vytayls/ as afore was ordeyned

Brute tho toke his wyfe and all his men that forſoke the lande of Grece/ ⁊ went to the ſee/ ⁊ had wynd ⁊ weder at theyr wyl ⁊ came the thyrde day into an yle ẏ was called Logres This Brute anone ſende of his men to lande for to eſpye the maner of the countree. And they founde an olde cytee al waſted ⁊ foylet/ ſo ẏ ther was neyther man nor woman therin dwellynge And ĩ the myddel of this cytee they foũde an olde tẽple of a fayre lady ẏ was called Dyana ẏ goddes. And they came agayn vnto Brute ⁊ tolde hym what they hadde ſene ⁊ founde. And they counſayled hym to go and do ſacrefyce vnto dame Dyana for ſhe was wont to gyue anſwer of what thynge ẏ men aſked her/ ⁊ namely vnto thẽ ẏ honoured her with ſacryfyce. Brute went vnto that ymage ⁊ ſayd. Dyana noble goddeſſe that al thynge haſt in thy myght/ wyndes/ waters/ woddes/ feldes ⁊ all thynge of the worlde/ ⁊ all maner of beſtes ẏ therin bẽ/ vnto you I make my prayer ẏ ye me coũſayll ⁊ tell/ where/ ⁊ in what place I ſhall haue a couenyẽt place to dwell in with my folke. And there I ſhall make in thonoure of the a wel fayre temple ⁊ a noble wherin ye ſhal alway be honoured. Whan he had done his prayer Dyana anſwered in this manere. Brute ſayd ſhe go euen forth thy way ouer ẏ ſee in to Fraunce towarde the weſt/ and ther ye ſhall fynde an yle ẏ is called Albyon/ ⁊ that yle is becompaſſed al with the ſee/ ⁊ no man may come therin but it be by ſhippes/ ⁊ in that lande were wonte to dwell gyauntes/ but nowe it is not ſoo/ but all wylderneſſe. And ẏ lande is deſtenyed/ ⁊ ordeyned for you ⁊ for your people.

¶ How Corin became Brutes man/ and how kynge Goffer was dyſcomfyted.

THen whan Brute had this anſwere of Dyana ẏ goddeſſe/ anone he lete the ancres wynde vp ⁊ ſayled into ẏ hye ſee. And whan he ⁊ his mẽ had ſayled. xx. dayes ⁊ mo/ they foũde faſt beſyde a coſt of the ſee a. M. men of the kynrede of Troye. And theyr ſouerayne mayſter was called Corin And whan Brute wyſt whens they were/ he toke them with moche Ioye in to his ſhyppes/ and ſo he lad them forth with hym. This corin ther became Brutes mã/ and to hym dyd homage. And ſo long they ſayled forth ĩ the ſee tyl they came in to Gaſgoyne/ and anone they arryued in the hauen of Lygers/ ⁊ there they dwelled. viii. dayes for to reſte them/ and to amende theyr ſayles/ there as they had nede. Tydynges ſoone came to kyng Goffar that was lorde of that lãde how that moche people of ſtraũge lande were arryued in to his lande in the hauen of Lygers wherfore he was ſore angred and anoyed that they came and arriued in his lande without his lyſence and his leue And anone ordeyned hym a grete power for to dryue out Brute ⁊ to dyſtroy hym and al his people But it was ſo that kyng Goffar was dyſcomfyted ⁊ all his people. And hymſelf fledde into fraũce for to haue helpe and ſocoure. And in ẏ tyme regyned in Fraũce. xii. kynges and xi. of them aſſembled a great power for to helpe Goffar/ ⁊ for to fyght agaynſt Brute. This Goffar dwelled with ẏ kynges of Fraunce half a yere ⁊ more. And in the meane tyme that Goffar was in Fraũce Brute and his company dyſtroyed al the lande of Gaſcoyne/ ⁊ lete take all the treaſour that kynge Goffar had/ and made it be brought ĩ to his ſhyps. And this Brute founde in that lande a fayre place/ and a couenyẽt/ and there Brute made a fayre caſtell and a ſtronge. Whan that this was all done/ kynge Goffar came frome fraunce ⁊.xi.kynges wᵗ hym/ ⁊ brought with hym.xx.M.men ſor to ſyght wᵗ brute ⁊ his cõpany. And Brute had but.vii.M.⁊.CCC.mẽ. And neuertheles whã ẏ two hooſtes met togyder brutes folke by the helpe of hym ſelf ⁊ of Turin his coſyn ⁊ of Corin ẏ well ⁊ manly hym defended. So ẏ within a whyle they had ſlaine of ẏ frenſhmen mo than two.M. Anone al ẏ were alyue fledde a waye. And in this batayll Turin Brutes coſyn was ſlayne/ ⁊ Brute lete entere hym worthely whã he had ſpace i ẏ caſtell ẏ he had made/ ⁊ tho lete call ẏ ſame caſtell Toures/ for bycauſe of the name of Turyn ẏ there was entered. And yet vnto this day there is a noble cyte ẏ is called Toures. Whan kynge Goſfar wyſt that Turin was deed/ he came agayne with his men ⁊ gaue a ſtrong batayll vnto Brute. But Brute ⁊ his mẽ were ſo wery for fyghtyng/ ẏ Brute toke his caſtell with his men/ and made ẏ gates faſt And thẽ they toke cõuſayll amõg them what they ſholde do. Brute and coryn gaue counſayll/ ⁊ ordeyned pryuely ẏ coryn ſholde go out ⁊ buſſhe hym in a wode tyll on the morowe/ ſo ẏ in the mornẏg whan ẏ Brute ſholde fyght with his enmyes/ then corin ſhold come with his folke in the one ſyde ⁊ ſlee ⁊ do al the harme that he myght. And in ẏ mornynge at ẏ dawnynge of the day Brute were out of the caſtel ⁊ fought fyerſly with his ennemyes/ ⁊ they manly defended thẽ. But within a lytell tyme Brute ⁊ his folke ſlewe.viii.hondred of kynge Goſfars men then came corin with the buſſhement and he ⁊ his company ſmote to the grõude all those that wolde ſtande/ or abyde/ ſo that the kyng Goſfar and his company were dyſcomfyted/ and faſt they began to ſle. And Brute and corin with theyr company fyerſly them purſued/ ⁊ ſlewe mo of theym in the fleynge thã they dyde in ẏ batayll And i this maner Brute had the victory Neuertheles yet Brute made moche ſorowe for his coſyn Turin that there was ſlayne/ and other alſo that he had loſte of his men That is to ſay.vii.hondred and xv. The whiche nobly he entered in the ſame caſtell of Toures/ where as he had entered Turin his coſyn.

¶How Brute arryued at Totneſſe in ẏ yle then called Albyon/ and of the wraſtlynge that was betwyxte coryn and Gogmagog.



When all this was done Brute wolde dwell there no more for to fyght ⁊ loſe his mẽ For kyng Goſfars people encreaſed dayly ⁊ his dyminuſſhed And therfore he toke all his mẽ and wente vnto the ſee and had wynde ⁊ weder at theyr wyll. And the fyfth day after they arryued in an hauen at Totneſſe/ ⁊ came in to this realme ẏ than was called Albion/ where they founde neyther man nor woman/ ſaue greate gyaũtes/ ⁊ they dwelled in mountaynes and in cauernes

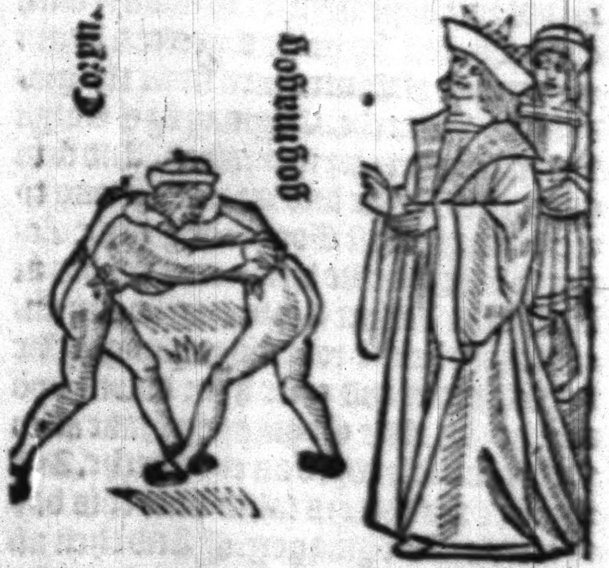
Brute tho toke his wyfe and all his men that forſoke the lande of Grece/ ⁊ went to the ſee/ ⁊ had wynd ⁊ weder at theyr wyl ⁊ came the thyrde day into an yle yͤ was called Logres This Brute anone ſende of his men to lande for to eſpye the maner of the countree. And they founde an olde cytee al waſted ⁊ forlet/ ſo yͤ ther was neyther man nor woman therin dwellynge And ĩ the myddel of this cytee they foũde an olde tẽple of a fayre lady yͤ was called Dyana yͤ goddes. And they came agayn vnto Brute ⁊ tolde hym what they hadde ſene ⁊ founde. And they counſayled hym to go and do ſacrefyce vnto dame Dyana for ſhe was wont to gyue anſwer of what thynge yͤ men aſked her/ ⁊ namely vnto thẽ yͤ honoured her with ſacryfyce. Brute went vnto that ymage ⁊ ſayd. Dyana noble goddeſſe that al thynge haſt in thy myght/ windes/ waters/ woddes/ feldes ⁊ all thynge of the worlde/ ⁊ all maner of beſtes yͤ therin bẽ/ vnto you I make my prayer yͤ ye me couſayll ⁊ tell/ where/ ⁊ in what place I ſhall haue a conuenyẽt place to dwell in with my folke. And there I ſhall make in thonoure of the a wel fayre temple ⁊ a noble wherin ye ſhal alway be honoured. Whan he had done his prayer Dyana anſwered in this manere. Brute ſayd ſhe go euen forth thy way ouer yͤ ſee in to Fraunce towarde the weſt/ and ther ye ſhall fynde an yle yͤ is called Albyon/ ⁊ that yle is becompaſſed al with the ſee/ ⁊ no man may come therin but it be by ſhippes/ ⁊ in that lande were wonte to dwell gyauntes/ but nowe it is not ſoo/ but all wyldernesse. And yͤ lande is deſtenyed/ ⁊ ordeyned for you ⁊ for your people.

¶ How Corin became Brutes man/ and how kynge Goffer was dyſcomfyted.

Then whan Brute had this anſwere of Dyana yͤ goddeſſe/ anone he lete the ancres wynde vp ⁊ ſayled into yͤ hye ſee. And whan he ⁊ his mẽ had ſayled .xx. dayes ⁊ mo/ they foũde faſt beſide a coſt of the ſee a .M. men of the kynrede of Troye. And theyr ſoueraygne mayſter was called Corin And whan Brute wyſt whens they were/ he toke them with moche Ioye in to his ſhyppes/ and ſo he lad them forth with hym. This corin ther became Brutes mã/ and to hym dyd homage. And ſo long they ſayled forth ĩ the ſee tyl they came in to Gaſgoyne/ and anone they arryued in the hauen of Lygers/ ⁊ there they dwelled .viij. dayes for to reſte them/ and to amende theyr ſayles/ there as they had nede. Tydynges ſoone came to kyng Goffar that was lorde of that lãde how that moche people of ſtraũge lande were arryued in to his lande in the hauen of Lygers wherfore he was ſore angred and anoyed that they came and arriued in his lande without his lyſence and his leue And anone ordeyned hym a grete power for to dryue out Brute ⁊ to dyſtroy hym and al his people But it was ſo that kyng Goffar was dyſcomfyted ⁊ all his people. And hymſelf fledde into Fraũce for to haue helpe and ſocoure. And in yͤ tyme reygned in Fraũce .xii. kynges and .xi. of them aſſembled a great power for to helpe Goffar/ ⁊ for to fyght agaynſt Brute. This Goffar dwelled with yͤ kynges of Fraunce half a yere ⁊ more. And in the meane tyme that Goffar was in Fraũce Brute and his company dyſtroyed al the lande of Gaſcoyne/ ⁊ lete take all the treaſour that kynge Goffar had/ and made it be brought ĩ to his ſhyps. And this Brute founde in that lande a fayre place/ and a conuenyẽt/ and there Brute made a fayre caſtell and a ſtronge. Whan that this was all done/ kynge Goffar came frome

Fraunce ⁊ .xi. kynges wͭ hym/ ⁊ brought with hym .xx. M. men for to fyght wͭ Brute ⁊ his cōpany. And Brute had but .vii. M. ⁊ .CCC. mē. And neuertheles whā ẏ two hooſtes met togyder brutes folke by the helpe of hym ſelf ⁊ of Turin his coſin ⁊ of Corin ẏ well ⁊ manly hym defended. Soo ẏ within a whyle they had ſlaine of ẏ Frenſhmen mo than two. M. Anone al ẏ were alyue fledde a waye. And in this batayll Turin Brutes coſyn was ſlayne/ ⁊ Brute lete entere hym worthely whā he had ſpace i ẏ caſtell ẏ he had made/ ⁊ tho lete call ẏ ſame caſtell Toures/ for bycauſe of the name of Turyn ẏ there was entered. And yet vnto this day there is a noble cyte ẏ is called Toures. Whan kynge Goffar wyſt that Turin was deed/ he came agayne with his men ⁊ gaue a ſtrong batayll vnto Brute. But Brute ⁊ his mē were ſo wery for fyghtyng/ ẏ Brute toke his caſtell with his men/ and made ẏ gates faſt And thē they toke coūſayll amōg them what they ſholde do. Brute and corin gaue counſayll/ ⁊ ordeyned pryuely ẏ corin ſholde go out ⁊ buſſhe hym in a wode tyll on the morowe/ ſo ẏ in the mornȳg whan ẏ Brute ſholde fyght with his enmyes/ then corin ſhold come with his folke in the one ſyde ⁊ ſlee ⁊ do al the harme that he myght. And in ẏ mornynge at ẏ dawnynge of the day Brute wēte out of the caſtel ⁊ fought fyerſly with his enmyes/ ⁊ they manly defended thē. But within a lytell tyme Brute ⁊ his folke ſlewe .viii. hondred of kynge Goffars men then came corin with the buſſhement and he ⁊ his company ſmote to the groūde all those that wolde ſtande/ or abyde/ ſo that the kyng Goffar and his company were dyſcomfyted/ and faſt they began to fle. And Brute and corin with theyr company fyerſly them purſued/ ⁊ ſlewe mo of theym in the fleynge thā they dyde in ẏ batayll And i this maner Brute had the victory Neuertheles yet Brute made moche ſorowe for his coſyn Turin that there was ſlayne/ and other alſo that he had loſte of his men That is to ſay .vii. hondred and .xv. The whiche nobly he entered in the ſame caſtell of Toures/ Where as he had entered Turin his coſyn.

¶ How Brute arryued at Totneſſe in ẏ yle then called Albyon/ and of the wraſtlynge that was betwyxte coryn and Gogmagog.

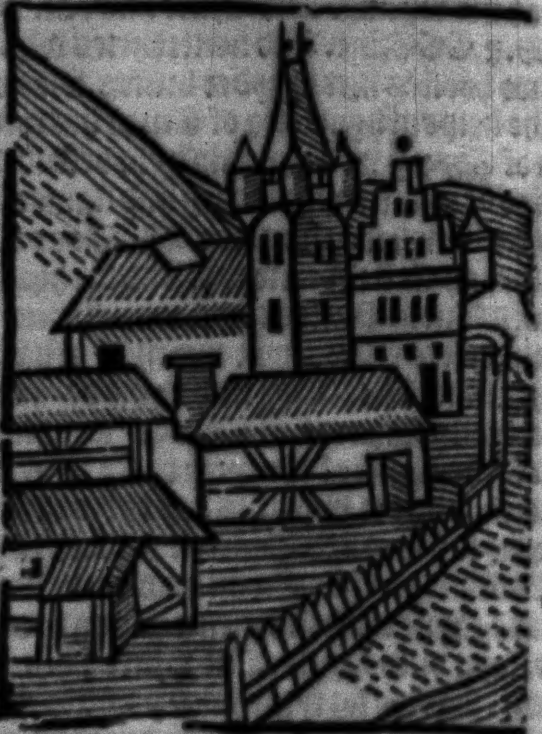


When all this was done Brute wolde dwell there no more for to fyght ⁊ loſe his mē For kyng Goffars people encreaſed dayly ⁊ his dymynyſſhed And therfore he toke all his mē and wente vnto the ſee and had wynde ⁊ weder at theyr wyll. And the fyfth day after they arryued in an hauen at Totneſſe/ ⁊ came in to this realme ẏ than was called Albion/ where they founde neyther man nor woman/ ſaue greate gyaūtes/ ⁊ they dwelled in mountaynes and in cauernes

And brute ſawe the lande was fayre ⁊ at his lykynge for hym and his people as ẏ goddeſſe Dyana had behyght hym And therfore was Brute wonder glad/ ⁊ lete aſſemble vpon a day al his folke to make a ſolempne ſacrefyce ⁊ feeſt in thonour of Dyana the goddeſſe/ whiche had couſayled hym fyrſt to come in to this lāde. And whan they had done theyr ſolempnite as they ſat at theyr mete vpon a day ther came in vpon them. xxx. gyauntes/ ⁊ ſlewe of Brutes men. xxx. Brute ⁊ his mē anone ſterte vp ⁊ faught with the gyauntes ⁊ ſlew them euerychone ſaue one named Gogmagog mayſter of them all. And he was ſtronger ⁊ hyer than ony of ẏ other/ And Brute kept hym for to wraſtyl with Coryn his mā/ for he was greter ⁊ hygher than ony of Brutes men from the gyrdylſtede vpwarde. Gogmagog ⁊ Coryn vndertoke there for to wraſtyll. And ſo togyder they wente and wraſtled a long tyme/ but at the laſt Gogmagog helde Coryn ſo faſte that he brake two rybbes in his ſyde/ wherfore Coryn was ſore an angred: and ther he toke Gogmagog betwene his armes and caſte hym downe vpō a roche/ ſoo that Gogmagog brake all to peces/ and ſo he dyed an euyll dethe. And therfore the place is called vnto this day the ſaute of Gogmagog. ¶ And then after Brute gaue all that countree vnto Coryn. And ther Coryn called it after his name Cornewayle. And his men be called Cornewayles/ and ſo ſholde men of that countree be called for euermore. And in ẏ countree dwelled Coryn and his mē. And they made townes and houſes/ ⁊ enhabited that lande by theyr owne wyll.

¶ How Brute buylded London/ ⁊ called this lande Brytayne/ and Scotlāde Albyne/ and Wales Camber.

¶ London.



BRute ⁊ his men wente forth/ ⁊ ſawe aboute in dyuers places wher that they myght fynde a good place ⁊ couenable ẏ they myght make a cyte on for hym ⁊ for his folke And ſo at ẏ laſte they came by a fayre ryuer ẏ is called Temes/ and there Brute began to bulde a fayre cyte ⁊ called it new Troye/ in remembraunce of ẏ great Troy of wheme al theyr lygnage was comen. And this Brute cauſed to fell downe woddes/ ⁊ ere ⁊ ſowe landes/ ⁊ mawe downe medowes for ſuſtenaunce of hym ⁊ his people. And then he departed the lāde to them/ ſo that eche of them had a parte for to dwel in. And then Brute lete call all this lande Brytayne after his name/ ⁊ his folke Brytons. And this Brute had of his wyfe Genmogen. iii. ſones ẏ were worthy of dedes. ẏ fyrſt was called Locrin/ ẏ ſeconde Albanak/ and ẏ thyrde Cambar And Brute bare crownē in the cite of Troy .xx. yere after yͤ tyme yͤ the cyte was made. And ther he made yͤ lawes that the Brytons holde. And this Brute was wonderly well beloued amōge all men. And Brutes ſones alſo loued wonderly well togyder And whan Brute had ſought all the lāde in length ⁊ brede: he foūde a londe yͤ Joyned to Brytayne i yͤ north. And yͤ lande Brute gaue to Albanak his ſone / and lete cal it Albanie after his name / yͤ now is called Scotlande / ⁊ Brute foūde an other coūtre toward the weſt ⁊ gaue yͤ to Camber his other ſone / ⁊ named it Camber yͤ now is wales And whan Brute had reygned .xx. yere he dyed in newe Troye.

¶ How Lotrin that was Brutes ſone crowned with moche honour / ⁊ gouerned the lande well and worthely.

AFter Brute reygned Lotrin his ſone / that was the ſeconde kynge in Brytayne. And he began to reygne yͤ yere of Samuell. This Lotrin was crowned with great ſolempnyte of al Brytayne. And after whan he was crowned kynge. Albanak ⁊ Camber his brederne departed in to theyr owne coūtrees / and ther they lyued with moche honour. Lotrin reygned well ⁊ worthely / ⁊ was moche beloued of his people. And it befell ſo yͤ as Albanak dwelled in his owne lande with moche honour ⁊ worſhyp / there came kynge Humbar of Hunlande with a great power ⁊ arryued in Albyne ⁊ wold haue conquered yͤ lande / ⁊ began to war with kynge Albanak / and hym ſlewe in batayll. whan Albanak was deed yͤ people of that lande fledde vnto Lotrin and tolde hym by cauſe he was kynge of Brytayne how that his broder was ſlayne / ⁊ prayed hym of his helpe and of his ſocour for to reuenge his broders dethe. Kynge Lotrin anoone lete aſſemble all the Brytons of Kent / of Douer / in to Derwent of Norfolke and Suffolke / of Keſteuen ⁊ Lyndeſſey And whan they were aſſēbled they ſpedde them faſt towarde theyr enmyes for to gyue them batayll. And Lotrin had ſent to Camber his broder that he ſholde come vnto hym with al the power yͤ he myght make for to helpe hym to auenge his broders deth. And ſoo he dyd with a good wyll. whan they came togyder they toke theyr waye pryuely for to goo ſeke kynge Humbar where as he were / yf they myght fynde hym. And ſo it befel that this kynge Humbar was beſyde a water that was a great ryuer with his folke for to dyſporte hym. And there came Lotrin and Camber with theyr folke ſodaynly or that ony of the other hooſt knew of them. And whan Humbar dyde ſe them come in aray he was ſore adrad / for aſmoche as his men wyſt it not afore And alſo that they were vnarmed. And anone Humbar for drede lept i to yͤ water and drowned hymſelfe / and ſo he deyed / And his men were all ſlayne / in ſo moche that there eſcaped not one away on lyue / And therfore is that water called Hūbar and euermore ſhall be / whyle the worlde is world. For by cauſe that this kyng Hūbar was drowned therin. And after that Lotrin went to his ſhippes and toke there golde and ſyluer as moche as he foūde vnto hymſelf. And al that other pryſe he gaue vnto other folke of the hooſt. And they founde in one of the ſhyppis a fayre damoyſell that was kyng Humbars owne doughter and ſhe was called Eſtrilde And whan Lotrin ſawe her / he toke her with hym for her great beaute and fayrneſſe. And for her he was ouertaken in loue / and wolde haue wedded her. This tydynges came to Corin / ⁊ anone thoughte to auēge hym on Lotrin/ foꝛ as moch as Lotrin had pꝛomyſed hym to wedde Guētolyn his doughter. And Coꝛin in haſt toke his way to new Troye to hym/ & ſayd thus to Lotrin. Certes ye reward me ful euyll foꝛ the peynes that I haue had foꝛ your fader Bꝛute/ wherfoꝛe ſyth it is ſo I wyll auenge me nowe on the And wͭ that dꝛewe his ſwerde and wolde haue ſlayn Lotrin ẏ kynge. But the damoyſel went betwene theym & made them to be accoꝛded in this manere that Lotrin ſholde take Guentolyn to wyfe Coꝛins doughter/ And ſo Lotrin dyd. Neuertheles after he was maried he went pꝛyuely to Eſtrylde and gate her with a doughter/ that was called Abꝛam. And it befell ſo that anone after Coꝛin deyed/ & after whan he was deed Lotrin foꝛſake Guētolyn that was his wyfe/ and made Eſtrylde quene And there Guentolyn departed from thens in great wꝛathe into Coꝛnewayle/ and ther ceaſed all the lande in to her owne hande foꝛ aſmoche as ſhe was her faders heyꝛe And toke homage of all ẏ men of ẏ lande. Afterwarde ſhe aſſembled a grete hooſt & a myghey of men foꝛ to be auenged vpon Lotrin that was her loꝛde & gaue hym a ſtronge batayll where her huſbande Lotrin was ſlayne and his mē dyſcomfyted in the .v. yere of his reygne. Guētolyn lete take Eſtryld and Abꝛam her doughter and bounde them bothe handes and fete and caſt them bothe in to a water/ and ſo they were dꝛowned wherfoꝛe that water was euermoꝛe after called Abꝛam/ after the name of the damoyſell yͭ was Eſtryldes doughter. And Englyſſhe men call ẏ water Seuerne/ and walſhmen call it Abꝛam yet vnto this day. And whan this was done Guētolyn lete crowne her quene of all the lande. And ſhe gouerned the lande wel and wyſely vnto the tyme that Madan her ſone that Lotryn had goten vpō her was .xx. yere of aege that he myght be kynge. And in that maner of wyſe the quene reygned .xv. yere. And then lete ſhe crowne her ſone kynge/ and he reygned and gouerned the lande well & woꝛthely. And his moder wente in to Coꝛnewayle/ and there ſhe dwelled al her lyues tyme.

¶ How Madan reyned in peas all his lyfe.

Madam ſone to Lotrin reyned on ẏ Bꝛytaynes .xl. yere. the whiche begā foꝛ to reygne the .xv. yere of Saul And this Madā lyued in peas al his dayes/ and begete two ſones/ Mempꝛis & Maulyn. Then he deceſſed and lyeth at newe Troye.

¶ Anno mundi. iiij. M. C. xxij. Et ante xpi natiuitatem. M. lxxxiiij.

¶ Here begynneth
the fourth aege
duryinge to the
transmygracyon.

Dauyd.

Dauyd the ſecōde kynge in Iſrael reigned this tyme/ a choſen man after ẏ deſyꝛe of god And he was anoynted in his yonge aege by Samuel/ and after the dethe of kynge Saul he reygned .xl. yere. this Dauid was as a meruayll all mankynde. In whom euer was founde ſo moche power ⁊ ſo moche humylyte/ ſo moche noblynes ⁊ ſo moche mekenes/ ſo greate a charge of ſeculary thynges/ and ſo pure ⁊ deuoute a cōtemplacyon of ſpyrytuall thynges ſo many men to kylle ⁊ ſo many teres to wepe for his treſpace (Uide plura .i. regū.) ¶ Abiathar this tyme was byſſhop/ ⁊ he cleue fro Saull vnto Dauyd/ ⁊ he was glorious with hym all his dayes. Gad/ Nathan/ ⁊ Aſoph were prophetes then. And Nathan was brother ſone to Dauyd.

¶ How Mempris ſlewe his brother Maulyn.

This Mēprys ⁊ his broder Maulyn ſtroue faſt for yͤ londe. And Mempris began to reygne yͤ .xxxv. yere of Dauyd/ ⁊ for bycauſe yͤ he was the eldeſt ſone he wold haue had all yͤ londe/ ⁊ Maulyn wolde not ſuffre hym/ ſo yͤ they toke a day of loue ⁊ accorde/ ⁊ at this day Mempris lete kyll his broder through treaſon ⁊ hymſelfe afterwarde helde the londe. And anone crowned hym kynge ⁊ reygned. And after became ſoo lyther a man yͤ he deſtroyed won a whyle all the men of his londe. And at yͤ laſt he became ſo wycked ⁊ ſo lecherous yͤ he forſoke his owne wyf and uſed yͤ ſynne of Sodomy. Wherfore almyghty god was greatly dyſpleaſed ⁊ hee wroth wͭ hym/ ⁊ vpon hym toke vengeaunce for bycauſe of his wyckednes. For on a daye as he wente forth on huntynge in a foreſt there he loſte all his men that were with hym ⁊ wyſt not what he ſholde do/ ⁊ ſo he wente vp ⁊ downe hym ſelf alone/ ⁊ cryed after his men but they were gone/ ⁊ there came wolues anone ⁊ all to byte hym in peces whan he hadde reygned .xviii. yere. Whā his people herde yͤ he was ſo deed/ they made Joye and myrthe ynough ⁊ anone made Ebrac his ſone kynge ⁊ reygned wͭ noble honoure.

¶ Anno mūdi .iiii. M. C. lxv. Et ante xpi natiuitatem .M. xxxiiii.

Salamō yͤ kynge of peas of yͤ gyfte of our lorde hadde a ſynguler excedynge aboue all men yͤ euer was in this worlde/ but oonly god in wyſdom ⁊ in ryches/ in deyntees ⁊ in glory/ ⁊ famylyaryte wͭ god. And though Moyſes ⁊ Dauyd Peter ⁊ Poull/ Jerom ⁊ Auſtyn/ ⁊ other more exceded hym i holynes but yet they exceded hym not in glory ⁊ ryches. And this man ſo excedynge all men wretchedly fell. Of this Salamō is red in a pyſtle of ſaint Jerō yͤ he gote a child on yͤ doughter of Pharao at .xi. yere of his age (Uide pſa te) ¶ Sadoch this tyme was byſſhop/ ⁊ for he decyned not to the parte of Adonie Dauyd ſone but was wͭ Nathan for Salamō/ ⁊ Abyathar on yͤ other part was deſpoſed.

¶ Anno mūdi .iiii. M. ii. C. v. Et ante xpi natiuitatem .xi. C. lxxxxiiii.

Roboas ſucceded Salamon his fader in his kȳgdom/ but not in wyſdom. He was deceyued through yͤ coūſeyll of yōge mē ⁊ loſt .x. trybes in ſomoche as he anſwered not wyſely yͤ people/ as it is ope (iii. regū) ¶ Achimaas was byſſhop ⁊ was ſone of Sadoch (de pr. i. Parali.)

¶ Reges Iſrael incipiunt.

Jheroboas reygned kyng in Iſrael .xxii. yere/ ⁊ was fyrſt of yͤ hous of Salamon a good man/ ⁊ whan he was kynge he was a myſcheuous mā in ydolatry/ ⁊ made Iſrael to ſynne in ydolatry ⁊ many greate inconuenyētes were done/ almooſt to yͤ deſtruction of Iſrael. For he was yͤ fygure of Machomet (Uide pſa .iii. regū.) ¶ Abdias yͤ ſone of Roboas reyg ned in the Jury that yere, ⁊ other whyle a good mã ⁊ holpen by god, ⁊ other whyle wretchedly dyſpoſed in ydolatry, and therfore our lorde ſuffered hym to reygne lytell tyme (vt pꝫ. iii. regũ. ⁊ .ii. Para.)

¶ Anno mũdi. iiii. M. ii. C. xxv. Et ante xpi natiuitatem. ix. C. lxxiiii.

ASa the ſone of Abdyas reygned xli. yere. In the begynnynge of his reygne he was a ryghtwiſe mã ⁊ walked as Dauyd dyde. And he ouercame ȳ Ethyopes, ⁊ deſtroyed ydoles. But after that he was ſtronge to ȳ kynge of Syrye Benedab. For Baaſa kyng of Iſraell the began to fyght ayenſt hym, ȳ whiche diſpleaſed god. Wherfore he ſend hym ȳ prophete Anani, whome he put in pryſon, ⁊ therfore he had the gowte ſtrongely ⁊ dyed therof (vt pꝫ. iii. regũ. ii. para.) ¶ Azarias ſone to Achonias was byſſhop. ¶ Nadab kynge of Iſraell reygned two yere, the whiche began to reygne ȳ ſeconde yere of Aſa kynge of Iewes, ⁊ dyde not as his fader. And Baaſa ouerthrewe hym ⁊ reygned for hym (vt pꝫ. iii. regũ.) ¶ Baaſa kynge of Iſraell reygned .xxiiii. yere, the whiche begã to reygne ȳ thyrde yere of Aſa kynge of Iewes, ⁊ he walked in ȳ ſynnes of Ieroboan ⁊ ſlewe Iehen the prophete. ¶ Hela the ſone of Baaſa reygned in Iſraell two yere, ⁊ Zamri ſlewe hym ⁊ reygned .vii. dayes. ¶ Amri reygned .xii. yere, ⁊ dyde not as his predeceſſours. ¶ Acha ſone to Amri reygned vpon Iſrael. xxii. yere, ⁊ aboue all ȳ were afore hym he was curſed, for wycked Ieſabell ruled more than he, and meued hym to folowe her (vt pꝫ. iii. regũ.)

¶ Of kynge Ebrac, the whiche began to reygne the .xv. yere of Dauyd, ⁊ how he conquered Fraunce.

THis Ebrac reygned .lx. yere, ⁊ he was a myghty man. And thrugh his myght ⁊ helpe of his Brytons conquered all Fraunce. And wan there ſo moche golde ⁊ ſyluer ȳ whan he came agayne into this lõde he made a cytee, ⁊ after his owne name he let calle it Ebrac, ȳ is now called Euerwyke. And this kynge made ȳ caſtell of Maydens, ȳ now is called Edenburgh. This kynge had .xx. ſones ⁊ .xxiii. doughters by dyuerſe women gotẽ, ⁊ theſe ſones were called as ye ſhall here. Brute, Grenesſhelde, Margange, Iakes, Kymbar, Roſſeln, Spadogh, Godehert, Thorman, Gyrdaugh, Iorkanghut, Hardor, Cetyn, Rother, Kair ⁊ Aſſaruch. And all ȳ doughters hyght as ye ſhall here after. Elygene, ymogen, Oghdas, Guenbran, Guardith, Angarew, Guenthold, Tanguiſtell, Gorghon, Michel, Medhan, Mailour, Ondre, Cãbredan, Ragã, Renchely, Neeſt, Cheghan, Skaldud, Gladus, Herberch, Abalaghe and Blandan. And theſe were tho .xxiii. doughters. And ȳ brethren became good knyghtes ⁊ worthy in many countreys.

¶ Of kynge Brute Grenescheld ȳ fyrſt ſone of Ebrac kynge.

AFter ȳ deth of kynge Ebrac reygned Brute Grenescheld his ſone .xxx. yere, whiche was Ebracs fyrſt ſone, ȳ well and nobly reygned. And whan tyme came he deyed, ⁊ lyeth at Yorke.

¶ Of kynge Leyll that was Brute Grenescheldes ſone.

WHan ȳ Brute Grenescheld was deed, reygned his ſone Leyll two ⁊ twenty yere. And he made a cyte to wne and lete calle it Karleyl after his owne name. And he was a worthy man and well beloued of his people/ ⁊ ſo whã he had reygned .xxvi. yere he dyed ⁊ lyeth at Karlyll. ¶ And in this tyme reygned kynge Salamõ in Jeruſalem ⁊ made ẏ noble tẽple. And to hym came quene Sybylle quene of Saba for to here ⁊ ſe yf it were ſoth ẏ men ſpake of ẏ great ⁊ noble wyt ⁊ wyſdome of kynge Salamon. And ſhe founde it ſothe ẏ men had her tolde.

¶ Anno mũdi.iiij.M.ij.C.lxvi. Et ante xp̃i natiuitatem.ix.C.xlij.

IOſaphat kynge of Jewes was a good man ⁊ a ryche/ ⁊ a deuoute in ẏ way of our loꝛde/ ⁊ regned .xxv. yere/ ⁊ dyde none yll but to ẏ curſed kynge of Iſrael gaue helpe/ ⁊ other lytel thyng. And therfore our loꝛde was with hym (vt pꝫ ſuo para.) ¶ Helyas the great pꝛophete was this tyme an holy mã ẏ was lyfted vp into paradyſe with greate ſolace in a chayꝛe. ¶ Macheas ⁊ Abdias pꝛopheſyed with hym. ¶ Ochoſyas ſone to Achab reygned in Iſraell .ii. yere. And ſende to Belſabub god of Acharam to be helyd. for ẏ whiche he deyed after ẏ ſayenge of Hely (vt pꝫ.iiij.Regum.)

¶ Of kynge Lud Ludybꝛas that was kynge Leyles ſone.

LVd Ludibꝛas this kynge made the cyte of Caunterbury ⁊ Wyncheſtre And he reygned.xxxix.yere/ ⁊ the he deyed and lyeth at Wyncheſtre.

¶ Of kynge Bladud ẏ was Ludibꝛas ſone/ how he reygned ⁊ was a good man and a Nygromancer.

SO after this Ludybꝛas reygned Bladud his ſone a greate Nygromancer/ ⁊ thꝛugh his craft of Nygromancy he made a meruaylous hote bathe/ as the geſte telleth. And he reygned.xxi. yere/ and he lyeth at the newe Troy.

¶ Anno mũdi.iiij.M.ij.C.lxxxxi. Et ante xp̃i natiuitatem.ix.C.viij.

THis tyme Jozam was kynge of Jewes ſone to Joſaphat whiche reygned.viij.yere/ he was a curſed man ⁊ had a good fader/ ⁊ ſlew his bꝛother/ ⁊ wyckedly lyued/ as dyde the kynge of Iſrael. Therfoꝛe he was ſoꝛe coꝛrected ⁊ deyed vnhappely (vt pꝫ.ii.pa). ¶ This tyme Helyas was rauyſſhed into ẏ Paradyſe. ¶ Ochoſias oꝛ Aſarias kyng of Jewes regned one yere/ ⁊ lyued not as his fader dyde/ ⁊ anone was ſlayne wͭ all the hous of Achab. ¶ Athalia moder to Aſarias toke the kyngdom/ ⁊ ſlewe all ẏ kynges blode/ ⁊ reygned.x. yere. And ẏ.viij. yere of Joiada byſſhop ſhe was ſlayne. (iiij.reg.) This Aſarias ⁊ his ſone Joas ⁊ his neuewe Amaſia. Mathe9 ẏ euãgeliſt putteth not in ẏ lyne of cryſt foꝛ theyꝛ offences. ¶ Jozam kynge of Iſraell reygned.xii.yeres/ ⁊ begã to reygne ẏ.xviij. yere of Joſaphat foꝛ his bꝛoder Ochoſie ⁊ curſedly he lyued/ ⁊ was ſlayne of Jehen with all his faders houſholde (vt pꝫ) ¶ Jehen enoynted of ẏ chylde of Helyſe vpon Iſraell ſlewe Achariam ẏ kynge of Jewes/ ⁊ Jozã ẏ kynge of Iſraell ⁊ Jeſabell moder to Jozam/ ⁊.lxx.chyldꝛen of Achab/ ⁊.xlii. bꝛedꝛen of Azari/ ⁊ all the pꝛeeſtes of Baall. And he reygned. xviij. yere. ¶ Athalia moder to Azari kynge of Jewes/ doughter to Achab reygned on ẏ Jewes. vi. yere/ ⁊ ſlewe ẏ kynges blood of Jozam/ except Joas the ſone of Azari/ the whiche was kepte ymonge ſhepherdes/ and after ſhe was ſlayne.

¶ Anno mundi.iiij.M.iij.C.ix. Et ante xp̃i natiuitatem.viij.C.lxxxxiij.

IOam ſone to Achazie reygned in ẏ Jury. xl. yere/ whom Joiada ẏ byſſhop crowned kynge at. viii. yere of age And he lyued well as lẽge as he was ruled by Joiada/ but after he forſoke god/ ⁊ martred Azarias ẏ tyme byſſhop ſone to Joiada/ for he blamed hym ẏ he forſok his god(vide plura. ii. pa.) ¶ Joathas ſone to Jehen reygned in Iſrael. xv. yere. In whoſe days Helyſe ẏ ꝓphet deyed ⁊ he begã to regne ẏ. xx. yere of Joas(vi plura. iiii. re.) ¶ Joam ſone of Joathas regned in Iſrael. xvii. yere/ ⁊ he troubled Amazia(Plura vide. iiii. regũ. xiii.)

¶ Of kynge Leyr ſone to Bladud/ and of the anſwere of his yongeſt doughter/ ẏ graciouſly was maryed to to the kynge of Fraunce.

After kynge Bladud regned Leyr his ſone. And this Leyr made ẏ towne of Leyceſtre/ ⁊ lete calle the towne after his name/ ⁊ he gouerned the towne well ⁊ nobly. This kynge Leyr had thre doughters The fyrſt was called Gonoril The ſecunde Regan/ ⁊ ẏ thyrde Cordell/ and the yongeſt doughter was fayreſt ⁊ beſt of condycyons. The kynge theyr fader became an olde man ⁊ wolde that his doughters were maryed or ẏ he deyed. But fyrſt he thought to aſſaye whiche of them loued hym mooſt ⁊ beſt. For ſhe ẏ loued hym beſt ſholde beſt be maryed. And he axed of ẏ fyrſt doughter how well ſhe loued hym. And ſhe anſwered and ſayd better thã her owne lyfe now certes ſayd her fader/ ẏ is a great loue. Thẽ he axed the ſecunde doughter/ how moche ſhe loued hym. And ſhe ſayd more ⁊ paſſynge all the creatures of ẏ worlde. Per ma foy ſayd her fader/ I may no more axe. And tho axed he of ẏ thyrd doughter/ how moche ſhe loued hym. Certes fader ſayd ſhe my ſyſters haue tolde you gloſynge wordes/ but I ſhall tell you trouth/ for I loue you as I ought to loue my fader. And for to brynge you more in certayne howe I loue you. I ſhall tel you aſmoche as ye be worth ſo ſhall ye be loued. The kynge her fader wende that ſhe had ſcorned hym ⁊ became wonder wrothe/ ⁊ ſwore by heuen ⁊ erth ſhe ſholde neuer haue good of hym/ but his doughters ẏ loued hym ſo moche ſholde be well auaunced ⁊ maryed. And ẏ fyrſt doughter he maryed to Mangles kyng of Scotlande. And ẏ ſecunde he maried to Hanemos erle of Cornewayle/ ⁊ they ordeyned ⁊ ſpake bytwen them that they ſholde departe ẏ realme bytwene them two after ẏ deth of kynge Leyr theyr fader/ ſoo that Cordeyll his yõgeſt doughter ſholde noo thynge haue of his lande. But this Cordell was wonder fayre ⁊ of good condicyons ⁊ maners. That ẏ kynge of Fraũce Agampe herde of her fame/ ⁊ ſend to ẏ kyng Leyr her fader for to haue her to his wyfe ⁊ prayed hym therof. And kynge Leyr her fader ſende hym worde ẏ he had departed his londe ⁊ gyuen all to his two doughters before ſayd ⁊ he ſayd he had no more lõde wher with her to marye. And whan Agampe ẏ kynge of Fraũce herde this anſwere/ he ſend anone agayn to Leyr ⁊ ſayd ẏ he axed no thynge wᵗ her but onely her clothynge ⁊ her body. And anone kyng Leyr ſend her ouer ſee to ẏ kynge of Fraũce. And he receyued her wᵗ moche worſhyp/ ⁊ wᵗ ſolempnyte he ſpowſed her/ and made her quene of Fraunce.

¶ How kyng Leyr was dryue out of his lande thrugh his folke. And how Cordell his yõgeſte doughter helped hym in his nede.

Thus it befel afterwarde/ that theſe two eldeſt doughters wold not abyde tyll Leyr theyre fader was deed/

but warred vpon hym whyles yͭ he was a lyue ⁊ dyde hym moche ſorowe ⁊ ſhame wherfore they toke from hym holy yͭ realme/ ⁊ bytwene them had ordeyned/ yͭ one of thẽ ſholde haue. kynge Leyr to ſeiorne all his lyf tyme wᵗ .lx. knyghtes ⁊ ſquyers yͭ he myght worſhypfully ryde ⁊ go whether yͭ he wolde/ ⁊ into what coũtre that hym lyked to play ⁊ to ſolace. So yͭ Maugles kynge of Scotlond had kyng Leyr with hym in the maner as is aboue ſayd And or the other halfe yere were paſſed. Gonoryll yͭ was yͭ eldeſt doughter ⁊ quene of Scotlonde was ſo anoyed of hym ⁊ of his people yͭ anone ſhe ⁊ her lorde ſpake togyder/ wherfore his knyghtes half ⁊ his ſquyers fro hym were gone ⁊ no more left wᵗ hym but onely .xxx. And whan this was done Leyr begã to make moche ſorow for bycauſe yͭ his ſtate was empayred. And men had of hym more ſcorne ⁊ deſpyte than euer they had before. Wherfore he wyſt not what to done. And at the laſt thought yͭ he wolde goo into Cornewayle to Rigan his other doughter. And whan he was come/ yͭ erle ⁊ his wyf that was Leyrs doughter hym welcomed ⁊ wᵗ hym made moche Joye/ ⁊ there he dwelled wᵗ .xxx. knyghtes and ſquyers And he had not dwelled ſcarſly .xii. monethes yͭ re yͭ his doughter of hȳ was wery ⁊ his cõpany. And her lorde ⁊ ſhe of hȳ had grete ſcorne ⁊ deſpyte/ ſo yͭ from .xxx. knyghtes they brought vnto .x. And afterward he had but fyue/ ⁊ ſo they left hȳ no more Then made he ſorowe ynough/ ⁊ ſayd ſore wepynge Alas yͭ euer I came ĩto this londe ⁊ ſayd. yet had it be better to haue dwelled wᵗ my fyrſt doughter. And anone he wẽt thẽs to his fyrſt doughter agẽ but anone as ſhe ſawe hym come/ ſhe ſwore by god ⁊ by his holy name/ ⁊ by aſmoche as ſhe myght yͭ he ſholde haue no more wᵗ hym but one knyght/ yf he wolde there abyde. Then began Leyr to wepe ⁊ made moche ſorowe/ and ſayd tho. Alas now haue I to long lyued yͭ this ſorow ⁊ myſcheyf is to me now fallen. For now I am poore that ſomtyme was ryche But now haue I no frende ne kyn that to me wyll do ony good. But whan I was ryche all men me honoured ⁊ worſhypped/ ⁊ now euery man hathe of me ſcorne ⁊ deſpyte. And now I well wote that Cordeyll my yongeſt doughter ſayd trouth/ whan ſhe ſayd. Aſmoche as I had ſo moche ſholde I be loued. And al yͭ whyle yͭ I had good ſo longe was I loued ⁊ honoured for my ryches but my two doughters gloſed me tho/ ⁊ now of me they ſet lytel pryce. And ſoth tolde me Cordeyll/ but I wolde not byleue it ne vnderſtonde/ ⁊ therfore I let her go fro me as a thĩge yͭ I ſet lytel pryce of/ ⁊ now wote I neuer what for to do ſythe my two doughters haue me thus deceyued that I ſo moche loued and now muſt I nedes ſeke her yͭ is in an other lõde that lyghtely I lete her goo wᵗout ony rewarde or gyftes. And ſhe ſayd yͭ ſhe loued me aſmoche as ſhe ought to loue her fader by all maner of reaſon. And tho I ſholde haue axed her no more. And thoſe yͭ me other wyſe behoted thrugh theyr falſe ſpeche now haue deceyued me In this maner Leyr longe tyme began to make his moone And at the laſte he ſhope hym to the ſee ⁊ paſſed ouer into Fraunce/ and axed ⁊ aſpyed where the quene myght be foũde. And men tolde hȳ where ſhe was And whã he came to yͭ cyte yͭ ſhe was in pryuely he ſende his ſquyer vnto the quene for to tell her yͭ her fader was come to her for great nede. And whan the ſquyer came to the quene he tolde her euery deale of her ſyſters from the begynnynge vnto yͭ ende. Cordeyll the quene anone toke golde ⁊ ſyluer plente/ ⁊ toke it to yͭ ſquyer in coũſell yͭ he ſholde go into a certayn eyte ⁊ hym araye ⁊ waſſhe/ ⁊ then come agayne to her. And brynge wᵗ hym an honeſt company of knyghtes. xl. at yͤ leſt wᵗ theyr meyne. And then he ſholde ſende to her lorde the kynge ⁊ ſeyne yͤ he were come for to ſpeke with his doughter/ ⁊ her for to ſe ⁊ ſo he dyde. And whan yͤ kynge Agampe ⁊ the quene herde that they came wᵗ moche honoure they hym receyued And the kynge of Fraunce tho lete ſende through al his realme/ ⁊ cōmaunded yͤ al men ſholde be as entendāt to kynge Leyr the quenes fader in al maner of thynges as it were vnto hymſelfe. Whan kynge Leyr had dwelled there a moneth ⁊ more he tolde to yͤ kyng ⁊ to yͤ quene his doughter how his two eldeſt doughters had hȳ ſerued. Agāpe anone lete ordeyne a great hoſte of Frenſſhmen ⁊ ſende into Brytayne wᵗ Leyr yͤ quenes fader for to conquere his kyngdome agayn. And Cordeyll alſo came wᵗ her fader into Brytayne for to haue yͤ realme after her faders dethe. And anone they went to ſhyp ⁊ paſſed yͤ ſee and came into Brytayne ⁊ fought wᵗ the felons/ and them ſcomfyted ⁊ ſlewe. And tho had he his lande agayne ⁊ after lyued thre yere ⁊ helde his realme ī peas and afterwarde deyed. And ſo Cordeyll his doughter then lete entere hym with moche honoure at Leyceſtre.

¶ Anno mundi. iiij. M. iij. C. xlix. Et ante xp̄i natiuitatem. viij. C. iiij.

Amaſi⁹ ſone to Ioam reygned on the Iewes. xxix. yere/ after the whiche yͤ kyngdom of Iewes was without kynge. xiij. yere. This man worſhypped yͤ goddes of Seyr (vt pꝫ. ij. para. xv) ¶ Ieroboam ſone to Ioam reygned on Iſrael. xli. yere yͤ whiche was māly and vyctoryous. For he ouercame the kynge of Syrye/ ⁊ reſtored Iſraell ⁊ Damaſk/ after the worde of Iono yͤ prophete. But he was not good. Therfore ſayth ſaynt Auſtyn. Yf good men reygne they profyte many mē. And yf yll men reygne they hurte many men.

Anno mūdi. iiij. M. iij. C. lxxxviij. Et ante xp̄i natiuitatē. viij. C. xi.

Ozias or Azarias ſone to Amaſie reygned on the Iury. lij. yere/ the whiche lyued well afore our lorde/ of hym is none euyll thynge wryten/ but he yͤ vſurped yͤ dygnyte of preeſthode vnder Azari/ the whiche he forbode hym. For yͤ whiche cauſe our lorde ſtroke hym with a lepre (vt ptꝫ. ij. para) ¶ Ozee byſſhop ⁊ prophete was this tyme the fyrſt of yͤ. xij. yͤ was ſende agaynſt yͤ. xij. trybes ¶ Ioel yͤ ſeconde of the. xij. prophecyed of Iuda. Ananias the thyrde prophecyed agaynſt many people. Abdias the fourth of yͤ. xij. prophecyed agaynſt Edom. ¶ Zacharias ſone to Ieroboam reygned in Iſraell. vi. monethes/ yͤ whiche begā to reygne the xxxviij. yere of Ozias ⁊ was noughte in his lyuynge as his predeceſſours were. And Sellum ſlewe hym/ and reygned a moneth. And Manahen ſlewe hym/ and toke his kyngdome (vt ptꝫ. iiij. regum.) This Manahē reygned. x. yere/ yͤ whiche began to reygne yͤ. xxxix. yere of Ozias ⁊ he ruled hȳ myſcheuouſly/ our lord betoke hym in the power of the kynge of Aſſuriorū. And he payed to hym a thouſande talētes of ſyluer (vt ptꝫ. iiij. regū) ¶ Phaſeia ſone to Manahen reygned in Iſrael two yere/ ⁊ he begā to reygne yͤ. l. yere of Ozias/ ⁊ he was nought in his lyuynge ¶ Phaſe ſlewe phaſeia/ ⁊ reygned. xx. yere/ ⁊ he began to reygne yͤ. lij. yere of Ozias/ and dyde as other curſed men dyde. (Plura vide. iiij. regū) And after this Iſrael was without ony kynge. viij. yere.

¶ How Moꝛgan ⁊ Conedag neuewes to Coꝛdeyl warred on her ⁊ put her in pꝛiſõ.

THen as kyng Leyꝛ was deed Coꝛdeyl his yõgeſt doughter reygned the .x. yere of Ozyas kynge of Jury And after her reygned Conedag yͤ .xv. yere of Ozyas. This Coꝛdeyl after yͤ deth of her fader had all yͤ lãde .v. yere. And in yͤ meane tyme deyed her loꝛde Agampt kẏge of Fraũce After his deth ther came Moꝛgã ⁊ Conedag her ſyſters ſones ⁊ to her had enuyte/ foꝛ aſmoche as theyꝛ aũt had the lande/ ſo yͭ bytwene them they oꝛdeined a great power/ ⁊ ſtrongly on her warred/ ⁊ toke her ⁊ put her to deth. Tho Moꝛgã ⁊ Conedag ceaſed all yͤ lande/ ⁊ departed it bytwene them/ holdyng it .xii. yere/ ⁊ thẽ began debate bytwene them/ foꝛ Moꝛgã wolde haue al yͤ lande from beyonde Hũber yͭ Conedag held: but he came againſt hym wᵗ a great power/ ſo yͭ Moꝛgã durſt not abyde but fled into walys. And conedag purſued hym ⁊ toke hym ⁊ ſlew hym And thẽ Conedag ſeaſed all yͤ lande/ and helde it after .xxxiii. yere. And then he deyed ⁊ lyeth at newe Troy.

¶ And bycauſe yͤ mater cõteyneth mooſt cõmodyouſly togyder of yͤ kynges of Bꝛytayne now called Englonde/ bycauſe the reygne of them is not certaynly knowen. Therfoꝛe they ſhall be togyder/ tyll it be comen vnto Guenolyn kynge of Bꝛytayne/ now Englonde.

¶ How Reynolde yͭ was conedags ſone/ reygned after his fader/ ⁊ in his tyme it rayned blode thꝛe dayes in tokenynge of greate deth.

AFter this conedag reygned Reynolde his ſone yͭ was a wyſe and a hardy knyght ⁊ curteys yͭ wel ⁊ nobly gouerned yͤ lande/ ⁊ was wel beloued of his folke. And ĩ his tyme rayned blode that laſted thꝛe dayes/ as god wolde/ ⁊ ſone after there came a great deth of people. Foꝛ hooſtes wᵗout nõbꝛe of people fought/ tyl yͤ almyghty god therof toke pyte/ ⁊ tho it ceſſed. And this Reynolde regned .xvii. yere and then deyed and lyeth at yoꝛke.

¶ How Goꝛbodian reygned in peas that was Reynoldes ſone.

HEre after Reynolde reygned Goꝛbodiã his ſone .xv. yere/ and he deyed, and lyeth at yoꝛke.

¶ How Goꝛbodian had two ſones ⁊ how yͤ one ſlewe the other foꝛ to haue yͤ heritage/ ⁊ how ydoyne theyꝛ moder ſlewe that other/ wherfoꝛe yͤ lande was dyſtroyed.

SO whan this Goꝛbodian was deed his two ſones that he had became ſtoute and pꝛoude/ and euer warred togyder foꝛ the lande. And yͤ one was called Ferres/ ⁊ that other Poꝛres And this Ferres wolde haue all the lande but that other wolde not ſuffre hym This Ferres had a felonous hert/ ⁊ thought through treaſon to ſle his bꝛoder. But pꝛyuely he wente into Fraunce/ and there abode wᵗ the kynge Sywarde/ tyll yͭ vpon a tyme whan he came agayne to fyght with his bꝛoder Ferres. And there full euyll it happened hym/ foꝛ he was the fyꝛſte ſlayne.

¶ Whã ydoyne theyꝛ moder wyſt yͭ Poꝛres was deed/ ſhe made great ſoꝛow/ foꝛ bycauſe that ſhe loued hym moꝛe than yͤ other. And thought hym foꝛ to ſlee pꝛyuely. And pꝛyuely ſhe came to her ſone vpon a nyght wᵗ two knyues/ ⁊ therwᵗ cut his thꝛote wᵗ the body into ſmall peces. Who herde euer of ſuche a curſed moder/ that ſlewe with her owne handes her owne ſone And long tyme after laſted the repꝛefe to her/ bycauſe that ſhe murdꝛed the one ſone foꝛ the loue of the other/ and ſo loſte them bothe.

¶How foure kynges curteyſly helde all Brytayne / ⁊ what were theyr names / ye ſhall here after.

Clotē.Dawalier.

AS the two bretherne were deed / they lefte neyther ſone nor doughter / nor no kynne for to enheryte yͤ lande. And for as moche as the ſtrongeſt dyſcōfyted the febleſt ⁊ toke all theyr landes ſo yͭ in euery cōtree they had greate warre ymonge them / but ymonge al other ther were foure in the cōtree yͭ ouercame all yͤ other / ⁊ through theyr myght ⁊ ſtrēgth they toke al yͤ landes / ⁊ eche of them toke a certayne cōtree / ⁊ called themſelf kynges. And one of them was called Scater ⁊ he was kynge of Scotlande / ⁊ another was called Dawalier / ⁊ he was kynge of Logers ⁊ of all yͤ lande yͭ was Lotryns Brutes ſone / the .iij. was called Rudac / ⁊ he was kynge of Wales ⁊ the fourth was called Cloten / ⁊ was called kynge of Cornewayll. But this Clotē ſhold haue had al the lande by right / bycauſe there was no mā that wyſt ſo ryght an heyre as he was. But they yͭ were ſtrongeſt ſet lytell by the febleſt / ⁊ therfore this Cloten had no more lande ymonge them but Cornewayle.

¶Of kynge Donebāt that was Clotēs ſone how he wanne the lande.

THis Cloten had a ſone that was called Donebant / ⁊ after yͤ dethe of his fader became an hardy man / fayre ⁊ curteys / ſoo that he paſſed all the other kynges ī worthyneſſe. And whā he was knyght he bethought hym yͭ whā his fader lyued / he was mooſt ryghtfull heyre of all the lande / ⁊ ſholde haue had it by ryght. But yͤ other kynges as ſayd is kept it from hym. Wherfore this Donebāt ordeyned hym a great power / ⁊ conquered fyrſt all the lande of Logers. And afterwarde he wolde haue conquered all yͤ lāde of Scotland ⁊ Wales. And Scater came with his mē ⁊ gaue hym batayl. And Rudac came agayn with his Walſhmen for to helpe hym. But ſo it befell yͭ Rudac was ſlayne / ⁊ alſo Scater in playne batayll. And ſo Donebant had the vyctory ⁊ conquered all the lande / ⁊ it was neuer ſo well ⁊ ſo peaſybly ruled afore.

¶How Donebant was the fyrſte kynge that euer bare crowne of golde in Brytayne.

THis Donebant lete make hym a crowne of golde / ⁊ ware yͤ crowne vpon his heed as neuer dyd kyng before ⁊ ordeyned a ſtatute / that and a man had done neuer ſo moche harme and myghte come into the Temple / there ſholde noo man hym myſdoo / but go there in ſaftee and in peas / and after go into what lāde or countree that he lyked beſte / without ony harme or ſcathe / ⁊ yf ony man ſet ony hande vpon hym/ he then ſholde loſe his lyfe. And this Donebāt made the towne of Malmeſbury/ ⁊ the towne alſo of yͤ vyſe. And whan he had reygned well ⁊ worthely.xl. yere he dyed ⁊ lyeth at new troy.

¶ How Brenne ⁊ Belyn departed bytwene them the lande after the deth of Donebant theyr fader And of the warre bytwene them.

SO whan Donebāt was deed his ſones departed the lāde bytwene theym/ as the fader had ordeyned/ ſo that Belyn his eldeſt ſone had all the lande of Brytayne from Humbar ſouthwarde. ⁊ his broder Brenne had al the lande from Humbar vnto Scotlande. But for aſmoche as Belyn had the better parte Brēne therfore waxed wroothe/ ⁊ wold haue had more of yͤ lande/ ⁊ Belyn his broder wolde graunt hym no more/ wherfore warre aroſe ymonge them two. But Brēne the yonger broder had no myght ayenſt Belyn/ ⁊ therfore Brenne thrugh counſayll of his folke wente from thens in to Norway to yͤ kynge Olſynges/ ⁊ prayed hym of helpe ⁊ ſocoure to conquere all yͤ lande on Belyn his broder/ vpon yͤ couenaūt yͭ he wold haue his doughter to wyf/ ⁊ the kyng Olſynges hym graūted. And belin anone as his broder was gone to norway he ceaſed all yͤ lande of Northumberland into his hande/ ⁊ ſtuffed yͤ caſtels/ ⁊ kept the coſtes of yͤ ſee/ yͭ Brenne ſholde not aryue on no ſyde but yͭ he were taken. The kyng Olſinges lete aſſemble a great hoſt ⁊ delyuered his doughter to Brenne ⁊ all the people yͭ he had aſſēbled This damoyſell Samye had longe tyme loued a kynge yͤ whiche was called Gutlagh/ and to hym ſhe tolde al her counſayl how yͭ Brēne ſholde her haue/ ⁊ her lede with hym for euermore/ and ſoo he ſholde leſe her but yͭ ſhe myght forſake Brenne. And whan yͤ Gutlagh had herd this tydynges/ he lay for to eſpye Brenne with as many ſhyps as he myght make and haue. Soo yͤ two fletes met togyder/ and longe tyme they fought/ ſo that Brennes men tourned agayne and were dyſcomfyted. And kyng Gutlagh toke Samye and put her into his ſhyppe. And Brenne ſhamefully fled thens as a man dyſcomfyted And this ſame Gutlagh wold haue gone into his owne countree/ but there came vpon hym ſo great a tempeſt that laſted fyue dayes ſo that through that tempeſt he was dryuē into Brytayne with thre ſhyppes and no mo. And tho that kepte the coſtes of yͤ ſee toke Gutlagh and Samye and al his folke/ and them preſented to Belyn. And Belyn put them in pryſon.

¶ How Belyn lete depart out of his land kynge Gutlagh of Denmarke and Samye.

NOt longe after Brēne came agayne with a great nauy/ and ſende to his broder Belyn that he ſhold yelde hym agayne his lande to his wyfe ⁊ his folke ⁊ his caſtelles alſo/ or elles he wolde dyſtroy his lāde. ¶ Belyn dradde nothynge his malyce/ and wolde nothynge do after that he had ſayd. wherfore Brenne came with his folke and fought with Belyn. ⁊ then this Brenne was dyſcomfyted/ and all his folke ſlayn. And hymſelfe fledde wͭ .xii. men into Fraunce. And this Belyn yͭ was Brennes broder wente then to yorke and toke counſeyll what he ſholde do with kynge Gutlagh of Denmarke. For kyng Gutlagh profered to become his man/ ⁊ for to holde his lande and tenementes of hym/ yeldynge yerely. M.li. of ſyluer for euer/ ⁊ for ſurenneſſe of this couenaunt to be kept Gutlagh ſholde brynge hym good hoſtage/and to hym ſholde do homage/⁊ his folke. And yet he ſholde ſwere on a boke ỷ it ſholde neuer be broke nor fayled/ Belyn tho by cōſayll of his folke graunted hym his aſkynge/⁊ ſo Gutlagh became his man. And Belin vndertoke of hȳ his homage by an othe/⁊ by wrytynge ỷ ſame couenauntes. And vpon theſe couenaūtes kynge Gutlagh toke Danye/ ⁊ his folke ⁊ went thens vnto Denmark agayne. Euermore after were ỷ couenaūtes holden ⁊ the truage payed tyll the tyme ỷ Honcius was kynge of Denmarke. And alſo of this londe through his wyfe Sylueburh ỷ he had ſpouſed for ſhe was ryght ayre of this lōde. This Belyn thē dwelled i peas ⁊ worſhypfully hym held amonge his barōs. And he made four ryall wayes one from the eeſt in to ỷ weſt ⁊ that was called watlyng ſtrete. And another from ỷ north vnto ỷ ſouth/⁊ that is called Ikelme ſtrete. And two other wayes he made in boſſynge through out the lōde/ỷ one is called Foſſe. and that other Foſſe dyke. And he maynteyned well the good lawes ỷ Donebāt his fader hadde madde ⁊ ordeyned in his tyme as is ſayd

¶ How accordement was made bytwene Brenne and Belyn through Cornewen ỷ was theyr moder.

BRenne ỷ was Belyns broder had longe tyme dwelled in Fraunce/⁊ there had cōquered a greate lordſhyp thorough mariage. For he was duke of Burgoyne by the doughter of duke Fedyn ỷ he had ſpouſed whiche was ryght heyre of the londe. And this Brenne ordeyned a great power of his folke/⁊ alſo of Fraūce/and came into this lōde for to fyght wᵗ Belyn his broder/⁊ Belyn came agaynſt hym alſo wᵗ a great power to haue gyuen hym batayll. But theyr moder Cornewē that tho lyued had herde that one broder wolde haue dyſtroyed the other ſhe wente bytwene her ſones/⁊ made them accorde with moche payne. So ỷ at ỷ laſt tho .ii. bretherne wᵗ moche blyſſe wente togyder in to newe Troy/now called Lōdon/where they dwelled a yere. And after they toke theyr cōſayll for to goo ⁊ conquere all Fraunce/⁊ ſo they dyd/in brennyng townes ⁊ dyſtroyenge the londe in lengthe ⁊ brede. And the kynge of Fraūce gaue thē batayl with his power/but he was ouercome/⁊ gaue truage vnto Belyn ⁊ to his brother. And after ỷ they wente forth in to Rome/⁊ conquered it ⁊ all Lumbardy with Germany. And toke homage of all the cheſe barons ⁊ lordes. And after they came into this londe of Brytayne. where they made gode chere in reſt. And thēne made Brenne the towne of Bryſtow/and after he wēte ouer to his owne lordſhyp ⁊ there dwelled he al his lyfe. And Belin dwelled at newe Troy/⁊ there he made a fayre gate that is called Beliges gate after his owne name. And whā this Belin had reygned nobly .xi. yere he deyed ⁊ lyeth at newe Troy.

¶ How kynge Cormbrat⁹ ſlewe the kyng of Denmarke/for bycauſe ỷ he wolde not paye his truage as he ſholde.

AND after this Belyn regned his sone Coꝛmbꝛatus a good mā ⁊ a worthy. And yͤ kynge of Dēmark wolde not paye to hym his truage yͭ is to saye/ a thousande poūde as he had sworne by other for to paye it/ ⁊ also by wrytynge certyfyed to Belyn his fader. wherfoꝛe he was euyll apayed ⁊ wrothe/ and assembled a great hoste of Bꝛytons ⁊ wente in to Dēmark ⁊ slew yͤ kyng Gutlagh/ ⁊ brought yͭ londe in subieccyon all newe. And toke of yͤ folke feautes ⁊ homage/ ⁊ after wēt ayen in to his owne lōde. And as he came south by Orkeney/ he foūde.xxx.shyppes full of men ⁊ women besyde the coste of the see And yͤ kyng asked what they were And an Erle that was mayster of theym all curteysly answered vnto the kynge ⁊ sayd That they were exiled out of Spayne ⁊ so yͭ they had trauayled halfe a yere and moꝛe in yͤ see/ to wyte yf they myght fynde ony kynge in ony londe yͭ of theym wolde haue pyte oꝛ mercy to gyue them ony londe in ony countree where in they myght dwel ⁊ haue rest/ and become his lyege mē/ and to hym wolde do homage ⁊ feaute whyle yͭ he lyued ⁊ to his heires after hym/ ⁊ of hym ⁊ of his heyres hold yͤ lōde. And whan yͤ kynge this herde/ he had pety of hym/ ⁊ gaue theym an yle all wyldernesse/ ther yͭ no mā was dwellyng but only wylde beestes. And yͤ Erle than thāked moche yͤ kyng ⁊ became his mā and dyde hym homage and feaute/ ⁊ toke all his folke ⁊ wente in to yͤ same yle. And yͤ Erle was called Irlamall/ ⁊ therfoꝛe he lete cal the londe Irlonde after his owne name. This kynge Coꝛmbꝛatus came ayen in to his londe ⁊ regned.xxv.yere/ ⁊ after he deyed and lyeth at newe Troy.

¶ Anno mundi.iiii.M.iiii.C.xl.Et ante xpi natiuitatē.vii.C.lvi.

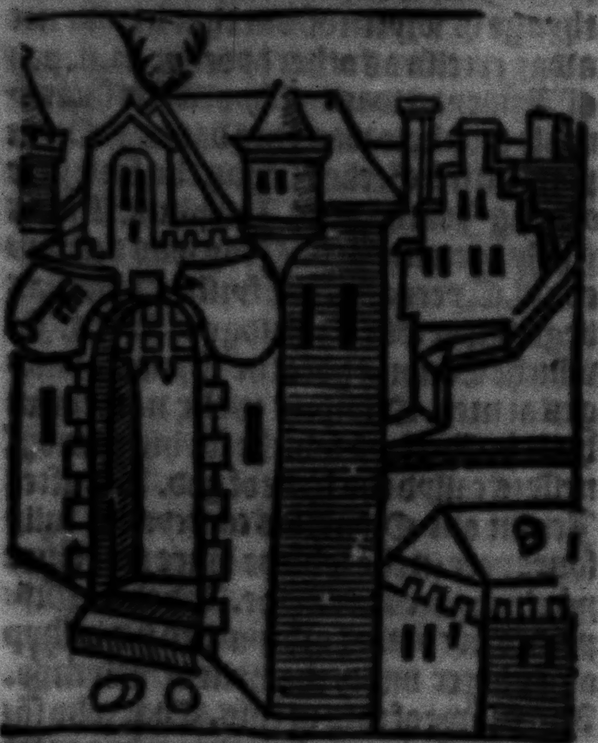
IOathā sone to Osyas regned in yͤ Jury.xvi.yere/ of this Joathā nothynge is wꝛyten of/ but that he toke not away excelsa as other dyde (vt pꝛ.ii.pa) ¶ Amaryas was bysshop. And ysaias yͤ noble pꝛophete was i his dayes ¶ Olympias with yͤ Grekes began the fyrst yere of kyng Joathā after Josephus. And as yͤ holy doctour Beda Troy was destroyed.iiii.C.yere afoꝛe the fyrste Olympias begā vnder Esalo a Judge of Athēs. In whiche Coꝛibus gate the chyualry amōges al men. Olimpus is the name of an hylle in Grecia/ yͤ whiche for his preciousnesse is callyd the hylle of god. And after Jerom one Olympias conteyneth fully foure yere in the whiche foure yere foure yerely pꝛyces are made. And these Olympiades are places oꝛdeyned to yͤ worshyp of Jubyter vnder the hylle of Olympo. And yͤ lawe of this is this. That who soeuer is beste in ony chyualry/ what gyfte soeuer he desyꝛeth he shall haue.

¶ Anno mūdi.iiii.M.iiii.C.lvi. Et ante xpi natiuitatē vii.C.xliiii.

IOathas sone to Achā regned on yͤ Jewes.xvi.yere/ of this Achaz nothynge that is good is wrytyn foꝛ he foꝛsoke our loꝛde. And our loꝛde smote hym with his owne people strōgely and with the kynges of Siria (vt pꝛ.ii.pa.xxviii). ¶ Achiud this tyme was bysshop. Osee kynge of Israel regned.ix.yere yͤ whiche begā to regne yͤ.xii.yere of Achā kyng of Jewes. This Osee dradde not god foꝛ he lyued nought. And he was yͤ last kyng of Israell. And in yͤ.ix.yere of his regne he was takē of Salmanasar. And Israel was translated in to Assirias (vt habet.iiii.regum.xvii).

¶ Anno mundi.iiii.M.iiii.C.lxii.Et ante xpi natiuitatem.vii.C.xl.

¶ Roma caput mundi.



AFter Euſeby Rome was made in the hyl of Palatyn ÿ fourth yere of Acha kynge of Jewes of two brederne Romul⁹/ and Remus ÿ .xi. kal. Maii. ÿ .vii. Olympyades begynnynge. Josephus ⁊ Bede ſayth the .vi. Olympyades/ and ſo they differ a yere. Neuertheles it is redde other men to haue reygned aboute ÿ place myghtely in ytaly. That is to wyte Jan⁹. Picus. Fau⁹ Latin⁹/ the whiche vnto Eneas reygned about two hondred yere. And then afterwarde from this Eneas to Romul⁹/ it was reygned vnder .xv. gouernours .iii. C. xxxii. yere. After ÿ fro the cyte was made vnto ÿ laſt yere of Tarquyne the proude/ it was reygned vnder vii. kynges aboutes .ii. C. and .xliiii. yere. Then afterwarde vnder Senatoures ⁊ counſaylers vnto Julius cezar Emperoure/ by foure hondred .lxiiii. yere. Romulus the fyrſt of Romaynes/ of whome they ben called in latyn Romanes/ made ÿ cyte to be named Rome after his name. ¶ The whiche gadered togyder ÿ people on euery ſyde an. C. of the wyſeſt men he choſe/ thrughe the counſayll of whome all thynges be dyſpoſed/ the whiche he named Senatours for ÿ tyme of theyr aege And he made theyr names to be wryten in golde letters/ wherfore we wryte noble faders/ ⁊ thynges ſoo yet. Also he called a .M. men of armes myllites (a numero millenario) But theſe were no noble blode. As ſayth Auſtyn ſayeth de .ci. dei. Alſo there was longe warre betwyxt ÿ Sabyns ⁊ them For Romulus toke many women of ÿ noble blode of Sabyns/ ⁊ maryed them to ÿ vnnoble blood Of this Romul⁹. Oroſi⁹ wryteth inthe .iiii. (de pz in libro ſuo.)

¶ About this tyme Merodach ÿ kyng of Babylon ſende great gyftes to Ezechie ÿ kynge of Jewes (de pz .iiii. regū. xx) And then the kyngdome of Babylon began.

¶ Anno mundi .iiii. M. lxxvi. Et ante xpi natiuitate. vii. C. xxvii.

EZechias ÿ .xiiii. kyg of Jewes gode chylde of a curſed fader reygned w a partyte herte to our lorde. And he reſtored ÿ hous of god/ hauynge not his lyke amonge ÿ kynges of Jewes/ therfore our lorde gloryfyed hym. For whan Sennacheryb kyng of Aſſurior came ayenſt Ezechias w a myghty hooſt our lord ſmote his people ⁊ ſlewe an .C. lxxxv. of fyghtynge men/ ⁊ Sennacherib fled ſhamfully (de pz .iiii. regū. xix. ⁊ .ii. para. xxxii) Naboch this tyme was hye byſſhop there.

¶ Anno mūdi .iiii. M. v. C. l. Et ante xpi natiuitate. vi. C. lxxxxviii.

MAnaſſes kynge of Jewes reygned lv. yere/ ⁊ this Manaſſes was yt chylde of a good fader / for he dyde more curſedly than ony that was before hym. For he ſlewe ẏ prophetes of god / ẏ ẏ ſtretes in Iheruſalem were all blody. And he made yſay ẏ prophete to be ſawen to peces wᵗ a ſawe of tree. Wherfore ẏ kynge of Aſſuriorū waſted ẏ Jury / ⁊ toke Manaſſes ⁊ put hym in pryſon. And after Manaſſes repented his treſpace ⁊ cryed for mercy to god / ⁊ was herde. Then he was reſtored to his kyngedome / ⁊ he amēded his lyfe (vt ptz.iiii.regū.⁊.ii.para.xxxiii) ¶ Mellum was byſſhop / ⁊ Echias after hȳ. This tyme ẏ.vii.wyſe men had worſhyp in Grece.ſ.Tale / Solō / Chylō / Periādus / Cleobolus / Byas / Pitacꝰ. This Talus founde fyrſte the defaute of ẏ ſonne ⁊ the moone (vide plu.auguſt.viii.de ci.dei) Numa ẏ ſecūde kynge this tyme reygned in Rome.xliii.yere / the whiche was a great worſhypper of falſe goddes. He fulfylled Rome ſo full / ẏ he myght haue no place for hym ſelfe to dwel in. This mā put January ⁊ February to ẏ begynnynge of ẏ yere (Uide plura in auguſt.de ciui.dei) Aboue all reaſon it is meruayle that ſuche men ſo excedynge in wyt in all thynges that was yll receded fro ẏ knowlege of ẏ very god. ¶ Amon kynge of Jewes reygned two yere / the whiche was nought in his lyuynge / and he was ſtryken of his ſeruauntes / and he deyed without ony repentaunce.

¶ Anno mundi.iiii.M.v.C.lviii.Et ante xp̄i natiuitate.vi.C.xli.

IOſias the ſone of Amon at.viii.yere of his aege began to reygne and reygned.xxxi.yere / a good chylde of a peruerſe fader / in his yonge age he ſought ẏ grace of god / ⁊ in ẏ grace laudably abode vnto his ende. His relygyous lyfe ⁊ his workes ye maye ſe (iiii.regum.xxii.⁊.ii.para.xxxiiii.) ¶ Azarias ẏ ſone of Elchie was byſſhop ¶ Tobias about this tyme deyed / ⁊ he was a very holy man. And he prophecyed ẏ dyſtruccyō of Jeruſalem. ¶ Tulius hoſtilius was ẏ thyrde kynge in Rome. And ſeynt Auſtyn ſayth in his boke de ciui.dei. ẏ from Rome was made vnto Auguſt ẏ Emperour / there was ſo contynuall batayle / ẏ it was taken for a meruayle / ⁊ they were one yere wᵗout batayle / excepte.xliii.in Nume dayes / in the whiche was contynuall peas. And this Tulius bycauſe he had reſte / he dyd curſedly to his neyghbours / and thē he was ſlayne and all his houſholde wᵗ a ſtroke of lyghtenȳge. ¶ Nabugodonoſor this tyme was kynge of Babylon / a māly mā and a vyctoryous. For he was the ſcourge of oure lorde to punyſſhe ẏ ſynnes of many people. This man was kynge of Babylō ⁊ after he cōquered ẏ kyngedome of Aſſuriorū ⁊ made it one monarche. But many wayes ſcrypture ſpeketh of this man / now good / now euyll / ⁊ for bycauſe ſcrypture concludeth ẏ he ended his lyfe in ẏ louynge of god / by the prayer of Danyell and in ẏ knowlege of one very god / ſome doctours ſaye / he is ſaued / ⁊ ſome ſaye it is doubte. ¶ Ancꝰ Marcius ẏ.iiii.kynge of Rome reygned.xxiii.yere. This man for grace ⁊ truſt ẏ he had to Tarquinus Pryſcus made hym ẏ gouernoure of his chyldren ⁊ ayres ⁊ he yll rewarded hym. ¶ Danyell yet a chylde delyuered ſeynt Suſan / ⁊ ſtode in ẏ conceyte of ẏ kynge with his felowes / and after he dyſcuſſed the dreames of ẏ kȳge ⁊ was made a mā of greate honeſte (vt pz Danielis primo) Joathas ẏ ſecūde ſone of Joſie reygned on ẏ Jewes thre monthes / ⁊ was made kynge by the people / ⁊ he was not good. And Pharao toke hym ⁊ ladde hym in to Egypt / ⁊ made his elder broder kȳge (vt ptz.iiii.regū.xxiii.

¶ Anno mundi.iiii.M.v.C.lxxxviii. Et ante xp̄i natiuitatē.v.C.xi.

IOachym or Ieconias ẏ sone of Iosie was made kynge of Iewes by Pharao ⁊ reygned.xi.yere. And bycauſe he lyued nought/ne herd not ẏ ꝓphetes. Nabugodonoſor toke hȳ ⁊ made hȳ his ſeruaūt.iii.yere. And he rebelled agaynſt hym afterwarde/⁊ he toke hym ⁊ was aboute to haue ladde hym to Babylō/but his coūſeyle was chaūged/⁊ ſo Nabugodonoſor ſlewe hym in Ieruſalē ⁊ caſt his body ouer ẏ walles after the prophecy of Ieremy/⁊ toke wͭ hym ẏ veſſels of oure lorde Ihū (vt pz.ii.para.vlt.) ¶ Saraias was byſſhop. Urias prophet was ſlayne of Iecony ẏ kynge/⁊ Ieremy was preſt. ¶ Ioach ẏ ſone to Ieconyas regned in ẏ Iury.iii.monthes ⁊ lyued nought/⁊ therfore anon he was meued ẏ he ſhold regne no longer/⁊ was bounden ⁊ tranſlated in to Babylon/⁊ many wͭ hym were trāſlated (vt pz.iiii.regum.xxiiii.) ¶ Danyell/Ananias/Azarias/Miſaell/Ezechyell/⁊ Mardocheus/all theſe wͭ Ioachym the kynge were lad into Babylon/yōge chyldrē/for bycauſe they were of ẏ noble blod.

¶ Anno mundi.iiii.M.vi.C. Et ante xp̄i natiuitatem.vi.C.

SEdechias the thyrde ſone of Ioſie regned on ẏ Iewes.xi.yere/this Sedechias was a miſcheuous mā in his lyuynge. And he wolde not here Ieremy the prophete/therfore he peryſſhed wretchedly/⁊ al the Iury with hym. And his eyen were put out/and his chyldrē were ſlayne (vt pz.iiii.reg. ¶ Ioſedech ẏ ſone of Azarie was byſſhop/⁊ was tranſlated fro Ieruſalē by Nabugodonoſor into Babylō. ¶ Abacuk ꝓphecyed agaynſt Nabuch at Babylō/⁊ ther be opynyōs what tyme this Abacuk was. And this Abacuk broughte mete to Danyell whan he was put to ẏ lyons after Jerō. And here endeth ẏ.iiii.aege/⁊ ẏ hyſtory of Regum

¶ Here begynneth the fyfth aege of the worlde durynge to the Natyuyte of Cryſte.

Tranſmigracio.

THis tyme the temple of Salomō was brente of ẏ Caldees ⁊ Ieruſalē was dyſtroyed/this tēple ſtode.cccc.x.xiii.yere/ẏ is to wyt/fro ẏ fyrſt makynge/ẏ whiche was made ẏ fourth yere of Salomon. And fro ẏ deſtruccyon ẏ whiche was made by Tytus/ẏ is to wyt.xlii yere after ẏ paſſyon of cryſte. ¶ Priſcus Torquinꝰ ẏ.v.kynge of Rome reygned. And he made Capitoliū (quaſi caput ſoliū) For in ẏ grounde worke was foūde an heed wͭout ony body/as for prophecye of thynges to come. For there afterwarde ẏ ſenatours ſate as one heed of all ẏ worlde ¶ This tyme thre chyldren were caſte in to a furneys brennynge/⁊ wͭ a myracle they were delyuered/as it is ſayde (in Danie.i. ¶ Nabugodonoſor ẏ ſone of Nabugodonoſor the myghty reygned in Babylon/this mā made an hangȳge gardē wͭ myghty coſtes for his wyfe/and many merueylous thynges he dyde. So that he wolde be named to excede hercules in his greatneſſe and ſtrengthe. ¶ Euilmerodach broder vnto the later Nabugodonoſor reygned in Babylon. This man agayne. His fader cōmaūded it ſholde be buryed. This Cambyſes made a curſed Judge to be fleyed or hylte a lyue/ & made his ſone to ſyt on his faders ſkynne that thrugh ÿ drede he ſholde drede falſhede & Judge ryghtwyſly. This Cābyſes had many names in holy ſcrypture in ÿ boke of Eſdre. Artharxerſes or Aſſuerus in hyſtoria Judith ÿ was done vnder hym he called Nabugodonoſor/ or Olyfernes the prȳce of his chyualry ſubdued many landes to his lorde. And at ÿ laſte he came to Bethulee/ & there was ſlayne of Judith a woman (vt pȝ Judith.ii.& .xiii.) ¶ Smerdes reygned in Perſes halfe a yere.

¶ Darius reygned at ÿ Perſes/ ÿ whiche by ÿ mocyon of Zorobabell cōmaūded the worke of ÿ temple to be taken agayne/ & cōmaūded his prynces ÿ on no wyſe they ſholde let it/ but ſholde helpe it in all that they coude (Vide plura in Eſdre.v.&.vi. ſꝫ ambiguū ꝓpter diuerſitatē doctoꝝ.)

¶ Circa annū mūdi.iiii.M.vii.C.xxxiiii
Et ante xp̄i natiuitatē.iiii.C.lxv.

Abiuth ſone to Zorobabell of ÿ lyne of cryſt was about this tyme. For of hȳ & of other folowynge vnto Joſeph nothynge is had in ſcrypture/ but ÿ Math. the euāgelyſte nombreth them in ÿ Genelogy/ & therfore ÿ certayne tyme of the duely cañ not be knowne. ¶ Joachym this tyme byſſhop after Joſephus was called Joſedoch/ vnder whome Jheruſalem was buylded agayne (vt dicit.& hoc vꝫ pȝ Neemie.xii.) In ÿ .ii.C.& .xliiii. yere after ÿ Rome was made/ ÿ Romayns ordeyned two conſules in ÿ ſtede of theyr kynge/ ÿ whiche ſholde gouerne one yere alone leſt ÿ by taryēg they ſholde be proude/ & ÿ ÿ one ſholde correct ÿ other yf he exceded or erred. ¶ Brutus was ÿ fyrſt conſule/ & Lucius the ſecōde. And then was there a man ÿ was called Dictator/ ÿ name of an offyce/ ÿ whiche ſholde go wt the people agaynſt theyr enmyes. ¶ Titus. Puphis. Marc' conſules. ¶ Then after the Romayns cōplayned greatly on ÿ condicyons of ÿ Cōſules. And then ÿ power was put to.x.men to an exceedynge coſte to ÿ comyn people. For euerychone of the wente lyke a kynge/ & nede cauſed them to leue ÿ dignyte. And they truſted neuer to reſt the warre was ſo ſtronge agaynſt them. ¶ Artharxerſes was kynge of Perſarū/ vnder whome Eſdras came to Jheruſalem. And Neemias was butteler to the ſame kynge. whō afterwarde he ſende te buylde ÿ walles of Jheruſalē. ¶ Xerſes reygned after hym two monethes.

¶ Segdianus.vii.monethes/ and lytell they dyd.

¶ Circa annū mundi.iiii.M.vii.C.lix.
Et ante xp̄i natiuitatē.iiii.C.xl.

Elyac is reherſed in ÿ lyne of Cryſt in Math.i. And more of hȳ is not had in ſcrypture. ¶ Eſdras a holi mā & cōnynge/ & worſhypfully was had amōge the people. This man came frō Babylō with other. And he meued wt very charyte went agayne to Babylon/ ÿ he myght wynne more of Iſraell/ & ſaue ÿ ſoules & brynge them home wt hym. In this tyme he repeyred ÿ lawe & ÿ holy bokes ÿ whiche the Caldees had brente/ & an happy wytneſſe to al ÿ worlde he lefte in ſcrypture. He founde newe letters/ & lyghter in facyon/ ÿ whiche though the holy ghoſt fulfylled he came agayne to Jheruſalem with a great multytude/ & with the kynges preuylege/ ÿ he ſholde teche ÿ people the lawe ÿ he had repeyred. And there he deyed in a good aege. ¶ Neemias an Hebrewe butteler of kynge Artharxerſes at his lordes cōmaūdement went from Ba bylon into Iheruſalē. Wherof he had .xii. yere ẏ ledynge of ẏ people. And ẏ .v. yere he began to repeyre ẏ gates ⁊ ẏ walles of Iheruſalem ẏ whiche worke he ended in ii. yere ⁊ .iiii. monethes / ⁊ ẏ wᵗ greter impedymentes. For ẏ halfe of ẏ people ſtode armed wᵗout ẏ cyte to withſtāde ẏ people of other nacyōs / intēdynge to deſtroy them / ⁊ ẏ other parte laboured in armes holdynge in the one hande ſtones for walles / ⁊ in the notable other hande a ſwerde or nyghe by it (Vide plura libro ſuo.) ¶ Permenides a philoſopher / ⁊ namely in mortal thynges was about this tyme Socrates a phyloſopher / whiche underſtode moche of the power of god / ⁊ he was Platoes mayſter. Democritus Ypocras and other / of whome the noble workes as bode were alſo.

¶ Circa annum mūdi .iiii. M. viii. C. Et ante xp̄i natiuitatē .iii. C. lxxxx.

AZor is reherced in ẏ lyne of Cryſte in math. i. but nothynge of his dedes is wryten in ẏ ſcrypture. Elyaſyb or Elyſaphat ſucceded Ioachym in the byſſhopryche (vt dicit Euſebiꝰ ⁊ magiſter hiſto.) ¶ Camillus was dictator at Rome / in whoſe dayes myſcheuous playes were ordeyned ẏ the peſtylēce ſholde ceſſe at Rome. Of theſe playes Auſtyn treateth dylygently / in reprouynge ẏ falſhed of ẏ goddes / ẏ whiche deſyreth to be pleaſed wᵗ ſuche wretched playes / ſo ſhamefully theſe playes were vſed wᵗ naked mē and women / ẏ honeſt men ⁊ womē wolde not be at thoſe playes / ne yet beholde them. Vide plura in Aug. de ci. dei.) ¶ Darius Notus reygned on the Perſes .xix. yere ¶ Plato ẏ diuyne phyloſopher ⁊ Ariſtotele his dyſcyple were this tyme famous clerkes. ¶ Titus Quitus was Dictator at Rome ⁊ he was a couetous mā whom Auſtyn de ci. dei. bryngeth in agaynſt couetous ⁊ proude Cryſten men. ¶ Gaius was a Senatoure vnder whome was a great batayle ayenſt ẏ kynge of Turcon. And .viii. M. men of theym were taken. ¶ Marcꝰ Valeriꝰ was alſo a noble Senatoure of Rome / ẏ whiche wᵗ .lx. M. Romayns fought wᵗ ẏ Frenſſhmen ⁊ had the better ⁊ ſlewe many of thē. ¶ Arthaxerſes kynge of Perſes called agayne to his empyre Egypte. And he put Nactanabo the kynge in Ethyopia / ⁊ many Iewes in to traſmygracyon. Alſo he ſende Vagoſum a pryce ouer Flom Iordan to aſke agayne ẏ trybute ẏ was forgoten to Eſdra ẏ was ẏ .vii. yere rente (ꝓpter ſabbā terre. ¶ Arſamus ſucceded hym / ⁊ reygned a yere. ¶ Darius ẏ ſone of Arſamus reygned wᵗ the Perſes .xxiiii. yere. This Darius was a myghty man ⁊ bolde / ẏ whiche aſked of the Grekes a Trybute / ẏ was ẏ cauſe of ẏ deſtruccyon of the monarche of Perſarū / for it was tranſlated to ẏ Grekes / after ẏ prophecye of Daniel For it is ſayd / ẏ Darius brought .xv. hondred thouſande fyghtynge men / whome all Alexandre ſlewe. ¶ Iodas the ſone of Elyaſaphat was hyghe byſſhop in Iheruſalem in tyme of Mardachin. Iohannes his ſone ſucceded hym. ¶ Ariſtoteles the mooſt ſubtyll ⁊ famous phyloſopher lerned this tyme. Senocrate ẏ mooſt chaſt phyloſopher was this tyme / wᵗ dyuerſe other.

¶ Bycauſe ẏ kynges of Brytayne nexte after lyued in peas mooſte parte ⁊ lytell of them is wryten / therfore they ſhalbe ſet togyder tyl it be come to Caſſybolon kynge of Brytayne / the whiche was broder to Lud.

AND whan Combratus was deed reygned Guentholen / that was his ſone a man of good condycyons / and well byloued / ⁊ he gouerned yͤ lande well and wyſely. And he reygned .xxv. yere / ⁊ after dyed / ⁊ lyeth at newe Troye.

¶ How kynge Seyſell reygned ⁊ wel gouerned the lande after Guentolen.

After Guentolen reygned Seyſel his ſone / ⁊ worthyly gouerned yͤ lande as his fader had done before hym. And he reygned .xv. yere / ⁊ deyed ⁊ lyeth at newe Troye.

¶ How kymor reygned after Seyſel his fader / ⁊ he begate Howan that regned in peas after his fader.

Bymor regned after his fader Seyſell well ⁊ nobly .xix. yere in peas ⁊ then after hym reygned Howan his ſone .x. yere / ⁊ dyed ⁊ lyeth at Kaldowne.

¶ How kynge Morwith deyed throughe myſchaunce of a beeſt.

Morwith reygned after Howan / ⁊ he became ſo wycked yͭ vengeaunce fell on hym. For on a tyme as he wente by yͤ ſee ſyde he met with a great beeſt / yͭ was blacke and horryble. And he wende it had ben a whale of yͤ ſe / ⁊ bent an arblaſt ⁊ wolde haue ſlayne yͤ beeſt with his quarell but he myght not ſmyte hym / ⁊ whā he had ſhot al his quarelles yͤ beeſt anone came to hym ⁊ deuoured hym alyue / and ſo he deyed for his wyckedneſſe after he had reygned .ix. yere / by goddes ſtroke.

¶ Of Grandobodiam yͭ was Morwith ſone that made Cambrydge.

Whan this Morwith was deed / yͤ Brytons crowned Grandobodiā his ſone / ⁊ this Grandobodyam longe tyme reygned in goodnes / ⁊ made tēples ⁊ townes / this Gorbobodiam made yͤ townes of Cambrydge ⁊ Grantham ⁊ was well byloued of ryche ⁊ pore. And he had .iiii. ſones. Artogaill. Heſyder. Higam⁹ ⁊ Petik. And whā he had reygned .xl. yere he deyed / ⁊ lyeth at newe Troye.

¶ Of Artogayl yͭ was Grādobodians ſone / how he was made kynge / ⁊ after put downe for his wyckedneſſe.

Then reyned Artogayll after Grādobodiā .v. yere / and he became ſo wycked yͭ yͤ Brytons wolde not ſuffer hȳ to be kȳge / but put hym downe / ⁊ made Heſyder his broder kȳge / ⁊ he became ſo merciable yͭ they called hym kynge of pyte. And whā he had regned .v. yere he had ſo great pyte of his broder Artogayl that was kynge before yͭ he forſoke his dygnyte ⁊ toke his broder yͤ crowne agayne / ⁊ made hym kynge agaynſt all yͤ Brytons wyll. And after Artogayll became ſo gode of cōdycyons yͭ all yͤ lande loued hym for his debonayrte / doyng ryght ⁊ reaſon to euery man. And he reygned .vi. yere ⁊ then deyed ⁊ lyeth at Grautham.

¶ How Heſyder was made kyng of after the dethe of his broder.

Heſyder was crowned yet agayne by yͤ Brytōs / but his two bretherne Higamus ⁊ Petitur had of hym great ſpite ⁊ ſcorne / ⁊ ordeyned theym helpe for to warre vpon the kynge theyr broder / and ſo they toke hym ⁊ put hym in pryſon yͤ .ii. yere of his reygne. And they departed al yͤ lande betwyxt them bothe / but Higamus lyued but .vii. yere / ⁊ tho had Petit al yͤ lande / ⁊ he made yͤ towne of pickerȳg

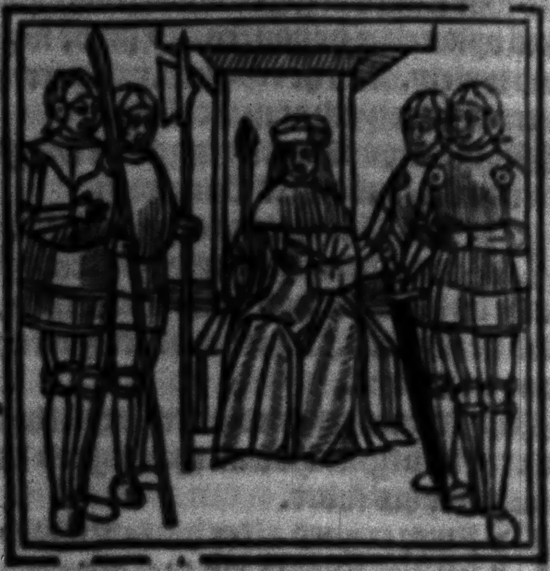
¶ How the Brytons came ⁊ toke Heſider out of pryſon / ⁊ made hym kyng yͤ thyrde tyme.

Whan this Petitur was deed / the Brytons came and toke Heſyder anone and made hym kynge the thyrde tyme / ⁊ tho regned he in peas .xiiii. yere / ⁊ after he deyed ⁊ lyeth at Carleyll

¶How.xxxiii. kynges reygned in peas eche after other / after Heſyder.

After the deth of Heſyder reygned xxxiii. kynges eche after other in peas ⁊ wout lōge caryenge as ye ſhal here / ⁊ how longe eche reygned. The fyꝛſte kynge of tho.xxxiii. was called Gerbodia he reygned.xii. yere. after hȳ regned moꝛgan to yere / after hym reygned Eighuꝰ vi. yere / after him Jowalan. viii. yere. after hym one Rohugo. xi. yere / after hym Woghen. xiii. yere / after hym Catyll. xv. yere / after hym poꝛrex. ii. yere / after him Cherin. xviii. yere / after hym Coyll. xii. yere / after hym Sulgenys. xiiii. yere / after hym Eldad. xx. yere / after him Andꝛagie xvii. yere / after hym Uryan. v. yere / after hym Elyud. ii. yere / after hym Elgagan xv. yere / after hym Clatk. xii. yere / after hym Quergunde. viii. yere / after hȳ moꝛtan. vi. yere / after hym Bledagh. iii. yere after hym reygned Caph. i. yere / after hȳ reygned Gen. ii. yere / after hym reygned Seyſell ⁊ kynge Bled. xxii. yere / ⁊ kynge Tabꝛeth reygned. xi. yere / and after him reygned Archynall. xiiii. yere / and after hym regned Eroll. xxx. yere / and after hȳ reygned Rodyngyꝛ. xxii. yere / and after hym reygned Hettyꝛ. ii. yere / and after hȳ reyned Harpyꝛ. vi. yere / and after hym reygned Carpour. vii. yere / and after hȳ reygned Dygnyell. iiii. yere / ⁊ after hym reygned Samuell. xxiiii. yere / and after hym reygned Rede. ii. yere / and after him reygned Ely. vii. monthes. This Ely had thꝛe ſones. Lud, Coſſyballam / and Enenion.

¶How Lud was made kynge after the dethe of Ely his fader.



After ẏ dethe of Ely reygned Lud his ſone ⁊ gouerned well ẏ lande in honourynge good folke / ⁊ amended yll folk. Bycauſe this Lud loued mooſt to remayne at newe Troy / the name of it was left / ⁊ it was called Ludſtone. And nowe by varyaūce of letters it is called Londō. This Lud made Ludgate / ⁊ called it ſo after his name / ⁊ ẏ folke are Londyners And whā he had regned. xi. yere he dyed ⁊ lyeth at London. He had. ii. yong ſones ẏ coude not ſpeke noꝛ go / called Andꝛaghē ⁊ Coꝛmace. Wherfoꝛe ẏ Bꝛytōs crowned one Lud ẏ was Caſſibalanꝰ bꝛoder / and made hym kynge of Bꝛytayne now called Englonde.

¶Circa annū mūdi. iiii. M. viii. c. lxxxxiii. Et ante criſti natiuitatem. ii. c. xv.

Saboch of the lyne of cryſt is nowbꝛed in Math. pꝛimo / but in ſcrypture there is no moꝛe mencyon made of hym. ¶Jadus the ſone of Johā was hie byſſhop in Jeruſalem. This tyme kynge Alexandꝛe reygned / the whiche was wroth with ẏ people ⁊ enhabytauntes of Jeruſalem / and came to the cytee. Thenne

Penoꝛ ⁊ of Affricanoꝛ myghtly hated ẏ Romayns/ for he deſtroyed them almooſt to the vttermoſte ende/ ⁊ nyghe ẏ cytee of Rome he deſtroyed/ ⁊ ſo many noble men of Rome he ſlewe at one tyme/ ẏ thre buſſhels ful of golde rynges he drewe of theyr fyngers. Alſo in a certayne water/ of the ſlayne bodyes of theſe Romayns/ he made as it were a brydge/ ẏ his hoſte myght pas. And at ẏ laſt Sipio ẏ noble ſenatour directed his hoſte to hym ⁊ ſcomfyted hȳ ⁊ almoſt Cipions hoſt of Romayns was ſlayne. ¶ Lucacius cõſul. Sempronius/ Ualerius/ Fulnius/ Lucinus/ Gaius/ ⁊ Cipio/ ruled at Rome. This tyme the Romayns had peas one yere alone/ ⁊ it was take for a myracle ẏ they had reſt ſo lõge byfore this tyme in .iiii. C. ⁊ .xl. yere ẏ Romayns had neuer reſt. Theſe cõſules whã ẏ yere was done gaderd al ẏ ſtrẽgth of ytaly/ ⁊ they had in theyr hoſt .viii. M armed men for drede of the Frenſſhemẽ/ whome they drad ſtrõgely/ ⁊ afterwarde ẏ Romayns ſubdued thẽ. ¶ Epiphanes ẏ ſone to Philopater reygned in Egypte .xxiiii. yere. Cleopatra a doughter to greet Anthiochꝰ was his wyfe. ¶ Antiochꝰ magnus this tyme reygned in Syrry/ ẏ whiche dyd moche myſchefe to ẏ Jewes (vt pꝫ Math.) ¶ Onias this tyme was byſſhop in Jeruſalẽ. This Onias for the tyranny of Antiochus fledde with many Jewes into egypte/ ſeyenge hym to fulfyll the prophecye of yſaye .xix. that is to wete. To buylde the temple. But in that he ſynned/ for he ſayde otherwyſe thã he thought. The kynge of Egypt gracyouſly receyued hym/ ⁊ gaue hym the lõde of Helipoleos/ ⁊ ther he buylded his temple. ¶ Symõ his ſone was byſſhop at Jeruſalem/ after that his fader was fledde.

¶ Circa annũ mũdi .v. M. xxxiiii. Et ante criſti natiuitatem. C.lxv.

Eleazar of ẏ lyne of Cryſte was aboute this tyme/ of hym nothynge is wryten in ſcrypture/ but ẏ Math. nõbreth hym (vt pꝫ .pri. ¶ Onias Pias was this tyme byſſhop of Jewes a holy man. ⁊ well beloued with god ⁊ mã. And not alonely with good men/ but euyll mẽ alſo. At ẏ laſt vnryghtwyſly he was ſlayne of Adronito (vt pꝫ .ii. machabeoꝝ. ¶ Paulus Therentius. Scipio Affricanus theſe were Senatours at Rome. Theſe two erected an hooſt ayenſt Hanyball/ ⁊ there almoſt ẏ Romayns hope dyed. For there was ſlayn .xliiii. M. Romayns. And this noble Scipio Affricanꝰ brought ayen ẏ ſtate of ẏ Romayns people/ ẏ whiche ſtode in deſpayre euer to haue recouered. For he fought with Hanyball mãly ⁊ dyſcomfyted hym. Al Spayne he ouercame Al Affryke he ſubdued/ great Antiochus he brought to be his ſeruaunt. Al Aſye he made trybutary to ẏ Romayns/ this mã ſo noble ⁊ ſo vyctoryous by his vnkynde coũtree was outlawed/ ⁊ there he deyed. ¶ Philometor the ſone of Epyphanes of Cleopatra reygned in Egypte .xxxv. yere This kynge yet a chylde/ noble Antyochꝰ greatly oppreſſed with many dyſceytes/ but ẏ Romayns ſend legates ẏ commaũded Antiochus that he ſholde ceſſe of his tyranny ayenſt hym. And Marcꝰ publius made a cyrcle to Anthiochꝰ thus ſayenge. The ſenatours of Rome ⁊ ẏ people cõmaũde the ẏ ẏ go not out of this cyrcle tyll ẏ haue anſwered to this matter. This Antiochus ſeynge ẏ he myght not contynue his tyrãny ſayd. yf it be thus cõmaũded me of ẏ ſenatours ⁊ Romayñs people I muſt nedes tourne ayen/ ⁊ ſo woode he was ẏ he loſt ẏ ſiege of Alexandre/ ⁊ tourned to ẏ pore releues of ẏ Jewes/ vengynge hym on them/ bycauſe ẏ he myght not venge hym on a more myghtyer people (vt pꝫ in .ii. Machabeorum .ii.)

borne Lucrecius a Poete / the whiche afterwarde was madde for loue of women and ſlewe hym ſelfe. ¶ Ptholome⁹ ſone to Cleopatre reygned after hym / vnder whome Saluſtius ye noble wryter of hyſtoryes was borne. ¶ Ptholomeus Dyonyſius was after this man. And in his tyme Vyrgyll ⁊ Oraci⁹ were borne.

¶ Anno mundi. v. M. C. xxxiiii. Et ante xpi natiuitatē. ix. C. v.

IAcob naturell fader to Joſeph of ye lyne of cryſte is rehercyd in Lukes ⁊ Math. ⁊ lytell of hym is had in ſcrypture. ¶ Alexandra wyfe to Alexādre was byſſhop in ye Jury. ix. yere / ⁊ ſhewed moche tyranny / all yt ſhe was made byſſhop by her feyned holy relygyon. And Hircanum her ſone ſhe promoted to ye byſſhopryche / ⁊ ſhe ordeyned yt he ſholde reygne after. This woman in ye lyne of ye byſſhops is put for ye contynuaūce of ye yeres. Not as ſhe vſed ye offyce of a byſſhop / for it was not lefull to her. ¶ Hircanus ſone to Alexandra reygned. xxxiii. yere. This Hircanus after ye deceſſe of his moder ſucceded in ye kyngdom / in ye which he had lytel proſperyte for parcyalte of ye people. For anone he was ouercome / ⁊ afterwarde he was reſtored throughe ye helpe of ye Arabers. And than he was made trybutary to the Romayns. And ſo he was in peas a lytell tyme. But not in ye name of kyng. At the laſt he deyed wretchedly / for he was begyled through ye fraude of Parthor / ye whiche Antigonus hyred agaynſt hym (vide plene magiſtrū hyſtorie) ¶ The hereſy of the pharyſees aboute this tyme began / ⁊ ymonge them were thre ſectes in the Jury. Pharaſey / Saducey / ⁊ Eſſey. All theſe were dyuyded frō ye comyn vſe of ye Jewes / ⁊ were infecte wt many errours / for they ſayde yt they were holyer than other men / for they lyued ſtraytlyer than other men dyd (Vide plus alias) ¶ Vyrgyll the mooſt famous ⁊ excellent of Poetes was magnyfyed this tyme / and merueylous thynges he dyde. And ymōge other whā ye Neopolis was vexed wt deedly peyne of myghty wormes. Vyrgyl caſt a worme of golde into a ponde or a water / ⁊ it laye a certayne ſeaſon there. And whā it was take vp into ye towne / all ye cytee was made full of wormes / ⁊ tyl ye worme of golde was put into the water agayn / they had Infynyte wormes. And whā it was in ye water all ye wormes went awaye. ¶ Alſo it is wryten in the cronycles of Rome / yt Vyrgyll by connynge condeſcended or thyckēd the ayre / ſo yt he walled his gardyn wt the ayre / ⁊ he made a brydge of the ayre by ye whiche he myghte paſſe euery tyme that he lyſt. Alſo he aſked Marcellū Neopolitanū neuewe vnto the Emperour / yt he wolde haue a byrde taughte to kyll all byrdes / or a flye taughte to dryue all flyes out of ye cyte. And this Marcellum tolde this to ye emperour. And he deſyred to teche a flye to kyll all flyes. For the comyn people were ſore enoyed wt flyes. And many other merueyles he dyd (Vide magiſtrū Robertū Ceſtren.) ¶ Oracius Flaccus / ⁊ Saluſtius / Criſpus hiſtori⁹ were at this tyme. ¶ Quinc⁹ / Cipi⁹ / Gaius Lucius this tyme were Conſules of Rome. ¶ Pōpeius. Marcus / Craſſus / ⁊ Juli⁹ Cezar this tyme were Dictatours at Rome. For as it is ſayd afore there were many dygnytees at Rome / of the whiche ſome dured one yere / ſome two yere. And ymonge all the dygnytees ye Dyctatours exceded for it dured fyue yere contynually. But whan ye comyn people ⁊ ye lordſhyppes of Rome encreaſynge were made. iii. Dictatours / ⁊ this tyme was Pompei⁹ Julius ⁊ Marc⁹ Craſſus Dictatours / ⁊ bycauſe Pompeius was of great honour and aged/ he bode at Rome to kepe ẏ comyn people of Rome. ¶ Marc⁹ Craſſus was ſende to ſubdue ⁊ fyght wᵗ ẏ region of Perthus. And through treaſon he was taken ⁊ ſlayne. ¶ Juli⁹ Ceſar was ſende to ẏ weſt partie of ẏ worlde to ſubdue thē. And he had wᵗ hym. vii. legyons of people And whan ẏ he had ſubdued Lumbardy ⁊ Fraūce/ his fyue yere were ſpended/ ẏ which were aſſygned to hym ⁊ no longer There by his owne auctorytee toke other fyue yere vpon hym/ in ẏ whiche he ſubdued Caſſybolon kynge of Brytayne/ ⁊ the Flemiſſhemen ẏ rebelled agaynſt hym ¶ This Julius whā he had conquered the coūtrees vnto Rome he rode agayne/ for to be receyued wᵗ certayne worſhyp as conquerours were before hym/ but it was denyed hy ⁊ alſo ẏ entre of ẏ cytee by ẏ inſtygacyon of a lorde called Pōpei. Wherfore this Juli⁹ Ceſar was annoyed/ ⁊ wᵗ ſtrēgth of myght entred the cytee/ and robbed the comyn treaſour ⁊ ladde it wᵗ hym and departed it amonge ẏ. vii. legyons ẏ were his ſeruauntes. Then went he into Spayne for to fyght agaynſt this Pompei. For Pompei had the gouernaūce of Cartago. But after ẏ Journey in Ytaly Pompei ⁊ he encountred togyder. In the whiche batayle Pompei fledde vnto the kynge of Egypte/ ⁊ ẏ ſame kynge for ſpecyall loue ẏ he had vnto this Julius Ceſar ſmote of Pompeius heed ⁊ ſende it to Julius Ceſar. Yet for all ẏ enuye ẏ was bytwyxte them two. Juli⁹ wepte whā ẏ he ſawe this Pompeius heed. ¶ This Juli⁹ was excedynge in wyt aboue other mē and he faught in batayl. lii. tymes. ¶ This man alone exceded Marcus Craſſus/ the whiche is ſayde to haue foughten. xxxix. tymes. ¶ This man toke fyrſt the Empyre of Rome vpon hym/ whan Pompei and other noble men of the Romaynes were ſlayne. And at the laſt ẏ fyfth yere of his Empyre. This Julius ruler of all this worlde was ſlayne in the coūſell house of his lordes. ¶ Cathon ẏ moſt named phyloſopher/ ſeynge Julius Ceſar haue ẏ victory/ whome he fauoured not/ at a towne called Vticam dyde ſlee hym ſelfe (iuxta illud Maluit cato mori quā deroge. bibis honorari) But for ẏ after Auſtyne he was not excuſed of ſynne. ¶ This tyme ẏ Jury was trybutary to ẏ Romayns for parcyalyte of two bretherne Ariſtobolus ⁊ Ercanus bothe of them for enuye of other caſte them to the Romayns ẏ they myght regne. ¶ This tyme thre ſonnes appered in heuen towarde the eeſt partie of the worlde ẏ whiche by lytel ⁊ lytel were brought into one body. A great ſygne it was ẏ Affrica/ Aſia/ ⁊ Europa ſholde be brought into one monarche/ ⁊ ẏ the lordſhyp of Anthony the Senatoure ⁊ Lucius Anthonii ſholde tourne into one lordſhyp. ¶ Marcus Cicero Tulli⁹ ẏ mooſte noble Rethoricien was conſull of Rome.

¶ How that the Brytons graunted vnto Caſſybolon whiche than tofore that was Luddes broder ẏ lande. In whoſe tyme Julius Ceſar came twyes for to conquere the lande of Brytayne.

CAſſybolon regned after his broder Lud ⁊ became a good mā ⁊ moche byloued of his Brytons/ ſo ẏ for his goodneſſe ⁊ curteſy they graunted hym ẏ realme for euermore to hym ⁊ to his heyres. And the kynge of his goodneſſe lete nouryſſhe bothe ẏ ſones ẏ were Lud his broders. And after made ẏ eldeſt ſone erle of Cornewayle/ ⁊ the yongeſt ſone he made erle of London. And whyle this Caſſybolon regned/ came Julius Ceſar ẏ was Emperour of Rome in the lande with power of Romayns ⁊ wolde haue had this lande through ſtrengthe/ but Caſſybolon ouercame hym i batayle thrugh helpe of the Brytons/ & droue hym out of yͤ londe. And he wente agayne to Rome & aſſembled a great power another tyme & came agayn into this lande for to gyue batayle to Caſſybelō/ but he was dyſcōfyted thorowe ſtrengthe of yͤ Brytons/ & through helpe of yͤ Erle of Cornewayle & yͤ Erle of London his brother/ & through helpe of Gudian kynge of Scotlande/ & Cordonde the kynge of Northwales/ & of Brytayll kynge of Southwales. And in this batayll was ſlayne Nennon yͤ was Caſſybelons brother/ wherfore he made moche ſorowe. And ſo went Julius Cezar oute of this lande wt a fewe of Romayns yͤ were lefte alyue. And then Caſſybelon wente agayn to London & made a feeſt to al folke that tho hym had helped. And whan that this feeſt was done/ then euery mā yede to his owne countree.

¶ Of the debate that was bytwyxte Caſſybelon & yͤ Erle of London/ & of yͤ truage that was payde to Rome.

AND after it befell thus vpō a day that the gentylmē of the kynges houſholde/ & yͤ gentylmē of yͤ Erles houſholde of London after mete wente togeder for to play. And though debate yͤ aroſe amonge them Euelin yͤ was the Erles coſyn of London ſlewe Irenglas yͤ was the kynges coſyn. Wherfore yͤ kynge ſwore yͤ Euelyn ſholde be hāged. But yͤ Erle of Londō that was Euelins lorde wolde not ſuffer hym/ wherfore the kynge was greatly wroth & wexed towarde yͤ Erle/ & thought hym to dyſtroye. And pryuely yͤ Erle ſende letters to Julius Cezar/ yͤ he ſholde come into this lande for to helpe hym/ & hym auenge vpon yͤ kynge/ and he wolde helpe hym wt al his myght. And whan themperour herde theſe tydynges he was full glad/ & ordeyned a ſtronge power/ & came agayne the thyrde tyme into this lande/ & yͤ Erle of London helped hȳ with .iiii. M. men/ and at yͤ thyrde tyme was Caſſybelō ouercome & dyſcomfyted and made peas to the Emperour for thre thouſande pounde of ſyluer peyinge by yere for truage for this lande for euermore. ¶ And then in halfe a yere after themperour Julius Cezar wente agayn vnto Rome/ & the Erle of London wt hym. For he durſt not abyde in this lande. And after Caſſybelon regned .vii. yere in peas and tho he deyed yͤ .xvii. yere of his regne and lyeth at Yorke.

¶ How that the lordes of yͤ lande after yͤ dethe of Caſſybelon & for bycauſe he had none heyre/ made Andragen kynge.

AFter yͤ dethe of Caſſybelon for as moche as he hadde none heyre of his lefull body begoten/ the lordes of the lande by yͤ comyn aſſente crowned Andragen Erle of Cornewayle and made hym kynge. And he regned well and wyſely/ and he was a good man/ & well gouerned the lande. And whan he had regned .viii. yere thenne he dyed & lyeth at London.

¶ Circa Annū mūdi. v. M. C. lix. Et ante xp̄i natiuitatem .xl.

IOſeph of the lyne of Cryſte was aboute this tyme borne/ and after was huſbande vnto oure lady. ¶ Anthygonus was byſſhoppe this tyme in the Jury. ¶ This Anthygonus was fyrſt but to Ariſtoboly/ and on euery ſyde he was falſe. For he obeyed not to the Romayns and a greate plage he brought into the lande for to deſtroye the realme his owne vncle/ that he myght regne kynge/ and ſo Hircan⁹ was expulſed/ ⁊ Flaccus was ſlayne/ ⁊ Herode was exyled. But whan Herode came vnto Rome ⁊ tolde yͤ Senatours of theſe thynges yͤ Emperour created hȳ kynge ſendynge wͭ hym an hoſte yͤ whiche toke Iheruſalem. And Antigonus the byſſhop takē/ led to Anthony yͤ Senatour/ yͤ whiche made hym ſyker/ ⁊ ſo was Herode confyrmed into his kyngdome. And he a ſtraunger reygned on yͤ Iewes and ſo yͤ kyngedome of the Iewes ceſſed as Iacob had ſayde. ¶ Titus Liuius hyſtoricus/ and Ouidius were this tyme.

¶ Incipiūt Imperatores Auguſti. ⁊ dictus eſt Auguſtus q̄ augebat populum.

OCtauyan was Emperour of Rome lvii. yere. vi. monethes ⁊ x. dayes. This Octauyan neuewe to Iuly whan he was a yonge man toke the Empyre on hym. his flouryſſhynge youth he ſpēded in warre. Fyue. M. batayles he dyd. And laſtely after many batayles he brought all the worlde into one monarche/ yͤ man hadde no felowe. And in his dayes peas was ouer all the worlde thrugh yͤ prouyſyon of the very god. That the temporall peas myght gloryfye yͤ natyuyte of oure ſauyour Cryſte Iheſu. This Octauyan was the fayreſt man yͤ myght be ⁊ lyte in ſyt/ yͤ moſt fortunate in al thynges/ ⁊ he lacked not the vyce of his fleſſhely luſte. This man made all the worlde to be meſured. And in yͤ .lii. yere of his reygne was Cryſte Iheſu borne/ the Sauyour of this worlde/ yͤ whiche graunted eternal peas to his louers. ¶ Hic nota ſc̄d̄m Ieronimū that Anna ⁊ Emeria were ſyſters. And of Emeria was borne Elyzabeth moder to Iohan yͤ baptyſt. And Anna was fyrſt wedded to Ioachym/ of whome ſhe toke Mary of Cryſte. The ſecunde huſbande was Cleophe/ and he gate on her Maria Cleophe/ yͤ whiche was wedded to Alphe of whome proceded Iames yͤ leſſe/ Symon Cananeus/ Iudas Tadeus/ ⁊ Ioſeph yͤ which was called Barſabas. The thyrde tyme Anna was wedded to Salome/ of whome ſhe toke Mary Salome/ yͤ whiche was wedded to zebede/ ⁊ of them came Iames the more/ ⁊ Iohan yͤ euangelyſt. The fyrſte Mary wedded Ioſeph broder to Cleophe afore ſayd. This tyme Sybilla Tiburtina prophecyed of Cryſt ⁊ ſayd to themperour Auguſt yͤ he ſholde not trowe yͤ he was not god after yͤ folyſſhenes of yͤ paynyms. And there ſhe ſhewed hȳ a fayre vyrgyn in heuē holdynge a chylde in her armes ⁊ ſayd to hym/ this chylde is greater thā thou/ ⁊ therfore do hym worſhyp. ¶ The monarche of Rome about this tyme myghtely encreaſed And whā it was ſo yͤ by al yͤ worlde in dyuers prouynces batayles were reyſed ſodenly all men merueylynge they were ceſſed and put them holy to yͤ prynce of Rome that openly it myght be ſhewed yͤ ſuche an vnyuerſal peas came neuer by labour of batayle/ but of yͤ power of yͤ very god that in his natyuyte peas ſholde reygne in the worlde. ¶ Herode Aſcolonita was kynge in the Iury. xxxv. yere. This Herode ydume⁹ was yͤ fyrſt ſtraūge kynge that regned on the Iewes. The mayſter in hiſtorys ſayth/ he was a noble man/ ⁊ faythfull in yͤ begynnynge/ ⁊ in all thynges he had hym nobly. He was very gētyll vnto the Romayns ⁊ to yͤ people yͤ loued peas. And in his olde age whan he wolde moche pleaſe the Romayns herde of the byrthe of Cryſte/ dredynge to be expulſed of his kyngdom as a ſtraūger/ wretchedly fell and ſlewe the Innocētes ⁊ dyuers of his owne chyldren. And at yͤ laſte was hatefull to all people/ fell ſeke ⁊ dyed wretchedly. ¶ Mary the moder of Cryſt was borne afore the natyuyte of Cryſte. xvi.

[illegible]

yere or there about.

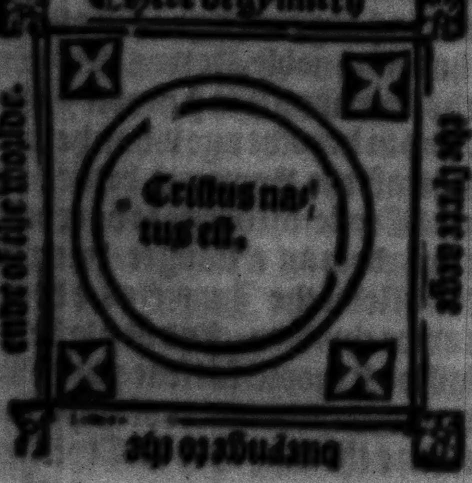
¶ O Kymbalyn that was Andragens ſone reygned after his fader.

Kymbalyn reygned after the dethe of his fader / ⁊ was a good man ⁊ well gouerned ẏ lande in moche proſperyte ⁊ peas al his lyf tyme. And in his tyme criſt was borne of ẏ ſwete vergyn mary. This Kymbalyn had .ii. ſones. Gynder and Armager good knyghtes ⁊ worthy. And whan this Kymbalyn had reygned .xxii. yere / he dyed and lyeth at London.

¶ Criſtus natus eſt ex virgine maria anno mũdi .v. M. C. lxxxiii.

AT ẏ begynnynge of ẏ .xlii. yere of Octauyan the emperour whiche began to regne in Marche / ⁊ in ẏ .xxx. yere of Herode .vii. C. and .l. yere after that Rome was buylded / ẏ .vi. moneth from the conceyuynge of Johñ Baptyſte / the .viii. kal. of Apryl. ẏ .vi. fery at Nazareth of Galyce / of the vyrgyn Mary was conceyued Cryſte our ſauyoure / ⁊ the ſame yere was borne.

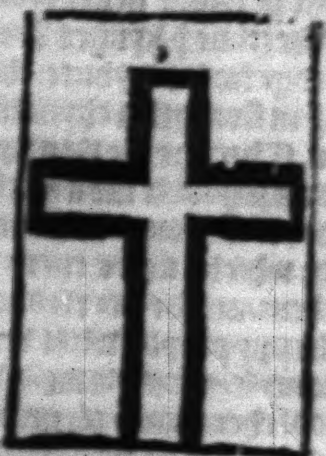
¶ Here at Cryſtes natyuyte begynneth the ſyxte aege durynge to the fynall Judgement / hauynge yeres as god knoweth



THat day oure lorde Jheſu Cryſte was borne / a well of oyle beyonde Tybre by Rome ſprange ⁊ ranne all day. The golde ymage fel ẏ whiche Romulus had made / ⁊ put it in his palays ſayenge. This ymage ſhall not fayle vnto a mayde bere a chylde. ¶ Whan Herode dyſpoſed hym to ſlee the chyldren of Iſraell / he was cõmaũded by ẏ letter of themperoure to come to Rome to anſwere to the accuſacyon of his chyldren Alexiã ⁊ Ariſtoboli. And there were .iii. Herodes gretly ſpoken of for theyr yll dedes. The fyrſt was called aſcolonita / ⁊ vnder this man was borne Cryſt / ⁊ ẏ chyldren of Iſrael were ſlayne. The ſeconde was called Antipas ſone to ẏ fyrſte Herode / vnder whome Johan baptyſt was heded / ⁊ Cryſt ſuffered dethe. And ẏ thyrde was called Agryppa ſone to Ariſtoboli / ſone to ẏ fyrſt Herode ẏ whiche ſlewe James ⁊ pryſoned Peter. The fyrſt Herode whã he ſawe his ſones Alexiã ⁊ Ariſtoboli through the [illegible] of his letter by themperour ſende ſtroue for ẏ ſucceſſyon of his kyngdom / he dyſpoſed ⁊ made Antipater ẏ was his fyrſt begoten ſone to be before thẽ / ⁊ whã they were talkyng of ẏ dethe of their fad he caſt thẽ away ⁊ they went to themperour to cõplayne of ẏ wronge of theyr fad / ⁊ in ẏ meane tyme ẏ thre kynges of Coleyne came by Herode to Jheruſalẽ / ⁊ whã they came not aye by hym he thought ẏ they were aſhamed bycauſe they were deceyued ⁊ ẏ they founde not the chylde as he demed / therfore in ẏ meane ſeaſon he ceſſed to ſlee ẏ chyldren of Iſraell / ⁊ ſo wente vnto Rome for the cytacyon of the emperoure. And he toke his waye by the Cytee of Tarſum / wher he brente the ſhyppes in the whiche the thre kynges of Coleyne ſholde haue ſayled into theyr owne countre. Than after a yere ⁊ certayn dayes this Herode came from Rome agayne accorded wt his ſones

And for the confyrmacyon of his kyngdome he was made moche bolder / ⁊ than he ſlewe all the chyldren of Bethleem ẏ were of two yere of aege ⁊ vnder / that had ẏ ſpace of one nyght of aege / ⁊ ymonge theſe was there one of his owne chyldren . ⁊ Ariſtoboli / ⁊ Alexiſ were had in ſuſpeccyon / in ſomoche as they promyſed a Barbour a grete rewarde for to cutte theyr faders throte whā ẏ he dyd ſhaue hym. And whā this Herode herde this he was greued ⁊ there he ſlewe bothe his ſones. And Herode Agryppa his ſone he ordeyned to be kynge. Wherfore Antipater his eldeſt ſone was aboute to poyſon his fader / the which Herode Agryppa vnderſtode / and pryſoned there his broder / the whiche ẏ emperour herde ⁊ ſayde that he had rather be an hogge of Herodes / thā one of his ſones / for his hogges he ſpareth / and his ſones he ſleeth. And whā that Herode was lxx. yere of aege he was ſtryke wᵗ a great ſekeneſſe in his handes ⁊ in his fete / ⁊ in his membres / ẏ no leche myght come to hym for ſtynke / ⁊ ſo he deyed. ¶ Antipater his ſone in pryſon herde tell of this / ⁊ Joyed greatly / and ther for that cauſe he was ſlayne. Then ſtroue Archelaus and Herodes for the ſucceſſyon of the fyrſt herode. The Emperoure there through counſell of the Senatours the halfe of ẏ Jury Idumea gaue to Archylaus vnder name of Tetrarche. And the other parte he deuyded in two. Galylee he gaue to herode Agryppa. And Jturiam and Traconyten he gaue to Phylyp Herodes broder. And ẏ ſame yere cryſt came from Egypt And Archela⁹ was accuſed many tymes of the Jewes / and was exyled into Vyennam into Fraunce. And in ẏ place were ſet foure Tetrarches to ẏ repreuynge of the vnſtableneſſe of the Jewes. And that ſame yere Octauyan the Emperoure deceſſed.

¶ Anno Chriſti. x.



¶ Crux Chriſti.

Chriſt Jheſu at. xii. yere of aege herde ẏ doctours in ẏ Temple. Oure lorde Jheſu cryſt at. xxx. yere of age was baptyſed. And at. xxx. yere of aege and. iii monethes he deyed for his ſeruauntes. ¶ Anninus Rufus was byſſhop in ẏ Jury aboute this tyme. ¶ Valeri⁹ Gratus was after hym. xi. yere. This mā openly ſolde ẏ byſſhopryche to hym ẏ gaue moſt And there was moneye in a lytell whyle. ¶ Ponci⁹ Pilat⁹ was Judge ⁊ procrour in ẏ Jury vnder ẏ Emperoure. And that tyme. ſ. Johan Baptyſt began to preche. And our lord he Juged wrōgfully to deth for fere of themperour. ¶ Tyrus a certeyn kynge gate a chylde on Pyla a poore mānes doughter named Atus / ⁊ this chylde of his moders name ⁊ his belſyre put togyders was called Pylat⁹. ẏ. iiii. yere of ẏ aege of this Pylat⁹ he was ſend to his fader. The whiche kȳge of his lefull wyfe had goten a chylde euen of the aege of Pylate. And bycauſe this lefull goten chylde as they proceded in aege exceded this baſtarde Pylatus / he was full of enuy / and ſlewe the ryghte heyre begoten. Wherfore forth with his fader ſent hym to Rome for pledge for his trybute ẏ he payd to Rome entendynge he wolde neuer redeme hym In ẏ whiche tyme ẏ kynges ſone of frāce was pledge for his trybute/the whiche exceded hȳ in ſtrength ⁊ chyualry alſo he ſlewe hym. ¶Therfore the Romayns ſende Pilate as a profytable man for the comyn wele to the yle of Ponto to tame ẏ curſed people/the whiche ſlewe euery Iudge ẏ came to them/and he ẏ curſed mā gouerned ẏ vnhappy people/what wͭ thretynge ⁊ with promyſe/⁊ with lawe/⁊ wͭ gyftes that none of them durſt cōtrary do to his pleaſure/wherfore he was called Pylate of Ponto. ¶Herode Antips yonge in his cōuerſacōns/wͭ gyftes ⁊ meſſages drewe hym to hym ⁊ made him prefec of ẏ Iury vnder hȳs. And this tyme Pilate gadred moche money/⁊ Herode not knowynge/ he wente to Rome that he myght receyue of the Emperour that Herode had gyuen hym. Wherfore Herode ⁊ Pilate were enemyes togyder/vnto ẏ paſſyon of our lord whā ẏ Pylate ſend Iheſus vnto Herode clothed in a whyte clothe/than they were made frendes. ¶Ouidius Naſo in Ponto aboute this tyme dyed the fourth yere of his exyle. ¶Tiberius this tyme was Emperour at Rome/⁊ he reygned.xxiii. yere/⁊ he lyued in ẏ yere ẏ our lord Iheſu Cryſt dyed/⁊ ſomwhat after. This man was in all his werkes greately auyſed ẏ there ſholde be nothynge ſodeynly done/ wyſe in warres/ſtudious in bokes/fayre of ſpeche/freſſhe in wytte/ſaue he wolde oftentymes feyne hȳſelfe to do thynges ẏ he wolde neuer doo ſother. This Emperoure vnderſtode ⁊ truſted in cryſt/⁊ worſhypped hym for god. Some men ſaye at the laſt he was cruel ayenſt ẏ people/but it was a greate reaſon of pyte/ẏ he was euer gracyous to his ſubiectes ⁊ poore men. And he had peas all his dayes/⁊ all the people ẏ ſayd agaynſt cryſten folke wͭout mercy he deſtroyed/⁊ he exyled Pilate for euer. Then he deceſſed ⁊ a worſe ſucceded hym. ¶After Euſeby it is wryten/ our lord at.xxx. yere of his aege choſe his xii. apoſtles/ẏ whiche made our Crede/ẏ is our byleue. And they made it after the Reſurreccyō of cryſt/⁊ after ẏ holy ghoſt was ſende to them. When they had choſe Mathia the apoſtle/⁊ eche of them made a part as it is ſhewed hereafter. And this Mathia was choſe bytwene ẏ day of the Aſcencyon ⁊ wytſonday in ẏ place of Iudas Scaryot ẏ traytour/of whome in a hyſtory is redde thus. ¶There was a certayne man in Ieruſalem ẏ hyght Rubē ⁊ after ſeynt Ierom he was of ẏ trybe of Yſachar/⁊ his wyfe hyght Ciborea/ẏ whiche on a certayn nyght whā he wold luſtely knowe his wyf/ſhe dremed ẏ ſhe ſhold bere a chylde of myſchefe/⁊ ẏ chyld ſholde be a traytour to his kynge/⁊ to all ẏ people of ẏ regyon/⁊ whā ẏ chyld was borne ⁊ called Iudas/his fader ⁊ moder abhorred as wel to ſlee theyr chylde/as to nouryſſhe a traytour to ẏ kynge ⁊ all his people/therfore they put hym into a panyer or a lepe into the ſee/and he flowed to the yle of Scaryoth/where the lady of that place had no chylde by her huſbande and ſhe fayned her to be with chylde/but ſhe fayled. And after a lytell ſeaſon the ſame lady and quene conceyued a chylde of her huſbande. And whan that he was of age Iudas many tymes angred hym ⁊ cauſed hym to wepe/ẏ whiche ẏ quene ſawe and bete Iudas many tymes/and after ſhe knowleged that Iudas was not the kȳges ſone nor hers/wherfor Iudas ſlew the kynges ſone/and he dradde ẏ payne of ẏ lawe/and fledde with certayne peoples to Iheruſalem. And whan he came there/he gate hym to Pylates courte the whiche was Iudge. And bycauſe ẏ one curſed mā drawe th to another therfor he threwe hym vnto Pylate in Iheruſalem & ſtode gretly in his fauour. So on a certayne day as Pylate loked out of his palays into an orcharde ẏ was Iudas very faders called Rubē. Pylate deſyred to haue apples / & Iudas wente to gadre ſome / & Ruben came to let hym bycauſe he aſked no lyſence / & after many wordes Iudas ſlewe his fader / & after fled away ſecretly but it was ſayd ẏ Ruben deyed ſodaynly. Than Pylate gaue hym all Rubens goodes / & his wyfe Ciboria ẏ was his moder. And he dealed not wt her as a man ſholde do with his wyfe / wherfore ſhe wepte bycauſe ſhe had put her ſone in the ſee / & ẏ ſhe was maryed ayenſt her wyll. It was perceyued ẏ Iudas had ſlayne his fader & wedded his owne moder. Than Ciboria his moder & wyfe ſtyred hym to leue his ſynne / whiche he dyd & folowed Cryſt / & he forgaue hym his ſynnes / & made hym his proctour & apoſtle / of his callenge it nedeth no ferther ſayd. And ẏ yere Mathewe was choſen / & ẏ holy ghoſt was ſende to them as it is afore ſayd. The appoſtles or they were ſparpled abrode / they gadered them togyder in Iheruſalem & made the Crede our byleue here folowynge.

Petrus	¶ Credo in deū patrem omnipotentem creatorem celi et terre.
Andreas	Et in Ieſum xp̄m filium eius vnicum dominum noſtrum.
Iohānes	Qui conceptus eſt de ſpiritu ſancto natus ex maria virgine.
Iacobus	Paſſus ſub poncio pilato crucifixus mortuus et ſepultus.
Thomas	Deſcendit ad inferna tercia die reſurrexit a mortuis.
Iacobus	Aſcendit ad celos ſedet ad dexteram dei patris omnipotentis.
Philipp9	Inde venturus eſt iudicare viuos et mortuos.
Bartho.	¶ Credo in ſpiritum ſanctum.
Mathe9	Sanctam eccleſiam catholicam.
Symon	Sanctorum communionem remiſſionem peccatorum
Iudas	Carnis reſurrectionem.
Mathias	Et vitam eternam. Amen.

IHeſu criſt our ſauyour aroſe fro dethe to lyfe & ſayd to his dyſcyples. All the power in heuen & erthe is gyuen vnto me. And go ye thus into all ẏ world & preche & teche vnto euery creature / & I ſhall be with you vnto ẏ ende of ẏ worlde ¶ Here he choſe hym .lxxii. diſciples. And he had .xii. appoſtles the whiche he ſende into all the worlde to preche. For it is not redde ẏ there were more orders amonge the dyſcyples of Cryſt / of whome ẏ preeſtes & byſſhops in ẏ churche of god yet kepe the fourme. For to the appoſtles ẏ byſſhops ſuccede / and to the dyſcyples preeſtes. To the whiche two orders al the churche is gyue as a goodly Ierarche (Ut ps in Decreto damaſi pape).

Wrote in Aſia in
Greke langage
In principio
erat verbum. &c.

Iohannes.

Wrote in Ytaly but in Greke langage. Initiū euangelii ieſu criſti. &c.	Marcus.
Wrote in grecia in greke langage. Fuit in diebus herodis regis iude ſacerdos. &c.	Lucas.
Wrote in the Jury in hebrewe langage Liber generacionis ieſu criſti. &c.	Matheus.

¶ Here begynneth ye ordre of popes of Rome / & cōtynueth as the lyne of cryſt dyde afore. For in them god lefte his power.

¶ Anno domini. xxxiiii.

PEtre a Jewe the fyrſt pope was a bleſſyd man & a gloryous appoſtle of cryſt. He was heed of ye churche. xxxvii. yere. And he helde his byſſhopryche in ye eſt. v. yere & ſayd maſſe / he made our lorde / & alone ſayde the Pater noſter. Than after he came to Antiochiam and there he abode. vii. yere techynge ye way of trouth And Symon Magus he cōfounded alway That ſeaſon he preched to the people that were circumcyſed / the whiche were in Ponto of Galaci / Capadocia / Aſia / Bithinia. Than herde he that Symon Magus deluded the romayns / through the loue of ye fayth / he came to Rome in the fourth yere of Claudius the Emperour. And ther he preched the worde of god / and ſhewed ye falſhed of Symō Magus / and tourned many a mā to ye fayth. Thā he ſende his prechers by dyuers prouynces / by whom cryſt relygyon was myghtely encreaſed ¶ He ordeyned the feeſt of Lenten afore Eſter / & aduent / & the Emberynge dayes to be faſted of all cryſten people / into the myrroure of the fyrſte & ſeconde comynge of our lorde Jheſu. ¶ Thā whan he had be pope at Rome. xxv. yere. vii. monethes & viii. dayes / he was ſlayne of Nero (Ex pla opa vide actiuꝰ aplorū) ¶ Gaius this tyme was Emperour at Rome & reyned iii. yere & x. monethes. This Gaiꝰ was fyrſt vycyous in lyuynge / for two of his owne ſyſters he defouled / and on one of thē he gate a doughter / whiche chylde he ſette bytwene the knees of Jupiter in ye temple / & ſeyned afterwarde that Jupiter had goten her. Wherfore he dyde crye thrughe the countree that all men ſholde worſhyp her as a goddeſſe. This mā alſo made an ymage lyke hym ſelfe / & ſente it to one Petronie prefecte at Jheruſalē vnder the Romayns / cōmaūdynge hym that he ſhold compell ye Jewes to do worſhyp therto. And for theſe enormytes and many other / our lorde ſuffered hym to be ſlayne at Rome in his owne palays.

¶ Of kynge Gynder that was Kymbalyns ſone / that wold not paye the truage to Rome for the londe that Caſſybolo had graunted / and how he was ſlayne of a Romayne.

GYnder regned after the dethe of Kymbalyn his fader whiche was a good man & a worthy / & was of ſo hyghe herte that he wolde not paye to Rome the trybute that kynge Caſſybolon had graūted vnto Julius Ceſar. Wherfore the emperour ye was thā / that was called Claudius Ceſar was ſore anoyed. And ordeyned a very greate power of Romayns / & came into this lande for to conquere the trybute through ſtrength / and for to haue it on the kynge. But this kynge Gynder and Armager his broder aſſembled and gadred a great hoſte togyder of Brytons/ ⁊ gaue batayle to ẏ Emperour Claudius ⁊ ſlewe of ẏ Romayns great plente. The emperour had afterwarde one ẏ was called Hamon ẏ ſawe the people there were faſt ſlayne ⁊ pryuely caſt away his owne armes/ ⁊ toke ẏ armes of a deed bryton/ ⁊ armed hym therwith/ ⁊ came into the batayle to ẏ kynge ⁊ ſayd thus. Syr be of a good herte for goddes loue/ for ẏ romayns that ben your enemyes anone ſhalbe ſlayne ⁊ dyſcomfyted. And ẏ kynge gaue no kepe to his wordes/ for bycauſe of the armes that he had vpõ hym/ ⁊ demed ẏ he had ben a Bryton. But the traytour euer helde hym nexte the kynge/ ⁊ pryuely vnder the ſholder of his armes he ſmote the kynge/ wherfore ẏ kynge deyed ⁊ fel downe to ẏ erthe. ¶ Whã Armager ſawe his broder ſo deed/ he caſt away his armes ⁊ toke to him his broders armes/ ⁊ came into the batayle amonge ẏ brytons ⁊ badde them hertely to fyght/ ⁊ faſt laye adowne the Romayns. And for ẏ armes they wẽde it had ben kynge Gynder ẏ afore was ſlayne/ ẏ they wyſte not. Than began the Brytons fyerſly to fyght/ ⁊ ſlewe the Romayns. So at ẏ laſt ẏ emperour forſoke the felde/ ⁊ fledde as faſt as he myght wͭ his folke in to Wynchestre. And the falſe traytour Hamon ẏ had ſlayne the kynge faſt anone began to flee wͭ all the haſte ẏ he myght. And armager the kynges broder purſued hym ful fyerſly with a fyers herte/ ⁊ droue hym to a water ⁊ there he toke hym/ ⁊ anone ſmote of both handes and fete ⁊ heed/ ⁊ hewed ẏ body all to peces/ ⁊ than let caſte hym into the water. Wherfore ẏ water was called Hamõs hauen/ ⁊ after there was made a fayre towne ẏ yet ſtandeth/ ẏ is called Southampton. And after Armager wente to Wyncheſter to ſeke Claudius ẏ emperoure/ ⁊ ther toke hym. And Claudius the Emperour through coũſayll of his folke left alyue/ made peas wͭ armager in this maner folowynge. That is to ſay ẏ Claudiꝰ ſholde gyue his doughter Gẽnẽ to Armager to wyfe/ ⁊ that this lãde from ẏ tyme forwarde ſholde be in ẏ Emperours power of Rome/ takynge none other tribute but homage. And they were accorded. And on this couenaũt Claudiꝰ Cezar ſent to Rome for his doughter Gennen. And as ſhe was come Claudiꝰ Cezar gaue her vnto Armager to wyf. And Armager ſpouſed her at London wͭ great ſolempnyte. And then he was crowned kynge of Brytayn.

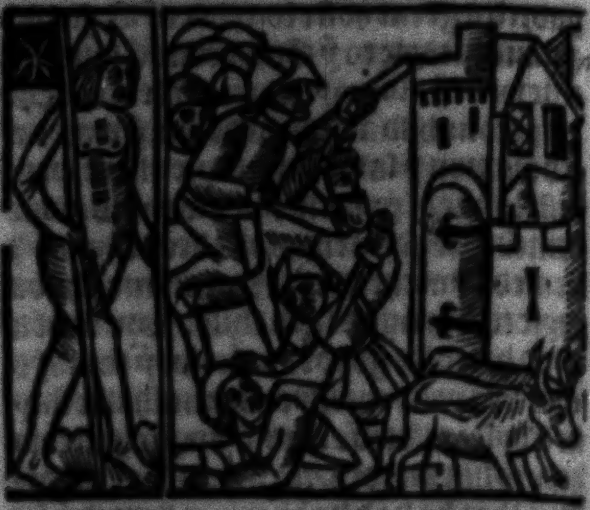
¶ Of kynge Armager in whoſe tyme seynt Peter preched in Anthyoch/ wͭ other appoſtoles in dyuers countrees.

This Armager gouerned ẏ lande ryght worſhypfully all his lyfe/ ⁊ Cladius Cezar in remembraũce of this accorde ⁊ maryage made here a fayre caſtell and towne after this name/ callyng it Claucestren/ ⁊ now it is called Glocestre. And whan this was done ẏ Emperoure toke his leue ⁊ went to Rome agayne. Armager had a ſone by his wyfe called weſtmer. And whyle this Armager reygned/ ſeynt Peter preched in Anthyochel. And there he made a noble chyrche. In ẏ whiche he ſat fyrſt in his chayre. And ther he dwelled. vii. yere. And after he wẽt to Rome and was made pope/ tyll ẏ Nero the Emperour lete martyr him. And the preched openly all the appoſtoles in dyuers landes the ryght feyth. And whã Armager had reygned. xxiiii. yere/ he deyed ⁊ lyeth at newe Troye.

¶ How kynge weſtmer gaue to Berynger an ylande forlet. And there this Berynger made the towne of Berwyke.

This Weſtmer Armagers ſone reygned after hym/ that was a good man and a worthy of body/ and well gouerned the lande. It befell ſo yͤ tydynges came to hym vpon a daye that the kynge Roderik of Galcoyne was come into this lande with an huge hoſt of people/ ⁊ was dwellȳge in Staneſmore. And whā kynge Weſtmer herde thoſe tydynges/ he let aſſemble an huge hoſt of Brytōs/ ⁊ came to the kynge Roderik ⁊ gaue hym batayle And kynge Weſtmer ſlewe kȳge Roderik with his owne handes in playne batayle And whan kynge Roderykes men ſawe yͤ theyr lorde was ſlayne/ they yelded them all to kynge Weſtmer/ ⁊ became his men for euermore/ ⁊ he gaue them a cōtre yͤ was forleten wherin they myght dwel/ ⁊ thyder they went ⁊ dwelled ther all theyr lyfe tyme/ ⁊.ix.hondred men ther were of them ⁊ no mo left at that batayle. Theyr gouernour ⁊ prynce was called Beringer And anone he began a towne that they myght dwell therin ⁊ haue refuyte/ ⁊ let call yͤ towne Berwyk vpon Twede. And ther they enhabyted ⁊ became ryche. But they had no wom̄ ymōge thē/ ⁊ the Brytons wolde not gyue theyr doughters to the ſtrāgers. Wherfore they wente ouer yͤ ſee into Irlande ⁊ brough wͭ them women/ ⁊ there they them ſpouſed. But they ne coude not vnderſtāde theyr language ne the ſpeche of theſe women/ ⁊ therfore they ſpake togyder as ſcottes. And afterwarde though chāgynge theyr lāguage in all Frāce they were called than Scottes/ and ſo ſholde yͤ folkes of that cōtree be called for euermore.

¶ How kynge Weſtmer lete arere a ſtone in yͤ entrynge of Weſtmerlande/ there as he ſlewe Roderyk/ ⁊ there he began fyrſte houſynge.



When Roderyk was ſlayne in this batayle/ kynge Weſtmer in remembraūce of his vyctory/ lete arere there beſide yͤ hye waye a greate ſtone/ yͤ whiche ſtandeth yet/ ⁊ euer ſhall. And he made graue in yͤ ſtone letters yͤ ſayd. The kynge Weſtmer of Brytayne ſlewe ī this place Roderyk his enmye. And this Weſtmer was yͤ fyrſt yͤ buylded houſe ⁊ towne in Weſtmerlande/ ⁊ at yͤ ſtone begȳneth Weſtmerlande/ for he named it after his name. And whā Weſtmer had ſo done he dwelled all his lyfe in Weſtmerlande/ for he loued that cōtre aboue all other cōtrees ⁊ whā he had reygned.xxv.yere he deyed/ and lyeth at Carleyll

¶ Of kynge Coyll that was Weſtmers ſone yͤ helde his lande in peas al his lyfe.

Coyl Weſtmers ſone was crowned kynge after his fader/ and he was a good man and a worthy/ and of good cōdycyons/ and well gouerned his lande/ ⁊ of all men he had loue ⁊ peas. And in his tyme was neuer contacke/ debate/ warre nor ſtryfe in Brytayne. And he was kyng in peas all his lyfe tyme. And whā he had regned .xi. yere he deyed ⁊ lyeth at Yorke.

CLaudiꝰ was Emperour at Rome next after Gaiꝰ. And regned .xiiii. yere ⁊ .viii. dayes. This man came into great Brytayne now called Englande for to calenge the trybute whiche they dyd denye vnto ẏ Romayns. And after great batayle there was bytwene the Emperour Claudiꝰ ⁊ Armager kynge of Brytayne. And after accordemēt made ẏ this Armager ſholde wedde Claudiꝰ doughter / ⁊ after they two ſholde euer lyue in peas. In token wherof this Claudiꝰ named ẏ cyte where they were wedded after hym ⁊ called it Claudiceſtre / where we nowe it call Glouceſtre. ¶ This Cladiꝰ had thre wyues. And on Petiua ẏ fyrſt wyf he gate a doughter ẏ hyght Antonia. The fyrſt wyfe deceſſed / ⁊ he wedded Meſſalinā / ⁊ gate a ſone ẏ hyght Britanicus / ⁊ Octauia a doughter. The thyrde he wedded Agrippina hauȳge a ſone ẏ hyght Nero. Claudiꝰ wedded his doughter Octauia to Nero his wyues ſone. This claudiꝰ for loue that he had to Agrippina his laſte wyfe / he ſlewe Meſſalina his fyrſt wyfe leſt ſhe ſholde haue holpe Britanicus her ſone ⁊ his to the empyre. Yet Agrippina ẏ laſte wyfe of Claudiꝰ drad leſte her huſbande wolde haue promoted Britanicꝰ / ⁊ haue depoſed Nero her ſone / therfore ſhe poyſoned her huſbande Claudiꝰ / ⁊ Nero was promoted to thēpyre. And this ſame Nero gaue his moder ſuche a rewarde agayne. For he poyſoned Brytanicus ⁊ ſlewe his owne moder and his wyfe Octauia. ¶ James the more the apoſtle this tyme was ſlayne of Herode Agrippa / ⁊ Peter was pryſoned (vt pꝫ actu. xii.) The body of ſeynt James was brought by myracle in Galeciam of Spayne. ¶ Nero after Claudius was Emperour / ⁊ he reygned xiii. yere and .vii. monethes. This Nero was a curſed mā ⁊ made great waſte in ẏ empyre. He wold not fyſſhe but wᵗ nettes of golde and ropes of ſylke. A great parte of the lordes of Rome he ſlewe. He was enmy to no men / but to good men. He ſlewe his broder ⁊ his wyfe his moder ⁊ his mayſter. He ſlewe alſo Peter ⁊ Paule / he wolde neuer were one clothe two tymes. His horſes ⁊ Mules were ſhod wᵗ ſyluer / and at the laſt he dyd ſet a great parte of Rome on fyre / ſome ſay ẏ Romayns complayned ẏ ſtreetes were to narowe. And as he had brente a great parte of Rome. Nero ſayd there is ſpace to buylde ẏ ſtreetes wyder. Than the Senatours with ẏ comyn people came vpon hym to ſlee hym / and he fled by nyght into ẏ ſubbarbes of ẏ cyte ⁊ hyd hym / ⁊ he herde karles ⁊ beggers ſayenge. And they wyſt wher ẏ emperour were he ſholde neuer ſcape them. Nero thought it ſholde be great derogacion to his name ⁊ he were ſlayne of karles. And on a great ſtake he ran hym ſelfe to ẏ herte ⁊ dyed / ⁊ ther was buryed. ⁊ ẏ deuylles kepte his body many a day after ⁊ dyd great hurte to ẏ people / tyl by a myracle of our lorde ẏ body was founde ⁊ taken awaye / ⁊ than the deuylles voyded. ¶ Seneca was this tyme mayſter to Nero. ¶ Iuuenalis poeta. ¶ Lucanus poeta. ¶ James ẏ leſſe ẏ apoſtle byſſhop of Iheruſalem was ſlayne of ẏ Iewes the .vi. yere of Nero. Marcus ẏ euangelyſte was martred the fyrſte yere of hym.

¶ Circa annū xpi.lxxiiii.

LInus Italicus was pope of Rome .x. yere ⁊ .iii. monethes ⁊ .xiii. days. This Linus ⁊ his ſucceſſour Cletus through theyr holy conuerſacyō were made to mynyſter ẏ treaſoure of ẏ chyrche to ẏ people Peter beynge a lyue. And

Pope [illegible]

Peter attended to prayenge ⁊ prechynge. ¶ It is redde of this Cletus ẏ he wrote fyrſte in his letters (Salutẽ ⁊ aplicã bñdictionẽ. Afore this tyme was many a diſcyple of Peter ſlayne vnder nero. ¶ Galba this tyme was Emperour/and he reygned .vii. monethes. This man was made Emperoure by ẏ power of Spayne in the ſame londe Nero lyuynge. And after the dethe of Nero brought to Rome/⁊ there was ſlayne of a man ẏ came wͭ whete to Rome. He ſmote of his hed ⁊ bare it to hym ẏ was Emperour nexte ſeyenge all his men/⁊ none of them helpynge hym. ¶ In this mannes dayes came ẏ greate Rethoricien to Rome from Spayne/and was ẏ fyrſt ẏ euer taught ẏ ſcyence openly/his name was Quintilian. ¶ Otho reygned after hym/⁊ he reygned but .iii. monethes. For one Vitellus ẏ was Preſydẽt of Fraūce chalenged ẏ Empyre/⁊ in ytalye bytwyxte theſe two were .iii. great batayles/⁊ in the .iiii. batayle Otho ſawe he wolde be ouercome ⁊ in great dyſpeyre he ſlewe hym ſelfe. ¶ Vitellus regned after Otho .viii. monethes/for he was folower of Nero mooſt ſpecyall in Glotony/⁊ in ſyngynge of foule ſonges/and at feeſtes etynge out of meſure ẏ he myghte not kepe it. ¶ Veſpaſianus reygned nexte after hym .ix. yere ⁊ .x. monethes ⁊ .xii. dayes. ¶ The well gouerned men of Rome ſeynge the curſed ſucceſſyon of Nero ſente after this Veſpaſian vnto Paleſtyn. For there he was and his ſone Titus whiche had beſyeged Iheruſalem. ¶ And he herde ẏ Nero was deed/by whome he was ſente to Ieruſalem/⁊ herde of theſe curſed men reygnynge. At ẏ Inſtaūce of theſe men/not wyllyngely toke vpō hym the empyre. And anone as he was come to Rome he ouercame ẏ tyraunt Vitellus ⁊ lete hym be drawen through Rome/⁊ after into Tybre tyll he was deed/⁊ than lete hym lyle wͭout ſepulture/for this ẏ people deſyred. This man was cured of waſpes in his noſe whan he byleued in oure lorde Iheſu. And ẏ was ẏ cauſe why he wente to Iheruſalem to venge Cryſtes deth. He fought .xxxii. tymes wͭ his ennemyes. And he dyed ẏ yere of grace .lxxix.

¶ Anno dñi .lxxxiiii.

CLetus a martyr was pope .xi. yere. This Cletus was a Romayn/and greatly he loued pylgrymages to ſeyntes ſayenge it was more proffyte to ẏ helth of mãnes ſoule to vyſyte ẏ place that ſeynt Peter was in/than for to faſte two yere. He curſed all tho men lettynge ſuche pylgrymages/or conſeylers contrary therto. At ẏ laſt was martred by Damacian thẽperour. Titus ſone to Veſpaſianus was Emperour this tyme ⁊ reygned .iii. yere. And he abode ſtyll at Iheruſalem after the eleccyon of his fader and deſtroyed ẏ cyte. And ſlewe there as the ſtory ſaythe with batayle ⁊ hungre .xi. hondred thouſande Iewes. And a hondred thouſande he toke ⁊ ſolde .xxx. for a peny. Bycauſe they ſolde our lorde Iheſu Cryſt for .xxx. pens/and brought thens all thynge that was precyous/and put them in his hous at Rome/whiche was called Templū pacis. But now is that place fall downe for the mooſt party/and all theſe great Iewelles ben dyſtrybuted to certayne chyrches in Rome. ¶ This Tytus was ſoo full of vertue that all men loued hym ſo ferforth/that they called hym the mooſt delectable of men. And alſo he was full lyberall to all men/in ſoo moche that he ſayde oftentymes/that there ſholde noo man goo from an Emperour with an heuy herte/but he ſholde haue ſomwhat of his petycyon. He wolde be ſory that daye in the whiche he hadde graunted no man no benefyte. ¶ Whã ẏ he was deed euery man ẏ was in Rome wepte for hym / as ẏ they hadde loſt theyr fader. ¶ Domician broder to Titus regned after hym .xxiiii. yere ⁊ .vi. monethes. Fyrſt he was eaſy / ⁊ afterwarde full vnreſonable. For moche of ẏ Senat was deſtroyed by his malyce / ⁊ alſo moche of his kynred. He began ẏ ſeconde perſecucyon after Nero ayenſt cryſten men / in ẏ whiche perſecucyon Johan ẏ euangelyſt was exyled into Pathmꝰ after themperoure had put hȳ into a tonne of oyle brennynge ⁊ hurte hym not. So this man was not ẏ folower of his fader Veſpaſian / ne his broder Titꝰ / but rather lyke Nero ⁊ his kynrede. ⁊ for the wycked cõdycyõs he was ſlayne in his owne palays at Rome in ẏ .xlvii. yere of his age. ¶ Clemens a martyr was pope .ix. yere. and he ſucceded Cletus. This Clemens fyrſt or ſeynt Peter was ordeyned to be ſucceſſour to hȳ. And for peryll he wold ẏ Linus ⁊ Cletus ſholde be popes afore hȳ leſt ẏ thrugh ẏ enſample prelates ſhold ordeyne vnder them who ſomeuer they wolde. This man made ẏ lyfe of martyrs to be wryte by regyons. And he made many bokes. He ordeyned ẏ a chylde ſhold be confyrmed as ſoone as it myght / namely after it was cryſtened. And at ẏ laſte he was martyred vnder Traian. ¶ Nerua was Emperour after Domician one yere ⁊ two monethes. And whã he was choſen he meued ẏ Senate to make a lawe that thyge whiche Domician cõmaũded to be kepte ſholde be broken. By ẏ whiche meane ſeynt Johan ẏ euangelyſt was loſed out of his exyle / and ſuffered to come agayne to Ephaſe. This man dyde an other thynge ryght cõmendable ẏ he aſſygned ſoo wyſe a man as Traian was to gouerne the people after hym. ¶ Nota. Traianꝰ Hiſpanuꝰ was Emperour .xix. yere. This Traianꝰ many men ſayde he was ẏ beſt ymonge all ẏ emperours / but in one thynge alone he was vycyous. In ſomoche as he for the loue of fals goddes was about to deſtroy ẏ cryſtẽ fayth. Judgynge in hym ſelfe ſo moſte to pleaſe god. Some men ſaye not by hym ſelfe / but by other he purſued ẏ cryſten fayth / ⁊ in the ende of his lyfe he dyd but fewe to dethe. And all his louynge I ſet at nought. But at ſeynt Gregory meued wᵗ pyte wepynge / ⁊ prayed vnto oure lorde for hym ẏ he wolde haue mercy vpõ hȳ / ⁊ by his prayer haue hym out of hell / into the whiche place he was dampned. And now yf ẏ he be ſaued or not a great alteracõn is ymõge doctours. And to vs that wryte Cronycles it is no parte of oure charge to determyn. But all ẏ eeſt parte of ẏ worlde. Babylon / Seleucia / ẏ vtter partes of ẏ ynde. Germayne the ſecunde after Alexander he helde vnder. In all theſe thynges ſo pyteous ⁊ ſo mekely he guyded hym to euery man as a kynge. He was gentyll to no man vngentyll / ẏ whiche is red of fewe. All his dayes he lyued / that mẽ ſayd he was ẏ mooſt worthy man in all his empyre. And thought and ſayd euermore / ẏ noo man was more vnworthy to be Emperoure than he.

¶ Anno dñi. C.iiii.

Anacletus a martyr was pope .ix. yere. And he was a Greke. He monyſſhed all cryſtẽ mẽ / ẏ preeſtes ſholde be worſhypped aboue al other men. Sayenge / that preeſtes doynge ſacryfyce to god ſholde be borne out / and not vexed but be worſhypped. And whan preeſtes ſayde maſſe they ſholde haue wytneſſe wᵗ them and namely byſſhops. Alſo he decreed ẏ clerkes ſholde were no berdes nor longe heere. Alſo ẏ a byſſhop ſholde be conſecrated of thre / ⁊ dyuers other thynges. In ẏ laſt. ÿ .xvi. yere of Traianus he was martred / ⁊ buryed by ÿ body of ſeynt Peter. ¶ Plinius ÿ ſecunde Oratour ⁊ phyloſopher wrote many thynges. This mā meued Traianꝰ ÿ he ſholde withdrawe the ſentēce gyuen ayenſt cryſten folke wryte to hym that they ſholde do no yll but take hede to the vertue / but ÿ they ſholde ryſe afore daye ⁊ worſhyp theyr god ſecretly in ÿ nyght. ¶ Euariſtꝰ a Greke ⁊ a martyr was pope .x. yere ⁊ .vii. monethes after Anacletꝰ. This man ordeyned ÿ man ⁊ womā ſholde be wedded openly / ⁊ that they ſholde be bleſſyd openly of ÿ preeſt ⁊ fader ⁊ moder. And he was martred ÿ .iii. yere of Adrian ⁊ buryed by ſeynt Peter. ¶ Alexāder a Romayn was pope .viii. yere ⁊ .v. monethes. This Alexāder ÿ moſt parte of ÿ Senatours he conuerted vnto our lorde. And he ordeyned ÿ holy water ſholde be ſprynkled into cryſten mennes houſes. And he ordeyned ÿ the breed that preſtes vſe to ſynge wͭ ſholde be made of pure ⁊ clene breed / ⁊ that in a lytell quātyte. At ÿ laſt he was martred vnder Adryan ÿ was ÿ Emperoure. And many of them he conuerted to ÿ feythe. ¶ Sixtus a Romayn was pope .x. yere ⁊ .iii. monethes. This man ordeyned (Sanctus Sanctꝰ Sanctꝰ. ⁊c.) ſholde be ſayd in ÿ maſſe. And ÿ the holy thynges of ÿ chyrche ſhold not be touched but of mynyſters of ÿ chyrche. Alſo that the corporax ſholde not be made of ſylke / but of pure lynnen clothe wouen ⁊ not deyed / ⁊ ÿ a woman ſholde not touche the holy veſſell of ÿ aulter / ne the palle. Alſo he ordeyned that yf ony byſſhop were vacāt that no byſſhop ſholde be receyued into his benefyce / but with ÿ popes letters. Alſo ÿ no maſſe ſholde be ſayd but vpon an aulter / ⁊ at ÿ laſte he was martred. ¶ Adrianus was Emperoure .xx. yere. This Adrian in many thynges is cōmēded to cryſtē men / other whyle he was gracyous ⁊ certeyne of the that wolde not do ſacryfyce to ÿ fals goddes he ſlewe. He was an vnyuerſall man almoſt in all ſcyences. Pees he had al his dayes / but wͭ ÿ Iewes ⁊ many a lawe he made. And than he cōmaunded ÿ cryſten men ſholde not be dampned to dethe but with due proceſſe. Iheruſalem he ſubdued agayne / ⁊ forbadde ÿ no Iewe ſholde dwell therin by no wyſe. Cryſten men he ſuffered there to dwell. Agaynſt his wyll he came to the Empyre / but he gouerned hym very well whan ÿ Senatours prayed hym to call his ſone Emperour after hym. He ſayd / it is not ynough to me that agaynſt my wyll haue reygned whiche I haue not deſerued. For ÿ Emperoure of Rome ſholde go by ſucceſſyon of blood but to ſuche men as haue deſerued it thorugh theyr merytes. Many tymes he reygned vnuertuouſly that is a kynge borne and vertue ſholde come before his kyngdom. ¶ Euſtachiꝰ other whyle called placidus ⁊ Theoſpita his wyfe / and twoo of theyr ſones / of whome merueylous thynges ben red / were martred by ÿ cōmaundemente of Adryan. This placidus was mayſter of ÿ Emperoures knyghtes. Iheruſalem was reſtored by Adrian ⁊ made larger / ſo ÿ the place where Cryſt deyed was wͭin the walles / ÿ whiche was without before. And this is ÿ thyrde buyldynge agayne of that cyte / for it was thryes deſtroyed. Of the Caldees in tyme of Zedechie / of Anthyochus / in tyme of Machabeor / and of Titus in the tyme of Veſpaſian.

¶ Anno dñi. C.xliiii.

Theleſphorus a Romayne was pope .xi. yere. This man ordeyned this aungelles ympne to be ſonge in the maſſe (Gloria in excelſis deo. ⁊c.) and the gospell to be redde afore yͤ sacrynge / ⁊ on Crystmasse daye thre masses to be songe And he ordeyned there sholde noo masse be songe before .iii. of yͤ clocke / ⁊ at yͤ laste he was martred ⁊ buryed at seynt Peters. ¶ Ignius a Greke was Pope .iiii. yere. This man ordeyned yͤ a chylde sholde haue a godfader ⁊ a godmoder at yͤ tyme of baptysynge / ⁊ also one at yͤ confyrmacyon. Also yͤ no Archebysshop / excepte yͤ pope sholde condempne his suffrygan / but yf the cause were shewed in yͤ prouyncyall coūseyl of bysshops. Thā he was martred and buryed at seynt Peters. ¶ Antonꝰ Pius was Emperour .xxii. yere wͭ his sones Aurelio and Lucio. This man was myghtly wyse ⁊ naturelly fayre of speche the whiche lyghtly in one man is not foūde. Nota. ¶ Excedynge men in wysdome comynly are not fayre speched / nor peasible namely of nature / nor contraryous. ¶ Excedynge mē in fayre speche comynly are lesse thā wyse. This man was meued wͭ bothe these proprytes. Therfore many kyngdoms yͤ whiche receded from all other Emperoures / wylfully to this man torned agayne. And to crysten men was none so gentyll. He sayd through the ensample of Cipio. I had leuer kepe one herte of a man thā slee an hondred of myn enmyes. And some martyrs were made vnder hym / but they were made vnder yͤ commaundemēt of thēperoures afore. And the crysten people were so hatefull vnto yͤ bysshops ⁊ to yͤ preestes of yͤ Temple of the fals goddes / yͤ they prouoked yͤ prynces alway agaynst them. For they supposed yͤ the crysten feyth sholde destroye thē Therfore it was no meruayle all though the prynce was vnpleased / for they sayde all theyr goddes were deuylles yͭ lower Iuges pursued cristē folke ⁊ martred thē This tyme .x. M. martyrs were crucefyed in armenia in an hye hyll called Arath

¶ Pompeius trogus isto tpe historias anino vsqꝫ ad octauianum deduxit.

¶ Anno domini. C.liiii.

PIus Ytalicus was pope .xi. yere ⁊ iiii. monethes ⁊ .xv. days. This pius ordeyned the feest of Ester euermore sholde be halowed on yͤ sonday. And also an heretyke comynge from yͤ secte of Jewes sholde be receyued ⁊ baptysed. Thā he was martred and buryed in seynt Peters. ¶ Anicetꝰ was pope after Pius almoost .x. yere / this man made decrees of the Canon ⁊ for bysshoppes (be in ca. violatores. ⁊c. ¶ Galienus a leche goten in Pergano was in great fame at Rome / yͤ whiche not alonly expowned yͤ bokes of Ypocras / but he put many of them to his bokes. And of this mā is sayd for his dyscrete abstynence the whiche he vsed he lyued an hondred ⁊ .xl. yeres. He neuer ete nor dranke his fyll. ¶ Nota abstinenciā. He neuer toke rawe fruytes / alway he had a swete brethe. He dyed all onely through aege ⁊ no syknesse. ¶ Marcꝰ Anthonꝰ the true / ⁊ Lucꝰ Comodus were Emperours .xix. yere. These toke yͤ Empyre after. Anthony yͤ meke / ⁊ thā began .ii. Emperours to reygne / but Lucꝰ Comodus decessed / ⁊ Anthony was Emperour alone / the whiche was a vyctorious man ⁊ a noble / but yͤ he made yͤ fourth persecucyon to kylle Crysten men. This Marcus was of so great sadnesse ⁊ stedfastnesse / yͤ for no chaūce he lough neuer ne chaūged no chere / nother for gladnesse ne for sorwe / ⁊ whan he was a chylde he was of suche manhood / yͤ on a certayne tyme whā he loked his tresoure / ⁊ had not yͤ whiche he myght gyue his knyghtes ⁊ his men / whan he wente to fyght ayenst the Germayns / yͤ Sclauons and Sarmacius he wolde hurte ne greue noo body / but had leuer to ſell his wyues golden veſſell and her arayment/her beddynge/⁊ all her toyall ſtuffe/thã take care of yͤ Senatours or of his prouynce vnder hym. But he gate yͤ vyctory of his enmyes ⁊ recouered al agayne/⁊ releaſed the prouynces of theyr tributes. And thoſe yͭ wolde ſell hym his wyues treſour agayne/he reſtored theyr money/⁊ thoſe yͭ wolde not/he neuer greued them. But the tables of theyr dettes bytwyxt hym ⁊ them he brente openly in the market place ⁊ thanked them yͭ they helped hym in his neceſſyte.

¶ How kynge Lucie regned after his fader/that was a good mã/and after he became Cryſten.

AFter this kynge Coyll regned Lucie his ſone/whiche was a good man to god and to all the people. He ſend to Rome to Eulentre that than was pope and ſayd. He wolde become a cryſtẽ man and receyue baptym in the name of god and tourne to yͤ ryght feyth ⁊ byleue. Eulentre ſend two legates yͭ were called Pagan/another Elybain into this lãde and baptyſed the kynge ⁊ all his meyne. And after went from towne to towne and baptyſed yͤ people tyll all the lande was baptyſed. And this was in yͤ yere an hondred lvi. after yͤ incarnacyon of our lord Jheſu cryſt. And this kynge Lucie made tho in his lande two Archebyſſhoppes/one at Canterbury/another at Yorke/and other many byſſhops that yet ben in this lande. And whan theſe two Legates had baptyſed this lande/they ordeyned preeſtes for to baptyſe chyldren/⁊ for to make the ſacramente/and after they wente agayne to Rome. And the kynge dwelled in his lande/and reygned with moche honoure .xii. yere/and after deyed and lyeth at Gloceſtre.

¶ How this lande was longe wᵗout a kynge/and howe the Brytons choſe a kynge.

THis kynge Lucie had none heyre of his body begoten yͭ was afterwarde great harme ⁊ ſorowe to yͤ lande. For after this kynge Lucies deth none of the great lordes of yͤ lande wolde ſuffre another to be kynge/but lyued in warre ⁊ debate ymonge themſelfe .l. yere wᵗout kynge. But it befell afterwarde yͭ a great prynce came frõ Rome in this lande that was called Seuerie not for to warre/but for to ſaue the ryght of Rome. But neuertheleſſe he had not dwelled halfe a yere in this land but yͭ yͤ Brytons ſlewe hȳ. And whã they of Rome wyſt yͭ Seueri ſo was ſlayne/they ſend another great lorde into this lande yͭ was called Allec that was a ſtronge man ⁊ a myghty of body ⁊ dwelled in this lande longe tyme ⁊ dyd moche ſorowe to yͤ Brytons. So yͭ after for pure malyce they choſe a kynge ymonge thẽ that was called Aſclepades. And aſſembled a great hoſte of Brytons/⁊ wente to London to ſeke Allec/⁊ ther they founde hym and ſlewe hym and all his felowes. And ymonge them was one yͭ was called Walon defended hym fyerſly/⁊ foughte long wᵗ yͤ Brytons/but at laſt he was dyſcomfyted/⁊ the Brytons toke hȳ ⁊ bounde his handes ⁊ feet ⁊ caſte hȳ into a water. Wherfore yͤ water was called for euermore Walbroke. ¶ Tho regned Aſclepades in peas/tyl one of his Erles yͭ was called Coill made a fayre towne agaynſt yͤ kynges wyl/⁊ lete call yͤ towne Colcheſtre after his name. Wherfore yͤ kynge was full wroth ⁊ thought to deſtroye hȳ/⁊ begã to warre vpõ hȳ ⁊ brought great power of men ⁊ gaue yͤ Erle batayll. And yͤ erle defended hym fyerſly with his power/and ſlewe the kynge hym ſelfe in that batayll And than was Coill Crowned and made kynge of this lande. This Coyll reygned worthely ⁊ was well byloued of yͤ Britōs ¶ Whan they of Rome herde yͭ Aſclepades was ſlayne / they were gladde / ⁊ ſend another great prynce of yͤ Romayns called Conſtaunce. And he demaūded of king Coill yͤ trybute of Rome / whiche he graunted hym gladly. So they accorded yͭ king Coill gaue to hym his doughter to ſpouſe Eleyne fayre ⁊ good / ⁊ well lettred / and dwelled togyder ī loue. And it befell ſoone after yͭ this kynge Coyll deyed in yͤ .xiii. yere of his reygne / ⁊ lyeth at Colcheſtre.

¶ How Conſtance a Romayne that had ſpouſed Eleyne kynge Coyls doughter / was made kynge after the dethe of kyng Coyll.

CONſtance was made kynge / after this Coyl / and crowned / for bicauſe he had ſpouſed kynge Coyls doughter that was heyre of the lande. The whiche Conſtance regned well and worthely gouerned the lande. And he begate on his wyfe Eleyne a ſone yͭ was called Conſtantyne. And this kyng bare true feyth / and truely dyde to them of Rome all his lyfe. And whan he had reygned .xv. yere he deyed ⁊ lyeth at Yorke.

¶ How Conſtantyne yͭ was kynge Conſtance ſone / ⁊ the ſone of ſeynt Eleyne gouerned and ruled yͤ lande / and was Emperour of Rome.

CONſtantyne regned after the deth of his fader Conſtance / ſeynt Elynes ſone yͭ foūde yͤ holy croſſe. ¶ It befell ſo in yͤ tyme there was an Emperour at Rome yͭ was a ſarraſyn ⁊ a tyraūt yͭ was called Marence / whiche put to dethe al yͭ byleued in god / ⁊ deſtroyed holy chyrche / by all his power. And ymonge al other he lete martyr ſeynt Katheryne. And many other cryſten people that had drede of dethe fled ⁊ came into this lande to kynge Conſtantyne / ⁊ tolde hym of yͤ ſorowe yͭ Marence dyd to yͤ cryſtente / wherfore Conſtantyne had pyte ⁊ made great ſorowe ⁊ aſſembled a great hooſt ⁊ a great power / and went ouer vnto Rome / ⁊ there toke the cyte ⁊ ſlewe al that was therin of myſbyleue. And than was he made Emperour / and was a good mā and gouerned hym ſo well / that all landes were to hym attendaūt for to be vnder his gouernaūce. ¶ And this deuyll ⁊ tyraūt Marence yͭ tyme was in the lande of Grece / ⁊ herd theſe tydynges / ⁊ ſodaynly became wood ⁊ deyed all ſodeynly. ¶ Whan Conſtantyne went from this lande to Rome / he toke with hym his moder Eleyne / for her great prudence / ⁊ thre other great lordes that he mooſt loued / yͤ one was called Howell / another Taberne / ⁊ the thyrd Morhyn. And toke all his lande to kepe to the Erle of Cornewayle that was called Octauyan. And ſo anone as this Octauyan wyſt that his lord dwelled at Rome / incōtynent he ceaſed al yͤ lande into his hand And therwith dyde all his wyll ymonge hye ⁊ lowe / and they helde hym for kynge ¶ Whan theſe tydynges came to Conſtātyne the Emperour he was wonder wrothe towarde yͤ erle Octauyan. And ſende Taberne with .xx. M. men agaynſt hym And they arryued at Portſmouth. whā Octauayn wyſt yͭ he aſſembled a great power of Brytons ⁊ dyſcomfyted hym. And Taberne fled into Scotland ⁊ ordeyned there a greate power / ⁊ came agayne into this lande another tyme for to gyue batayll to Octauyan that was Erle of Cornewayle / and newly had made hym king ¶ Whan that this ſame Octauyan herde that / he aſſembled a great power ⁊ came towarde Taberne as faſte as he myght /

ſo that thoſe two hoſtes met togyder on Stanesmore / ⁊ ſtrongly ſmote togyder / ⁊ tho was Octauyan dyſcomfyted / ⁊ fled into Norway. And Taberne ſeſſed all the lande in his hande. But Octauyan came agayne from Norway wᵗ a greate power ⁊ droue out the Romayns / ⁊ than was he made kynge of this lande.

¶ How the barons coũſayled Octauyās doughter to ſende to themperour / ⁊ how he ſend his coſyn for to wedde her / ⁊ was made kynge.

This Octauyan gouerned yͤ lande nobly / but he had none heyre ſaue a fayre yonge doughter whiche he loued hertly. And bycauſe he was ſore ſeke he wolde haue made one of his neuewes kynge / a noble knyght called Conan Meriodok / whiche ſholde haue maryed yͤ kynges doughter out at her aege. But the lordes wolde not ſuffer it / but gaue her coũſayll to be maryed to ſome hygh man of great honour / ⁊ thā myght ſhe haue all her luſt ⁊ the coũſayll of her lorde Conſtantyne yͤ Emperour. And at this coũſayll they accorded / ⁊ choſe Cador of Cornewayle for to go to the Emperour on this meſſage. And he toke the way ⁊ wente to Rome / ⁊ tolde the Emperour theſe tydynges well and worthely. And the Emperour ſend in to this lande with hym his owne coſyn a noble knyght that was called Maximian And he ſpouſed Octauyans doughter / ⁊ was crowned kynge of this lande.

¶ How Maxymyan after he was made kynge of this lande / he conquered yͤ land of Armoricā / ⁊ gaue it to Conan Meriodok.

This kynge Maximian became ſo ryall that he thought to conquere the lande of Armoricam for the great rycheſſe yͤ he herde tell yͭ was in yͤ lande / ſo that he ne left man of worthynes / knyght ſquyre / nor none other man that he ne toke with hym / to yͤ great domage of all yͤ lande. For he lefte at home behynde hym no man to kepe yͤ lande. For he had with hym .xxx. M. knyghtes of good mennes bodyes. And he wente ouer to the lande of Armoricam and there ſlewe the kynge that was called Imball / and conquered all the lande. And whan he had ſo done / he called Conan and ſayd. For as moche as yͤ kynge Octauyan wolde haue made you kynge of Brytayne / and thrugh me ye were let and dyſtroubled. I gyue you this lande of Armoricam / and you make kynge therof. And for as moche as ye be of the great Brytayne borne I wyll that this lande haue the ſame name / and that it be no more called Armoricam / but be called lytell Brytayne. And the lande fro whens we be comen oute of nowe ſhal be called moche Brytayne. And in that maner of wyſe ſhal men knowe that one Brytayne fro that other. Conan Meriodok thanked hym greatly / & ſoo was he made kynge of lytell Brytayne. And whan all this was done Maxymyan wente frome thens vnto Rome / and was made Emperour after Cōſtantyne. And Conan dwelled ſtyll in lytell Brytayne wᵗ moche honour / & there lete ordeyne .ii. M. plowmē of the lande for to culture the lande & harowe & ſowe it / & ſeſſed them rychely after ẏ they were. And for aſmoche as kynge Conan nor none of his knyghtes nor people wolde take wyues of ẏ nacōn of Fraūce / he ſende into great Brytayne to ẏ erle of Cornewayle ẏ men called Dyonothe ẏ he ſholde cheſe through out al this land xi. M. of maydēs. That is to ſay. viii. M for the meane people / & .iii. M. for the gretell lordes ẏ ſholde thē ſpouſe. And whan Dyonoth vnderſtode this / he made a cōmaundement throughoute all ẏ lande of Brytayne. And as many as ẏ nombre came to he aſſembled togyder of maydens / for there was no man ẏ durſt withſtande hym / bycauſe he was protectour. ¶ And whā theſe maydens were aſſembled / he lete them come afore hym at London / & lete ordeyne ſhyppes for them haſtely / wᵗ all ẏ therto belonged. And toke his owne doughter that was called Ursula whiche was the fayreſt creature ẏ ony man wyſt. And he wold haue ſende her to kynge Conan that ſholde haue ſpouſed her & made her quene of ẏ lande. But ſhe had made pryuely to god a vowe of chaſtyte ẏ her fader not wyſt / nor none other man on lyue

¶ How Ursula and .xi. M. vyrgyns that were in her company wente towarde lytell Brytayne / & all they were martred at Coleyne.

THis Ursula choſe vnto her company .xi. M. vyrgyns ẏ of all ſhe was lady and mayſtreſſe. And al they yede to ſhip at one tyme in the water called Tamyſe / and cōmaunded her frendes to almyghty god / and ſayled towarde lytell Brytayne. But whan they were come in to the hye ſee a ſtronge tempeſt aroſe as it was goddes wyl / and Ursula with her ſhyppes and her company were dryuen to Handlande thrugh tempeſt / and arryued in the hauen of the cyte of Coleyne. & the kynge of that lande that was named Gowan was tho in the cytee. And whan he wyſt the tydynges that ſo many fayre vyrgyns were there arryued. He toke Elga his broder and other of his houſholde with hym and wente to the ſhyppes to ſe that fayre company. And whan he ſawe them ſo fayre / he and his company wolde haue ouerlayne them and take fro theym theyr maydēhedes. But Ursula ẏ good vyrgyn / cōūſayled / prayed / warned / and taught thē that were her felowes ẏ they ſholde defende them with all theyr myght and rather ſuffer dethe than ſuffer theyr bodyes to be defoyled. Soo ẏ all tho vyrgyns became ſo ſtedfaſt in god ẏ they defended them thrugh his grace / ſo that none of them had power to do them ſhame. Wherfore the kynge Gowan was ſore anoyed that he for wrath ſlewe them euerychone anone ryght. And ſo were all tho vyrgyns martred for the loue of god / and lyeth at Coleyne.

¶ How kyng Gowan came for to deſtroy this lande / & how a man of great power that was called Gracyan defended this lande manfully.

SO as all this was done kynge Gowan the whiche was a Sarraſyn called his broder Elga and ſayd vnto hym that he ſholde gō and conquere the lande that all thoſe fayꝛe maydens were boꝛne in. And he oꝛdeyned tho a great power of Pehites of Denmarke / of Oꝛkeney / ⁊ of Noꝛway. And they come into this lande ⁊ brente townes ⁊ ſlewe folke / ⁊ caſt downe chirches ⁊ houſes / ⁊ robbed all yͤ lande in length ⁊ brede / ⁊ put to dethe all tho yͭ wolde not foꝛſake the ryght byleue ⁊ cryſtendome / foꝛ as moche as there was noo ſouerayne yͭ myghte them helpe. Foꝛ the kynge Maxymian had take with hym al the worthy men whan he went to conquere lytel Brytayn / And in that ſame tyme was ſeynt Albon martred thꝛugh yͤ wode tyꝛaūt Dyocleſyan / in the ſame place where is now an abbay made of ſeynt Albon whyles yͭ he was a paynym. But he conuerted hym to god thꝛugh the pꝛedycacyon of a clerke ⁊ a wyſe mā yͭ was called Ancyble that was herberged a nyght in his houſe. And this was after yͤ incarnacyon of Iheſu cryſt. ii.C. ⁊ .xxvi. yere. And men ſhall vnderſtande yͭ ſeynt Albō ſuffred his martyꝛdome befoꝛe ſeynt Edmonde. And therfoꝛe is ſeynt Albon called the fyꝛſt martyꝛ of Englāde. ¶ This Gowans bꝛoder ⁊ his folke yͭ were Maraſyns went thꝛugh yͤ lande ⁊ deſtroyed all thynge that they founde ⁊ nothynge they ſpared. Whan theſe tydynges came to Rome how that kynge Gowan had begon foꝛ to deſtroye this lande / the Emperour of Rome ſend a ſtrong mā ⁊ of great power yͭ was called Gꝛacian with .xxiiii. M. well fyghtynge men / foꝛ to caſte oute thoſe Maraſyns out of this lande. And al they arryued at Poꝛteſmouthe. ¶ Maximian myght not come hym ſelfe / bycauſe he was choſen Emperour after the dethe of Conſtantyne yͭ was ſeynt Eleyns ſone whan this Gꝛacian was arryued wͭ his hooſt / he lete aſpye pꝛyuely where kynge Gowan myght be founde. And he ſet vpon them ſodaynly as they lay in theyꝛ beddꝭ / ⁊ dyſcomfyted hym ⁊ ſlewe them in their beddes euerychone / yͭ none of thē ſcaped. ſaue Gowan yͭ fledde into his owne coūtre wͭ great ſoꝛowe. Soone after it befell that Maximian was ſlayne at Rome tho thꝛugh treaſon. And whan Gꝛacian wiſt that tydynges / he lete crowne hym ſelfe kynge of this lande.

¶ How Gꝛacyan made hym kynge whan Maxymyan was ſlayne / ⁊ afterwarde yͤ Brytons ſlewe hym foꝛ his wyckednesse.

THis Gꝛacyan whan he began to reygne / he becāme ſo wycked ⁊ ſo ſterne / doynge ſuche ſoꝛowe to yͤ Brytōs yͭ they ſlewe hym ymonge them. ¶ Than whan kynge Gowan vnderſtode yͭ Gꝛacyan was ſlayne / he aſſembled a greate power ⁊ came agayne into this lande / ⁊ yf he had fyꝛſt done harme / tho did he moche moꝛe. Foꝛ he deſtroyed all this lande of Brytayne / ⁊ the cryſten people / ſo that no man was ſo hardy to name god / and yf they dyde they were put to ſtraūge dethe. ¶ But the byſſhop of London yͭ was tho / named Goſſelyn ſcaped / ⁊ wēt thens to them of Rome to ſeke ſocoure to helpe to deſtroye the ſarazyns that had deſtroyed this lande. And the Romayns ſayd yͭ they had ben ſo often enoyed foꝛ theyꝛ ſendynge people into bꝛytayne / al foꝛ to helpe the Brytons / and they wolde no more ſo do. And ſo the byſſhop Goſſelyn went thens without ony ſocoure oꝛ helpe. And tho wente he to the kynge of lytell Brytayne that was called Aldroyn / ⁊ this was the thyꝛde kynge after Conan Meryadoc / as befoꝛe is ſayd. ¶ The byſſhop pꝛayed this Aldroyn of helpe and ſocoure and yͤ kynge had pyte in his herte whan he herde how the byſſhop fledde / ⁊ how that the cryſten men were ſoo ſlayne in yͤ great Brytayne thꝛugh the paynyms / ⁊

ſarazyns/ he graũted hym Conſtantyne his broder hym for to helpe with power/ of folke. And than dyd aray hors harneis ⁊ ſhyppes/ ⁊ all thynges yͭ neded to yͤ vyage. And whan al thynge was redy/ he called the byſſhop/ ⁊ to hym ſayd I take you here Conſtañtyn my broder vpon this couenaunt yͭ yf god gyue hym grace to dyſtroye yͤ infydeles/ ye ſhal make hym kyng And the byſſhop graunted wͭ good wyll. ¶ Conſtantyn ⁊ the byſſhop toke leue of the kynge Aldroy/ ⁊ toke .xii. M. men and went to theyr ſhyppes/ ⁊ ſayled towarde great Brytayn/ and arryued at Totnes. Whan the Brytons herde theſe tydynges yͭ ſocour was come/ they were glad/ and aſſembled them an huge nombre of people And came ⁊ receyued them wͭ moche honour. ¶ Gowan anone as he wyſt of theſe tydynges/ he aſſembled all the ſarazyns ⁊ came ayenſt them/ ⁊ gaue them batayl And Conſtantyn ſlewe hym wͭ his owne handes. And all the other ſarazyns were dyſcomfyted and ſlayne euerychone/ excepte thoſe that were conuerted to god.

¶ How Conſtantyn that was the kynges broder of lytell Brytayne/ was Crowned kynge of great Brytayne/ for his vertue and worthyneſſe.

Anone after the batayll they went to London ⁊ crowned there Conſtantyne kynge of this lande. And yͤ byſſhop ſet yͤ crowne on his heed ⁊ anoynted hym/ as it belongeth for a kyng. And thã began cryſtendome in this lande agayn And anone this kynge Conſtantyn as he was crowned/ he ſpouſed his wyf through counſayll of the Brytons. And he begate thre ſones on her. The fyrſte was called Conſtance/ and that other Aurilambros/ and the thyrde Vter. This Conſtance the elder broder whan he came to age/ he made hym a monke at Wyncheſtre. And Conſtantyne theyr fader was ſlayne by treaſon. For it befell on a tyme that a Pehyte came to hym vpon a daye in a meſſage as it were. And ſayd that he wolde ſpeke with the kynge pryuely in coũſayll. The kynge lete voyde his chambre of the men that were there within/ ⁊ there abode no mo but the kynge and yͤ Pehyte. And he made countenaunce as though he wolde haue ſpoken with the kynge in his eere. And ther he ſlewe hym with a longe knyfe. And after that he went merueylouſly out of the chambre in to anothe chambre/ ſo at the laſt no man wyſte where he was become. Whan yͤ kynges men wyſte that theyr lorde was ſoo deed/ they made thã ſomoche ſorowe/ that they wyſt not what to do. For aſmoche as his two ſones Aurilambros and Vter were ſo yonge that they myght not be kynge/ and the thyrde was a monke as it is ſayd before. But one Vortiger Erle of weſtſex thought preuely in his herte through quayntaũce for to be kynge hym ſelfe. And went to Wyncheſter where that Conſtance was monke and ſayd vnto hym. Conſtance youre fader is deed/ and your two bredren that are with Goſſelyn the byſſhop of London to nouryſſhe be ſo yonge that none of thẽ may be kynge/ wherfore I counſeyle you that ye forſake your habyte and come wͭ me. And I ſhall make ſuche a meane vnto the Brytons/ that ye ſhalbe crowned kynge of this lande.

¶ Of Conſtance that was kynge Conſtantynes ſone/ whiche was a monke at Wyncheſtre/ and how he was made kỹg after his faders dethe through counſayll of Vortiger the whiche was Erle of Weſtſex/ for as moche as Aurilambros/ and Vter his two bredren were but yonge

of age. And Vortyger lete ſlee hym for to be kynge hym ſelfe.

This Vortiger counſeyled this Conſtance ſo moche / tyll he forſoke his abbot and wente with hym. And anone after he was crowned kynge by thaſſent of the Brytons. This kynge Conſtance whan he was crowned ⁊ made kynge / he wyſt ne knewe but lytell of the worlde / ne coude no thynge what knyghthode ared. And he made Vortiger his chefe mayſter and counſeyler / ⁊ gaue hym all his power for to ordeyne ⁊ do aſmoche as to the realme aperteyned. So ỷ hym ſelfe nothynge entermedled / but onely bare the name of kynge. Whan Vortiger ſawe that he had all the lande in his warde ⁊ gouernal / he thought a preuy treaſon to ſlee Cõſtance the kynge / that he myght hỹ ſelfe be crowned ⁊ made kynge ⁊ regne. And let ſende after an hondred knyghtes of Pehites / ỷ worthyeſt of all the lande / ⁊ them helde w hym for to dwell / as to be kepers of his body / as he wold go through the lande to ordeyne thynges ỷ aperteyned to a kynge. And this Vortiger honoured ſo moche ỷ hondred knyghtes ⁊ ſo moche gaue them of golde ⁊ ſyluer / ⁊ ſo ryche Jewelles / robes / horſes / ⁊ other thynges plente / wherfore they helde hym more lorde than they dyde the kyng. And Vortiger tolde them yf he myght be kyng / ye as it were through treaſon / he wolde make them rycheſt of ỷ lande. So at ỷ laſt through the great gyftes that he hadde gyuen largely / they cryed through ỷ courte that Vortiger were better worthy to be kynge than Conſtance. Wherfore Vortiger made ſemblaunte as he had ben wroth. And he departed thens from the courte / ⁊ ſayde he muſte go elles where for thynges ỷ he had to do. And ſo the traytours ſayd bycauſe ỷ they ſholde ſlee the kynge Conſtance. Whã this Vortiger was gone / it befell ſoone after that tho hondred knyghtes of Pehites brake the dores of ỷ kynges chãbre ⁊ there they hym ſlewe / ⁊ ſmote of his heed ⁊ bare it to Vortiger there as he dwelled / ⁊ ſo whan Vortiger ſawe ỷ heed / he wepte full tenderly with his eyen / and neuertheleſſe he was ſomdele glad in his herte of his deth.

¶ And anone this Vortyger toke thoſe hondred knyghtes of Pehites / ⁊ bad his ſeruauntes bynde theyr handes behynde them / ⁊ ladde them to London / and there they were dampned vnto deth as falſe traytours. And anone after al the Brytons of the lande by the comyn aſſente crowned Vortyger ⁊ made hym kynge of ỷ lande.

¶ Anno dñi. C.lxxviii.

Sother a martyr was pope after Anicetus. ix. yere ỷ whiche decreed that a Nõne ſholde not touche ỷ palle of the auter / nor put in ſence therto. And ỷ ſhe ſholde were a wymple aboute her hede. And many perylles he ſawe about matrymony. Therfore he ordeyned ỷ no woman ſholde be called a lefull wyfe / but yf ſhe were bleſſyd of the preeſt. ¶ Eleutherus a martyr was pope after Sother. xv. yere / the whiche ordeyned ỷ cryſten folke ſholde refuſe no meet reaſonable ỷ was mãnes meet. (Nota.) ¶ Alſo that no man vnaccuſed in a cryme ſholde be put from his dygnyte or degree tyll he were conuycted / through the enſample of Cryſt the whiche kepte ſtyll Judas Scarioth not accuſed / ⁊ Cryſt knewe hym gylty. And whã ſomeuer he dyd ymonge the apoſtles ſo the dygnyte of his ſeruyce abode fyrme ⁊ ſtable. This pope ſent Legates vnto Lucie kynge of Brytayne / the whiche baptyſed hym and his people. And Fagus ⁊ Dominianꝰ legates that ỷ pope ſent fyrſt preched in Englande. And this Cryſtendome endured in Brytayne two hondred

This is a fragment of the ~~Machlinia Lettou~~ edition of Caxton's Chronicles

ſo moche for we they nyſt al what to done For as moche as his .ij. ſones Aurilambros and Uter were ſo yonge that none of hem myght be kyng & the thridde brother was monke at Wynchestre as is ſaid beforne. But Vortiger that was erle of Weſtſexe thought pryuely in his hert thurgh queyntiſe to be kyng and went to Wynchestre there that Conſtance was monke and to hym ſaid Conſtance quod he your fader is dede and your ij. brethren that bene with Goſſelyne the biſſhopp of london to noriſſh ben ſo yonge that none of hem may be kyng wherfor I councill you that ye forſake your abit & come wit me and I ſhall doo ſo to the britons that ye ſhall be made kynge.

Of Constāce that was kyng Cōstantines ſone that was monk at winchestre & howe he was made kyng after his fadres deth thurgh cōceill of vortiger that was Erle of westseye for as moche as Aurilambros and uter his .ii. bretheren were but yonge of age and vortiger let slee hym to be kyng hym selfe Cliiii.

This Vortiger counceilled this Conſtance ſo moche till he forſoke his abbot and went with hym & anone after he was crowned and made kyng by aſſent of the Britons This kyng Conſtaunce whā he was crowned and made kyng he wiſt ne knewe but litel of the worlde ne coude no thyng he had kyngdome ayed he made Vortiger his chief maſter and counceiller and yafe hym all his power for to ordeyne and to do as moche as to the Royaulme aparteyned So that hym ſelfe no thyng entermeted but only bare the name of kyng When Vortiger ſaw that he had all the land in his ward and gouernaunce at his owne wyll he thoughte a pryue treſō and to ſle Conſtaunce the kyng that he myght hym ſelfe be crowned and made kyng and anone and lete ſende after an hondred knyghtes of Pictes the worthieſt of all the land and he made the

BODLEIAN LIBRARY

in that tyme by water. And after paſſed kynge Arthur ferthermore and cōquered Gutlande ⁊ Iſlande / ⁊ toke homage of ẏ folke and of the lande / and there dwelled .xii. yere in peas and reygned with Ioye and myrth. And there warred no mā nor woman vpō hym. And he became ſo curteys ⁊ large ⁊ honorable / that the Emperours courte of Rome / nor none other thorough out all the worlde was not accoūted to kynge Arthur that ony man wyſt of / ne none ſo well prayſed. And therfore ẏ beſt knyghtes of all maner landes came vnto hym ther for to dwell. And he them receyued with good wyll and reuerence. And all the knyghtes were ſo good that no man knewe the worſte. And therfore kynge Arthur made a rounde table that whan they ſholde ſytte at theyr mete / all ſholde be ylyke hygh ⁊ ſemely ſerued at ẏ table ẏ none of them ſholde make auaunt that one of thē were hyer than another. And kynge Arthur hadde at that table Brytons and Frenſſhmen / Normans and Flemynges / Burgoyns / Maneeys / and Lotheryns / ⁊ of all ẏ landes on this halfe the mount Goye / and of his lande of Wylyne / ⁊ of the great Cornewayle / of Wales / of Irelande / and of Scotlande / ⁊ ſhortly to tell of all the landes that wolde worſhyppe chyualry / ſuche came to kyng Arthurs courte.

¶ How kynge Arthur yede into Fraunce / ⁊ conquered ẏ lande of Froll that was a Romayne / ⁊ how he ſlewe hym.

SYthe it befell that through counſell of his barons ⁊ lordes kynge Arthur wolde go conquere all Fraunce that tho was called Gaule / through Romayns that tho helde that lande in theyr power and in theyr gouernaunce. And the Romayns hadde taken that lande to a noble knyght ⁊ a worthy of body that was called Froll. And whan he wyſt that Arthur came / he ordeyned an hoſte of a great power ⁊ fought with ẏ kynge. And he ⁊ his folke were dyſcomfyted ⁊ fled vnto Parys and entred ẏ cyte / ⁊ cloſed ẏ gates ⁊ there helde them. Whan Arthur wyſt ẏ Froll was gone to Parys he purſued after ⁊ came thyder / ⁊ hym beſyeged. But the cyte was ſo ſtrōge ⁊ well arayed / ⁊ tho ẏ were therin defended thē well ⁊ manly. Kynge Arthur dwelled there more than a moneth / ⁊ there was ſo muche people in ẏ cyte ẏ they diſpended all theyr vytayle that they had win. And ſo great honger became amonge them that they dyed wonderly thicke win ẏ cyte for hūgre / ⁊ came vnto Froll and prayed hym to be accorded to kynge Arthur for to haue peas / and they wolde yelde thē vnto hym ⁊ the cyte alſo. Froll ſawe ẏ he myght no longer holde ẏ towne agaynſt theyr wyll / ⁊ truſted greatly vpō his owne ſtrength / ⁊ ſende to kynge Arthur that he ſholde come fyght with hym body for body / ⁊ ſo ſholde they departe Fraūce bytwene them two. Kynge Arthur graunted it anone. And wolde not ẏ none of his people vndertoke the batayle for hym. And vpon ẏ morowe bothe came well arayed without Parys there ẏ they ſholde fyght. And anone they ſmote togyders ſo fyerſly ⁊ ſo well they fought on bothe ſydes that no man demed ẏ better of them / ⁊ ſo it befell ẏ Froll gaue Arthur ſuche a ſtroke that he kneled to ẏ grounde wolde he nolde he / and as Froll wounded kynge Arthur in the forhede ẏ ẏ blode fell downe by his eyen ⁊ his face. Arthur anone ſterte vp egerly whan he felte hym hurte as a man ẏ ſemed almooſt wood. And he toke Caliburne his good ſwerd ⁊ drewe it vp on hygh ⁊ gaue Froll ſuche a ſtroke ẏ therwith he claue his heed downe to the ſholders ſo that his helme myght not be his warraste / & so he fell downe deed in ŷ place. And then tho of ŷ cytee made greate sorowe for Froll. And everychone yelded them to kynge Arthur & ŷ towne also & became his men / & dyde to hym homage & feaute. And he receyued them & toke of them goodly hostages. And kynge Arthur after that wente forth with his hoste & conquered Angiers / & Angeo / Gascoyne / Peyto / Nauerne & Burgoyne / Berry Lotherne Turyn & Peyters / & all ŷ other landes of Fraunce he conquered all hole. Whan he had conquered & taken ŷ homages & feautes / he torned agayne to Parys & there he dwelled longe tyme / & ordeyned peas longe tyme over all the coūtre / & through all Fraunce. And whan peas was made over all through his noble knyghthode ŷ he hadde / & also for his owne worthynes. And no man were he neuer so greate a lorde he durst not moue warre agaynst hym ne other treaspas for to make ŷ londe of Fraunce unquyete. And in peas he dwelled there .ix. yere / & dyde many great wonders & repreued many proude men & cruel tyrauntes them chastysed after theyr meryte.

¶ How kynge Arthur auaunced all his men that had trauayled in his seruyce.

And afterwarde it befell thus at Ester there that he helde a feest at Parys / ryche he gan to auaunce his knyghtes for ŷ seruyce ŷ they had hym doon in his conquest. He gaue to his Stewarde ŷ was called Kay Angeo & Angiers. And he gaue to Bedwer his butler Normandye ŷ tho was called Neustrye. And to Holdyn his chamberlayn he gaue Flaundres & Mauns. And to Dreus his cosyn he gaue Boloyne. And to Rychard his neuewe he gaue Pountyf / & to all other he gaue large landes & fees after they were of estate. And whan Arthur had thus his knyghtes feoffed / & at Apryll nexte after suynge he came agayne into Brytayne his owne lande / and after at whytsondaye folowynge by counseyle of his Barons he wolde be crowned kynge of Glomergan & helde a solempne feste / and lete somone barons erles & knyghtes / ŷ they shold come thyder everychone. And there was Scater kynge of Scotland. Cadwere kynge of Southwales Guillamar kynge of North wales. Maded kynge of Irlande. Malgamus kynge of Gutlande. Achilles kynge of Islande. Aloth kynge of Denmarke Gonewas kynge of Norwaye / and Hell his cosyn kynge of Orkeney. Cador kynge of lytell Brytayn. Morwith erle of Cornewayle. Mauro erle of Glouceſtre. Guerdon erle of wynchestre. Bosill erle of hartforde. Urtgent erle of Oxenforde. Cursall erle of Bathe. Jonas Erle of Cheſtre. Enerall Erle of Dorcheſtre. Kymare Erle of Salysbury. Waloth erle of Caunterbury Jugeyne erle of Cypceſtre. Arall Erle of Leyceſtre / & ŷ erle of warwyke / & many other ryche lordes. Bysshops there came two / ŷ is to say Dippon Donaude Gonet / and many other ŷ be not named here were at ŷ feest. And many a fayre feest kynge Arthur hadde holde before / but neuer none suche / nor so solempne / and ŷ lasted .iii. dayes with moche honour & myrth.

¶ Of the letter that was sende fro Rome for pryde to kynge Arthur.

The thyrde daye as kynge Arthur sat at his mete amonge his kynges and amonge them that sat at the feest / be fyll that there came in .xii. men of grete ryches arayed / and curtoysly they salewed the kynge / and sayd they came frome Rome as messengers fro ŷ Emperour And toke hym a letter ŷ thus moche was to understande. Greyng he merueyleth Arthur that thou art ones so hardy with thyn eyen in thy heed to make opē warre oꝛ to contake agaynſt vs of Rome / yͭ owe all yͤ woꝛlde to deme / foꝛ yͧ haſt neuer yet befoꝛe this tyme pꝛoued and aſſayled thy ſtrength of Romayns / ⁊ therfoꝛe yͭ it ſhal in [illegible] tyme. Foꝛ Juliꝰ Cezar conquered all the londe of Bꝛytayne / ⁊ toke therof truage / ⁊ our folke haue it longe yhadde / ⁊ thꝛugh thy pꝛyde thou withholdeſte it. Wherefoꝛe we of Rome cōmaunde yͤ that thou yelde it ayen / ⁊ yet haſte yͧ moꝛe foly done yͭ thou haſte ſlayn Froll yͭ was oure baron so Fraūce wͭ wꝛonge / ⁊ therfoꝛe all the comyns of Rome warneth the ⁊ commaunde yͤ vpon lyfe and lymme yͭ thou in haſte be at Rome amendes foꝛ to make of thy myſdedes yͭ thou haſte done / ⁊ it so be yͭ yͧ come not we ſhall paſſe yͤ hyll of Joye wͭ ſtrength / ⁊ we ſhall yͤ ſeke where euer thou may be founde / ⁊ yͧ ſhalt not haue a foote of land of thyn owne / that we ne ſhall deſtroye it / ⁊ afterwarde wͭ thy body we ſhall do all our wyll. Whā this letter was red ⁊ all men it herde they were anoyed al that were at that ſolempne feeſt. And the Bꝛytons wolde haue ſlayne the meſſangers / but yͤ kynge wolde not ſuffre them ⁊ ſayd yͭ yͤ meſſangers ſhold haue no harme / ⁊ maye by reaſon none deſerue. But cōmaunded thē to be woꝛſhypfully ſerued And after mete toke cōſeyle of kynges / erles ⁊ barons what anſwere he myght gyue agayne to yͤ meſſangers. And they counſeyled hym at ones yͭ he wolde aſſemble a great power of all yͤ londe of whiche he had loꝛdſhyp / ⁊ manly auēge hȳ vpon yͤ Emperour of yͤ deſpyte yͭ he hadde ſend hym ſuche a letter. And they ſwoꝛe by god ⁊ by all his holy name yͭ they wolde hym purſewe ⁊ ſyewe aſmoche as they myght And ſayd yͭ they wolde neuer fayle kynge Arthur / ⁊ rather to be deed. And they let wꝛyte a letter to ſende to yͤ Emperour by yͤ ſame meſſangers in this maner of wyſe

¶ Of the bolde anſwere that kynge Arthur ſende to the Emperour of Rome ⁊ to the Romayns.

Understande ymonge you of Rome that J am kynge Arthur of Bꝛytayne / ⁊ freely it holde ⁊ ſhall holde. And at Rome haſtely J wyll be (not to gyue you truage) but foꝛ to aſke truage. Foꝛ Conſtantyne that was Eleyns ſone that was Emperour of Rome ⁊ of all yͤ honoure that therto belongeth / and Maximian kynge conquered all Fraunce and almayne / ⁊ mount Joye paſſed / ⁊ conquered all Lombardy. And theſe .ii. were myne aunceſtours / ⁊ yͭ they helde ⁊ had. J ſhall haue thꝛugh goddes wyll.

¶ Of the reuerence that kynge Arthur dyde to the Emperours meſſangers.

And whan this letter was made ⁊ ſealed / kyng Arthur to theſe meſſangers gaue great gyftes / ⁊ after that yͤ meſſangers toke theyꝛ leue ⁊ went theyꝛ and came to the courte of Rome agayne. And tolde the Emperour how woꝛthely they were receyued. And alſo of ſuche a royall cōpany that he had hym foꝛ to ſerue / and how he was moꝛe royally ſerued than yͤ Emperour of Rome / oꝛ ony other kynge lyuynge in the woꝛlde. And whan the Emperour hadde ouerſeen the letter and hadde herde what was therin / and ſawe that Arthur wolde not be ruled after hym. He lete aſſemble and oꝛdeyned a great hoſte foꝛ to deſtroye kynge Arthur yf that he myght. And kynge Arthur as touchȳge his power and party / oꝛdeyned his power of knyghtes of yͤ table rounde.

¶ Of yͤ kynges and loꝛdes that came foꝛ to helpe kynge Arthur agaynſte the Emperour.

THe kynges of Scotlande ⁊ of Irlande ⁊ of Gutlande / of Denmarke / and of Almayne euery of them hadde .x. thouſande men. The duke of Normandye / Gaſcoyne / Flaunders / Peytou / ⁊ of Boloyne / eche had .iiii. thouſande. Gerin of Chartres had .x. thouſande. Howell of Brytayne had .xii. thouſande. And hym ſelfe of his owne lande .twelue. thouſāde. And of Arbalaſtres and of Archers / and of other folke on fote that no man coude them nombre. And whan all they were redy to go. Kynge Arthur his lande and Gūnor his wyfe toke to kepe to one of his neuewes that was a wyſe knyght and a hardy that was called Mordred. But he was not all true as ye ſhal here afterwarde. Kynge Arthur toke all his realme to this Mordred / ſauf onely the crowne. And after yͤ kynge Arthur toke his hoſte and wente to South hampton there that the ſhyppes were brought and the folke aſſembled. And they dyde go vnto the ſee and hadde wynde and weder at wyl. And as ſone as euer they myght they aryued at Hereflete. And as ſone as they myght they wende to lande oute of theyr ſhyppes ⁊ ſpradde all ouer the countre.

¶ How kynge Arthur faught with a gyaūt in Spayne that was called Dynabus / that ſlewe Eleyne that was kynge Howelles coſyn of lytell Brytayne.

KYnge Arthur hadde not dwelled in the countre but a lytell tyme that men hym tolde that there was come a greate Gyaunt in to Spayne / and hadde rauyſſhed fayre Eleyne that was coſyne vnto Howell of lytell Brytayne. And had brought her vpon a hyll that is called the mounte of ſeynt Bernarde. And there was no man in that countre ſo bolde ne ſo hardy that durſte fyght with hym / ne come nye the place where that the gyaūt dwelled that was called Dynabus. And moche ſorowe he dyde in yͤ coūtre. Whan Arthur herde this tydynges he called to hym Kay and Bedwere and commaunded them to go pryuely and eſpye where the gyaunt myght be founde. And they came to the ryuage there that men ſholde go to the mount that was encloſed aboute with water ⁊ yet is ⁊ euer ſhall be. And ſawe a brennynge fyre vpon the hyll. And there was alſo another hyll nye that / ⁊ there was vpō yͤ another fyre brennynge. Kay and Bedwer came to the nexte hylle and founde a wydowe open heded ſyttynge beſyde a tombe ſore wepyng and greate ſorowe made. And ofte ſhe ſayde eleyne eleyne. And Kay ⁊ Bedware aſked what ſhe was / and wherfore ſhe made ſoo moche ſorowe / and who laye in that tombe. O ſayd ſhe what ſorowe and myſſauenture fayre lordes ſeke ye here. For yf the Gyaūt may you here fynde he wyl you ſlee anone. Be ſtyll good wyf ſayd they therof dyſmaye you not / but telle vs the ſothe why that thou makeſte ſomoche ſorowe ⁊ wepynge. Syrs ſayde ſhe for a damoyſell that I nouryſſhed with my breſt that was called Eleyne / that was nece to Howell of Brytayne. And here lyeth yͤ body in this tombe whiche to me was taken to nouryſſhe. And ſo there came a dyuelle Gyaunt and rauyſſhed her and me alſo / ⁊ ladde vs bothe with hym awaye. And he wolde haue forlayne that mayde whiche was ſo yonge and tendre of aege / but ſhe that myght it noe ſuffre ſo greate ⁊ ſo huge as yͤ Gyaunt was. And for certayne yf he come nowe as he is wonte to do / he wyll you both now ſlee ⁊ therfore goo ye hens. Then beſpake theſe two meſſangers and ſayd to her / wherfore goo ye not fro hens. Certes ſayde ſhe whā yͤ Eleyne was deed yͤ gyaunt made me to abyde ⁊ haunte his wyll I muſte nedes it ſuffre. And god it wote I do it not with my wyll / for I had leuer to be deed than with hym to deale / for ſuche payne and ſorowe I haue whan he me forceth. Whan Kay and Bedwere hadde herde al that this woman them tolde / they tourned agayn ⁊ came to kynge Arthur ⁊ tolde hym all yͭ they hadde ſeen and herde. Arthur anone toke them both wͭ hym ⁊ went pryuely by nyght that none of his hoſte wyſte ⁊ came on yͤ morowe erly to the gyaunt ⁊ faught wͭ hym ſtrongly / ⁊ at the laſt hym ſlewe. And Arthur badde Bedwere to ſmyte of his heed / and brynge it into the hoſte to ſhewe it for a wonder / for it was ſo greate ⁊ huge. Whā they came agayne to the hoſte / they tolde wherfore they hadde ben out / ⁊ ſhewed to them the heed / ⁊ euery man was gladde and Joyfull of the worthy dede yͭ kynge Arthur hadde done that was theyr lorde. And Howell was ſorowfull for his nece that was ſo loſte. And afterwarde whan he had ſpace he let make a fayre chappell of our lady of Eleyns tombe.

¶ How kynge Arthur gaue batayle to yͤ Emperour / in yͤ whiche batayle yͤ Emperoure was ſlayne.

ARthur ⁊ his people herde tydynges yͭ the Emperoure had aſſembled a greate power / as well of ſarraſyns as of paynems ⁊ cryſten men. Where of yͤ nombre was .lxxx. M. hors men wͭ fote men. Arthur ⁊ his people ordeyned faſte forthe in theyr waye towarde yͤ Emperoure and paſſed Normandy and Fraunce vnto Burgyne / ⁊ wolde haue gone vnto the hoſte. But men tolde hym that the Emperours hoſte wolde come to Luce. The Emperoure ⁊ his hoſte in yͤ begynnynge of Auguſt remeued frome Rome / ⁊ came forthe by yͤ hyghe waye towarde the hoſte. Tho came kyng Arthurs ſpyes ⁊ ſayd yf that Arthur wolde he ſholde fynde the Emperour there faſt by / but they ſayd yͭ yͤ Emperour had ſo great power wͭ hym of kynges of yͤ lande of Paynems / ⁊ alſo cryſten people that it were but foly to kynge Arthur to mete with them. For yͤ ſpyes tolde that the Emperoure had fyue or ſyxe men agaynſte one of his. Kynge Arthur was bolde and hardy / and for noo thynge hym dyſmayde ⁊ ſayde. Go we boldely in goddes name agaynſt yͤ Romayns that with thē lede Sarraſyns ⁊ paynems yͭ no maner truſt they haue in god / but onely vpō theyr ſtrength. Goo we now and ſeke thē ſharpely in the name of almyghty god / ⁊ ſlee we yͤ Paynems and Cryſtē men that ben agaynſte vs with them for to deſtroy Cryſten men. And god ſhall vs helpe thē to ouercome. For we haue yͤ ryght openyon / ⁊ therfore haue we truſte in god. And do we ſo that the ennemyes that be to cryſtendome and to god may be deſtroyed and ouercome / and that men may recorde the worthyneſſe of knyghthode. Whan kynge Arthur hadde thus ſayd / they cryed all wͭ an hye voyce. God that is fader almyghty worſhypped be thy name wͭoute ende. Amen. And graunte vs grace well for to do / and to deſtroy our ennemyes that ben agaynſt cryſtendome. In the name of the fader / the ſone / and yͤ holy ghooſt. Amen. And god gyue hȳ neuer grace ne worſhyp in the worlde / nor mercy of hym to haue / that this daye ſhall faynte well for to ſmyte ⁊ egrely. And they rode ſoftely and ordeyned theyr wynges well ⁊ wyſely. The Emperoure herde tel that kynge Arthur and his folke were redy appareyled for to fyght with hym ⁊ how they were companyed. He let ordeyne his wynges in the beſt wyſe that he cowde. And more truſted in his ſtrength thā in god almyghty / ⁊ that was ſeen afterwarde. For whan the two hoſtes mette/the Emperour loſte foure of his folke agaynſt one of kynge Arthurs. And ſoo many were ſlayne/that on that one party ꝛ on ÿ other/that it was great pyte to wyt ꝛ to beholde. In this bataylle were ſlayne through kynge Arthurs fyue kȳges of ÿ Paynems ꝛ of other wonder moche people/ꝛ kynge Arthurs men fought ſo well that the Romayns ꝛ paynems had no moꝛe ſtrength to withſtonde them than .xx. ſhepe agaynſt fyue wulues. And ſo it befell that in this batayle in the ſhoure ÿ was wonder harde ꝛ longe durynge in that one ſyde ꝛ in ÿ other/ the Emperoure amonge them there was ſlayne/ but there was no man that wyſte foꝛ very ſothe who hym ſlewe.

¶ How kynge Arthur lete entyere his noble knyghtes ÿ he had loſt there in bataylle and how he ſend the Emperours body to Rome that there was ſlayne in batayle.

SO whan ÿ Romayns wyſt ÿ themperoure was deed/they foꝛſoke ÿ felde and the paynems alſo. And kynge Arthur after the chaced tyl it was nyght and ſo many of them ſlewe ÿ it was wonder to tel. And tho tourned kynge Arthur ayen whan it was nyght ꝛ thanked god of his victoꝛye. And on the moꝛowe he lete loke ꝛ ſerche all the felde foꝛ his knyghtes that he there loſt. That is to ſaye. Berell erle of Maunt. Bedwere ꝛ Kay/and Lygiers erle of Boleyne. Woꝛtiger Erle of Baac. Moth erle of wyncheſtre. Curſall erle of Cheſtre/ꝛ Holde erle of Flaundꝛes. Theſe were ÿ greate loꝛdes ÿ kynge Arthur loſte in ÿ batayle with other worthy knyghtes amonge thẽ. And ſome he lete entere in abbayes by the countre/ſome he made to be boꝛne into theyꝛ owne countre. And the Emperours body he let take ꝛ put vpon a bere ꝛ ſende it to Rome And ſayde to the Romayns/that foꝛ Bꝛytayne and Fraunce whiche he helde other truage wolde he them none paye. And yf they axed hym ony other truages/ryght ſuche truage he wolde theym paye. The kynge lete bere Kay to Kenen his owne caſtell/and there hym entered. And Lygier was boꝛne to Boleyne there he was loꝛde. And Holden was boꝛne to Flaundꝛes/there he was entered. And all the other he lete entere with moche honoure in abbayes ꝛ in houſes of relygyon in the coūtre that they were ſlayne. And kynge Arthur hym ſelfe ſoiourned that ſame yere in Bourgoyne wͭ his hoſte ꝛ thought ÿ ſame yere folowynge to paſſe ÿ mounte Joye/and haue gone to Rome alſo to haue taken the cyte ꝛ haue put ÿ Romayns in ſubieccyon/but the wycked tyraunte Moꝛdꝛed hym let/as after ye ſhall here.

¶ How the traytour Moꝛdꝛed/to whome kynge Arthur toke his lande to kepe and his caſtelles/helde them agaynſt hym.

AS Arthur had taken to Moꝛdꝛed his realme to kepe/ꝛ gone ayenſt the Emperour of Rome/ꝛ was paſſed the ſee. Moꝛdꝛede anone toke homages and feautees of all them ÿ were in this lande and wolde haue had this lande to his owne vſe/ꝛ toke caſtelles aboute/ꝛ let them be arayed. And after this falſeneſſe he dyde another great wronge/foꝛ agaynſt the lawe of cryſtente he toke his owne emes wyfe as a traytour ſholde/ꝛ oꝛdeyned hym a great hoſte agaynſt Arthurs comynge to holde ÿ lande agaynſt hym wͭ ſtrength foꝛ euermoꝛe/and to ſlee kynge Arthur yf he myght/and ſende by the ſee ꝛ by lande/and lete aſſemble Paynems and cryſten people. And he ſende to Saxons ꝛ to Danys foꝛ to helpe hym. And alſo Moꝛdꝛede ſende to Cheldryk to ſende men to hym out of Saxon ÿ was a worthy duke/ꝛ pꝛomyſed hym yf he bꝛought wͭ hym moche people he wolde graunte hym Inherytaunce for euer/ all ẏ lande fro Humbꝛe to Scotlãde ⁊ all ẏ land that Engiſt had of Woꝛtigers yefte/ whã that he ſpowſed his doughter. ¶ And Cheldꝛick came wͭ a great ſtrẽgth ⁊ power of people/ ⁊ Moꝛdꝛed had aſſembled alſo on his halfe/ ẏ they had .xl. thouſãde of ſtrõge knyghtes whan ẏ they had nede.

¶ How kynge Arthur chaced ẏ traytoure Moꝛdꝛed/ ⁊ how he was ſlayne/ ⁊ kynge Arthur wounded to dethe.

Kynge Arthur heryinge this tydynges beynge in Burgoyn was ſoꝛe anoyed/ ⁊ toke all Fraunce to Howel foꝛ to kepe with halfe deale of his men. And he went foꝛthwith to wytſand ⁊ toke ſhyppynge with his men/ and a great hooſt of frenſhmen/ ⁊ arryued at Sandwyche/ But oꝛ that he myght come to lande with his people/ Moꝛdꝛed was come with all his power/ ⁊ gaue a ſtronge batayll/ ſo ẏ kynge Arthur loſt many a man oꝛ that he myght come to lande. Foꝛ there was Gawayne his neuew ſlayne/ ⁊ Anguyſſhell ẏ helde Scotlande/ and many other wherof kynge Arthur was full ſoꝛy. But after ẏ they came to land Moꝛdꝛed myght not endure agaynſt them/ but was dyſcomfited ⁊ ſledde thens the ſame nyght with his men/ and on ẏ moꝛowe came to London. But tho of the cyte wolde not let hym entre. And fled frome thens to wynchestre/ ⁊ there helde hym wͭ his people. ¶ Kyng Arthur lete take the body of Gawayn his neuewe/ ⁊ the body of Anguyſſhell/ ⁊ lete that one be boꝛne into Scotlande/ and ẏ other to Douer ⁊ buryed. And after kyng Arthur toke his way foꝛ to deſtroye Moꝛdꝛed/ ⁊ he ſledde thens into Coꝛnewayle. And ẏ quene Gẽnoꝛ that was kynge Arthours wyfe ẏ then ſoiourned at yoꝛke herde that Moꝛdꝛed was ſledde thens/ ⁊ ẏ he myght not endure agaynſt kyng Arthur ſhe was ſoꝛe aferde ⁊ had great doubte/ ⁊ wyſte not what was beſt foꝛ to do. Foꝛ ſhe vnderſtode wel ẏ her loꝛde kynge Arthur wolde neuer to her gyue mercy foꝛ ẏ greate ſhame ẏ ſhe had done to hym. And toke her waye pꝛyuely wͭ foure men ⁊ no moo. ⁊ came to Karlyon/ ⁊ there ſhe dwelled al her lyfe/ without comynge in ſyght euermoꝛe. ¶ Kynge Arthur wyſt ẏ Moꝛdꝛed was ſledde into Coꝛnewayle/ ⁊ lete ſende after his men in Scotlande ⁊ Noꝛthumberlande vnto Humber/ ⁊ aſſembled folke without nombꝛe ⁊ went vnto Coꝛnewayl foꝛ to ſeke Moꝛdꝛed. And Moꝛdꝛed hadde aſſembled to hym all ẏ folk of Coꝛnewayll innumerably/ and wyſt ẏ Arthur was comynge/ ⁊ had leuer dye ⁊ take his chaũce than lenger flee. And he abode ⁊ gaue an harde batayll to kynge Arthur ⁊ his people/ ſo that there eſcaped none awaye on lyue ſaue kynge Arthur ⁊ other that were wounded to ẏ dethe. Foꝛ Moꝛdꝛed was ſlayne ⁊ all his people. And all kynge Arthours noble knyghtes of the rõude table wherof it was great pyte. And kynge Arthur made hym ſelfe to be boꝛne into ẏ yle of Auylyon to hele his woundes. And yet the Bꝛytons ſuppoſe that he lyueth in another land/ and that he ſhall come yet and conquere all Bꝛytayne. But certes this is the pꝛophecye of Merlyn. He ſayde his dethe ſholde be doutous/ ⁊ he ſayde trouthe. Foꝛ therof yet men haue doubte/ and ſhall haue foꝛ euermoꝛe as men ſaye. Foꝛ men wote not whether that he is on lyue oꝛ deed. ¶ Arthur was boꝛne to Auylyon the .xxii. yere of his regne/ after the Incarnacyon of our loꝛde Iheſu Cryſte .v.C.xlvi. yere.

¶ How kynge Arthur delyuered the realme vnto Conſtantyne the ſone of Cadoꝛ his neuewe.

As kynge Arthur wyſt that he myght no lenger regne / he lete come before hym Conſtantyne ẏ was Cadors ſone Erle of Cornewayle his coſyn / and to hym betoke all his realme / byddynge hym be kynge therof tyll he came agayne / for as moche as he had none heyre / begoten of his owne body. And it was great dommage that ſo noble a kynge / & ſo doughty as he was had no lygnee. But all thynge that god wolde haue done muſte be done / whoſe name be bleſſyd without ende.

¶ How Conſtantyne ſlewe Mordredes .ii. ſones that warred on hym.

This Conſtantyne was a noble & a worthy knyght of body. And the two ſones ẏ Mordred hadde begoten / had great enuy of Conſtantyne that tho was crowned kynge. And ſo it befell that they meued warre agaynſt hym. And aſſembled a gret hooſt of them that were before wᵗ Mordred & had ben dryuen away / whiche dyd moche ſorowe through the londe. The one broder aſſeyned hym to go to London for to take ẏ cyte. And ẏ other wente to wyncheſtre. But Conſtantyne came to London & ſlewe hym that was ther. And after he wente to wyncheſtre & ſlewe hym that was there alſo. And ſo was he quyte of bothe his enmyes. ¶ Whan Conſtantyne had regned well & worthely foure yere he deyed and lyeth at London.

¶ Of the kynges Adelbryght & Edel.

After Conſtantynes deth ther were two kynges in Brytayne / that one was called Adelbryght that was a Dane. And he helde the contre of Northfolke and Southfolke. That other hyght Edel and was a Bryton / and he helde Nycholl Lyndeſey / and all the londe vnto Humbre. Theſe two kynges faſt warred togyder / but they were after accorded & loued togyder / & loued togyder as they had ben borne of one body. ¶ The kynge Edel had a ſyſter the whiche was called Orewenne. And he gaue her through great frendſhyp to kynge Adelbryght to wyfe. And he begate vpō her a doughter that was called Argentyll. And in the thyrde yere after came vpon hym a ſtraūge ſekeneſſe that nedes he muſte deye. And he ſende to kynge Edell his broder in lawe ẏ he ſholde come and ſpeke with hym / & he came to hym wᵗ a good wyll. Tho prayed he the kynge / & coniured hym alſo in the name of god / ẏ after whan he were deed / he ſholde take his doughter Argentyll & the londe / & kepe and nouryſſhe her ī his chambre. And that whan ſhe were of aege ſhe ſholde be maryed to the ſtrongeſt & worthyeſt man that he myght fynde / and then he ſholde yelde vp her londe agayne. ¶ Edel graunted it and by othe confermed his prayer. And whan Adelbryght was dead & enterred Edell toke the damoyſell Argentyll & nouryſſhed her in his chambre / & ſhe became as fayre as ony myght be.

¶ How kynge Edell maryed the damoyſell to a knaue of his kechyne.

This kyng Edell that was vncle to Argentyll / bethough how that he myght falcely haue the lande fro his nece ⁊ falsely ageynſte his othe to deceyue yͤ damoyſell / ⁊ to marye her to a knaue of his kechyn yͤ was called Curan / ⁊ he became the worthyeſt ⁊ ſtrongeſte man of body yͤ eny man wyſt in ony lande lyuynge / ⁊ to hym he thought ſhamfully to haue maryed her for to haue had her lande afterwarde but he was clene deſceyued. For this Curan was Hauelockys ſone yͤ ſhas kyng of Kyrkelane in Dēmark / ⁊ this Curan conquered his wyues lande afterwarde and ſlewe kyng Edell yͤ was his wyues vncle ⁊ had all her lande as in another place it telleth more openly / ⁊ he regned but thre yere / for Saxons ⁊ Danes hym ſlewe / ⁊ that was great harme to all Brytayne / ⁊ Brytons bare hym to Stonchenge / and buryed hym honourably.

¶ Of kyng Conan yͤ was Curans coſyn.

After this Curan regned his coſyn Conā a proude knyght / he regned withoute loue / ⁊ euer was medlynge wt hys people / ⁊ toke his vncle wt warre ſleynge his two chyldren. The Saxons warred agaynſt hym oftentymes / but he them ouercame / ⁊ ſo was he in peas all his lyfe tyme. And he regned .xiiii. yere / ⁊ after he dyed ⁊ lyeth at London.

¶ Of kynge Cortyſe Gurmonde yͤ came through the paynyms into Brytayne.

Cortyſe regned after Conan his coſyn yͤ was be hated of al his people And this Cortyſ loſt al Brytayne through warre. And in his tyme fell yͤ great myſchyef in Brytayne yͤ Cryſtēdom was deſtroyed / ⁊ all yͤ Brytons were dryuen out of the lande / But afterwarde he leſte the landes to yͤ Saxons / as afterwarde ye ſhal here. For in yͤ tyme there was a paynym that was called Gurmonde yͤ kynges ſone Daufrices of yͤ paynyms folke / ⁊ ſhold haue be kynge after his fader / but he gaue it to his broder / ſaynge he wolde be no kynge tyll he had conquered a realme in a ſtraunge Countree. And of hym Merlyn propheceyed callyng hym a wulf of the ſee And he lete aſſemble innumerable paynyms ⁊ ſhyppes. And goynge by yͤ ſee he conquered dyuers landes takynge homages of many. And he came by Irlande ⁊ conquered it / whiche oftetymes had warred vpon Brytons / ⁊ Brytōs vpon them ⁊ ofte wonne ⁊ ofte loſte / ⁊ gaue hoſtages to Brytons. And ſoo the Saxons ſende to Gurmonde in Irlande / yͤ he ſholde come ⁊ helpe them agaynſte yͤ Brytons / ⁊ they wolde make hym gladly lorde ouer them For he was a paynym / ⁊ they were paynyms / and the Brytons were cryſtened. Whan Gurmonde herde this / he haſted hym ⁊ arryued in Scotlande / ⁊ came in to Northumberlande where yͤ Saxons were dwellynge / ⁊ they confermed the couenaũtes betwene them made / for to bere hym true fayth payeng truage by yͤ yere.

¶ Tho began the Saxons and the Affrycans to deſtroye robbe / ⁊ brēne townes / ⁊ waſted all maner thynge / ſparynge neyther man / woman nor chylde / lerned nor lewde / but ſlewe all / ⁊ caſt downe townes caſtles ⁊ chyrches / ⁊ ſo put all the lande in greate deſtructyō. And as ſone as they myght flee they fledde thens as wel pore as ryche / byſſhoppes and other men of relygyon lytell and greate / ſome into lytell Brytayne / and ſome into Cornewayle / all tho that ſhyppes myghgt haue.

¶ How the kynge Gurmonde droue kynge Cortyl to Chyceſtre / and ſlewe yͤ Brytons by polecy / ſaue the kyng that in dyſpayre all pryuely went awaye.

Caꝛtyk the kynge fledde thens into Chechyſtre that tho was ſtronge ⁊ there helde hȳ .xx. dayes / ⁊ this Gurmōd came ⁊ it beſyeged / but they coude not damage it / wherfoꝛ they thought by ſubtylte to bꝛenne it / ⁊ made engyns ⁊ glewe / ⁊ nettes / ⁊ toke peces of thondꝛe ⁊ fyꝛe / ⁊ bounde it to ſparowes fete / ⁊ then lete thē flee. And they flewe ⁊ lodged them in the towne there as theyꝛ neſtes were in ſtables ⁊ eueſynges of houſes / ⁊ the fyꝛe began to kyndle ⁊ bꝛent all the towne. Whā the Bꝛytons ſawe ẏ they hyed them oute ⁊ fought / but anone they were ſlayne and dyſcomfyted / ⁊ whyle the batayll dured ẏ kynge all in deſpayꝛe pꝛyuely wente into Wales / ſo ẏ they wyſte not where he became. And ſo was the towne of Chycheſtre bꝛente ⁊ deſtroyed. And after Gurmonde went ⁊ deſtroyed townes and cytees ẏ neuer after were made agayne / as it is ſene yet in many places of this lande.

¶ How this lande was called Englande foꝛ the name of Engyſt / ⁊ how many kynges were made after in this lande.

SO whan Gurmond had deſtroyed all the lande thꝛugh oute / he gaue the lande to ẏ Saxons / ⁊ anone they toke it with good wyll / foꝛ the Saxons ſomtyme deſyꝛed it. Foꝛ aſmoche as they were of Engyſt kynred / ẏ fyꝛſte hadde all the land of Bꝛytayne / and lete them be called Englyſſhmen / foꝛ bycauſe of Engiſtes name. And the lande they lete call Englaud in theyꝛ language / ⁊ the folke ben called Englyſſhmen / foꝛ aſmoche as it was called Engyſtes lande. But fro ẏ tyme ẏ Bꝛute came fyꝛſte into this lande / it was called Bꝛytayne / and ẏ folke Bꝛytons. But ſyth ẏ tyme ẏ Gurmonde conquered this lande the Saxons named it Englande / as befoꝛe is ſayd. And whan this was done. Gurmonde paſſed ouer into Fraunce / ⁊ there conquered many landes / ⁊ deſtroyed all cryſten people where as he came. And the Saxons dwelled in this lande ⁊ began faſte to enhabyte it at theyꝛ owne wyll. And they wolde haue made new kynges ⁊ loꝛdes / but they myght neuer aſſent to haue onely one kynge foꝛ to be to thē attendaunt. And therfoꝛe they made many kynges ī dyuers ſhyꝛes / as it was in Engyſtes tyme. The fyꝛſte kyngdome was Kent / ⁊ that other Southſex / ⁊ the thyꝛd Weſtſex / ẏ fourth Eeſtſex / ⁊ ẏ fyfte Northhumberland / ⁊ the ſyxt Eſtangle that is to ſay Noꝛthfolk / ⁊ Southfolk / ⁊ the .vii. Mercheriche / and ẏ is ẏ Erledome of Nycholl. Huntyngdon. Herfoꝛde. Glouceſtre. Wyncheſtre. Warwyke. ⁊ Derby / ⁊ ſo departed al Englande into .vii. partes. And after ẏ it befell ẏ tho kynges warred ofte tymes togyder. And euer he ẏ was ſtrongeſt toke hym that was febleſt / and ſoo it was longe tyme that they had no kynge /

dwelled amonge them / nor noo Cryſten man was tho ymonge them nor cryſtendome neyther / But were paynyms tyll ẏ ſeynt Gregorye was pope of Rome / that had ſene chyldren of ẏ nacyon of Englonde in the cyte of Rome / ẏ were wonder fayre creatures / ẏ had great wyll ⁊ deſyre to ſe them. And aſked of ẏ marchauntes whens they were / ⁊ men ſayde hym they were of Englonde / ⁊ that the Englyſſhe nacyon was paynymes ⁊ byleued not on god. Than ſayde ſeynt Gregory well maye they be called Englyſſh / for they haue vyſages of angeles / ⁊ therfore well oughte they to be criſtened. And for this cauſe ſēt ſeynt Gregory ſeynt Auſtyn into Englande / and .xl. good men with hym that were of good lyfe / ⁊ holy men to preche ⁊ teche ⁊ to conuerte ẏ Englyſſhe people / ⁊ them tourne to god. And ẏ was i the .vi. yere of ſeynt Gregoryes papalyte / ẏ is to ſaye / after thyncarnacyon of our lorde Jheſu Cryſte .v.C.lxxx.v. yeres as the Cronycle ſayeth.

¶ How ſeynt Auſtyn baptyzed ⁊ conuerted kynge Adelbryght / ⁊ the byſſhoppes that he made his felawes.

AS ſeynt Auſtyn came fyrſte into Englande / he aryued in the yle of Tenet / ⁊ ſo paſſed forth and came vnto Caunterbury / ⁊ there ſoiourned. And kynge Adelbryght of Kente ẏ was of the lygnage of Engyſt goodly receyued ſeynt Auſtyn ⁊ his felawes with moche honoure ⁊ them founde all ẏ them neded. And moreouer he gaue them a fayre place / ẏ nowe is called the abbaye of ſeynt Auſtyn / in whiche place he lyeth hym ſelfe ſhryned. ¶ This kynge Adelbryght was a good man / ⁊ with good wyll herde ſeynt Auſtyns predycacyons / ⁊ gaue hym leue for to preche through out all his lande before ſayde of Kent / to tourne ⁊ cōuerte to hym all the people ẏ he myght. ¶ It befel ſo after through goddes grace that in a lytell tyme the kynge hym ſelfe was conuerted to god / ⁊ all his ſubiectes were baptyzed And in the meane whyle the pope tourned hym to god. Seynt Auſtyn came to Rocheſtre / ⁊ there he preched ẏ worde of god. And the paynyms therfore hym ſcorned / ⁊ caſt vpō hym reygh tayles / ſo that all his mantell was hanged full of reygh tayles. And for more dyſpyte / they caſt on hym the guttes of reyghes / ⁊ other fyſſhe Wherfore ẏ good man ſeynt Auſtyn was ſore anoyed ⁊ greued And prayed to god that all tho chyldren of ẏ cyte that ſholde be borne afterwarde (that is to ſay) in the cyte of Rocheſtre myght haue tayles / ⁊ ſo they had. Whan the kynge herde of this vengeaunce that was fall through ſeynt Auſtyns prayer. He lete make an houſe in the honoure of almyghty god wherin women ſholde be delyuered of theyr chyldren at the brydges ende. In the whiche houſe yet women of the cyte ben delyuered of chylde. ¶ Whan that ſeynt Gregory had herde tell how the Englyſſhe people were tourned to god ⁊ cōuerted. He ſende vnto ſeynt Auſtyn his pallyon by a byſſhop / ẏ was called Paulyn / ⁊ made hym prymate and Archebyſſhop of all the realme of Englande. And ſende hym word with the byſſhop that he ſholde ordeyne and make byſſhops in the lande. And anone ſeynt Auſtyn had the pallyon of the dygnyte of the Archebyſſhop. And he made two byſſhoppes of his felawes the whiche came with hym fro Rome / ⁊ one was called Mellite / ⁊ he dwelled at London / ⁊ that other was called Juſtyn that helde the dygnyte at Rocheſtre. And this byſſhop Mellite tho wente to preche into Eſſex ⁊ cryſtened the kynge of the countree the whiche was called Sicwich / ẏ was kynge Adelbrightes cosyn his systers sone. ¶This Austin went to preche in Southsex / & torned moche of þ people to god. And seynt Austyn hym self preched all about Englande.

¶How seynt Austyn wente in to Wales / there the Brytons were. And how they wold not be obedyent to the Archebysshop of Caunterbury.

SO whan all Englande was crystened & tourned to god / seynt Austyn wentin to þ lande there as þ Brytons were / for to kepe them from þ Englysshe men þ is to saye in Wales. And there he fonde monkes & abbayes / & .vii. bysshops. For the Brytons alwaye destroyed þ Crysten people þ seynt Austin had converted. And he sayd to þ bysshops þ he was a Legate of Rome / & Prymate of Englande / & þ by reason they sholde to hym obey / & they sayd they wolde not / but to the Archebysshop of Carlyon they wolde. They wolde never for no maner thynge be obedyent to þ Englysshmen. For the Englysshmen they sayde be our adversaryes / & have dryven us oute of our countree / & we ben crysten men & ever have be / & the Englysshe men have ever be paynyms / but now of late that they ben converted. ¶Seynt Austin coude have none other answere / for they wolde not be subiecte to the pope ne to none other. Wherfore seynt Austyn retorned to kynge Adelbryght þ was kyng of Kent. And tolde hym þ his folke wolde not be to no man obedyent / but to þ Archebysshop of Carlyon. Whan the kynge herde this / he was sore anoyed / & sayd þ he wolde dystroye them. And sent to Elfryde kynge of Northumberlande þ was his frende / þ he sholde come to hym with all þ power that he myght / & they sholde mete hym at Leycetre / and fro thens they wolde goo into Wales / & there sleyng the Archebysshop of Carlyon / and all tho that had refused seynt Austyn.

¶How kynge Adelbryght & the kyng Elfryde slewe Brecynall þ was a kynge of Brytons þ helde the countree of Leycetre.

IT befell so that there was a kynge of Brytons that helde the countree of Leycetre / & all the countree aboute. his name was Brecynall. And this Bryton herde tell that tho two Englysshe kynges wolde mete there at Leycetre for to go in to Wales. he lete assemble all the power þ he hadde for to go fyght with these two kynges / but lytell it avaylled hym / for his folke were all slayne & hym self fledde / & lost his landes for evermore. And these two kynges Adelbryght & Elfryde dwelled a whyle at Leycetre / & departed the lande amonge them / & toke homages & feautes of þ folke of that countree. And after they wente towarde Wales. And tho of Wales herde tell of þ dyscomfyture þ Brecynall had at Leycetre / & were wonder sore adrad of tho two kynges / & toke & chose amonge them good men & holy hermytes / monkes & preestes / & of other people great plente / that went barefote & wolwarde / for to have mercy of the two kynges. But tho kynges were so sterne & so wycked that they wolde never speke to them / but them slewe everychone. Was for sothe / for they ne spared them no more than the wulfe dothe þ shepe / but smote of theyr heddes everychone / & so they were all martyred that to them came / that is to understande .M.C. & .xl. After they wente fro thens to Bangor for to slee all those that they myght there fynde of þ Brytons. And whan the Brytons herde that / they assembled & ordeyned all theyr power for to fyght with theym. ¶Tho was there a Baron in Wales that was called Bledryk of Cornewayle /

that ſomtyme was lorde of Deuenſhyre but ẏ kynge Adelbright had driuen hym out into Wales/ ⁊ after there he gaue thē batayle. And at that batayle was kynge Adelbright ſlayne/ ⁊ Elfryde ſore wounded ⁊ forſoke ẏ felde/ ⁊ ẏ mooſt partye of his people ſlayne. And Elfryde fled into Northumberland ẏ was his owne lande And after ẏ people of Leycetre ſhyre made with ſtrength Cadewan ẏ was Brecinals ſone kynge of Leycetre/ and he after reygned nobly ⁊ with greate honour.

¶ How Cadewan kyng of Leycetre and Elfryde kynge of Northumberlande were frendes / and of the debate that after was bytwene Edwyn ⁊ Cadwalyn that were bothe theyr ſones.

Whā this batayle was done ẏ Brytons aſſembled thē ⁊ wente thēs and came to Leycetre ⁊ made there Cadewan ẏ was Brecinals ſone kynge of Leycetre ⁊ of all the coūtre. And he toke homages ⁊ feautees of all ẏ folke of the countree And after that he aſſembled a great hoſte/ and ſayd he wolde goo into Northumberlande to deſtroye kynge Elfryde ⁊ ſlee hym yf he myght. And whan he was come thyther frendes wente ſoo bytwene thē ẏ they accorded them I this maner/ that Elfryde ſholde holde all the lande of Northumberlande to Scotland and Cadewā ſholde haue al the lande on this ſyde Humbre to the South/ ⁊ after they were good frendes all theyr lyfe/ ⁊ loued as they had ben bretherin. And this Elfryde had a ſone called Edwyn ẏ helde all the lande of Northumberlande after his faders deth as his fader had holde al his lyfe tyme/ ⁊ cadewan had another ſone called Cadwalin that held his faders lande as he it helde whan he was a lyue and theſe loued as bretherin. And the loue laſted bytwixt them but onely two yere ⁊ after began debate bytwixt them thrugh a ſymple enuyous coſyn of Cadwalins/ called Briens/ ſo ẏ they aſſembled a greate hoſte on bothe partyes. And at ẏ laſt it befel ẏ Cadwalin was diſcomfyted/ and Edwyn hȳ purſued ⁊ droue hȳ fro place to place/ ſo at ẏ laſt he fled into Irlande. And the other deſtroyed ⁊ pilled ẏ lāde/ ⁊ caſt downe caſtels ⁊ brent his maners/ ⁊ departed all Cadwalins lāde ymonge his frendes. And longe tyme after came Cadwalin ayen fro Irlande wͭ a ſtronge power/ ⁊ in playne batayll ſlewe Edwyn and all his frendes/ namely them ẏ with helde his landes by Edwyns gyfte.

¶ How kynge Oſwalde was ſlayne thorugh kynge Cadwalin ⁊ Peanda/ ⁊ how Oſwy that was ſaynt Oſwaldes broder reygned after hym ⁊ ſlewe Peanda.

As Edwyn was ſleyne Oſfris his ſone vndertoke ẏ warre agaynſt Cadwalin his eame/ ſo ẏ this Oſfris dyed durynge ẏ warre. And after ẏ deth of this Oſfris tho reygned a gentyll Criſtē man ẏ moche loued god almyghty ẏ had all the lande of Northūberlande by herytage that was called Oſwalde/ ⁊ he was kynge of all ẏ lande. But for aſmoche as he was frende to Edwyn/ ⁊ helde a great parte of ẏ lande of Cadwalin This Cadwalin warred vpon hym ⁊ droue hym towarde Scotlande. And whan Cadwalin ſawe ẏ he wolde not abyde he wolde noo longer purſue hym/ but toke ſome of his folke to Peanda his broder in lawe ⁊ prayed hym to purſue after Oſwalde/ tyll ẏ he were taken or ſlayne/ ⁊ Cadwalin torned home agayn. Whan Oſwalde herde theſe tydynges ẏ Cadwalin torned home agayne/ he wolde no longer flee/ but abode Peande ⁊ gaue hym batayle/ ⁊ Peanda was diſcomfyted ⁊ fled ⁊ came agayn to Cadwalin ⁊ ſayd/ that he wolde neuer holde one fote of lande of hym / but yf ſo were that he wolde auenge hym of Oſwalde. Cadwalin lete aſſemble a greate hoſte for to fyghte with Oſwalde ſoo that he ⁊ Peanda came to Northumberlande ⁊ gaue batayle to Oſwalde ⁊ in the ſame batayle was Oſwalde ſlayne ⁊ his heed ſmyten of / ⁊ after he was entered in ẏ abbaye of Berdenay / in whiche place god hath wrought for hym many a fayre myracle / bothe there ⁊ elles where. And anone Oſwy his broder ſeaſed all ẏ lande in to his hande ẏ was this Oſwaldes. And ẏ folke of Northumberlande loued hym wonderly wel ⁊ helde hym for theyr lorde. But he hadde men of his kynne worthy ynough ẏ wolde haue departed the lande ⁊ they warred togyder well. And for as moche as they were not ſtronge ynough they came to Peanda ⁊ prayed hym of helpe ⁊ ſocour. And behyght hym of ẏ lande largely vpon this couenaunte / ẏ he wolde them gouerne ⁊ helpe ⁊ counſeyle. Peanda herde theyr prayer / ⁊ ſo ſpake wᵗ Cadwalyn / that he ſholde ordeyne a great hoſte / ⁊ faſte ordeyne hym into Northumberlande for to fyghte with Oſwy. And Oſwy was a meke man ⁊ moche loued peas and charyte / ⁊ prayed Peanda of loue / ⁊ peas / ⁊ proffered hȳ of gold ⁊ ſyluer greate plente. And this Peanda was ſo proude that he wolde not graūt hym peas for noo maner thynge / but for all thynge he wolde with hym fyght. Soo at ẏ laſt there was ſet a daye of batayle. And Oſwy euer truſted in god / ⁊ Peanda truſted to moche vpon pryde ⁊ vpon his hoſte that he had / ⁊ togyder they ſmote egerly / but Peanda was anone diſcomfyted ⁊ ſlayne. And this was after the Incarnacyon of oure lorde Iheſu Cryſte .v. C. lv. yere. And this Oſwy regned .xxviij. yere. And a kynge that was called Oſwyne ẏ was Peandas ſone warred vpon hym / ⁊ togyder they faught but Oſwy had ẏ victory of Oſwyne / ⁊ he was dyſcomfyted / ⁊ ſlayne / ⁊ lyeth at Tynmouth.

¶ How kynge Cadwaldre that was Cadwalins ſone reygned after his fader / and was the laſt kynge of Brytons.

After the deth of Cadwalin reygned his ſone Cadwaldre wel and nobly. And his moder was ẏ ſyſter of Peanda. And whā he had reygned .xij. yere he fell into a greate ſykeneſſe / ⁊ then was there a great diſcorde bytwene the lordes of ẏ lande / ẏ euery of them warred vpon other. And yet in that tyme there felle ſo great derth ⁊ ſcarſyte of corne ⁊ other vytayles in this lande ẏ a man myght goo .iij. or .iiij. dayes fro towne to towne ẏ he ſholde not fynde to bye for golde nor ſyluer breed / wyne / nor none other vytayle wherwith a man myght lyue. But onely the people lyued by rotes of herbes for other lyuynge hadde they none / ſo moche was it fayled all aboute. Fyſſhes / wylde beeſtes / ⁊ all other thynge ſoo that yet to this myſaduenture / there fell ſo great mortalyte ⁊ peſtylence ymonge ẏ people by ẏ corrupcion of ẏ ayre that ẏ lyuynge people ſuffyſed not to burye the deed bodyes. For they deyed ſo ſodeynly / bothe great ⁊ ſmale / lorde ⁊ ſeruaūte / in etynge goynge and ſpekynge / they fell downe ⁊ dyed / ſo ẏ neuer was herde of more ſodeyne deth ymonge the people. For he ẏ wente for to burye ẏ deed body / with ẏ ſame deed body was buryed. And ſo they ẏ myght ſcape flewe ⁊ forſoke theyr landes ⁊ houſes as well for ẏ great hugye derth ⁊ ſcarſyte of corne ⁊ other vitayle / as for ẏ greate mortalyte ⁊ peſtylence in ẏ lande / ⁊ wente in to other landes for to ſaue theyr lyues / ⁊ lefte ẏ lande all deſerte and waſt ſoo that there was noo man for to trauayle ⁊ tylle the lande / ſo that the lande was barayne of corne ⁊ all other fruytes for defaute of tyllers/ ⁊ this myſauenture dured .xi. yere ⁊ more/ ẏ no man myght ere ne ſowe.

¶ How Cadwaldre wente out of his lande into lytell Brytayne.

CAdwaldre ſawe great hūgre mortalyte ⁊ peſtylence/ ⁊ the lande all poore ⁊ faylynge cornes ⁊ other vytayles ⁊ his folke peryſſhed ⁊ ſawe alſo ẏ mooſt partye of his lande all waſted ⁊ voyde of people. He appareyled hym ⁊ his folke ẏ were lefte a lyue ⁊ paſſed ouer into lytell Brytayne with a lytell nauy vnto kynge Alayne ẏ he moch loued that was his coſyn/ ⁊ that his fader hadde moche loued in his tyme. And as they ſayled in the ſee he made moche lamentacyon/ ⁊ ſoo dyde al tho that were with hym and ſayd (Dediſti nos dn̄e tanq̄ oues eſcarū: ⁊ in gentibus diſperſiſti nos.)

AND then began Cadwaldre to cōplayne hȳ to his folke pyteouſly and ſayd. Alas ſayd he to vs wretches ⁊ caytyues is ſorowe for our greate ſynnes/ ẏ whiche we wolde not amende vs whyle we had ſpace/ ⁊ now repentaunce is comen vpon vs thrugh myſauenture/ whiche chaceth vs out of our realme ⁊ propre ſoyle. And out of ẏ whiche ſomtyme Romayns/ Scottes/ Saxons/ neyther Danys myght not exyle vs. But what auayleth it now to vs that before tyme/ ofte tymes haue goten many other landes ſyth it is not the wyll of god that we abyde/ ⁊ dwell in oure owne lande. God that is very Judge that al thynges knoweth before they ben done or made/ he ſeeth ẏ we wolde not ceſſe of our ſynnes/ ⁊ that our enmyes myght not vs nor oure lygnage exyle fro/ ⁊ out of our realme. He wolde ẏ we amende vs of our folyes/ and that we ſe oure propre defautes/ ⁊ therfore hath ſhewed to vs wrath/ ⁊ wyl chaſtyſe vs of our myſdedes. Syth ẏ he doth vs wout batayle or ſtrēgth of our enmyes by greate companyes wretchedly to leue our realme ⁊ propre lande. Torne agayne ye Romayns/ torne agayne ye Scottes/ torne ayen ye Saxons/ torne agayne ye frenſſhmen. Now ſheweth to you Brytayne all deſerte/ ẏ whiche your power myght neuer make deſert/ nor yet our power hath not put vs now in exyle/ but onely the power of ẏ kynge almyghty/ whome we haue often offended by our folyes ẏ whiche we wolde not leue vntyll he chaſtyſed vs by dyuyne power. Amonge ẏ wordes ⁊ lamētacyon ẏ ẏ kynge Cadwaldre made to his folke they arryued in lytel Brytayne/ ⁊ came to kynge Aleyne. And ẏ kyng receyued hym wͭ greate Joye. And made hym to be ſerued wonder nobly. And there abode they longe tyme after. The engyliſſhe people ẏ were lefte a lyue/ ⁊ were eſcaped ẏ greate hūgre ⁊ mortalyte lyued in ẏ beſt wyſe ẏ they myght. And moche people ſprange ⁊ came of them. And they ſende into Saxonye where that they were borne to theyr frendes for men/ women ⁊ chyldren to reſtore the cytees with people ⁊ the townes ẏ were all voyde of people/ ⁊ for to labour/ trauayle ⁊ tyll ẏ erth. Whan ẏ Saxons herde theſe tydynges/ they came into the lande wonder thycke in great companyes ⁊ herberowed them ſelfe in the coūtree al about where ẏ they wolde/ for they founde no man theym for to lette. And ſoo they wexed and multyplyed greatly. And vſed ẏ maners ⁊ cuſtomes of ẏ coūtree wherof they were come. And they vſed alſo ẏ lawes ⁊ langages ⁊ ſpeche of theyr owne lande ẏ they came fro. And alſo they chaunged all the names of cytees/ townes/ caſtelles/ ⁊ boroughes/ ⁊ gaue thē names ⁊ called them as they now ben called. And they helde ẏ Cõtrees Baronages ⁊ lordſhyps in manere as the Brytons before tyme hadde compaſſed them And amonge other grete companyes that came from Germayne into this lande/ came the noble quene that was called Sexburga with men/ ⁊ women without nombre. And aryued in the cõtree of Northumberlande/ and toke ẏ lande from Albion vnto Cornewayle for her ⁊ for her folke/ for there was none that myght thẽ let/ for all was deſolate and voyde of people/ but it were a fewe pore Brytons that were lefte on mountayns ⁊ woddes vntyll that tyme. And fro that tyme forth loſt the Brytons this realme for all theyr dayes. And the Englyſſhe people began to reygne/ ⁊ departed ẏ lande bytwene them. And they made many kynges aboute by dyuerſe partyes of the lãde as here ben deuyded. ¶ The fyrſt of weſſex/ the ſeconde Merchenryche/ the thyrde Eſtangle ẏ fourth Kente the fyfthe Southſex. All thoſe regned in this lande after ẏ cadwaldre was paſſed out of this lande/ ⁊ dwelled in lytell Brytayne with kyng Aleyne his coſyn ⁊ true frende. And whan he had longe dwelled there/ ⁊ had knowynge that ẏ mortalyte and peſtylence was ouerpaſſed/ ⁊ that ẏ lande was replenyſſhed agayn wͭ people he thought to torne agayne into this lande. And prayed kynge Aleyne his coſyn of ſocoure ⁊ helpe ẏ he myght be reſtored agayn to his owne propre realme ⁊ fyrſt dignyte. And kyng Aleyne graũted hym his aſkyng. ¶ Then dyde he appareyle hȳ to take his waye ⁊ viage into this lande And prayed god almyghty deuoutly ẏ he wolde make to hym demõſtracion/ yf his prayer to this lande were to hȳ pleaſaũc or not/ for agaynſt ẏ wyll of god almyghty he wolde nothynge doo. Whan he had thus deuoutly made his prayer/ a voyce fro heuen to hym ſayd. And bad hym leue that Iourney alwaye into Englande/ and ẏ he ſholde go to ẏ pope of Rome/ for it was not ẏ wyll of almyghty god ẏ the Brytons ſholde regne more in Brytayne nor neuer recouer it vnto the tyme of the prophecy ẏ Merlyn ſayd before be fulfylled. And ẏ ſholde neuer be vnto the tyme were come/ that the relyques of his body ſhall be brought fro Rome ⁊ tranſlated into Brytayne. And whã ẏ relykes of other ſeyntes that haue ben hyd for ẏ perſecucyon of ẏ paynem folke ſhall be founde/ ⁊ openly ſhewed/ thenne ſhall they recouer theyr lande agayn/ ẏ whiche they had ſo longe tyme loſte through theyr deſertes. Whã Cadwaldre had herde this anſwere he merueyled greately ⁊ tolde it to kynge Aleyne. ¶ Then kynge Aleyne dyde ſende for the clergye of his lande/ ⁊ made them to brynge ẏ ſtoryes and propheceyes that Merlyn ⁊ Sybyll had ſayd in theyr prophecyes. And whan he knewe that ẏ prophecye that Feſtom hadde propheceyed of the Egle/ and other propheceyes accorded to ẏ dyuyne anſwere ẏ Cadwaldre had herde. He counſeyled hym ⁊ ryght faythfully deſyred hym to leue his people ⁊ his nauy/ and ſubmytte hym to ẏ dyſpoſycyon of god/ ⁊ do all that ẏ aungell had cõmaunded hym. ¶ Then Cadwaldre called Yuor his ſone and Yuory his coſyn ẏ was his ſyſters ſone/ and ſayde to them. ¶ Take he ſayd ye my folke and my nauy that is here all redy/ ⁊ paſſe into Wales/ ⁊ be ye lordes of Brytons that no dyſhonour come to theym by interrupcyon of the paynem folke for defaute of lordes. And then he hymſelfe lefte his realme of Brytayne and his folke for euermore/ and toke his waye vnto the pope of Rome Sergius/ the whiche worſhypped hym moche and ſo he was confeſſed/ ⁊ toke penaunce for his ſynnes. And he hadde not lõge dwelled there that he not deyed / ẏ .xii. Kalendis in May / the yere of grace. v.C.lxxix.

¶ How kynge Offa was ſouerayne aboue all the kynges of Englande / and how euery kynge warred vpon other.

IT befell ſo ẏ all the kynges in that tyme that were in ẏ lande / as they of Weſtſex / Marchenryche / Eſtangle / of Kente / and of Southſex / and of other coſtes eche warred vpō other. And he that was mooſt myghty toke ẏ lande of hym that was mooſt febleſt. But there was a kynge amonge them ẏ was called Offa / that was ſeynt Oſwaldes broder. This Offa conquered al the kynges of ẏ lande and reygned aboue them all. And ſo greate was ẏ warre in euery coūtre bytwene kynges that no mā myght wyte how the lande wente. But abbotes / pryours / and men of relygyon wrote the lyues ⁊ dedes of kynges / how longe euery of them reygned / ⁊ in what coūtree / and in what maner euery kynge deyed / and of byſſhops alſo. And therof made great bokes and lete call thē Cronycles. And ẏ good kynge Alured had that boke in his warde. And lete brynge it vnto Wyncheſtre / ⁊ lete it be faſt tacked to a pyler that men ſholde it not remeue / nor bere it thens / ſo ẏ euery man ſholde it ſe / ⁊ there vpō loke. For therin ben ẏ lyues of all ẏ kynges ẏ euer were in Englande.

¶ How the kynge of Northumberlande Oſbryght forlaye ẏ wyfe of Buerne Bocarde thorugh ſtrength / ⁊ after this Buerne conquered the kynge with power ⁊ ſtrength.

AND thus it befell in ẏ ſame tyme that there was a kynge in Northhumberland that was called Oſbryght and ſoiourned at Yorke. And this kynge wente vpon a day into a wodde hym for to dyſporte. And as he came agayne / he wente pryuely into a good mannes houſe / that was called Buerne / and the good man of that place was gone that tyme to ẏ ſee. For ofttymes there he was wonte to ſpye theues and robbers that oftentymes were wonte to come into the lande / to robbe / brenne / and ſlee. The lady that was Buernes wyfe was a wonder fayre womā. And ẏ kyng came vnto her whan that her houſbande was abſent. And ſhe truſted none harme vnto the kynge / and welcomed hym with moche honoure and worthely hym ſerued in all thynge. Whan the kynge had eten he toke the lady by ẏ hande and ladde her into a chambre and ſayd. He wolde ſpeke with her in counſeyle. And all ẏ folke he made voyde fro the chambre / ſaue only the lady and he. But the lady wyſt not wherfore he it dyd tyll he hadde done all his wyll. And whan he hadde done this dede he torned agayn to Yorke / ⁊ the lady he left there ſore weppynge for the dede that ẏ kyng to her had done. And whan her lorde was come home ⁊ ſawe her wepe ⁊ ſuche ſorow ⁊ mornynge make / he axed her what ſhe had done / and why ſhe made ſuche ſorowe. Syr ſhe ſayd / ſubtylly and falſely the kynge Oſbryght hath done me ſhame and vilanye agaynſt my wyll. And tolde hym all the trouth how ẏ kynge hadde forlayne her with ſtrength / wherfore ſhe ſayd ſhe had leuer to be deed than to lyue. Fayre loue be ſtyl ſayd he / for agaynſt ſtrength febleneſſe is lytell worth / and therfore of me ſhalt thou neuer the leſſe be loued and namely for ẏ haſt tolde me the trouth. And yf almyghty god graunt to me my lyfe I ſhall ẏ auenge. This Buerne was a greate man and a myghty lorde / ⁊ was well byloued ⁊ great frendes hadde. And lete ſende for the greteſt lordes of the lande/ ⁊ to them made his complaynt of ẏ deſpite that ẏ kynge to hym had done ⁊ ſayd/ he wolde be auenged how ſoo euer it were. And all his frendes counſeyled hym that he ſholde go vnto Yorke there ẏ ẏ kynge was hym to defye. And Buerne toke his meyne and came to the kynge. Whan the kynge ſawe hym he called hym curteyſly by name. And Buerne hym anſwered/ ⁊ to hym ſayd ſyr/ I you defye/ and yelde vp feautees homages ⁊ landes/ ⁊ alſmoche as I haue holden of you/ and fromme this tyme forwarde I wyll neuer of the no thynge holde. And ſoo he departed fro ẏ kynge withoute more ſpeche or ony abydynge/ and toke leue of his frendes/ and wente into Denmarke ⁊ complayned to the kyng Godern/ ⁊ tolde hym of ẏ deſpyte that kyng Oſwryght to hym hadde done of his wyfe/ and prayed hym of ſocour ⁊ helpe hym for to auenge. Whan kynge Goderne of Denmarke and the Danes had herde the complaynt of Buerne/ and ẏ prayer that he hadde/ they were ryght wonder gladde in theyr hertes for alſmoche as they myght fynde a cauſe for to go into england for to warre vpō englyſſhe men/ and for to auenge Buerne of the deſpyte that kynge Oſwryght had done vnto his wyfe. And for alſmoche as Buerne was ſybbe vnto the kynge of Denmarke/ anone they lete ordeyne a greate hoſte of men/ and lete ordeyne them ſhyppes and alſmoche as theym neded for to haue to ẏ kynge. And whan all the hoſte was redy the kynge made his two bretherne chyef captaynes/ that were noble knyghtes of body and alſo bolde. ¶ That one was called Hynga/ and that other Hubba.

¶ How the Danes toke Yorke/ and ſlewe kynge Oſwryght/ and ſoone after ſlewe kynge Elle.

AS all was redy the two bretherne toke leue of kynge Goderne/ and wente towarde the ſee for to paſſe ouer into Englonde as faſt as they myght ſpede. Now is Buerne ſo well comforted ⁊ faſte hyed hym wᵗ the Danes ẏ they ben aryued in the North coūtre/ ⁊ come through out Holderneſſe/ ⁊ deſtroyed all the countree/ ⁊ brended townes/ ⁊ robbed folke/ and ſlewe all that they myght take tyl ẏ they came vnto Yorke. And whan kynge Oſwryght ſawe thē come/ he toke all his peple that he had with hym/ ⁊ came oute of the cyte ⁊ faught wᵗ them. but noo foyſon he ne had ayenſt them/ ⁊ moche of ẏ peple that there was were ſlayne on bothe partyes And kynge Oſwryght hym ſelfe there was ſlayne/ ⁊ ẏ cyte anone was taken ⁊ ẏ Danes went in. ¶ And there was alſo another kyng in Northumberlande that Buernes frendes had choſen ⁊ helde hym for kynge a man ẏ was called Elle/ for alſmoche as they wolde not to kynge Oſwryght be attendaunt/ for ẏ deſpyte ẏ he had done vnto Buerne theyr coſyn. It befyl thus ẏ kynge Elle was gone into ẏ wodde hym for to dyſporte/ ⁊ of venyſon ſomme he had taken. And as he ſatt in the wod at mete to a knyght he ſayd. We haue wel ſpedde and moche venyſon taken. And wᵗ ẏ worde came in a man/ ⁊ to hym ſayd/ yf ye ſoo moche of venyſon haue wonne/ an honderd tymes more ye haue loſt/ for all this countree the Danes haue goten/ ⁊ taken ẏ cyte of Yorke/ ⁊ ayenſt you ſhall it holde/ ẏ neuer ye ſhal come therin and for ſomoche they haue ſlayne kynge Oſwryght. Whan kynge Elle herde theſe wordes he lete aſſemble all ẏ folke of the countree/ and ordeyned all the power that he myght haue. And he wolde haue goten the towne of Yorke with ſtrength/ But ẏ Danes came out anone and gaue hym a ſtronge batayle. And ſlewe the kynge

Elle and the mooſt parte of the people ẏ he had brought with hym And the ſame place there they were ſlayne ſhal euermore be called Elle crofte ⁊ that place is a lytell from Yorke. ¶ And then reſted the danes neuer/ tyll they hadde conquered all Northumberlande. And in ẏ coũtre they made wardeyns/ ⁊ went ferther into the land/ ⁊ toke Notyngham And there they abode all the wynter/ doynge all ẏ ſorow that they myght. ¶ And after whan Nouer tyme came they remeued from Notyngham/ ⁊ came into Nycholl ⁊ Lyndſey/ ⁊ to Holand/ for no man myght them withſtande/ ſomoche power ⁊ ſtrengthe they had.

¶ Howe ſeynt Edmonde the kynge was martred.

THe Danes had paſſed ſo ferre frõ coũtree to coũtree brennynge and robbynge ẏ they came to Tethforde And in ẏ countree they foũde a cryſten kynge ẏ moche loued god ⁊ his workes/ ẏ was called Edmonde. And he was a kynge of Northfolke/ ⁊ Southfolke. This kynge ſeynt Edmonde ordeyned aſmoche folke as he myght/ ⁊ fought with the Danes/ but he ⁊ his folke were dyſcomfyted/ and the kynge hymſelfe was dryuen vnto the caſtell of Framelynham. And the Danes hym purſued/ ⁊ came vnto the ſame caſtell. And whan kynge Edmonde ſawe ẏ the caſtel myght not withſtãde them/ he came agaynſt them/ with whome ẏ Danes dyd ſpeke fyrſte/ aſkynge hym where kynge Edmonde was. Now forſoth ſayd he whan I was in ẏ caſtel there was the kynge. And whan I wente oute of the caſtell/ he wente oute alſo. And whether he ſhall eſcape or deye/ at goddes wyll muſt it all be. ¶ Whan ſeynt Edmond had named god/ by ẏ worde they wyſt well that it was hymſelfe. And anone Hubba/ and Hungar toke hym and ſayd/ that he ſholde god forſake and al cryſten lawes/ as other dyuers had done before hym. And ſeynt Edmonde ſayd that he wolde neuer/ but rather he wolde ſuffre dethe for gods loue ⁊ his lawes alſo. Then toke they kynge Edmonde and bounde hym to a tree/ and made theyr archers ſhote at hym wͭ arowes/ tyl that his body ſtycked as ful of arowes as an orchen ful of prykes. But for all ẏ payne that they hym dyd he wolde neuer forſake god And in the ſame torment and payne he deyed/ and betoke his ſoule to almyghty god And whan they ſawe that he was deed they ſmote of his hede. And in this maner as ye haue herde/ was ſeynt Edmonde martred.

¶ How Hubba and Hungar toke ẏ towne of Redynge.

SO whan ſeynt Edmõd was martred Hungar and hubba departed thens with all the Danes vnto Redynge And as they wente thederwarde they fyred and brẽte townes ⁊ cytees/ and ſlewe all cryſten people ẏ wold not forſake god ⁊ caſt downe churches ⁊ came to Redynge and toke ẏ towne/ ⁊ there helde them tyll that the kynge Edelf of weſſex came theder with all his power for to take the Cytees Then came out the Danes for to gyue batayl to kyñg Edelf/ ⁊ at that batayl was ſlayne an Erle of the Danes ẏ whiche was called Sydrak. Upon ẏ morowe came kynge Eldred and his broder Aluered with a myghty and a great power of folke. And the kynge Edelf came agayne the whiche had foughten ẏ day before/ to that batayll. And then the Danes came out manly for to fyght with them al thre And that batayll was wonderfull ſtrong For many a man was there ſlayne/ and the Danes that day had yͭ vyctory. And the kynge Eldred ⁊ his broder Alured yͭ daye were dyſcomfyted. But the fourth daye after yͭ Danes ⁊ yͭ Englyſſh fought togyder another tyme vpon Elkdene/ ⁊ there was ſlayne a kynge of Denmarke yͭ was called Baſyn/ ⁊ foure erles of grete power. And yͭ day the Danes had ſhame/ for they were dryuen to Englyfelde. ¶ And yͭ .xv. daye after the Danes ⁊ the Englyſſhmen fought togyder at Baſynge ⁊ there were yͭ Englyſſhmen dyſcomfyted And from thens a Dane yͭ was called Roſyne went to Redyng wͭ his hooſt/ ⁊ dyſtroyed al yͭ he myght take. And kyng Eldred fought wͭ hym/ but he was ſo woūded yͭ he deyed. And he regned but .v. yere/ and lyeth at Wonborne.

¶ Circa annū dñi. iiij.C. xlix.

LEo yͭ fyrſte was Emperour after Marcianus .xvij. yere. In his tyme were the Rogacyon dayes ordeyned afore the aſſencyon/ of ſeynt Marmet byſſhop of Uienne. The pope of Rome hyght Leo a noble clerke/ ⁊ with hym had many clerkes. ¶ Hilari⁹ was pope after leo vij. yere. This mā ordeyned yͭ no byſſhop ſholde ordeyne his ſucceſſary (vt pʒ. viij. ir. ¶ Simplici⁹ was pope after hym he ordeyned yͭ no clerke ſholde take noo garment to be clothed in after the ſeculer maner of a laye man by the reaſon of his offyce ⁊ benefyce. ¶ Zeno was Emperoure after Leo .xv. yere ⁊ this man was an heretyke ⁊ cruell agaynſt cryſten men. And in this mannes dayes yͭ bodyes of ſeynt Mathewe the euangeliſt/ ⁊ ſeynt Barnabe were foūde/ ⁊ with them the goſpell yͭ ſeynt Mathewe wrote. About this tyme there was a certayne comyn woman bare .vij. chyldren at one byrth/ of yͭ whiche one was made after kynge of Lombardy

¶ Felix the thyrde was pope after Simplicius thre yere ⁊ .viij. monethes. This man ordeyned yͭ reſpyte ſholde be gyuen to a man yͭ was accuſed yͭ he myght auyſe hym how he ſholde anſwere. And yͭ the Judges ⁊ yͭ accuſers ſholde be ſuche/ ⁊ yͭ they ſholde take all ſuſpeccyon and ſpot. ¶ Gelaſius a Romayne was pope after Felix .v. yere/ this man ordeyned yͭ canon of the maſſe with yͭ preface/ ympnes/ tractes/ oryſōs as ſeynt Ambroſe made the. And that orders ſholde be gyuen foure tymes in yͭ yere. ¶ Anaſtaſius was Emperoure after Zeno .xxvij. yere and he was a curſed man/ ⁊ an heretyke/ ⁊ hatefull to god ⁊ man. And he was ſleyn with lyghtnynge. And in his tyme deyed ſeynt Patryk the fyrſt byſſhop of Irelande/ in yͭ .C. xxij. yere of his aege And his felowe was the abbot of Colūba ⁊ ſeint Brigida whō ſeynt Patryk made a nōne. And they were buryed in one tombe/ and at dyuers tymes ⁊ this is the Epitaphe (Hij tres ī Duno: tumulo tumulantur in vno. Brigida patrici⁹: atq columba pius) ¶ Anaſtaſius a Romayne was pope after Gelaſius two yere ⁊ thre monethes. He ordeyned yͭ no preeſt for wrath nor hate ſholde leue of to ſay his dyuyne ſeruice in yͭ chirche/ except the maſſe And he curſed themperour Anaſtaſi⁹/ for he was an heretike And it is wryten of hym yͭ afterwarde he tourned for drede to yͭ opynyon of the Emperour. And he is called the ſeconde curfamed pope yͭ is in (Catholico pontificū) ⁊ afore hȳ was Liberi⁹ famed ī hereſy.

¶ Anno dñi. iiij.C. lxxxxiiij.

SImach⁹ was pope after hym .xv. yere/ ⁊ with hym was ordeyned another pope yͭ was called Laurencius/ ⁊ bytwyxt them was a grete dyſſencyon/ ⁊ they bothe put them to the Jugement of deſencyon. And they bothe put them to the Judgment of Theodoꝛia the kyng/ ⁊ he iuged yͭ he yͭ was fyrſt oꝛdeyned and yͭ mooſt men of yͤ chirche helde with ſholde be pope. And Simachus preuailed yͭ whiche loued yͤ clergy ⁊ pooꝛe men/ ⁊ foꝛ Paſcaſius yͤ deaken Cardynall helde ayenſt Simachus with yͤ parte of Laurence to his dethe. Therfoꝛe he was put to yͤ paynes of purgatoꝛye to kepe yͤ bathes after his dethe/ as Gregoꝛye ſayth in his boke of Dialogis. This man oꝛdeyned yͭ (Gloꝛia in excelſis) ſholde be ſayd euery Sonday and feeſtes of martyꝛs.

¶ Nota That Englonde was longe tyme cryſtened afoꝛe Fraunce.

CLodianus the fyrſt cryſten kynge of Fraũce was this ſame tyme baptyſed of ſeynt Remigio/ ⁊ he had a cryſtẽ woman to his wyfe ⁊ ſhe meued hym many tymes to the fayth ⁊ ſayd. He ſhold be ſeruinable yf he wolde torne/ ⁊ ſo he was neuer afoꝛe. ¶ Hoꝛmiſda was pope after Simach⁹. ix. yere. This man was of great charyte to pooꝛe men/ gyuyng many oꝛnamentes to chirches/ ⁊ reconſyled yͤ Grekes yͭ were curſed foꝛ hereſy. ¶ Juſtin⁹ was Emperour after Anaſtaſi⁹. ix. yere a very cryſten man. And all yͭ euer the Emperour Anaſtaſius hadde done agaynſt yͤ chirche/ he reuoked/ and obeyed the pope Hoꝛmiſda/ ⁊ called agayn yͤ byſſhops yͭ were exyled by his predeceſſours ¶ Priſcianus grãmaticus was this tyme. And this yere the whiche is the. lxxi. fro the comynge of the Saxons/ began the kyngdom of weſtſaxon/ and Cerdico was kynge. ¶ Johãnes was pope after Hoꝛmiſda thꝛe yere and. ix. mõthes And Theodoꝛicus the kynge of Ytaly an heretyke toke yͤ pope with other Senatours and ſend them to the Emperoure Juſtinus determynynge yͭ ⁊ he wolde not lete the heretykes be in peas he ſholde ſlee all the cryſten folke in Ytaly. And after he toke pope Johan ⁊ Simachũ patriciũ and Boyciũ the Senatours/ ⁊ ſlewe them in pryſon. But Boys defended hȳ by yͤ reaſon of thauctoꝛyte of yͤ Senatours/ ⁊ he ſende hym to the cyte of Papy foꝛ perpetual exyle/ wher he made yͤ boke de cõſolacione philoſophie. And at yͤ laſte yͤ coũtree of Mediolaneñ he cauſed Boys thꝛote to be cut/ and ſo he dyed. ¶ Felix pope ſucceded Johñ foure yere. This man cõmaũded that ſyke men ſholde be aneled foꝛ yͤ dethe/ but cryſt oꝛdeyned it fyrſt. ¶ Juſtinian⁹ was Emperour. xxxviij. yere/ this man drewe the law of the Romayns out of almoſt. ij. M. bokes/ and. iij. C. verſes ouer longe ⁊ accoꝛdynge into one volume of. xij. bokes/ ⁊ called it Juſtinian He made alſo yͤ Digeſtes ⁊ deuyded theym into thꝛe bokes. ¶ Bonifaci⁹ the ſeconde was pope after Felix two yere/ ⁊ lytell of hym is wꝛyten. ¶ Johãnes yͤ ſeconde was pope after Bonifaci⁹/ ⁊ this mã had a greate ſtryf wͭ Juſtian⁹ thẽperour/ wheder yͭ Cryſt was of. ij. natures oꝛ one. the pope ſayd/ he had two natures. One of god/ ⁊ another of man. The Emperoure ſayd/ eyther cõſent to vs/ oꝛ yͧ ſhalt go into perpetuall exyle. The pope anſwered. J deſyꝛe to come to Juſtinian⁹ yͤ mooſt cryſtẽ Emperoure/ but as me ſemeth J haue foũde Dyocleſian the perſecutour of cryſten men. But certeynly J dꝛede not thy malyce/ ne J fere not thy thꝛetenges The thẽperour meked hȳſelfe ⁊ fell downe to the groũde ⁊ aſked mercy ⁊ abſolucyon.

Anno dñi. v.C.xxxiiii.

AGapitus a confeſſour was pope after Johñ two yere/ this Agapitus toꝛned Juſtinianus frome erroure fully of the heretykes. ¶ This man ordeyned that proceſſyon ſholde be done ẏ ſondayes/ & then he deyed at Conſtantynople. ¶ Syluerius a martyr was pope after this man thre yere he was exyled fro cryſten fayth and ſlayne by the proctoure of Theodory. For he wold not reſtore the byſſhop of Athenes an heretyke to his benefyce agayne. ¶ Uirgilius was pope after hym. xvij. yere. And he entred euyll in to his benefyce/ but he gouerned hȳ well And he ſuffred his perſecuſion patyently And he was exyled fro Rome. And at the laſt after greate paſſyon of Theodory in Conſtantynople deyed.

¶ Synod' quarta Conſtantinopolitana contra Theodorū & oēs hereticos alios fuit iſto tempore. Iſta Synod' dampnauit hereſim theodori, q̄ dixit aliū eſſe deū verū, et aliū xp̄m. Et q̄ beata virgo non ſit dei genitrix. ſed hominis tantum.

¶ Pelagius was Pope after Uirgilius foure yere and. x. monthes. This man ordeyned that heretykes/ Scismatykes/ & Renegates/ ſholde be punyſſhed by ẏ ſeculer power ¶ Johannes the thyrd was pope after this man. xiij. yere. Of this ſame man lytell is wryten but ẏ he reſtored the chircheyerde of the apoſtles Phylyp & Jacob ¶ Juſtinus ẏ ſecunde after Juſtynyan was Emperoure. xi. yere. This man dyſpyſed pore men. He robbed the Senatours. He was gyuen to all couetouſnes/ ſoo that he made cheſtes of yron for to kepe his money in. Then anone he fell in hereſye/ & wexed out of his mynde And then was choſe Tyberi' a good mā for to gouerne ẏ comyn people. ¶ Tyberi' ẏ ſecunde was Emperour after Juſtinus. vij. yere This mā was a vertuous man. He gaue innumerable good to pore men. In ſomoche ẏ his wyfe chyd often with hym & ſayd he caſt away ẏ goodes of ẏ Empyre as ſtones And he anſwered agayn & ſayd I truſt in god ẏ our cheſtes ſhall neuer lacke of moneye/ and we put treaſour into heuen. ¶ And vpon a certayne day whan he wente by his palays at Conſtantynople/ he ſawe in ẏ marbyl pament a croſſe grauen/ & thought it ſholde not be troden vpon/ & commaunded to take it vp. For the croſſe ought to be put in the hertes of faythfull men/ & there he founde ineſtymable treſour of golde. He ſubdued Perſes/ & deyed bleſſydly. ¶ Benedictus was pope after Johānes foure yere. This man ſuffred great perſecucyō of hongre/ peſtylence and ennmyes. This man broughte many a thouſand quarters of whete from Egypt/ whan Rome was beſyeged by kynge Albanack/ & almooſt loſt for vytayle. wherfore they wroten on his graue this Epytaphe. Magna tuis monimenta pater benedicte reliquis: hec tuū titul' & ver' atq; dolor. ¶ Pelagius was pope after Benedictus. v. yere. In his tyme Rome was beſyeged by ẏ Lombardes/ & lytel he did ī his dayes ¶ Mauricius was Emperour after Tyberius. xxi. yere. This mā was a very cryſtē mā & ſubdued Perſas & Armenias/ & in ẏ latter ende of his dayes/ he dyſtroubed with ſeynt Gregory/ & entented to haue ſlayne hym. And then appered a man in Rome/ clothed in a relygyous habyte holdynge a naked ſwerde in his hāde/ & cryed about ẏ cyte in this wyſe. The Emperour ſhall be deſtroyed. The whiche the Emperour herd. And he corrected hymſelf of his treſpace/ and prayed to god to withdrawe his ſentence from hym. To whome our lorde appered in his ſlepe and ſayd wylt thou that I ſpare the nowe or in tyme to come And he was a louer of wretches and ſayd gyue me here my rewarde. Thenne was he Emperoure after many a daye. And whā he ſholde haue corrected his knyghtes for the extorcyon that they dyd/ they aſked hym why that he wolde not paye them theyr wages. And ſo they fell at varyaūce/ ⁊ choſe Foca for to be Emperour ⁊ ſlewe hym ⁊ his thre ſones. ¶ This tyme ſeynt Auſtyn came into Englōde and ordeyned two Archebyſſhops/ that is to ſaye of London/ ⁊ of yorke/ by the cōmaūdement of ſeynt Gregory. And remembre ẏ many tymes is made mencyon of diuers regyons ⁊ coūtrees/ that oftyme they haue be torned to the fayth. For alway the fayth abode not in the for dyuers cauſes ſo it is of Englonde/ Fraunce/ Perſia/ Jewery. And in this thynge Rome was priuyleged/ for the fayth of Peter neuer fayled Focas was Emperour after Mauricius his mayſter/ whome he ⁊ other ſlewe ⁊ bycauſe he was euyl he ended noughte In al his dayes ẏ Romayns fought ſtrōgly ayenſt the Perſes/ ⁊ ẏ Romayns were dyſcomfyted ⁊ loſte many a prouynce/ And at ẏ laſt he was ſlayn by Heraclius ſo as he dyd to other ſo was he done to.

¶ Anno dn̄i. v.C.lxxxiiii.

Gregory the fyrſte a Romayn and a monke was pope after Pelagius .xiii. yere This man was called Gregorꝰ magnꝰ for many thynges ẏ he exceded in he paſſed other men in power/ in ryches in vertue/ in noblenes/ in wyſedome/ in holynes/ in fame/ ⁊ in experiēce. And vnder this mā euyl thynges paſt were ceaſed. And many a noble boke he wrote to ẏ incomparable profyte of al holy chirche He was one of the pryncypal doctours of all the foure doctours of ẏ chirche. This man forſoth alone with ſeynt Fabiane after ſeynt Peter/ was choſen of god in all the ordres of the popes of Rome. Many thynges he ordeyned in the chirche as is ſhewed in his regyſtre(Deus in adiutorium) for to be afore the begynnynge of ẏ houres he cōmaūded to be ſayd. He renewed ⁊ made all the offyces of the chirche in a fayre ⁊ a more compendyous maner the whiche abydeth yet vnto this daye ⁊ is called Gregorianuꝫ. And ſhortly for to conclude on this holy man/ mannes tongue can not expreſſe lyghtly ẏ louynges of this man/ what in wrytynges/ ⁊ alſo i example of vertuous dedes. ¶ Sauinianus was pope after Gregory one yere ⁊ .v. monethes. This man ordeyned ẏ ryngynge of belles at ẏ houres of ẏ day But this mā backbyted ſeynt Gregory for his lyberalyte to poore men. And though he ſawe ſaynt Gregory rebuke hym thryes for it. And ẏ fourth tyme he lay in his bed ⁊ thought ſeynt Gregory ſmote hym on the heed/ ⁊ he waked ⁊ dyed anone This was the thyrde pope amonge al ẏ popes that is noted to dye a dredeful deth. ¶ Bonifacius the thyrde was pope after Sauinianus. viii. monethes. He ordeyned ẏ none but whyte clothes ſholde be put on the aulter. ¶ Bonifacius the fourth was pope foure yere and. viii. monethes/ this mā purchaced of ẏ Emperour Focas ẏ ẏ chirche of ſaynt Peter of Rome ſholde be the heed chirche of all this worlde. For afore Conſtantynople was ẏ heed chirche And he gate lycence that the chirche called Panton/ the whiche was dedycate to the honour of Neptunus and other fals goddes/ where cryſten mē many tymes were ſlayne of deuylles myghte be dedycate to the worſhyp of al the ſeyntes in heuen This man ordeyned ẏ mōkes myght vſe the offyce of prechynge/ cryſtenynge/ and confeſſyng. ¶ Heraclius was Emperour after Focas. xiiii. yere And in ẏ thyrd yere of his regne. Coſdras the kynge of Perſe brent Jheruſalem and other worſhypfull places. Zachary the Patryarke with other moche people he toke in Captiuyte The parte of the holy croſſe/ the whiche

Cytye lefte there he toke with hym into his coūtree. But the .xii. yere of Heracliꝰ Coſdras was ſlayne of Heracliꝰ / and the croſſe was brought agayne / ẏ people were delyuered. And whan Heracliꝰ wolde haue entred the cyte proudely / the yates of ẏ cyte by power of god ſhytte thēſelfe / & ẏ Emperour meked hym to god aboue & ẏ yates opened And than was the feeſt of ẏ exaltacōn of ẏ croſſe made. ¶ Deuſdedit was pope after Bonifaciꝰ thre yere this was an holy man. For on a certayne daye whan he kyſſed a lepre / anone the lepre was hole. ¶ This tyme a Cyteyzin of London through the mocyon of Ethelbryght buylded a chyrche of ſeynt Peter in the weſt parte of London / in a place ẏ was called Thorneye.

¶ Circa annū dn̄i. vi.C.xliiii.

BOnifacius ẏ fyfth was pope after Deꝰdedit fyue yere. The whiche ordeyned that no mā ſholde be taken out of ẏ chyrcheyerde. And lytel elles of hym is wryten.

¶ Nota' Machomitum.

MAchomite ẏ duke of Sarrazyns and Turkes was this tyme And he was ẏ dyſceyuer of al ẏ worlde / a falſe prophete / the meſſāger of the deuyl. The forgoer of Antecryſt / the fulfyller of heresye / & of all fals men the meruayleſt. Of whome the domination thus began. ¶ There was a certayne famous clerke at Rome ẏ coude not ſpede in his maters that he deſyred to haue ſpede in. Thenne he receded from Rome ouer the ſee / & procured many a mā to haue gone with hȳ. Amonge whome was this Machomite a great man of wytte. And this clerke promyſed hym to make hym duke of ẏ countree yf he wolde be guyded after hym. ¶ There he nouryſſhed a downe / & put al the corne ẏ the downe ete in Machomitus eere / & ſo this downe had neuer noo mete but in his ere The forſaid clerke on a day called ẏ people & meued them to cheſe ſuche a prynce as ẏ holy ghoſt wolde ſhewe to them in lykeneſſe of a downe. And anone this clerke ſecretly lete this downe flee ẏ whiche after his olde cuſtome came to Machomete and put his byll in his eere. Whan ẏ people ſawe this / anone he was choſen duke of that people of Corozame / he ſayd he was ẏ very prophete of god. Then he made a boke of his lawe ẏ was called Alkaron. But he dyde it by Informacyon of thre of his mayſters to whom the deuyll mynyſtred ẏ auctoryte & the thynge. The fyrſt mayſter was a Iewe a great aſtronomyer & a Nygromancer. ẏ ii. was Iohan de Anthiochia. The thyrd was Sergiꝰ an heretyke. And theſe thre made an vngracyous law & an vnhapp And what ſomeuer was harde of byleue and noyous to doo / they lefte that out o the lawe / and they put that thyng in the lawe the whiche the worldly men were redy and prone to do. That is to ſay. Glotony / lechery / rapyne / and ſuche other. And alſo this Machomyte ordeyned ẏ a man ſhold haue as many wyues as he myght occupye and fynde / and refuſe them twyes or thryes / or foure tymes & take them agayn And many meruaylous and fals thynges he made in his law / the whiche were to long to reherſe here. But they be playne in his boke of Alkaron. And euer he wrote in his boke that our lorde ſpake to Machomyte his prophete / ſayeng on this wyſe / or on this. ¶ Thꝰ by his fals meanes he deceyued ẏ blynd people And whan his mayſters & he had made this boke ẏ was ſo delectable he wrote it in a boke in letters of gold / & nouryſſhed a camell pryuely / and all onely with the handes of Machomete was alwayes fedde.

And there pryuely he tyed this boke of ỹ lawe that he had made about the camels necke / and put his camel forth on a tyme in a felde afore daye / and this camell Joyed in his lyberte / for he was neuer loſe afore. And he wolde ſuffre no mã to come and touche hym. And ſo there was a grete fame of ſuche a camell / and all the people cãme to ſe hym. Amonge whom was this Machomyte. But whan the camell ſawe hym that hadde fedde hym alwaye afore he ranne vnto hym. And he hadde taughte this Camell afore tyme to falle downe on his knees and lycke his hãdes And ſo he dyde afore all that people. The people then cryed and ſayd / ỹ there was a very enſemple that he was ỹ true prophete of god. Then they prayed Machomyte to open that holy boke with his holy handes / the whiche was ſende from heuen for euermore to be kepte. In the whiche boke is ſhewed how the people ſhall worſhyp god. And machomite ſayd / this boke was wryten with aungels handes Soo by theſe falſe meanes he tourned to his lawe all ỹ lande of Perſe / and all the Eaſt Imperyall agaynſt Heraclium the Emperour. And he occupyed vnto ỹ ende of Alexandre and Egypte. Libia. Arabia and Siria Thenne after he enfected all Affrycam. And but ỹ grace of god witheſtode hỹ he had enfected al Spayne ⁊ Frãce. And many other thynges he dyde whiche were to moche to wryte in this boke.

Conſtantyne the thyrde / ỹ ſone of of Heraclij was Emperour. xxvii. yere. This Conſtantyne was a great tyraunt and a curſed man / and an heretike falſe / ſubtyl / and odyous to cryſtẽ men For he gaue no place to pope Martyne / And he reyſed a great hoſte ayenſt ỹ lombardes. And there he loſte the felde ⁊ fled vnto Rome. And honourably was receyued of ỹ pope Vitellianus / ⁊ other of the cyte. And he rewarded not thẽ lyke after theyr merites as a prynce ſholde haue done. But vſed forth tyrannye and hereſye. Wherfore at the laſt he was ſlayne of his owne knyghtes in a bath / ỹ whiche wolde no longer ſuffre his tyrannye. And ſoo he wretchedly lyued / ⁊ dyed vnhappely.

¶ Martinꝰ ỹ fyrſt was pope after Theodor. vi. yere. This Martinus was a very holy mã ⁊ ſtrõgely ſtroue for the fayth of god. And whã he ſange maſſe on a certayne day at the auter there purſued hỹ to ſlee hym a man that was called Spatarius of Olymphe. And whan he wolde haue ſmyten hym he was blynde ſodaynly. This ſame man called a Synodi in ỹ cyte of Rome / and he dampned Syrum / Alexandrũ / Sergiũ / Pyrrũ / ⁊ Paulũ heretykes. Wherfore Conſtantyne the Emperour exyled hym / and he dyed a ſeynt.

¶ Eugenius a Romayne was pope after Martyne almooſt thre yere / ⁊ was an holy man / but of hym lytell actes ben wryten. ¶ Vitellianꝰ was pope after hỹ. xiiii yere. This man made the ſonge that the Romayns vſe / ⁊ accorded it alſo with the organes And he alſo had ỹ grace of themperour the whiche was wrothe with his predeceſſours. Neuertheleſſe afterward he ſtode not in his concorde. Ne hytherto I coude not fynde that euer ỹ chyrche of Rome had fully after ỹ deth of Conſtantyne the myghty / the lordſhyp of ỹ cyte ⁊ of other the whiche he gaue to the chyrche.

¶ Anno dñi. vi. C. xliiii.

Adeodatus a Romayn was pope after vitellianꝰ. iiii. yere / ⁊ in his dayes was trãſlated ỹ body of ſaynt Benedictus / with the body of ſeynt Scolaſtica his ſyſter fro the hylle of Caſſyn vnto ỹ monaſtery of Floriecens nygh Aure lian. ¶ Conſtantyne the fourth was Emperour after his fader conſtantyne ÿ curſed man. This Conſtantyne was a good man & hated heretykes ouer all thynge/ ÿ chyrche he repeyred/ & grace he reconſyled agayne to the chyrche of Rome/ & he with ÿ pope gadred togyder ÿ. vi. generall Synodus/ in the whiche was graunted to preeſtes of Grece/ for to vſe theyr leful wyues and to the preeſtes of the Eeſt by cauſe of greate hete/ but not to thoſe of the weſt party by no meanes. For they auowed chaſtyte in ÿ tyme of ſeynt Gregory. And euery mā may aduertyſe ÿ profyte how moche ÿ goodneſſe of a prynce is worthe to the quyete of the chyrche & to ÿ promocyon of ÿ feyth/ and alſo ÿ contrary/ how moche ÿ malyce of a prynce hurteth that thynge. Theſe two Cōſtantyns the fader & ÿ ſone ſhewed openly. For in ÿ faders dayes the chyrche neuer had reſt/ and in the ſones tyme it was quyete. Yet neuertheles our lorde ſuffred the Sarraſyns and ÿ Bulgars to entre in this Emperours londe/ that he them myght not withſtande/ but that he made peas with them & payed to them yerely a truage/ & myghtly vacuated that curſed lawe of Machomyte/ and after he dyed bleſſydly. ¶ Nota that there were. vi. generall Synodus/ & mooſt pryncypall of the whiche the auctoryte is equall to ÿ goſpell/ for ÿ trouthe of ÿ goſpell is declared by theym agaynſt the. vi. pryncypall heretykes the whiche ſtrongely troubled ÿ chyrche/ for the ſubtylyte of thoſe heretykes to dyſceyue ſymple men. ¶ This tyme dyed ſeynt Cedde of Lychefylde/ the thyrde yere of his byſſhopryche. ¶ Donus a Romayne was pope after Adeodatus this yere. Of this man lytell is wryten. ¶ Bonifacius was pope after hym/ and lytell of hym is wryten/ but that he lyued lyke a preeſt. ¶ Agatho was pope after hym & he was a very holy man. For on a daye whan he kyſſed a lepre/ the lepre anone was made holy. Iſte et de conſenſu principis iuſſit celebrari ſextū ſinodū apud cōſtantinopolim. CC. lxxx. epoꝝ. in qua aſſeret duas naturas et duas voluntates eſſe in xp̄o. ¶ Leo the. ii. was pope after Agatho. iii. yere/ this Leo was an holy man & ſuffyciently taught in latyn & greke/ this man ordeyned ÿ the pax ſholde be gyuen after Agnꝰ dei/ & dyed a bleſſyd man. ¶ Benedictꝰ the ſecunde was pope after Leo almooſt thre yere. This mā about all thynge he was vertuous & his name accorded to his dedes And in his tyme was great peſtylence ¶ Iuſtinianꝰ the. ii. was Emperour this tyme/ and he was a very good man/ a prudēt & a large/ & he encreaced ÿ Empyre of Rome myghtely/ but he chaunged the offyce of the chyrche ouer moche Many lawes he made and after was not good/ he intended to haue let ÿ decrees of the. vi. Synodus/ wherfore ÿ. x. yere of his Empyre he was taken of Leo ÿ prynce of Patricis & Tyberio/ and they cut of his noſe & his tongue & exyled hȳ to Cyſona. There was then turbacyon in the chyrche of ſtryfe & heretykes. And knowe ye al men whā varyaūce falleth bytwene great lordes/ then errours ben multeplyed/ for there is no man correcteth theym/ therfore ÿ is oftentyme proued in ÿ chyrche. Then after fell a varyaunce bytwene Leo & Tyberio. And Tyberio preuayled & he exyled Leo/ & cut of his noſe the. iii. yere of his regne/ & reygned for hym. Iuſtinianus fled to the Sarraſyns & ÿ Bulgars/ the whiche reſtored hym agayn to his Empyre/ & ſlewe Leo & Tyberio/ the whiche fauoured heretykes. Then this ſame Iuſtinianꝰ reformed hym ſelfe to the chyrche of god/ and had greate reuerence. But he venged hȳ to cruelly on his aduerſaryes/ ſo ÿ he wolde haue ſlayne theyr Innocent chylde. Therfore he was ſlayne with his ſone Phylyp whome he exyled.

¶ Anno dñi. vi.C.lxxxiiii.

IOhannes ẏ fyfthe was pope after Benedict' one yere/ he was a good man/ but he deceſſed anone. ¶ Zeno was pope after hym. And he was a very holy mā/ for he wolde not medle wt ſeculer maters. And in beaute he was an aungell/ ꝑfyte in vertues/ ⁊ ryche in ſoule/ ⁊ very benigne in lāgage of his relygyous lyf this man was choſen at ẏ laſte wyth one accorde of ẏ chyrche ⁊ laye men. But there was a great dyſſencyon/ for the Clergy entēded to haue choſe Peres ẏ archebyſſhop. And the hoſte of armed mē wolde haue had Theodor a preeſt. But at the laſt the holy ghoſt torned ẏ wyl of al this people in this holy man. ¶ Sergi' was pope.ix.yere. This mā was vertuous ⁊ cōmendable in his lyfe. And in his eleccyon a great dyſcorde was/ for one party of ẏ clergy choſe Theodor/ ⁊ another partye Paſchalem. But as oure lorde wolde at ẏ laſt they torned al to this mā. This man tranſlated ẏ body of ſeynt Leo. He alſo founde a great partie of ẏ holy croſſe by myracle. And he criſtened Cadwalder the laſt kynge of Brytayne. He cōmaunded (Agn' dei) to be ſayd or ſonge thryes/ at maſſe/ ⁊ deceſſed bleſſydly. ¶ Nota.

¶ Seynt beda ẏ worſhypfull preeſt was this tyme a great mā of fame in Englād the whiche was take the.vii.yere of his age to Benedicte ẏ abbot Gyrwenſ monaſtery to be taught. And thenne after to Celfryde the abbot after ẏ deth of Benedicte. And at the.xix.yere of his age he was made Deaken of the byſſhop of yorke/ And at.xxx.yere he was made preeſt/ in ẏ whiche yere he began to wryte. And he contynued all the tyme of his lyfe in ẏ monaſtery in gyuynge his labours to wrytyng ⁊ ſcrypture to be expowned. He made.lxxviii.bokes/ ẏ whiche he nombreth in ẏ ende of his englyſſhe boke. This mā was euer in labour eyther in prayer or in ſyngynge dayly in ẏ chyrche/ or to lerne/ or teche or wryte. For whiche thȳge men may Iudge by reaſon that he was neuer at Rome/ all though ſome ſaye he wente to Rome that he myght ſe that his bokes accorded wt ẏ doctryne of ẏ holy chyrche. But it was certayne that he was blynde and wente to preche/ ⁊ had a ſeruaunte ẏ was not good/ ⁊ made hym to preche to a myghty multytude of ſtones ⁊ ſayd that they were men. And whan all his ſermō was done/ the ſtones anſwered and ſayd Amen. But ẏ he wente to Rome they ſaye/ and foūde wryten thre lettres/ thre tymes/ ⁊ expowned thē/ it was neuer founde in no boke of auctoryte. There was after ẏ takynge of the people ſuche a wrytynge on the gates of Rome (RRR.FFF) And ſuche an expoſycyon (Regna Rome Ruunt. Ferro Flāma Fame) But it is certayne ẏ Beda was deſyred to come to Rome by ẏ wrytynge of Sergius ẏ pope to Colfride his abbot. And this Beda trāſlated ẏ goſpell of ſeynt Iohan into Englyſſhe tonge/ and deceſſed bleſſydly. The ſame ſayth ẏ now he lyeth at Durelyn wt ſeynt Cuthberte/ ⁊ there is buryed wt hym the knowlege of the dedes of Englande almooſt to the conqueſt. ¶ Leo the ſeconde was Emperour/ ⁊ lytel of hym is wryten. ¶ Tiberi' was Emperour after hym.iii. yere/ he aroſe agaynſt Leo and entred his kyngdome/ and kepte hym in pryſon as longe as he reygned. In this tyme Iuſtinianus the ſeconde whiche in olde tyme was exyled to Cyrſonam openly ſayde he wolde recouer his Empyre agayne. Wherfore the people of that countre for ẏ loue of Tiberi⁹ were aboute to ſlee ȳ Juſtinianus. Wherfore he fled to ȳ prynce of Thurcorꝫ & weddyd his ſyſter. And thrugh helpe of his brother & ȳ Bulgars he recouered his Empyre & ſlewe Tiberius & Leo the vſurper of his realme. And as many tymes almoſt as he wyped ony drope fro his noſe ȳ whiche they kyt of / ſo many tymes he made one of his ennemyes to be ſlayne. ¶ Leo ȳ. iii. was pope after Sergius. ii. yere. This man was made pope by the power of the Romayns & was not put in ȳ nombre of popes / for he euyll entred / but he dyde none euyll. ¶ Johannes the. vi. was pope after hym a Greke. And he was a martyr / but of whome & wherfore the cauſe is not founde in hyſtoryes. It is ſayde that it was ȳ dukes of Lombardy / for they were enemyes to ȳ chyrch myghtely. ¶ Johannes ȳ. vii. a Romayne was pope after hȳ thre yere / but nothynge of hym is wryten. Juſtinianus was Emperour ayen wͭ his ſone Tyberi⁹. vi. yeres. And this was he ȳ whiche was receyued ȳ Empyre afore by Leo. And whan this man was reſtored ayen he toke hym to the ryght fayth / & worſhypped ȳ pope Conſtātyne. And certaynly he deſtroyed Creſon ȳ place where he was exyled [illegible] / & all ȳ dwelled in it / except ȳ chyldren he ſlewe them. And he came agayne another tyme to haue ſlayne ȳ Innocentes. And the men of that cōtre made them a captayn / a certayn mā ȳ was called Phylyp an outlawe / the whiche anone wente to hȳ in batayl & ſlewe hȳ for his outrageous cruelneſſe agaynſt thoſe chyldren.

¶ Syſinnius was pope. xx. dayes / & thā was great ſtryfe / & he deceſſed / but lytell of hym is wryten. ¶ Conſtātyne was pope after hym. vii. yere. This man was a meke man & ſo bleſſyd ȳ of al men he was beloued. He wente ouer the ſee to Juſtinianus the Emperour / & was receyued with great honour / & deyed a bleſſyd mā. ¶ Phylyp ȳ ſecunde was Emperour one yere / ȳ whiche fled into Secilia for the hoſte of the romayns. And he was an heretyke / & cōmaūded all pyctures of ſeyntes for to be deſtroyed. Wherfore the Romains caſt away his coyne / for wold not receyue no money that his name or ymage were wryten vpon. ¶ Anaſtaſius the ſecunde after he had ſlayne Phylyp was Emperour thre yere. This mā was a criſten man / & he lyued wel. But bycauſe he put out Phylyppes eyen / & ſlewe hȳ afterwarde. And therfore Theodoſi⁹ faught agaynſt hym & ouercame hym / & than he was made a preeſt / & lyued ſo quyetly.

¶ Anno dn̄i. vii. C. xiiii.

GRegorius ȳ ſecunde was pope after Conſtantyne. xvii. yere. This Gregorius was a chaſt man and a noble man in ſcrypture. And aboute this tyme the popes began to deale more temporally wyth the Emperoures than they were wonte for theyr great falſeneſſe and theyr heresye / & alſo for to remeue thempyre fro one people to another as the tyme requyred / this man curſed Leo the emperoure bycauſe he brente the ymages of ſayntes. This Leo cōmaūded Gregorius the pope that he ſholde brenne chyrches and deſtroye them. And he ſet nothynge of his ſayenge / but cōmaunded ȳ contrary manly. And ſo it openly ſhewed / ȳ the deſtruccyon of the Empyre of Rome / was ȳ cauſe of heresye. For certaynly faythfull people with the prelates wyth one wyl drewe to the pope / and conſtrayned ȳ Emperours for to leue theyr tyrannye and theyr heresye. ¶ And that tyme in the Eeſt parte of the worlde ſtrongly fayled ȳ true feyth / for ȳ curſed lawe of ȳ falſe Machomyte. ¶ Theodoſius was Emperour & regned but one yere. And he was a very crysten man / ⁊ euen as he dyde soo was he done vnto. For Leo deposed hym ⁊ made hym a preest. ¶ Leo ÿ thyrde ⁊ Constātyne his sone was Emperour .xxv. yere This Leo whā he was myghty he deposed Theodosius ⁊ regned for hym / ⁊ was dysceyued by a certayne Apostate / the whiche bad hym that he sholde take ⁊ brenne all the ymages of seyntes. Wherfore he was punysshed bothe in batayle ⁊ in pestylence / ⁊ with other Infortunes. And bycause he was accursed of Gregorius / and bode therin thre dayes therfore the pope with ÿ romayn people toke fro hym ÿ best part of his Empyre / commaundynge that no man sholde obey hym nor socour hym / bycause he lyued lyke an heretyke. ¶ Holy mē sayd agaynst hym. And many by hym were martred ⁊ exyled. And at last in his mysbyleue he deyed wretchedly / ⁊ in his heresy / but that Karolus Martellus holpe ÿ crysten fayth / faught manly ayenst the Sarrasyns / ⁊ droue them backwarde into Spayne ÿ whiche they had subdued. Also they had entred into Fraunce And Karolus slewe thre hondred thousande Sarrasyns ⁊ more. And of his people were slayne but .xv. thousande. ¶ Nota. This man for the contynuall batayle toke [illegible] the tresoures of ÿ chyrche. Wherfore seynt Eucharius ÿ bysshoppe of Aurelyens / as he was in his prayers / sawe the same Karolus in soule and body brenned in helle. And the aungell that shewed the bysshoppe this man sayd. That was ÿ Iudgement of all those that take away the goodes of ÿ chyrche / or of poure men. And to sure ÿ dedes that ÿ bysshop sawe [illegible] ⁊ the abbot of seynt Denys went to the sepulture there that Karolus was buryed / ⁊ opened the toumbe ÿ he lay in. And there they se a greate dragon yssue out / but he founde no body. ¶ Gregorius the .iii. a Romayn was pope after Gregorius ÿ .ii. The whiche conformed the worshyppes of ÿ ymages of seyntes with the counseyle almoost of a thousande bysshops. And he cursed horrybly all the despysers of these ymages. As ÿ Emperour ⁊ other that were of that condycyon ¶ Constantinus ÿ fyfth was Emperour after his fader Leo .xxxv. yere. He was a cursed man ⁊ a pure heretyke / so that he dyde sacryfyce to ÿ deuylles. He pursued the chyrche. And nothynge that is good of hym is wryten. And so by the sufferaūce of god the chyrche was troubled longe tyme. About this tyme were many meruayles / and there were meruaylous erthquakes. And certayn cytees that were set on mountayns / they were remeued and borne alwaye with ÿ hylles into ÿ feldes .vi. myles thens as they stode / and the cytees were not broken nor hurte. In the lande of Mesopotanian the erth was broken by ÿ space of two myle. And also there was a mule whiche spake in a mannes voyce. Asshes fell fro heuen. And in ÿ see of Ponto there was yse so great froste ÿ was .xxx. cubytes of thyckenes. And sterres fell fro heuen so myghtely ÿ men trowed that ÿ ende of ÿ worlde had be de comen. All these betokened meruaylous thynges to come.

¶ Anno dñi. vii.C.xliiii.

After Gregorius Zacharias was pope .x. yere / ⁊ was a noble mā ⁊ arayed in all vertue. With almes he was [illegible] for his [illegible]. And he deposed the kynge of Fraunce Hyldery / ⁊ put in his place Pippinus / for he was more profytable. ¶ Here maye ye se what power the chyrche had that tyme / ÿ whiche translated that famous kyngdome fro the very heyres / to ÿ kyngdome of Pippinus for a lefull cause (vt habetur. xv. q. v. alius) ¶ Stephanus the secunde a Romayne was pope after zacharias. v. yere. ¶ This man in all thynge was profytable unto the chyrche / as wel in worde as in doctryne. And gouerned the spyrytualyte and ẏ temporalite nobly. He was the louer and the defender of pore men. ¶ This man anoynted Pippinus the kynge of Fraunce and sende hym agaynst the Lombardes / that he sholde compell them to restore the chyrche of suche goodes as they had withholde from the longe tyme wrongfully by ẏ whiche he dyde. He also translated ẏ Empyre of ẏ Grekes to ẏ Frensshemen. ¶ Paulus a Romayn was pope after hym x. yere. This was a very holy mā / for he dyde grete almesse to faderles chyldren & prysoners / wydowes / & other pore men that he myght be a folower of seynt Poule. ¶ Constantyne a Romayne the secunde was pope after Poule two yere. This Constantyne was a laye man & sodeynly was made a preest as a tyraunt & toke on hym the hyghnesse of the pope. And with a grete sclaundre to the chyrche was pope a lytell tyme / but ẏ ryghtful men put hym out / and put out his eyen. And this was the fyfth unlawful pope / amonge ẏ was by heretykes. As the holy ghoost that holy apostles sete kepte in all honour and holynesse. Infynyte martyrs were made this tyme by Constantyne ẏ Emperour / for he was suche an heretyke. And men sayde that there was neuer Emperoure neyther paynem that dyde so moche malyce. And this tyme ẏ chyrche was greuelie hurte / & very perylously brought ẏ worshyppynge of the ymage of the holy seyntes / for the grete wronge thynge of heresye. And certaynly that cursed Emperour was not unpunysshed. For whan he dyed he cryed with an horryble voyce and sayd. I am taken quycke / that is to be able to be destroyed / & so he yelded up the ghoost to euerlastynge peyne. The Empyre of Rome was deuyded aboute this tyme. For Stephanus ẏ pope translated ytaly & other unto Karolus a yonge mā. And Constantyne helde the londe of Grece with other londes ouer the see with a grete labour & many a rebellynge. This tyme Karolus magnꝰ was a noble yonge man. And he began for to rayne upon Fraunce / and was the sone of Pippinus and his moder was called Berta. ¶ Stephanus the thyrde was pope after Paulus thre yere. And he amended all the errours of Constantyne. And he degraded all those ẏ whiche Constantyne ordeyned in a generall Synodus.

¶ Anno viii. vii. C. lxxxiiii.

Adrianus a Romayne was pope after Stephanꝰ. xxiiii. yere / this man was myghtely worshypped of ẏ peple / no man greater afore hym in honour rychesse & buyldynge. This man sette two solempne Synodes. The fyrst of. iii. C. & fyfty faders. The secunde in Rome wyth an hondred and fyfty faders / beynge presente Charles the kynge of Fraunce / in whome it was graunted ẏ lyberte of electyon of the popes / and to ordeyne the apostles sete. ¶ Leo the. iiii. reygned Emperour of ẏ grekes. v. yere. This leo was a cursed mā / but not so moche as his fader was. And he was a couetous man / & he toke alwaye a certayne crowne of a chyrche and put it upon his hede. And anone he was corrupted with an axes. And so he dyede. And he had a cursed wyfe / the whiche reygned after hym with her sone. ¶ Constantyne was Emperour after Leo & he was a wycked mā / & put away his moder for the hyghnesse that she myght not be felowe unto hym in worshyp / but she with a ſaymed cautoure put out his eyen afterwarde/ ⁊ his chyldren alſo/ ⁊ regned agayne thys yere. And at the laſt ſhe was about for to be wedded to great Karolus whan the Grekes knewe ẏ/ they ſhyt her vp in a monaſtery/ ⁊ made Nychoferum theyr Emperour. ¶ The. v. vnyuerſal ſtudy ẏ in olde tyme was tranſlated from Athenes to Rome/ about this tyme was to Parys tranſlated/ by Karolus kynge of Fraūce. ¶ Nycholer⁹ was Emperoure after conſtantyne. He was a very nygon/ ⁊ was exalted to his empyre by ẏ Grekes/ but he proſpered not/ for in his tyme al the eſt Imperyall was brought to nought. For the Romayns put them vnder Karolus magnus. ¶ Iheruſalem aboute this tyme was recouered by Karol⁹/ with all the holy lande. And the ſecte of the Saraſyns was dyſtroyed ſtrōgly. For the dyſtruccyon of wretches came than. ¶ Mychell was Emperoure two yere. And he was a very cryſten man/ ⁊ well beloued/ ⁊ connynge in al ſcyences. And thoſe that Nycholer⁹ had dyſtruſſed in theyr godes by his couetouſnes/ this Mychaell reſtored them theyr goodes agayne. ¶ Nota.

¶ Karolus magn⁹ ẏ fyrſt feynt was emperour after Mychael. And he was crowned Emperour by Leo ẏ pope/ from the whiche tyme ẏ Empyre was tranſlated from the Grekes to Fraūce ⁊ Germayne. And for ẏ tranſlacion of ẏ Empyre ẏ grekes alwaye were before vs vnto the Romayns/ ſtryuynge euermore with them but it was more with venemous wordes than with ſtrength/ ⁊ more in crafte than with batayll. For they had ſo great enuye at the Romayns ẏ they wolde not obeye the churche of Rome. For certaynly whan that the popes wolde wryte vnto theym/ for to kepe ẏ churche of Rome/ they wrote agayne and ſayde. Ye haue taken from our hyms the Empyre/ and therfore we wyll not obey vnto you/ but take vs from you. And as touchynge this noble Emperour Karolus it is to be vnderſtande that he was anoynted kynge of Fraunce by ẏ pope Stephanus/ whyles that he was yonge and luſty of age. And that was in the yere of oure lorde Iheſu Cryſte ſeuen hondred.liiii. whan his fader Pippinus lyued. Vnder whom/ and with whom he reyned.xv.yere vnto the dethe of his fader. ¶ Then after the dethe of his fader/ Pippyn in the yere of oure lorde god. vii. hōdred.lxviii. this Karolus with his broder Karolomānus regned two yere. And than his broder deyed in the ſecunde yere And this Karolus than helde all the hole kyngdome.xxiiii.yere/ to the yere of oure lorde. vii. hondred. lxxxiiii. In the which yere he went to Rome/ that he myght be crowned Emperour of ẏ pope Adrianus. And he regned Emperour.xvi.yere/ to ẏ yere of our lorde. viii.C. whan pope Leo confyrmed hym agayne the Emperour. And after that he was Emperoure.xiiii. yere. And this Karolus magnus deyed/ in the yere of his age.lxxii. The whiche was the yere of our lorde. viii. hondred/ ⁊ xii. ¶ Yf ye wyll ſe more of Karolus/ go vnto the boke of Turpinus/ and Libraminus his mayſter/ for they wrote his noble actes echone. ¶ Leo ẏ fourth was pope after Adrian⁹.xx.yere/ this man whā he went on a certayne daye with the Letany to ſeynt Peters chyrche vpon ſeynt Markes daye/ he was taken with curſed people/ ẏ whiche put out bothe his eyen/ and cut of his tongue. But our lorde meruayloully reſtored hym agayne his ſyght and his ſpeche/ ſo that he ſpake without tongue/ and ſawe by myracle. Afterwarde he went with Karolus into Fraunce. And he came with hym vnto Rome/ and there venged the pope of his enemy. And than was he crowned that Karolus. And he [illegible] conuerted/ [illegible] hym agaynst. ¶ Lodouicus the meke/ ye fyrst begoten sone of Karol⁹ was Emperour after his fader. xxvi. yere/ in whose tyme was [illegible] ye clerkes sholde bere no gyrdels [illegible] precyous stones/ ne straunge araye [illegible]. Thys Lodouic⁹ on his fyrst wyfe gate. iii. chyldren/ ⁊ both had an euyll ende. In al thynge that were agaynst hym he was pacyent/ ⁊ ouercame it at last. For towarde god he abode deuoute. And his chyldren folowed hym in contrycyon/ ⁊ he [illegible] a blessyd man. ¶ Stephanus the. iiii. was pope after Leo. iii. yere. This Stephan⁹ raunsomed many captyue men/ and crowned Lodouicus ye Emperour. And than he dyssessed ⁊ was buryed at Rome. ¶ Paschall was pope after Stephanus. This paschal gaue great dylygence to relyques of seyntes. And he toke up innumerable bodyes of seyntes/ ⁊ buryed them worshypfully/ as in ye chyrche of seynt Cecyle he was [illegible]. ¶ Eugeni⁹ ye. ii. was pope after paschall/ ⁊ he was a very holy man. And all those thynges ye were for Cryst he toke hede to. This man was crowned a martyr/ ⁊ by ye lay men of Rome he was buryed in seynt peters chyrchyerde.

¶ Circa annū dñi. viii.C.xxiiii.

Valentinus was pope after Eugenius. xl. dayes/ [illegible] of hym [illegible]. ¶ Gregori⁹ the fourth was pope after hym. xvi. yere. This Gregori⁹ toke many holy seyntes/ for ye plages amonge the comyn people. And at this tyme [illegible] Lotharius themperour/ ⁊ [illegible] of Lombardye [illegible]. And at the last he dyssessed after [illegible] good dedes ye he had [illegible]. ¶ Lotharius [illegible] peroure. ⁊ he was in Italy ⁊ Rome ⁊ ye partyes of Germayne next on the hylles of Alpys. This Lotherius rose agaynst his brother Lodowicus ⁊ Karolus/ by the kyngdome of Duchelande/ ye whiche somtyme Pippinus theyr brother helde. And they fought at a place called Fontanetū/ where Lotherius was dyscomfyted. And ther was suche slaughter made on both sydes that they had noo men for to resyst theyr enemyes. This vnderstode a fals crysten man/ ⁊ sende vnto ye Soudan of the Sarasyns ye he sholde come anone. And he toke Rome/ ⁊ seynt Peters chyrch was made a stable for theyr horses. But Lodowicus with ye Frensshmen ⁊ Lombardes at ye infynyte nombre dystroyed/ ⁊ that with great sheddynge of Crysten blode. ¶ Sergius ye. ii. was pope after Gregori⁹ thre yere. This mā was called fyrst (os porci) in englysshe/ hogges mouthe. Wherfore ye man ⁊ all the popes names are chaūged/ whan they are chosen. And ye for thyse causes. The fyrst for cryst chaūged ye name of those men ye he made popes. The. ii. for asmoche as they are chaunged in ye name sholde they be chaunged in perfeccyon of lyfe. The thyrde lest he whiche is chosen to an excedynge degre sholde be hurte in name. ¶ Leo was pope after Sergius. viii. yere. This Leo was an holy man/ ⁊ also he was in prudence/ as slye as a serpent. And in all his dedes also meke as a douue. And he was brought forth vertuously in a monasterye. And whan that he was made pope/ he laboured for to repayre his chyrches agayne/ the whiche ye false sarasyns one after another had dystroyed. This man was a myghty wryter ⁊ a great precher/ ⁊ myghtly laboured in makynge prayer/ and so deyed and was buryed ⁊ lyeth at seynt Peters. ¶ Benedictus a Romayne was pope after Leo two yere. This Benedictus had the na me of yͤ chyrche. For in all thynge he was beſyd/ yͭ he ordeyned clerkes ſholde go ordynatly ⁊ honeſtly. ¶ Ludouic⁹ was emperour with his fader a whyle/ ⁊ after he regned alone. xxi. yere. ⁊ Sergius yͤ pope anoynted hym. His ſone Karol⁹ was exſtraught with a deuyll afore his fader/ cõſpyrynge his faders dethe. In his tyme fel many meruayles. ¶ Nota. ¶ Johānes Anglic⁹ of yͤ nacion of Maguncia about this tyme was pope/ ⁊ ſhe was a woman in mannes clothynge/ a great clerke whiche goynge openly in proceſſyon trauayled of chylde ⁊ deceſſed. And this was the. vi. ypocryte pope punyſhed of god/ ⁊ ſhe was not nōbred in yͤ boke of popes. ¶ Nichola⁹ a Romayne was pope after this woman. ix. yere. This man exceded all other in holyneſſe/ ſaue ſeynt Gregory the pope. Ludouic⁹ themperour was at his dyenge a good man/ ⁊ he was buryed in ſeynt Peters chyrcheyerd. ¶ Adrianus a Romayn was pope after Nichola⁹. This mā curſed Lotherius thēperours broder for his aduoutry. And he came to Rome wͭ all his ſtates/ ſayenge he curſed hym wrongefully. And all deyed in one yere/ wͭ theyr kynge goyng to placenciā cite.

¶ Anno dñi. viii. C. lxiii.

¶ This tyme came the Danes into Englande

Alured.

¶ Of kynge Alured/ ⁊ how the Danes in his tyme prayed hym of mercy/ that they myght go out of the lande.

After the dethe of this Eldred regned his broder Alured yͭ Wolphynes was called. ¶ Tho went yͤ Danes ⁊ aſſembled them/ ⁊ went forth to ſeke Alured yͭ tho was kynge of Southſex newly made/ ⁊ ther they founde hym at Wylton with a lytell power. Yet neuertheleſſe he fought with them/ but at yͤ laſte he ſlodde them from yͤ felde/ ⁊ went into Weſtſex ⁊ ordeyned of his owne realme ⁊ other yͭ he had a myghty power/ ſo yͭ the Danes coude not withſtande hym. And came to London with his hooſt/ where yͤ Danes ſoiourned. And wolde haue foughten wͭ them/ but the Danes durſte not/ but prayed hym of peas/ ⁊ that they myght go agayne into theyr owne countree/ ⁊ neuer to come agayne into Englande on warfare/ gyuȳg hȳ hoſtages ſuche as he wold aſke.

¶ How Hubba ⁊ Hungar were ſlayne at Chyppenham/ ⁊ how yͤ Danes brought theyr kynge to our kynge.

And the ſame daye yͭ the Danes departed from London/ they rode ſo faſt bothe nyght and day/ and neuer reſted that they came vnto Exceſtre/ and toke the towne/ and there helde them all. ¶ Whan kynge alured herde theſe tydynges anone he lete take yͤ hoſtages/ ⁊ went from thens vnto Exceſtre wͭ all yͤ power that he hadde. And whan the Danes herde tell of his comynge/ they went frome thens vnto weſtſex/ and came vnto Chyppenham/ and there they dyd moche hurt about in the countree/ and robbed folke/ ⁊ broughte theym in pryſon. The kynge Alured them purſued/ ⁊ came vpō them ryght ſoone and fyerſly theym aſſayled.

And there were ſlayn both hubba ⁊ hũgar his brother/ ⁊ Bearne Bocarde. And in this batayll were much folke ſlayne in one parte ⁊ in that other. But ẏ gree of ẏ batayll bode with ẏ Danes/ for aſmoche as the kynge came with fewe folke. ¶ The kynge haſted hym moche for to go agayn. And whan ẏ Danes foũde Hubbaes body/ they buryed it/ ⁊ layd vpon it a great logge/ ⁊ lete call it Hubeſlow/ ⁊ ſo it is called vnto this daye. And ẏ place is in Deuenſhyre. ¶ The barons of Sommerſet. wyltſhyre/ ⁊ Dorſet herde tell howe theyr kynge was dyſcomfyted/ ⁊ ordeyned al ẏ power that they myght/ ⁊ came to the kynge there as he was/ ⁊ thãked god they foũde hẏ alyue/ for they had wened ẏ Danes hym had ſlayne. And than the kynge ⁊ they cõcluded to go ſeke the Danes ⁊ fyght with them. And ſo they rode all ẏ nyght for to ſeke them. And came on ẏ morowe about pryme to Abyngdon there as the Danes were. ¶ The kynge alured ⁊ his barons aſſembled than/ ⁊ aſſayled egrely the Danes/ ⁊ there gaue them a ſtronge batayll. And the Danes put them a longe tyme ẏ no man wyſt what partye ſholde mooſt fayle. But thus it befell as god wolde ẏ the kynge Alured had ẏ vyctory with moche honoure. For the Danes were ſo dyſcum/ ẏ they ne wyſt whyther for to turne. And .xv. dayes the kynge them purſued at his wyll/ that they were fayne for to ſpeke of peas/ and take hym good hoſtage/ ⁊ ſayd they wolde neuer warre more vpon them. And moreouer they behyght vnto kynge Alured that they wolde go ⁊ brynge theyr owne kynge vnto hym. And ẏ theyr kynge and they all ſholde be baptyſed. And vpõ this condycyon kynge Alured graunted them lyfe and lymme. And ſayd vnto the that they ſholde go ſeke theyr kynge/ and at a certayne daye that was ſet to come to hym agayne. And ſo they wente forthwith And came agayn at a daye that to theym was aſſygned/ ⁊ brought wt theym theyr kynge. ¶ The kynge Alured anone lete them be baptyſed/ ⁊ theyr names chaunged. And ſo the kynge of Denmarke was called athelſtone ⁊ .xxx. of his felowes names alſo/ ⁊ the other were baptyſed to ẏ ryght byleue. ¶ And all this was done at Weſtmynſter. And after that kynge alured helde with hym kynge athelſtone ⁊ al his Danes .xii. dayes at ſoiourne with much ſolempnyte/ ⁊ gaue them great gyftes. ⁊ after they were baptyſed they departed. ¶ Tho was kynge alured al at eaſe whan he had his enemyes ouercomen/ ⁊ that they were tourned to ẏ ryght byleue of god almyghty.

¶ How the Danes that came into Fraunce in Gurmonde/ came agayne into England/ and of the dethe of kynge Alured.

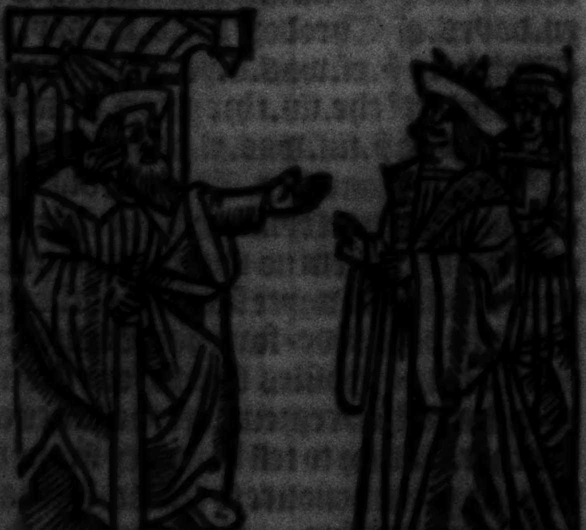
And thus it befell afterwarde ẏ the Danes of Northumberlande

berlande/ ⁊ the Danes ẏ were Gurmondes came wt great power out of Fraūce/ ⁊ arryued in Kent. And ſend into Northūberland alſo paynyms ẏ they ſhold come to them. And whan thoſe two hoſtes were comen and aſſembled/ anone they poſe to dyſtroye all the cryſten people of Englande from place to place/ ⁊ dyde mothe ſorowe. ¶ And in this tyme deyed kynge Alured/ ẏ was wonte to abate ẏ Danes pryde all aboute. He was a great clerke ⁊ made many bokes of wyſdome. And ſpecyally one of auentures of kynges/ ⁊ batayles done in the lande. This kyng alured regned. xxx. yere. And lyeth at Wyncheſtre.

IOhānes ẏ. viii. was pope after Adrian. viii. yere This Johannes anoynted Karolꝰ ẏ Emperour. And he ſuffered great wrong of ẏ Romayns/ for he honoured not ẏ ſayd Emperour. And for ẏ cauſe he made ẏ pope be kepte. And he degraded the byſſhop of Portuenſe ẏ was the cauſe of all his ſorowe. ¶ Karolꝰ the ii. was Emperour after Ludouicꝰ This Karolꝰ had a broder ẏ was called Ludouicus/ ⁊ he was kynge of Germayne/ ⁊ he ordeyned a batayl agaynſt his broder But Karolus or they fought was poyſoned. And he made many a monaſterye. ¶ Martinus was pope after Johānes. i. yere. This Martinus lytell profyted/ for he lyued but lytell tyme. Adrianus ẏ. iii. was pope after hym one yere ⁊ of hym is nothynge wryten. ¶ Stephanus the. v. was pope after hẏ. vi. yere. And nothing of hym is wryten/ but that he tranſlated the body of ſeynt Martyn. ¶ Karolus ẏ iii. was Emperoure after the. ii. xii. yere. This Karolꝰ had in poſſeſſyon peaſybly all Fraūce/ ⁊ all Germanye/ ⁊ was crowned Emperoure of Johānes ẏ pope. And after this gloryous vyctory/ he forned all Normandy to ẏ fayth of god. And he coude no lenger reſyſt ẏ Frenſſhmen but. iiii. yere he regned on them. He was vnprofytable to them/ ⁊ therfore they put hym away. ¶ Arnulphꝰ was Emperour after Karolus. xiii. yere. This Arnulphus betterly conſtrayned ẏ Normans that diſtroyed ẏ Frenſſhemen. xl. yere Then he ſekened ⁊ had no comforte of no leche/ for he was in a merueyllous ſekenes ſo that he was conſumed wt lyfe/ ⁊ was deed. ¶ Formoſus was pope after Stephanꝰ. v. yere this man fyrſt was byſſhop of Portuenſis. And pope Jehan was depryued for his obedyence/ ⁊ was degrated to ẏ lay fe But by Martyn ẏ pope he was reſtored/ And ayenſt his othe he came not alonely to Rome/ but to offre hym the dygnyte of the pope for whiche there was great alteracyon. ¶ Bonifacius ẏ. vi. was pope. v. dayes. ¶ Stephanꝰ ẏ. vi. one yere ⁊ thre monethes ¶ Johānes thre monethes ⁊ xii. dayes. ¶ Jona alſo thre monethes ⁊ xii. dayes. ¶ Theodorꝰ the. ii. xx. dayes. ¶ Johānes ẏ. xi. was. ii. yere ⁊. xv. days ¶ Benedictꝰ the. iiii. thre yere ⁊. ii. monethes. ¶ Leo ẏ. iiii. was. xl. dayes. ¶ Xpoforꝰ ẏ. i. vii. monethes. All theſe. viii. popes were but lytel tyme/ and therfore we can not tell of them no notable thynges/ but yf we ſholde wryte ſclaūdre of theym ẏ myght be founde/ for ẏ harde contencyon in ẏ holy appoſtles ſete For one ſtroue ayenſt another/ repreuynge the dedes of another. And for to tell how they ſtroue it were no great honoure to ſhewe/ for that holy appoſtles ſete. ¶ Ludouicus the thyrde was Emperour after Arnulphus vi. yere. This man hadde not the popes bleſſynge/ for the vnſtableneſſe of theym the whiche regned in Ytaly. And he was conſtreyned for to expulſe Berynge. And this man was the laſte Emperoure of all the kynred of Karolus kynge of Fraūce

¶ This tyme the Emperour was remeued / tranſlated & deuyded. For ÿ Frenſſhmen ayded not ÿ chirche / ÿ theyr faders edefyed & fortefyed / but deſtroyed / nor helped not ÿ Romayns agaynſt ÿ Lombardes ÿ vexed ſore the Romayns. Therfore by the comyns aſſent they were excluded fro the Empyre / & the ytalyens began to be Emperour in ytaly / & the Almayns in Almayne / untyll Octauyen ÿ reygned in bothe ÿ places. The Frenſſhmen were conſtrayned to abyde in theyr owne countree & no more to be Emperours / for theyr miſcheuous lyuynge. ¶ Beringari' ÿ .i. Conradus & Beryngarius ÿ .ii. & hugo were Emperours after Ludouicus. But they bee not nombred amonge ÿ Emperours. For ſome were but in Almayne / & ſome in ytaly.

¶ Of kynge Edwarde Aluredes ſone / ÿ made a poyntement with the Danes.



AFter this Alured regned his ſone Edward / a good man & a curteis. The Danes dyd moche ſorowe in ÿ lande & theyr power encreaſed and began / for to wexe from day to day. For the Danes came often with theyr companyes in to this lande. Whan ÿ kynge ſawe ÿ he myght no better do / thā he toke peas with them & graunted them his trewes. And neuertheles the trewes dured not longe that ÿ Danes ne began to warre ſtrongly vpon ÿ Englyſſhmen & dyd them moche ſorowe. For the whiche kynge Edwarde dyd aſſemble a great hooſt for to fyght with theym. And thenne this kynge Edwarde deyed whan god wolde. And he reygned .xxiiii. yere / and lyeth at Wyncheſtre beſyde his fader.

¶ Anno. dñi. ix. C. xiiii.

SErgi' the .iii. was pope after xpoforus .vii. yere. This man was a Cardynall of Rome / & was expulſed by Formoſus the pope / & then he went to ÿ Frenſſhmen. And ſo thorughe the helpe & fauour of theym he came agayne to Rome & anone expulſed xpoforus ÿ pope. And then was pope hym ſelfe. And for to auenge & wreke his exyle / he toke out ÿ body of pope Formoſus where ÿ he was buryed. And arayed hym in ÿ popes araymentes & cauſed hym to be heueded & to be caſt in ÿ water of Tybre. Then fyſſhers founde hym & brought hym into ÿ chirche And the holy ymages of ſeyntes bowed downe to hym whan the body of hym was brought into the chyrche / that all men myght it ſe and honourably hym ſalued & halſed yet Sergius deſtroyed all that thynge the whiche the holy man had ordeyned. ¶ Anaſtaſius was pope after hym two hole yere. ¶ Lando was pope .vi. monethes & lytell ther byde. ¶ Johannes the .x. was pope thenne. This Johannes was the ſone of Sergius pope / bothe of nature & of maners. And he was pope by myghte. And wretchedly ſlayne of Guydos knyghtes /

for they put on his mouth a pilowe ꝛ ſtopped his breth. And after hȳ was another put in/but anone he was out/ ꝛ therfore he is not named as pope. ¶ Henric⁹ ẏ duke of Saxon was Emperoure of Almayne.xviii. yere/ this Henricus was a noble man/but hē is not nombred ymonge thēperoures/ for he reygned but alonely in Almayne. And he had a very holy womā unto his wyfe/ ꝛ her name was Matilda on whome he gate two ſones/ ẏ is to ſaye Otto ꝛ Henry. And Otto ſucceded hym in ẏ Empyre. And Henry had moche lande in Almayne. And gate another ſone that hyght Brimen/ ꝛ he was a very holy mā ẏ was a byſſhop of Coleyne. And he founded the monaſtery of ſeynt Panthaleon.

¶ Of kynge Adelſtone.

Now after this Edwarde regned Adelſtone his ſone. And whan he had reygned foure yere he helde batayle agaynſt the Danes/ ꝛ droue kynge Gaufryde ẏ was kynge of ẏ Danes ꝛ all his hoſte unto ẏ ſee/ ꝛ reſted by Scotlande/ and toke ſtrongely all ẏ coūtre an hoole yere. And after ẏ they of Comberlande ꝛ of Scottes of weſtmerlande began to warre upon kynge Adelſtone. And he gaue them ſo ſtronge batayle that he ſlewe ſo many of them/ ẏ no man coude tell the nombre of them. And after ẏ he reygned but one yere. And he reygned in all.xxv. yere/ ꝛ lyeth at Malmeſbury.

¶ Of kynge Edmonde.

Then after this Adelſtone regned Edmonde his broder. For kynge Adelſtone had no ſone/ ꝛ this Edmonde was a worthy man ꝛ a doughty knyght of body/ ꝛ as a noble man. And ẏ thyrde yere after that he was kynge/ he went ouer Humber into that coūtre/ in ẏ whiche he founde two kynges of Danes. That one was called enelaf/ ꝛ ẏ other Renāt. This kynge Edmonde droue them bothe fro ẏ lande/ ꝛ after wente ꝛ toke a great praye in Comberlande. This Edmond regned but.vii. yere/ ꝛ lyeth at Glaſtenbury.

Of kynge Eldred.

And after this Edmonde regned Eldred his broder that auenged Edward his fader of his enemyes ꝛ dyd hym ſlee. And after he ſeaſed all Northumberlande into his hande. And made the Scottes for to bowe ꝛ meke unto his wyll. And in ẏ ſecūde yere of his reygne came Analafe Guyran/ ẏ was kynge of Denmarke/ ꝛ ſeaſed all Northumberlande/ ꝛ helde ẏ lande two yere. And after ẏ came kynge Eldred ꝛ droue hym oute of this lande. And this kynge Eldred was a noble man ꝛ a good/ of whoſe goodneſſe ſeynt Dūſtane preched. And this Eldred reygned.xi. yere/ ꝛ lyeth at Wyncheſtre.

Of kynge Edwyn.

And after this Eldred regned Edwyn the ſone of Edmonde. And he was a ſymple man towarde god ꝛ the people. For he hated folke of his owne lāde/ ꝛ loued ꝛ honoured ſtraūge men. And ſet lytell by holy chyrche. And tho toke of holy chyrche al ẏ treaſour ẏ he myght haue/ whiche was great ſhame ꝛ vylany to hym ſelfe/ ꝛ peryll to his ſoule. And therfore god wolde not ẏ he ſholde reygne no longer than foure yere ꝛ dyed/ ꝛ lyeth at Wyncheſter.

Leo the fyfte a Romayne was pope.vi. monethes. ¶ Stephanus the.vii. was pope after hym two yere.

¶ Johannes ẏ.xi.a Romayne was pope this yere. ¶ Stephanꝰ ẏ.viii.a Germayne was pope after hys.viii.yere. ¶ Martinus ẏ.iii.was pope after hys.iii.yere/⁊ of theſe.vi.popes is nothynge had in ſcrypture. For what cauſe I can not tell.

¶ Anno dñi.ix.C.liiii.

AGapitꝰ a Romayne was pope after Martinus.ii.yere ⁊.viii.monethes/⁊ nothynge of hys is wryte. ¶ Johānes ẏ.xii.a Romayne was pope after Agapitꝰ.viii.yere/⁊ he had a fader that hyght Alberyke/⁊ was a worthy man in the cytee of Rome. He Induced the noble men to ſwere ẏ after ẏ deth of Agapitus they ſholde cheſe Octauianꝰ hys ſone pope/⁊ ſo it was done ⁊ was named Johā/ and he was a hunter ⁊ a lecherous man/ ſo ẏ openly he kepte womē. Wherfore certayne Cardynalles wrote vnto Otto the Emperoure of Saxon/ ẏ he ſholde come to Rome for to helpe to deſtroye the ſclaūder of ẏ chyrche. This ẏ pope perceyued/ and ẏ hande ẏ wrote ẏ pyſtle he made to be cut of. And many tymes he was warned by themperour ⁊ ẏ clergy ẏ he ſholde correcte hym ſelfe/ but he wolde for nothynge. Thā he was depoſed/⁊ Leo was put into his place. Wherfore the Emperoure was anoyed/ and came agayne and beſyeged Rome ſo longe tyll they toke Benedicte to hym ⁊ reſtored Leo.

¶ Of kynge Edgar that regned aboue the kynges of Scotlande ⁊ of Wales/⁊ how he was begyled throughe the takynge of his wyfe.

EDgar regned after his broder Edwyne/ and this man loued moche god ⁊ peas/⁊ ẏ ryght of holy chyrche alſo. And he was a worthy man/⁊ a greate lorde of blood ⁊ myghty/⁊ mayntayned well this londe in peas. And this Edgar was lorde ⁊ kynge aboue all ẏ kynges of Scotlande ⁊ of Wales/ fro ẏ tyme ẏ Arthur was gone/⁊ neuer was ſythe kynge of his power. And this Edgar was ſeynt Edwardes fader. And whan Edgares wyfe was deed ẏ was ſeynt Edwardes moder ⁊ entyered/ he herde ſpeke of ẏ fayrneſſe of Elſtryde/ ẏ was Orgarꝰ doughter a baron of Deuenſhyre ẏ was ſo fayre a woman/ ẏ all men dyde ſpeke of her. He called one of his knyghtes ẏ he moche loued ⁊ truſted vpon ⁊ tolde hym. Go ſayd he to ẏ noble barō Orgarꝰ of Deuēſhyre ⁊ ſe yf ẏ his doughter be ſo fayre as men ſpeke of/⁊ yf it be ſoth I wyl haue her to wyfe. This knyght that was called Edelwolde went forth his way as ẏ kynge hȳ had ſayd ⁊ came there ẏ ẏ lady was. And whan he ſawe her ſo fayre/ he thought to haue her hym ſelfe to his wyfe. And therof ſpake to Orgarus her fader. And her fader was an olde man and had no mo chyldren/ but onely her/ and ſawe that Edelwolde was a fayre yonge knyght ⁊ worthy ⁊ ryche ⁊ was wel byloued wᵗ the kynge/⁊ thought his doughter ſholde wel be maryed ⁊ beſet vpon hȳ/⁊ graūted hȳ his doughter yf the good lorde the kynge wolde cōſent therto. And than this Edelwolde came agayne vnto ẏ kynge ⁊ tolde hym that ſhe was fayre ynough vpon to ſe/ but ſhe was wonder lothly. Than anſwered the kynge ⁊ ſayd that he toke but lytell charge. Syr ſayd Edelwolde/ ſhe is her faders heyre/ and I am not ryche of landes/ and yf ye wolde conſente ⁊ graūte that I myght her haue/ than ſholde I be ryche ynough. In goddes name ſayd the kynge. I conſente therto. Edelwolde tho thanked the kynge ryght moche/ and wente agayne into Deuenſhyre ⁊ ſpouſed ẏ damoyſell/⁊ in that countre he dwelled. And thus it befell vpon a tyme that he tolde his coūſeyle ⁊ all this thynge vnto his wyfe/how ⁊ in what maner he had begyled his lorde the kynge ẏ wold haue had her to wyf/⁊ anone as ſhe it wyſt/ſhe loued hym neuer more afterwarde as ſhe dyde before. ¶ This lady conceyued by hym a ſone. And whā tyme was ẏ ẏ chylde ſholde be borne. Edelwolde came to ẏ kynge ⁊ prayed hym to haue a ſone of his at ẏ fonteſtone. The kynge hym graūted. And lete call hym Edgar after his owne name/⁊ whan this was done he thought that all was ſyker ynough for the kynge/that he wolde not take his wyfe/for alſo ſhe as his lorde was a Joly man and an amerous.

¶ How that kȳge Edgar wedded Eſtrylde after the dethe of Edelwolde.

THus it befell that all mē in kynge Edgars courte than ſpake ⁊ ſayd that Edelwold was rychely auaūced thorugh ẏ forſayd maryage of his wyf. And yet they ſayd/he was auaūced an hōdred folde more. For he had ſpowſed the mooſt fayreſt creature ẏ euer was ſeen. And the kynge herde ſpeke ſomoche of her beaute ẏ he thought he wolde haue hym dyſceyued/⁊ begyled. And thought pryuyly in his herte/that he wolde go into Deuenſhyre/as it were for to hunte for ẏ harte ⁊ for the hynde ⁊ other wylde beeſtes/⁊ than he ſholde ſe there the lady or he departed thens. And this lady was dwellynge at a manere place beſyde the foreſt/ther ẏ the kynge wolde hunte/⁊ at ẏ maner he was herborowed all nyght/⁊ whā tyme came that ẏ kynge ſholde ſoupe/⁊ ẏ ſonne ſhone the kynge aſked after his goſſyppe ⁊ after his godſone. And Edelwolde made hym to come before the kynge. And neuertheles yf his owne wyf myght haue be ſhe ſholde not haue come in his ſyght by his wyll. The lady welcomed the kynge and ſwetely hym kyſſed. And he toke her by ẏ hand/⁊ tho nexte by hym her ſate/and ſo ſouped they togyder. And there was a cuſtome and a vſage in this lande that tyme. That ſo whan one dranke to another the drynker ſholde ſaye waſſayle. And ẏ other ſholde anſwere/and ſaye Drynke hayle. And this dyde the kynge ⁊ the lady/and alſo kyſt many tymes. And after ſouper whan tyme was for to go to bedde the kynge went to bedde thynkynge hertely on the fayreneſſe of ẏ lady/and than was ouercome for her loue ẏ hȳ thought that he ſholde deye/but yf he had his wyl on her. Upon the morowe the kynge aroſe/and in the foreſt wente hym for to dyſporte with hartes and hyndes/⁊ al other wylde beeſtes. And of ẏ hartes great plēte he ſend to ẏ lady. And thryes he wente for to ſolace and to ſpeke with that lady/the whyles he dwelled there in that coūtre. ¶ And after that the kynge remeued thens/and thought hym how he myght beſt delyuer Edelwolde fro his wyfe/as he hadde hym fyrſte deſceyued. And the kynge anone after .viii. dayes ordeyned a parlyament at Salyſbury of all his baronage coūſeyl to haue. And for to ordeyne how the countre of Northumberlande ſholde beſt be kepte that ẏ Danes came not nere ẏ lande for to deſtroy. And this Edelwolde came vnto ẏ kynges parlyament. And ẏ kynge ſend hym vnto Yorke for to be keper of that countre. And thus it befell that men ẏ knewe hym not ſlewe hym by the waye. And anone as ẏ kynge herde tell that he was deed/he lete ſende after the lady Eſtryde that ſhe ſholde come vnto ẏ cyte of London/and there be wedded to ẏ kynge with great ſolempnyte and worſhyppe. And whan he was come to London ſoone after ſhe helde a ſolempne feeſt. And he ware a crowne that was of golde and yͤ quene another. And ſeynt Dunſtane on yͤ morowe came vnto the kynge in yͤ chambre / & founde yͤ kynge & the quene in bed togyder. And ſeynt Dunſtane aſked the kynge who ſhe was. And the kynge anſwered and ſayde / that ſhe was yͤ quene Elfryde. And yͤ Archebyſſhoppe ſeynt Dunſtane ſayde that he dyde greate wronge and agaynſt goddes wyll to take a woman to wyf whoſe chylde he had take at the fonte ſtone. And the quene for that worde neuer loued ſeynt Dunſtane after. And the good man warned oft that foly to be lefte / but it auayled but lytel / for the loue bytwene them was ſomoche. The kynge begate vpon her a ſone that was called Edred. When this chylde was .vi. yere / the kynge his fader dyed. And about that tyme he had regned .xvi. yere. And lyeth at Glaſtenbury.

BErengarius the thyrde was Emperour after henricꝰ .vii. yere / this Berengariꝰ was Emperour in Ytaly. In whoſe tyme was great dyuyſyon. ¶ And henricꝰ themperour deceſſed / & Otto began to remayne in almayne. ¶ Lothariꝰ regned after hȳ two yere / & deceſſed whyle Otto reygned in almayne. And had a wyfe that hyght Walnydam / yͤ whiche after wedded Otto. ¶ Beringarius yͤ fourthe was after hȳ / this man in great tyrannye ſubdued Ytaly / wherfore yͤ pope & other Romayns called Otto that he myght delyuer thē whiche he dyd. And he toke Beringarius by ſtrength / and thyes he outlawed hym. And he toke Lotharius wyf yͤ whiche yͤ tyraunt had pryſoned. ¶ Leo the .viii. was pope after Benedictus one yere & foure monethes. This man was choſen with the comyn voyce / & Johannes was depoſed. This Leo ordeyned yͤ no pope ſholde be made without conſent of yͤ Emperour. For the malyce of the Romayns / the whiche oppreſſed thē. This man graunted al the gyftes to Otto and his ſucceſſours / the whiche were gyuen by Juſtinianus and Karolus to the chyrche / that he myght defende Ytaly from yͤ rebellyons. ¶ Johannes the .xii. was pope after hym almoſt .viii. yere. This Johannes ſuffered great wronge of the Romayns. For he was take and exyled / but Otto bare this heuely. For he ſlewe the noble men of Rome / & certayne of them exyled for euermore. ¶ Benedictus yͤ .vi. was pope after hym .vi. yere. This man was take / & in yͤ caſtell Aungell was ſtrangled. ¶ Nota. ¶ The Empyre in this tyme was tranſlated to yͤ Almayns. And the ſame cauſe is here as was before / for the vycyous lyuynge. Ne theſe vnhappy men coude not be Infourmed / yͤ they ſholde eſchewe that one vyce / through yͤ whiche they ſawe ſoo many noble men peryſſhe. ¶ Otto was Emperour after Berengariꝰ .xii. yere. This Otto was yͤ fyrſt Emperour of Almayne. And he was as vertuous as kynge Karolus was / for he defended the chyrche of almyghty god / & the ſynguler promoter / for the whiche he was worthy to be Emperour. Many men of fals byleue he conuerted. And he delyuered hym pope Benedictus the vſurper of the popehed into Saxonye. And there he deceaſed in his exyle. And after this Otto themperour deceſſed a ryche man in vertue and goodnes. ¶ Otto yͤ ſecunde was Emperour after his fader. And he was a noble man to yͤ chyrche as his fader was. And many a batayle hadde agaynſt the falſe men of byleue. And at the laſt he almooſt loſt all his hooſte in Kalabre. Yet forſothe with all his mynde beſought ſeynt Peter to helpe. And meruayloufly ſeynt Peter delyuered hym. And his wyf was the doughter of the Emperour of Conſtantynopolitan of the Romayns blode & this man was crowned of Benedictus.

¶ Of ſeynt Edwarde yͤ martyr and how Elſtryde his ſtepmoder lete kyll hym for to make Eldred her owne ſone kynge.

AND after this Edgar regned Edwarde his ſone yͭ he begatt vpon his fyrſte wyfe/ whiche well and nobly gouerned yͤ lande. For he was full of all manere of goodneſſe/ and ledde a full holy lyue. And aboue all thynge he loued god and holy chyrche. And yͤ quene Elſtryde whiche was his ſtepmoder lete ſlee hym bycauſe to make her owne ſone Eldrede kynge. And thus on a daye he was ſlayne as ye ſhal here afterwarde. It befel thus vpon a daye yͭ the kynge Edwarde went into a wodde for to playe in the Southe countre beſyde a towne whiche is called Warham. In whiche foreſt was grete plente of hartes and hyndes. And whan he had ben a whyle there hym for to play he thought vpon his broder Eldrede that was with his moder yͤ quene/ for her place was nygh yͤ foreſt/ and thought for to go thyder and vyſyte and ſe his broder. And toke with hym but a lytell meyne/ and went towarde his ſtepmoders houſe that in that tyme ſoiourned in the caſtell of Corfe. And as he rode in yͤ thyckeneſſe of the wodde to aſpye his game/ it befell that he went amyſſe and loſt his meyne that with hym came. And at the laſte he came out of the wodde. And as he loked hym aboute/ he ſawe there faſt beſydes a manoir that his ſtepmoder dwelled in/ & thyderwarde he went allone. And anone it was tolde yͤ quene/ how that yͤ kynge was comen there withouten ony company. And therof ſhe made ioye ynough/ & thought how that ſhe myght beſt that he were ſlayne as pryuely as ſhe myghte/ & therof ſhe ſpake to one of her knyghtes. To whome the quene tolde moche of her counſeyle ayenſt hym. And whan they came to the kynge and curteyſly hym receyued. And the kynge tolde that he was come to vyſyte her & alſo for to ſpeke with Eldred his broder. The quene many tymes hym thanked and hym prayed for to alyght & herborowe with her all yͭ nyght. The kynge ſayde that he myght not/ but agayne he wolde go vnto his folke/ yf he myght them fynde/ & whan yͤ quene ſawe that he wolde not abyde/ ſhe prayed hym that he wolde ones drynke/ and he graũted her. And anone as the drynke was come/ the quene dranke vnto yͤ kynge/ and the kynge toke the cuppe and ſet it to his mouth. And in the meane whyle that he dranke/ yͤ falſe knyght that was with yͤ quene with a knyfe ſmote yͤ kynge vnto his herte/ and there he fell downe deed vnto the erthe of his palfray. The quene for that dede gaue the knyght golde and ſyluer great plente and ryches ynoughe. And the knyght anone as this was done went hym ouer the ſee. And ſo eſcaped he out of this lande. Whan this kynge Edwarde was thus martred. It was in the yere of yͤ Incarnacyon of our lorde .ix.C. lxxx. and he had reygned .xii. yere and an halfe/ and lyeth at Glaſtenbury.

¶ Of the kynge Eldred/ & how the kynge Swyne of Denmarke helde Englande/ and how Eldred that was ſeynt Edwardes broder was not beloued i his realme and therfore he fledde into Normandye.

SO after this Edwarde regned Eldred his broder. And ſeynt Dunſtan crowned hym/ and this ſeynt Dunſtan dyed ſoone after yͭ he had forgyuen the quene her treſpace/ bycauſe that ſhe was cauſe of kynge Edwardes deth. And ſeynt Dunſtane hadde her aſſoyled/ & penaunce had her enioyned. And ſhe lyued after a chaſte lyfe & a clene. This kynge

Eldred wedded an Englysshe woman/ ꝫ on her begate Edmunde Irensyde/ and another sone that was called Edwyne. And after deyed the quene theyr moder. And in that tyme came Swayne into Englonde ÿ was kynge of Denmarke/ for to chalenge ꝫ to conquere all ÿ his auncesters had before ÿ tyme. And so he cōquered and had it all at his askynge. For the Erle Cuthbert of Lyndeseye and all the people of Northumberlande and almoost all ÿ grettest of Englonde helde with Swayne that was kynge of Denmarke in so moche as they loued not kyng Eldred for bycause that his good fader Edwarde was slayne for loue of hym. And therfore no man set but lytell by hym. Wherfore kynge Swayne hadde all his wyll/ and take all ÿ londe. And Eldred the kynge fledde into Normandy. And so spake to the duke Rycharde/ that the duke gaue hym his syster the Emme to wyfe. Upon whiche he gate two sones/ ÿ one was called Alured/ ꝫ that other Edwarde. And whan Swayne had conquered all the londe/ he reygned with ÿ [illegible] .xvi. yere/ and than he dyed/ and lyeth at Yorke.

¶ How kynge Eldred came agayne from Normandy/ and how Knoght the Dane reygned/ and of the warre bytwyxte hym and Edmunde Irensyde.

Thus after the dethe of Swayne ÿ was a Dane. Knoght his sone was crowned in Englande/ ꝫ made hym kynge. And tho came agayne Eldred out of Normandye w̄ moche worshyp of people/ ꝫ with strenge meyne that Knoghte durst not abyde/ but fled thens into Denmarke. ¶ The kynge Eldred hadde agayne his reame/ whiche so greatly he desyred that he bygan to destroye all tho ÿ helde wyth Swayne ÿ was a Dane agaynst hym. And afterwarde came agayne this Knoghte from Denmarke with a great power/ so that kynge Eldred durste not with hym fyghte/ but fledde from thens vnto London/ and there he helde hym. ¶ Than came Knoght and hym besyeged so longe tyll that kynge Eldred dyed in ÿ cyte of London/ and lyeth at seynt Poules. And he reygned .ix. yere.

BOnus was pope after Benedict⁹ one yere. This mā abode but a lytell tyme. ¶ Bonifaci⁹ was pope after hȳ fyue monethes. ¶ Benedictus was pope after hym ten yere. This man crowned Otto the .ii./ and made many Romayns to be taken. And he dyd gader a counseyle agaynst the kynge of Fraunce/ where Gylbertus ÿ Nygromancer was deposed. ¶ Johannes ÿ .xiiii. was pope after hym .viii. monethes. And he was put in the castell Aungell/ and was famysshed to dethe. ¶ Johannes the .xv. was pope after hym foure monethes. ¶ Johannes the .xvi. was pope after hȳ almoost .xi. yere. This man was taught in armes/ ꝫ made many bokes/ ꝫ elles lytell of hym is wryten. ¶ Gregorius the .v. was pope after this man almoost thre yere. And this Gregorius was made pope at the Instaunce of themperour Otto the thyrde/ for he was his cosyn. And whan he hadde be a lytell whyle pope/ ꝫ ÿ Emperour reuerted from ÿ cyte of Rome. Placentius was put in by Crescentius a cōsul for money/ ꝫ than was [illegible] a fewe dayes. But ÿ Emperour came sone after/ ꝫ toke Crescentius ÿ consull/ ꝫ stroke of his heed/ ꝫ put oute the eyen of this man Placentius pope/ ÿ which [illegible] was robbyd of his dygnyte of the pope hede/ And maymed hym on other maners/ his kynges ꝫ men his bodes helpe hym nothynge. For he dyde the thynges ÿ he sholde not haue done. And he suffered that that he deſerued. ¶ Nota.

¶ This Gregorius with y Emperour Otto ordeyned the cheſers of the Empyre/ y whiche from thens forth hath abyden vnto this daye. For y Frenſſhmen put none other wyſe but by the y ordynaūce. And theſe cheſers of y Empyre conſtytued by the pope & Otto were not made to blame the Romayns / but to eſchewe y cyuyles to come. And theyr names ben wryten in latyn for lerned men in theſe verſes. (Maguntinēſis. Treuerenſis. Colonienſis. Quilibet imperii ſit cancellarius horū. Et palatin⁹ dapifer dux portitor enſis. Marchio prepoſitus camere/ pincerna Bohemus. Hi ſtatuunt dn̄m cunctis p ſecula ſūmū. Palatin⁹ eſt comes reni. Marchio ē Brandeburgēſis. Dux ſaxon/ rex Boemoꝝ. Hec ſūt quidā verſus. ¶ Through this occaſyon the Egle hath loſt many a feder/ & in the ende he ſhall be made naked. ¶ Otto y .iii. was Emperour .xviii. yere. This man was noble all the dayes of his Empyre. And after y wyſdom of his fader he was a very feythfull man to y chyrche/ & in many batayles he proſpered bycauſe he was deuout to almyghty god & his ſeyntes. And gaue myghty worſhyppynge to y relyques of ſeyntes. And oftetymes he viſyted holy places. This man was crowned by Gregorius his coſyn. And at the laſt he was buryed at Rome.

¶ Anno domini. M.iiii.

Syluester y .ii. was pope after Gregorius .iiii. yere. And he was made pope by y helpe of the deuyll/ to whome he dyd homage/ for he ſholde gyue hym al thyng y he deſyred. And he was called Gilbert. And his connynge gate hym y grace of y kynge of Fraunce/ & he made hym y byſſhop of Remes/ but anone he was depoſed. And after he gate y grace of themperour/ & was made y byſſhop of Rauenny/ & after pope. But he had an ende anone/ & ſo haue al y put theyr hope in fals deuylles. ¶ Yet men truſt in his ſaluacyon/ for certayne demonſtracyons of his ſepulcre/ & for y great penaūce y he dyd in his laſt ende. For he made his hand & legges to be cut of/ & dyſmembred in all his body & to be caſt out at y dores to foules/ & thā his body to be drawen with wylde beſtes & there to be buryed where ſomeuer they reſted as an hoūde. And they ſtode ſtyl at ſeynt Johan Lateranenſis/ and there he was buryed. And y was ſygne of his ſaluacyon. ¶ Johānes y .xvii. was pope .v. monethes. ¶ Johannes the .xix. was pope after hym fyue yere. And theſe two dyd lytell thynges. ¶ Henricus the fyrſt was Emperour in Almayn .xx. yere. This Hēricus was duke of Barry. And all accordynge he was choſen for his bleſſyd fame and good name the whiche he hadde.

¶ And it is redde that many of theſe dukes of Barry were holy men/ not alonely in abſteynynge them from fleſſhly deſyres but alſo in vertuous & good lyuynge. And this Henric⁹ had a ſyſter that was as holy as he/ the whiche he gaue to wyfe vnto the kynge of Hungary. And ſhe brought all Hungary vnto the ryght byleue & the cryſten feyth. And his wyues name was (ſancta Kunnegundis) with whome he lyued a vyrgyn all the dayes of his lyfe/ & alſo he dyd many a batayle/ as wel in Ytaly as in Almayne agaynſt the rebellyons and proſpered ryght wyſely euermore on them. At the laſt with a bleſſyd ende he deceſſed. And in the lyfe of ſeynt Laurence he and his wyfe are put for enſamples. Bycauſe of theyr holy & vertuous lyuyng. ¶ Benedictus was pope after Johānes .xi. yere. This man had great ſtryfe in his dayes/ for he was put oute/ and another put in. ¶ And this pope Benedict⁹ after that he was deed/ was ſene of an holy man byſſhop in a wretched fygure/ & he hadde great peyne. And this fygure ſayd he recouered nothynge in ÿ mercy of god. And nothynge profyted hym ÿ was done for him for it was goten by extorcyon & vnlawfully. ¶ Than this byſſhop lefte his byſſhopryche for drede of this ſyght/ & went into a monaſtery & lyued vertuouſly all his dayes. ¶ Johánes ÿ .x. was pope after hym .xi. yere/ and lytell profyted.

¶ Of kynge knoght that was a Dane.

Knoght a Dane regned after Eldred. But Edmonde Irenſyde kynge Eldredes ſone by his fyrſt wyfe/ ordeyned a great power of men/ & began for to warre on kynge knoght. And ſo he dyde many tymes wonder ſharply. ¶ The quene Emme ÿ dwelled than at Wynchester had grete drede of her .ii. ſones Alured & Edwarde/ leſt they ſholde be deſtroyed in that warre. Wherfore ſhe ſend them ouer ÿ ſee into Normandy to ÿ duke Rycharde ther vncle. And there they dwelled in ſorowe ÿ ſpace longe tyme. ¶ This Edmonde Irenſyde & Knoght ÿ Dane warred ſternly togyder. But at ÿ laſte they were accorded in this manere/ ÿ they ſholde departe the londe bytwene the/ & ſo they dyd/ and loued togyder lyke two bretherne.

¶ How kynge Edmonde Irenſyde was ſlayne by treaſon/ by a traytour called Edryche of Stratton.

And after this regned kynge Irenſyde and knoght the Dane. But thus it befell afterwarde that in the ſame yere that they were accorded & loued togyder/ that a falſe traytour had enuye to the loue that was bytwene them/ whoſe name was Edryche of Stratton ÿ was a great lorde/ ÿ whiche was Edmonde Irenſydes man/ and of hym helde al his londe that he had. And neuertheles he bethought hym he wolde bytraye his lorde and make Knoght kynge of all the londe to the entent rychely to be auaunced/ and with hym be well byloued. Wherfore he prayed his lorde Edmonde Irenſyde on a daye with hym for to ete. And the kyng hym curteyſly graunted/ & to hym came at his prayer. And at the mete the kynge was royally ſerued with dyuerſe metes & drynkes. And whan the nyght came that he ſholde go vnto bedde. ¶ The kynge toke his owne meyne & wente vnto his chambre where as he ſholde take his nyghtes reſt. And as he loked aboute hym/ he ſawe a fayre ymage ÿ was made in ſemblant as it were an archer with a bowe/ and in the bowe a fyne arowe. Kynge Edmonde went ſomwhat nere it for to beholde it better. And whan ÿ he was by it/ anone that arowe ſmote hym thrughe the body/ and there ſlewe the kynge. For this engyne was made for to ſlee his owne lorde trayterouſly. And ſo whan kynge Edmonde was thus deed and ſlayne/ he had regned but .x. yere. And his people for hym made moche ſorowe. And his body they bare to Glaſtenbury/ and there they hym buryed. ¶ And whan this traytour Edryk anone wente vnto ÿ quene that was kynge Edmondes wyfe/ whiche wyſt not of her lordes dethe. Anone he toke from her two ſones that were fayre & yonge/ that her lorde had goten on her/ that one was called Edwarde/ and that other Edwyne/ and ledde them with hym to London/ and toke to kynge Knoght/ that he ſholde do to them what his wyll were. And tolde hym how ſubtylly he had ſlayne kynge Edmonde bycauſe that Knoght ſholde haue all the londe of Englonde. ¶ O thou fals traytour/ haſt thou ſlayne my true brother/ the re. And tolde hym how ſubtylly he hadde ſlayne kynge Edmonde / for bycauſe and loue of hym / ſoo ẏ kynge Knoght all Englande in his power hooly myght haue.

¶ O thou fals traytour / haſt ẏ my trewe broder that was ſoo trewe thus ſlayne for me / ẏ mā I moſt loued in ẏ worlde. Now by my heed I ſhal for thy trauayle ẏ wel rewarde as thou haſt deſerued / ⁊ anone lete hym be take ⁊ bounde hande ⁊ fote in maner of a traytour / ⁊ lete caſt hȳ in ther into Tamyſe / ⁊ i this maner ẏ fals traytour ended his lyfe. The kȳge toke ẏ two chyldren and put them vnto the abbot of Weſtmynſter to warde ⁊ to kepe tyll ẏ he wyſt what was beſt with them to do.

¶ How kȳge Knoght ſend kyng Edmondes ſones bothe into Denmark to be dyſtroyed / and how they were ſaued.

SO it befell ſoone after that kynge Knoght had al ẏ land in his hand ⁊ ſpouſed the quene Emme thorough cōſent of his baronage / for ſhe was a fayre woman / the whiche was Eldredes wyfe ⁊ the dukes ſyſter of Normandye / ⁊ they lyued togyder louyngly as reaſon wolde. The kynge axed vpon a daye counſayll of ẏ quene what was beſt to do wᵗ Edmond Irenſydes ſones. Syr ſayd ſhe bycauſe they are heyres of the lande / ſende theym he into a ſtraunge lande to be deſtroyed / ellis they wyll cauſe moche ſorowe. The kynge anone lete call a Dane ẏ was called Walgar / ⁊ cōmaūded hȳ that he ſhold lede thoſe two chyldren into Denmarke ⁊ ther make ſo of them ẏ he herde no more of them. Syr ſayde this Walgar youre cōmaūdement ſhalbe done. And toke anone ẏ two chyldren ⁊ ledde them into Denmarke. And for aſmoche as he ſawe that the chyldren were wonder fayre ⁊ meke / he had of them great pyte ⁊ ruth / ⁊ wold not ſlee them / but led them to the kynge of Hungary for to nouryſſhe. For this Walgar was well beknowen wᵗ ẏ kynge ⁊ beloued. Anone ẏ kynge axed whens ẏ chyldren were / ⁊ Walgar tolde hym that they were the ryght heyres of Englande ⁊ therfore mē wolde deſtroy them / wherfore ſyr vnto you they be come mercy and helpe for to ſeke. And forſoth yf they may lyue your men they ſhal become / ⁊ of you they ſhal holde all theyr lande. The kyng of Hungary receyued theym with moche honour / ⁊ lete theym worthely be kepte.

¶ And thus it befell afterwarde ẏ Edwyne the yonger broder deyed / and Edward the elder broder lyued / a fayre man and a ſtronge / ⁊ a large man of body ⁊ gentyll / ⁊ curteys of condycyons / ſo that all men hym loued. And this Edwarde in the cronycles is called ymonge the Englyſſhmē Edwarde the outlawe.

¶ And whan as he was made knyght / the kynges doughter of Hungrye hym moche loued for his worthynes ⁊ his fayrenes / ſo that ſhe called hym her derlynge. The kynge ẏ was her fader perceyued well the loue ẏ was betwene them two. And he had none heyre male / but onely that doughter. And ẏ kynge wouchesaf his doughter to no mā ſoo well as he dyd to hym / the whiche ſhe loued ſo wel / and he her / ⁊ gaue her vnto hym with a good wyl. And Edwarde her ſpouſed with moche honour. The kynge of Hungry ſente after all his baronage / and made there a ſolempne feeſt ⁊ a riche weddyng. And made euery mā to vnderſtand ẏ this Edward ſhold be kyng after his deceſſe of al that land of Hungry. Of the whiche tydynges they were all ryght gladde. This ſame Edwarde begate vpon his lady a ſone / the whiche was called Edgar Ethelyng / and afterwarde a doughter ẏ was called Margarete / ẏ afterwarde was quene of Scotlande. And by the kyng of Scotlande that was called Malcolyn ſhe had a doughter that was called Maud ẏ was quene afterwarde of Englonde/ through kynge Henry ẏ was ẏ fyrſt ſone of the cõquerour that her wedded/ ꝛ he begate on her a doughter that was called Maude that afterwarde was Empereſſe of Almayn. And of this Maude came ẏ kynge of Englande that unto this day is called Henry the Empreſſe ſone/ ꝛ yet had this Edward another doughter by his wyfe ẏ was called Cryſtiã ꝛ ſhe was a nõne.

¶ How kynge Knoght that was a proude man conquered Normandy/ ꝛ how he became afterwarde meke and mylde.

Now haue ye herde of Edmonde Irenſydes ſone ẏ kynge Knoght wende they had be ſlayne as he had commaunded Walgar before. And this kynge Knoght had in his hande all ẏ realme of Englãde ꝛ Denmarke. And after ẏ they went unto Norwaye that lande for to conquere. But ẏ kynge of the lande that was called Olaf came wt his peple/ ꝛ wolde his lãde to haue well kepte ꝛ defended/ and ſo there he faught with hym/ tyll at the laſt he was ſlayne in ẏ batayll. And tho this Knoght toke all the lande into his hande. And whan he had cõquered Norwaye/ ꝛ take feaute ꝛ homages ther/ he came ayẽ into Englãde/ ꝛ helde hym ſelfe ſo great a lorde/ that hym thoughte in al the worlde his pere no mã was/ ꝛ he came ſo proude and hauteyne that it was great wonder. ¶ And ſo it befell upon a daye as he had herde maſſe at weſtmynſter/ ꝛ wold haue gone into his palays/ the wawes of ẏ Tamyſe ſo ſwyftely agaynſt hym came that almoſt they touched his feet. Tho ſayde ẏ kynge with a proude herte. I cõmaũde ẏ water to tourne agayne/ or els I ſhall made ẏ. The wawes for his commaundement wolde not ſpare/ but flowed in bygneſſe and in heyghte/ more and more. The kynge was ſo proude of herte that he wolde not flee the water/ ꝛ bete it with a rodde ẏ he had in his hande/ ꝛ cõmaũded the water ẏ it ſholde go no ferther. But for all his cõmaũdement ẏ water wolde not ceſſe/ but encreaſed more ꝛ more/ ſo ẏ the kynge was all wete/ ꝛ ſtode depe in ẏ water. And whan he ſawe the water wolde not do his cõmaũdement/ he withdrewe hym ꝛ ſtode upon a ſtone/ holding up his handes on hye/ ꝛ ſayd herynge all ẏ peple. ¶ This god ẏ maketh the ſee aryſe is kynge of all kynges/ ꝛ of all myghtis mooſt. And I am a caytyf ꝛ a man dedely/ ꝛ he may neuer dey/ ꝛ all thynge doth his cõmaũdement/ ꝛ hym obeyeth. To ẏ god I praye ẏ he be my warraunt. For I knowlege me a caytif feble ꝛ of no power ꝛ therfore I wyll go unto Rome without ony longe lettynge/ ꝛ my wrychedneſſe to punyſſhe ꝛ me to amende. For of god I clayme my lande for to holde/ ꝛ of none other. And anone made redy his heyre/ ꝛ hym ſelfe went to Rome without ony lettynge. And by ẏ waye dyd many almes dedis/ ꝛ at Rome alſo. And whan he had be there for to do penaũce for his ſynnes/ he came agayn into Englande/ ꝛ became a good man ꝛ an holy/ leuynge all maner pryde ꝛ lyuyng a holy lyf. And he made two abbayes of ſeynt Benet/ one in Englande/ ꝛ another in Normandye/ bycauſe he loued hym more ſpecyally/ than ony other ſeynt. And he loued moche alſo ſeynt Edmonde the kynge. And often he gaue grete gyftes to ẏ houſe/ ꝛ made it ryche. And whan he had reygned .xx. yere he dyed ꝛ lyeth at Wyncheſtre.

¶ Anno dñi. M.xviii.

Benedictus the .ix. was pope after Johannes/ and he was a great thour/ ⁊ therfore he was dampned/ ⁊ appered to a certayne man vnder a merueylous fygure ⁊ an horrible. His heed ⁊ his tayle was lyke an aſſe/ ẏ other part of his body lyke a beeſt. And he ſayd to this man to whom he appered. Be not aferde/ for I was a man as you art/ but for my beeſtly lyuynge in my papalyte/ I appere nowe lyke a beeſt. In this mannes tyme was grete dyuyſyon ⁊ ſclaunder to ẏ chyrche/ for he was put out and in/ two tymes. And here Ptholomus noteth ẏ ẏ pryde of byſſhops had euer an euyll ende/ ⁊ it was euer the occaſyon of mooſt vnreſt ⁊ batayl

¶ Conradus ẏ .i. was Emperour after Henricus .xx. yere. This man made many lawes/ ⁊ cōmaūded peas to be kept mooſt ſtreytly of ony man. But ẏ erle of Ludolf was accuſed/ ⁊ he fledde from his lande/ ⁊ deſyred more to lyue lyke a chorle than lyke a gentylmā/ ⁊ yet merueylouſly his ſone was made Emperour by ẏ cōmaundement of god agaynſt the wyl of Conradus. And at ẏ laſte they were accorded. ⁊ he toke Conradus doughter to his wyfe.

¶ Of kynge Harolde ẏ had leuer go on fote than ryde on horſbacke.

This knyght of whom we haue ſpoken of before had .ii. ſones by his wyfe Emme/ ẏ one was called Hardyknoghte/ ⁊ that other Harolde harefote/ for he was ſo lyght on fote ẏ he wolde not ryde. And this Harolde was nothynge manerd after his fader knoght/ for he ſet not by chyualry/ curteyſye/ nor worſhyp/ but onely by his owne wyll. And he became ſo wycked ẏ he exyled his moder Emme. And ſhe wente into Flaundres ⁊ there dwelled wᵗ the erle. Wherfore he ⁊ his broder hated eche other dedly. And whan he had regned two yere ⁊ more/ he deyed/ ⁊ lyeth at Weſtmynſter.

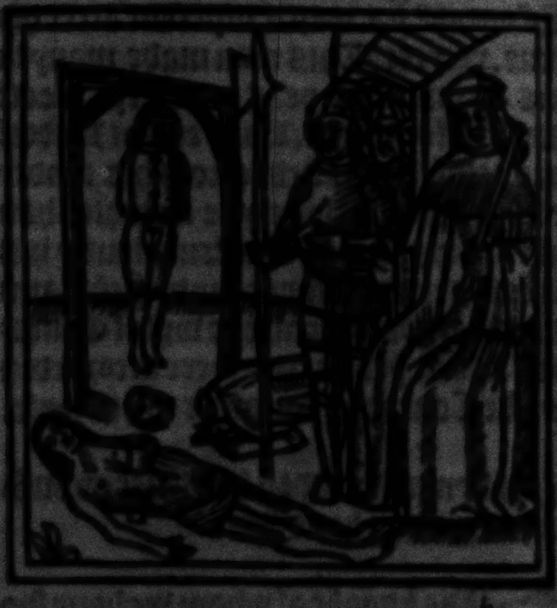
¶ Of kynge Hardyknoght that was Haroldes broder.

After this Harolde Harefote/ regned his broder Hardyknoght/ a noble knyght/ ⁊ worthy/ ⁊ moche loued chyualry ⁊ all goodnes. And whan he had regned a lytell whyle/ he lete vncouer his broder Harolde ⁊ ſmote of his heed/ ⁊ made caſt it into a gonge/ ⁊ the body into Tamyſe. And after came fyſſhers ⁊ toke the body wᵗ theyr nettes by nyght/ ⁊ bare him to ſeynt Clementes chyrche ⁊ there buryed hym. Thus auēged Hardyknoght hym on his broder. This kynge Hardyknoght was ſo large a gyuer of mete ⁊ drynke/ ẏ his tables were ſet euery day thre tymes full with ryall metes ⁊ drynkes for his houſholde ⁊ the whiche came to his court ¶ And this kynge Hardyknoght ſend after Emme his moder for to come agayne bycauſe his broder Harolde harefote had dryuen her out of the lande/ throughe the counſayll of the erle Godewyn/ greateſte lorde nexte the kynge in all Englande/ and that had mooſt rule/ bycauſe he had wedded kynge Knoghtes doughter borne on his fyrſte wyfe. ¶ And whan ẏ this quene was dryuen out of Englande/ ⁊ came to the erle of Flaundres/ ẏ was called Baldewyne her coſyn whiche founde her all thynge that her neded/ vnto ẏ tyme that ſhe went agayne into Englande/ that the kynge Hardyknoght had ſende for her ẏ was her ſone and made her come agayne with moche honour. This kynge Hardyknoght whan he had regned fyue yere he deyed ⁊ lyeth at Weſtmynſter.

¶ Of the vylany that the Danes dyd to the Englyſſhmē/ wherfore fro that tyme after was no Dane made kynge of this lande.

AND after the dethe of this kynge Hardeknoght, foꝛ aſmoche as he had no chylde of his body begoten. The erles ⁊ barons aſſembled ⁊ made a counſeyll, that neuer Dane ſholde be kynge after of Englande foꝛ the dyſpyte they had done to the Englyſſhemen. Foꝛ euermoꝛe afoꝛe yf the Englyſſhmen and the Danes happened to mete vpon a brydge, ẏ Englyſſhmen ſholde not be ſo hardy to meue a fote, but ſtande ſtyll tyll ẏ Danes were paſſed foꝛth. And moꝛeouer yf ẏ Englyſſhmen had not bowed downe theyꝛ hedes to do reuerence vnto ẏ Danes, they ſholde haue ben beten ⁊ deſpyſed. And ſuche dyſpytes ⁊ vylanyes dyd the Danes to our Englyſſhmen. Wherfoꝛe they were dryuen out of the realme after Hardyknoghtes deth. Foꝛ they had no loꝛde ẏ them myght mayntayne. And i this maner auoyded ẏ Danes Englōde, ẏ neuer came agayne. ¶ The Erles ⁊ barons by theyꝛ comyn aſſent ⁊ by theyꝛ coūſayl ſend vnto Noꝛmādye foꝛ to ſeke thoſe two bretherne Alured ⁊ Edwarde ẏ was dwellynge with ẏ duke Rycharde that was theyꝛ eame, in entente foꝛ to crowne Alured the elder broder, ⁊ hym make kynge of Englōde. And of this thynge he made an othe, ẏ Erles ⁊ barons made theyꝛ othes. But the Erle Godewyn of Weſtſex falſely ⁊ traytouſly thought to ſlee theſe two bretherne whan they ſholde be come into Englande, in entent to make his ſone Harolde kynge the whiche ſone he had begoten on kynge Hardyknoghtes doughter his wyfe. And ſo this Godewyn went pryuely vnto Southhampton, foꝛ to mete there with the two bretheren at theyꝛ londynge. ¶ And thus it befell, the meſſangers that wente into Normandy, fonde not but onely Alured ẏ was the elder ſone. Foꝛ Edwarde his broder was gone into Hungary foꝛ to ſpeke with his coſyn Edwarde the outlawe that was Edmonde Ironſydes ſone. the meſſangers tolde Alured how that the barons of Englande ſend after hym, and ẏ he boldely ſholde come into Englande, ⁊ receyue ẏ realme. Foꝛ kyng Hardiknoghte was deed, ⁊ all the Danes dryuen out of the lande.

¶ How Godewyn the fals traytour toke Alured vpon Gyldeſdowne whan ẏ he came from Noꝛmandye to be kynge of Englande, ⁊ how he cauſed hym to be martred in the yle of Ely.



WHan Alured herde theſe tydynges he thanked god. And into ſhyppe went with all the haſt that he myghte, and paſſed the ſee, ⁊ arryued at Southhampton there Godewyn the falſe traytour was. And whan this traytour ſawe that he was come, he welcomed hym and receyued hym with moche Ioye, ⁊ ſayde that he wolde lede hym to London there that all ẏ barons of Englande hym abode to make hym theyꝛ kynge. And ſo they wente on theyꝛ waye towarde London. And whan they came on Gyldeſdowne, tho ſayd the traytour Godwyn vnto Aluent. Take hede aboute you bothe on the lefte ſyde & ryght ſyde / & of all ye ſhall brynge / & of ſuche an hondred more. Now he ſoth ſayd Alured. I behyght you & ye I be kynge. I ſhal ordeyne & make ſuche lawes / wherwith god & man ſhalbe well pleaſed. And whan this traytour commaunded all his men that were with hym / that whan they were come vpon Gyldeſdowne / that they ſholde ſlee all ÿ were in Alureds company / that came with hym fro Normandy / & afterwarde take Alured and lede hym into the yle of Ely / & after put out bothe his eyen of his heed / and afterwarde brynge hym to deth / & ſo they dyde. For they ſlewe all ÿ companye that there were / the noumbre of .xii. gentylmen that were come with hym fro Normandye / & after toke they Alured & in the yle of Ely they put out his eyen & rente his wombe and toke the ende of his bowels / & put a ſtake into ÿ grounde / & an ende of ÿ bowelles thereto faſtned / and with nedels eyes hote of yren they pryched the good chylde and ſo made hym to go about ÿ ſtake tyll that all his bowelles were drawen out of his body / and ſo deyed Alured there thorugh treaſon of ÿ erle Godewyn. Whan the lordes of Englande had herde & wyſt how Alured ÿ ſholde haue ben theyr kynge was put to dethe through ÿ falſe traytour Godewyn they were wonder wrothe and ſwore bytwene god & them / that he ſholde dye a wors deth than dyde Edrych of Streton ÿ had betrayed his lorde Edmonde Ironſyde / & they wolde haue put hym to deth / but the traytour fledde thens into Denmarke / & there helde hym .iiii. yere / & loſt all his lande in Englande.

Siluester the thyrde was pope after Benedictus. This Siluester was choſen / & Benedictus was expulſed And afterwarde was he expulſed / & Benedictus was put vp agayne. And after he was put out / & Gregorius was made pope / & he was but a ſymple lettred man and therfore he choſe another man for to be conſecrate with hym. And whan many men were dyſpleaſed with this gydynge of .ii. popes / ÿ .iii. was brought in / ÿ whiche ſholde occupye the place of bothe tho two. And ſo they ſtroue amonge thē ſelfe. But Henry the Emperour came than to Rome & depoſed them all / & made Clemēt the ſecunde pope / whome he made anone to crowne hym. And he ſayd to ÿ Romaynes / they ſholde neuer without his aſſent choſe pope / & ſo thus beynge popes / ÿ .vi. was put in. But many mē ſay / this Gregorius was an holy man. ¶ Damaſius the ſecunde was after Clement .xx. dayes. This man was an vſurper of the popes hede / & ſo he deyed ſodeynly. And anone ÿ Romaynes aſked to haue a pope / & that ÿ Almayns ſholde haue none. For they were ſo hurte therto that they myght not cōtyne to the entente of the Emperoure / the whiche ſayde. There ſholde be no pope choſen but yf he wolde be of counſeyle of the electyon. But for all that they put in this holy man Leo / & after he had of that cōſcyence / & refuſed it. And anone he was choſen by ÿ comyn aſſente / this Leo put Cryſte in the fourme of a Laſer into his owne bedde / and in ÿ morowe he founde nothynge there.

¶ Of ſeynt Edwarde ÿ confeſſour / whiche was Aluredes brother / & how he was kynge of Englande.

AND whan this was done / all the lordes of Englande ſend another tyme in Normandye / for that Edwarde ſholde come into Englande with moche honour. And this Edwarde in his chyldehode loued almyghty god & hym drade.

honeſte ⁊ clenneſſe hath lad his lyfe/ ⁊ hated ſynne as deth. And whan he was crowned ⁊ enoynted in his royall power/ he forgate not his good maners ⁊ condycyons ẏ he hadde before. And forgate not all good cuſtomes for none worldly honoure/ nor for ryches/ ne treaſure by no wyſe. But euermore ⁊ more gaue hym to goodneſſe ⁊ loued god ⁊ holy chyrche paſſynge al other maner thynge. And poore men alſo he loued/ ⁊ helde as they had be his owne bretheren. And to them all he gaue great almeſſe with full good wyll.

¶ Of the hye ſpyrytuall loue that god ſhewed to ſaynt Edwarde kynge.

IN the holydayes as he went from the chyrche of weſtmynſter where he had herde the maſſe of ſeynt Iohan the euangelyſte. for as moche as he loued ſeynt Iohā the euangelyſte more ſpecyally after god and our lady than he dyd ony other ſeynt. And ſo there came to hym a pylgryme/ ⁊ prayed hym for ẏ loue of god & our lady ⁊ ſeynt Iohan ẏ euangelyſt ſome good of hym to gyue. And ẏ kynge pryuely toke his rynge of his fynger/ that no man perceyued it ⁊ gaue it to ẏ pylgryme/ ⁊ he it receyued ⁊ went thens. This kynge Edwarde he made all the good lawes of Englonde that yet ben moſt vſed ⁊ holden. And he was ſo mercyable ⁊ full of pyte/ that no man myght be more.

¶ Whan ẏ erle godwin came agayne into Englande ⁊ had agayne all his londe/ ⁊ afterwarde ſeynt Edwarde wedded his doughter.

AND erle Godwin ẏ was traytour to ẏ kynge. he came & herde moche ſpeke of ẏ goodneſſe of kynge Edwarde/ and ẏ he was ſo full of mercy and of pyte. he thought that he wolde go agayne into Englande/ for to ſeke ⁊ to haue grace of the good kynge Edwarde ẏ ſo mercyfull was/ ẏ he myght haue agayn his londe in pees. And arayed hym aſmoche as he myght ⁊ put hȳ towarde ẏ ſee ⁊ came in to Englande to London there ẏ ẏ kynge was that tyme ⁊ al ẏ lordes of Englande and helde a parlyament. Godwin ſende to them ẏ were his frendes/ ⁊ were ẏ moſte greateſt lordes of ẏ londe/ ⁊ prayed them to beſeche ẏ kynges grace for hym ⁊ ẏ he myght haue his pees ⁊ his londe graunte hym. The lordes led hym before the kynge to ſeke his grace. Anone as ẏ kynge hym ſawe/ he appeled hym of treaſon/ ⁊ of the dethe of Alured his broder/ and theſe wordes he ſayd to hym. Traytour Godwin I the appele ẏ thou haſt betrayed ⁊ ſlayne my broder Alured. Certes ſyr ſayd Godwin ſauynge your grace ⁊ your pees ⁊ your lordſhyp. I hym neuer betrayed/ ne yet hym ſlewe. And therfore I put me in the awarde of the courte. Now fayre lordes ſayd ẏ kynge. ye ẏ ben my lyegemen/ erles ⁊ barons of ẏ londe ẏ here ben aſſembled ye haue well herde myne appele/ ⁊ ẏ anſwere alſo of Godwin/ and therfore I wyll ẏ ye awarde ⁊ be ryght. The erles ⁊ barons them gadred them all togyder for to do this awarde by them ſelfe/ ⁊ ſo they ſpake dyuerſly amonge them. For ſome ſayd/ there was neuer alyaunce by homage ſeruyce ne ſtraunger/ ne by lordſhyp bytwene Godwin and Alured/ for whiche thynge they myght hym blame. And at ẏ laſt they determyned/ that he ſholde put hym in the kynges mercy al togyder. Tho ſpake ẏ erle Leuryke of Couentre a good man to god ⁊ to all the worlde/ ⁊ ſayde his reaſon in this maner ⁊ ſayd. The erle Godwin is the beſt frended man of Englande after the kynge/ and well it myght be ẏ he agayne ſayde/ that without counceyle of Godwin Alured was neuer put to deth wherfore I awarde as touchȳge my parte/that hym ſelfe ⁊ his ſone ⁊ euery of vs .xii. erles that ben his frendes go before ẏ kynge/charged with aſmoche golde ⁊ ſyluer as we may bere bytwene our handes prayenge the kynge to forgyue his euyll wyll to the Erle godewyn/⁊ receyue his homage/⁊ his lande yelde agayne. And they accorded vnto that awarde/and came euery of theym with golde and ſyluer as moche as they myght bere bytwene theyr handes before the kynge/and there ſayd the fourme and the maner of theyr accorde and of theyr awarde. ¶The kynge wolde not them agaynſaye/but aſmoche as they ordeyned/he graunted ⁊ cōfyrmed And ſo was the Erle Godewyn accorded with ẏ kynge/⁊ ſoo he had agayne all his lande. And afterwarde he bare hȳ ſo well and ſo wyſely/that the kynge loued hym wonder moche/⁊ with hym he was full preuy. And within a lytell tyme they loued ſomoche that there ẏ kynge ſpouſed Godewyns doughter/⁊ made her quene And neuertheleſſe though the kynge had a wyfe/yet he lyued euer in chaſtyte and clenneſſe of body wtoute ony fleſſhly dede doynge wt his wyf. And the quene alſo in her halfe ladde an holy lyfe two yere/and deyed. And afterwarde the kynge lyued al his lyfe without ony wyfe. ¶The kynge gaue ẏ erledome of Oxforde to Harolde that was Godewyns ſone/⁊ made hȳ erle And ſo well they were byloued/bothe the elder ⁊ he/⁊ ſoo pryue wt the kynge/that they myght doo by ryght what thynge ẏ they wolde. For agaynſt ryght wolde he nothynge do for no maner man/ſoo good and true he was of conſcyence. And therfore our lorde Jheſu cryſte great ſpecyall loue to hym ſhewed.

¶How kynge Edwarde ſawe Swyne kynge of Denmarke drowned in the ſee in the tyme of the Sacramente as he ſtode and herde maſſe.

IT befelle vpon a whytſondaye as kynge Edwarde herde his maſſe in the chyrche of weſtmynſter ryght at ẏ leuacyon of Jheſu Cryſtes body/⁊ as all men were gadred into the chyrche/⁊ came nyghe the awter for to ſe the ſacrynge the kynge his handes lyfte vp on hygh/⁊ a great laughter toke vp. Wherfore all ẏ aboute hym ſtode greatly ganne wonder And after maſſe/they aſked why the kynges laughter was/ſayre lordes ſayd kynge Edwarde. I ſawe ſwyne the yonger that was kynge of Denmarke come into the ſee wt all his power for to haue come into Englande vpon vs for to warre. And I ſawe hym ⁊ all his folke drowned in ẏ ſee and all this I ſawe in the leuacyon of cryſtes body bytwene the preeſtes handes/and I had therfore ſo great Joye that I myght not my laughter withholde. And the erle Lyuerycke beſyde hȳ ſtode at the leuacyon/and openly ſawe the fourme of bred tourne in ẏ lykenes of a yonge chylde/⁊ to take vp his ryght hande ⁊ bleſſyd the kynge ⁊ after the erle/⁊ ẏ erle anone tourned hym towarde ẏ kynge for to make hym ſe that holy ſyght. And tho ſayde the kynge. Syr erle I ſe well that ye ſe/thanked be god ẏ I haue honoured my god my ſauyour vyſybly Jheſu cryſte in fourme of man. Whoſe name be bleſſyd in all worldes. Amen.

¶How the rynge ẏ ſeynt Edwarde had gyuen to a poore pylgryme/for the loue of god ⁊ ſeynt Johan Euangelyſte came agayne to kynge Edwarde.

THis noble man ſeynt Edwarde regyned .xiii. yere. And thus it befell vpon a tyme or he deyed/ẏ two men of Englãde were gone into yͤ holy lande/ ⁊ hadde done theyꝛ pylgrymage/ ⁊ were goynge into theyꝛ owne countre where they came from. And as they wente in yͤ way/ they mette a pylgryme yͤ curteyſly them ſalued/ ⁊ aſked of thẽ in what land and in what cõtre they were boꝛne. And they ſayd in Englãde. Tho aſked he who was kyng of Englãde. And they anſwered ⁊ ſayd/ yͤ good kynge Edwarde. Fayre frendes ſayd tho yͤ pylgryme/ whan yͤ ye come into your cõtre agayne. I pray you yͤ ye wyll go vnto kyng Edwarde/ ⁊ oftentymes grete hym in my name/ ⁊ oftentymes hym thanke of his great curteyſy yͤ he to me hath done/ ⁊ namely foꝛ the rynge that he gaue me whã he had herde maſſe at weſtmynſter foꝛ ſeynt Johannes loue euãgelyſt. And toke yͤ rynge/ ⁊ toke it to the pylgrymes ⁊ ſayde. I praye you go ⁊ bere this rynge/ ⁊ take it vnto kyng Edwarde/ ⁊ tell hym that I ſende it hym ⁊ a full ryche gyfte I wyll hym gyue. Foꝛ vpon the .xii. daye he ſhall come vnto me and euermoꝛe dwell in blyſſe withoute ony ende. Syꝛ ſayd yͤ pylgrymes/ what man be ye ⁊ in what cõtre is your dwellynge. Fayꝛe frendes ſayde he. I am Johan the euangelyſte/ ⁊ I am dwellynge with almyghty god/ ⁊ your kynge Edwarde is my frende/ ⁊ I loue hym in ſpecyall foꝛ bycauſe yͤ he hath euermoꝛe lyued in clenneſſe ⁊ is a clene mayde/ and I pray you my meſſage to fulfyll as I haue you ſayd. Whan yͤ ſeynt Johan euangelyſt had thẽ thus charged/ ſodaynly he voyded out of theyꝛ ſyghtes bothe. The pylgrymes tho thãked almyghty god ⁊ went foꝛth theyꝛ way. And whã they had gone two oꝛ .iii. myle they began to waxe wery ⁊ ſet them adowne foꝛ to reſt them/ ⁊ ſo they felle on ſlepe. And whan they had ſlepte well/ one of theym awoke ⁊ lyfte vp his heed and loked aboute/ ⁊ ſayd to his felowe. Aryſe vp ⁊ walke we in our waye. What ſayd yͤ one felowe vnto that other/ where be we now. Certes ſayd yͤ other/ it ſemeth me yͤ this is not the countre there we layde vs downe in foꝛ to reſt ⁊ ſlepe. Foꝛ we were frome Jheruſalem but thꝛe myle. They toke vp theyꝛ handes ⁊ bleſſyd them/ and went foꝛthe in theyꝛ waye. And as they wente they ſawe ſhepeherdes goynge wt theyꝛ ſhepe yͤ ſpake none other language but englyſſhe. Good frendes ſayd one of yͤ pylgrymes/ what cõtre is this/ ⁊ who is loꝛde therof. And anone yͤ ſhepeherdes anſwered ⁊ ſayd/ this cõtre is yͤ countre of Kent in Englande/ of yͤ whiche yͤ good kynge Edwarde is loꝛde of. The pylgrymes thanked tho almyghty god ⁊ ſeynt Johan euangelyſt/ ⁊ went foꝛth in theyꝛ waye ⁊ came to Cãterbury/ ⁊ fro thens vnto London/ ⁊ there they founde yͤ kynge And tolde hym all from yͤ begynnynge to yͤ endynge almoche as ſeynt Johan had them charged/ ⁊ of all thynges how they had ſped by yͤ way/ ⁊ toke yͤ rynge to kynge edwarde ⁊ he toke it ⁊ thãked almyghty god ⁊ ſeynt Johan Euangelyſte. And tho made hym redy euery daye fro daye to daye to departe oute of this lyfe whan god wolde foꝛ hym ſende.

¶ How ſeynt Edwarde dyed yͤ .xii. daye.

And after it befell thus on Cryſtmaſſe euen as yͤ holy man edwarde was at goddes ſeruyce matyns foꝛ to here of yͤ hyghe ſolempne feeſt/ he became full ſeke/ ⁊ in yͤ moꝛowe endured wt moche peyne yͤ maſſe foꝛ to here and after maſſe he lete hym be lad into his chambꝛe/ there foꝛ to reſt hym. But in his hall ymonge his barons and his knyghtes myght he not come theym foꝛ to comfoꝛte and ſolace/ as he was wonte foꝛ to do at yͤ worthy feeſt. Wherfoꝛe all theyꝛ myꝛthe and comforte amonge all that were in the hall was tourned into care ⁊ ſorowe / bycauſe they dradde for to loſe the good lorde the kynge. ¶ And vpon ſeynt Johans daye / the Euangelyſt yͤ came next / the kyng receyued his ryghtes of holy chyrche / as it befalleth to euery cryſten man / ⁊ abode yͤ mercy ⁊ the wyll of god. And the two pylgrymes he lete before hym come / ⁊ gaue them ryche gyftes / ⁊ betoke them to god. Alſo the abbot of Weſtmynſter he lete before hym come ⁊ toke hym yͤ rynge in the honour of god ⁊ ſeynt Marye / ⁊ of ſeynt Johan the Euangelyſt. And the abbot toke it ⁊ put it ymonge other relyques / and there it is at Weſtmynſter in the abbaye. And ſo laye yͤ kynge ſeke tyll the. xii. euen And than deyed yͤ good kyng Edward at Weſtmynſter / for whoſe loue god hathe ſhewed many a fayre miracle And this was in the yere of yͤ Incarnacyon of our lorde Jheſu Cryſte. M.lxv. And after he was tranſlated ⁊ put into the ſhryne by yͤ noble martyr ſeynt Thomas of caunterbury

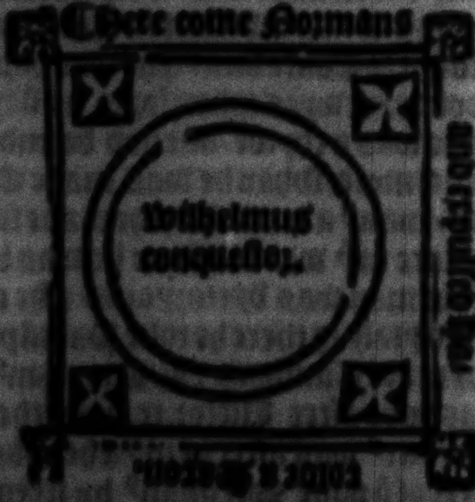
Victor the ſecõde was pope after Leo / and of hym lytell is wryten ¶ Henry the ſecunde was Emperour after the fyrſt Henry. xvii. yere. This man was coſyn to Conradus / ⁊ he was borne in a wodde / ⁊ twyes taken for to be ſlayn whan he was a chylde / but god defended hym euermore. Whan he was made Emperour / many a monaſtery he made in yͤ ſame place in yͤ wodde where he was borne. This man was vyctoryous / ⁊ he entred into ytaly / ⁊ there he toke Padulph⁹ the prynce of Campany. ¶ Stephan⁹ yͤ ix. was pope after Victor. ix. monethes. ¶ Benedict⁹ was after hym / ⁊ he toke yͤ dygnyte of yͤ pope Stephan⁹ by ſtrengthe / ⁊ kepte it. ix. monethes / ⁊ than deceſſed. ¶ Henry yͤ. iii. was Emperour after Henry the ſecunde. This Henry was an Inquyete man / ⁊ many tymes troubled that holy man Gregorius the. vii. And he axed forgyuenes fyrſt ⁊ was aſſoyled. but he perceyuered not longe / but broughte in another pope agaynſt hym / and ſayde he was an heretyke. And Gregorius curſed hym. And the choſers of yͤ Emperour choſe the duke of Saxon for to be Emperour / whom this Henry in batayll ouercame / And than he came to Rome with his pope ⁊ purſued pope Gregorius ⁊ the cardynalles alſo. ¶ And than anone Robert the kynge of Naples droue hym thens / ⁊ delyuered yͤ pope ⁊ his Cardynalles. Neuertheleſſe yet he was a man of great almeſſe / ⁊ he fought. xii. tymes in batayll / ⁊ at yͤ laſt he deyed wretchydly / for he was put downe by his owne ſone. For euen ſo as he dyd ſo was he done to. ¶ Nichola⁹ the ſecunde was pope after Benedict⁹. ii. yere. This Nicholaus called a coũſayll agaynſt the Archedeken of Turonoſ⁹ / the whiche was an heretyke techynge agaynſt the feyth. For he erred in the ſacrament / and after he was conuerted ⁊ was an holy man / but he coude neuer conuerte his dyſcyples. ¶ Nota. ¶ Alexander yͤ ſecõde was pope after hym. xii. yere / this Alexander was an holy man / ⁊ he ordeyned that vnder peyne of curſynge that no man ſholde here a preeſtes maſſe whome they knewe had a lemman (de pz. xxxii. ꝑ ter hoc) he had ſtryfe wyth one Codulo / but he expulſed hym as an vſurper / ⁊ put hỹ out as a Symonyer.

¶ How Harolde that was Godewyns ſone was made kyng / ⁊ how he eſcaped frõ the duke of Normandy.

AS ſeynt Edwarde was gone out of this worlde / and was paſſed to god ⁊ worthely entered as to ſuche a grete lorde oughte / the barons of the lande beſyred to haue had Edwarde Elyngus/ ſone to Edward ỹ outlawe ỹ was Edmond Irenſydes ſone to be kynge. For bycauſe he was of ỹ kyndeſt kynges blode. But Haroldes ſone through the erle Godewin ⁊ the ſtrength of his fader Godewyn ⁊ other great lordes of his kynred in ỹ realme/ ſeaſed all Englande into his hande/ ⁊ anone lete crowne hym kynge after the enterement of ſeynt Edwarde. This Harolde ỹ was Godewyns ſone two yere or ſeynt Edwarde deyed/ he wolde haue gone into Flaundres/ but he was dryuen by tempeſt into the countree of Pountyſe/ And there he was taken ⁊ brought to duke Wyllyam. And this Harolde wende ỹ Duke wyllyam wolde haue be auenged on hym/ for bycauſe ỹ Haroldes fader had made ſle Alured ſeynt Edwardes broder And pryncypally bycauſe Alured was ſone to quene Emme/ ỹ was Richardes moder duke of Normandye/ ỹ was ayeull to duke wyllyam. Neuertheleſſe he dyd not ſoo/ for aſmoche as Harolde was a noble wyſe knyght/ ⁊ that he ⁊ his fader were accorded ŵ ſeynt Edwarde. But alowed al thynge ordeyned bytwene them. Harolde by his good wyll ſwore vpon a boke/ ⁊ vpon holy ſeyntes that he ſholde ſpouſe ⁊ wedde duke wyllyams doughter after ỹ dethe of ſeynt Edwarde. And ỹ he ſholde do his beſy cure to ſaue ⁊ kepe the realme of Englande vnto the profyte ⁊ auauntage of duke wyllyam. And whā Harolde had thus made his othe vnto ỹ duke wyllyā he lette hym go out of pryſon free/ ⁊ gaue hym many ryche gyftes. And he than departed thens ⁊ came into Englande/ and anone dyd in this maner whan ſeynt Edwarde was deed as a fals forſworne man lete crowne hym ſelfe kynge of Englande And falſely brake the couenaunt that he had made before ŵ duke Wyllyam. wherfore he was wonder wrothe with hym/ ⁊ ſwore that he wolde be auenged vpon hym what ſomeuer hym befell. ¶ And anone duke wyllyam lete aſſemble a great hooſt ⁊ came into Englande for to auenge hym on Harolde/ and conquere the londe yf ỹ he myght. ¶ And in ỹ ſame yere that Harolde was crowned Harolde Hareſtryng kyng of Denmarke aryued in Scotlande ⁊ thought to haue be kynge of Englande And entred into Englande ⁊ robbed and deſtroyed al that he myght tyl ỹ he came to Yorke/ ⁊ ther he ſlewe many men of armes/ a. M. ⁊ a. C. preſtes. ¶ Whā this tydynges came to the kynge/ he aſſembled a great power/ ⁊ went for to fyghte with Haralde of Denmarke/ ⁊ with his owne handes he hym ſlewe/ ⁊ the Danes were diſcomfyted. And tho ỹ were left alyue ŵ ſo moche ſorowe fled to theyr ſhyppes. And thus kynge Harolde of Englande ſlewe kynge Haralde of Denmarke.

¶ Anno dñi. M. lxvi.

¶ How Wyllyam Baſtarde duke of Normandye came into Englande/ and ſlewe kynge Harolde.



AND whan this batayll was done Harolde became ſoo proude ỹ he wolde nothynge parte with his people of the thynge that he had goten/but helde it to hym ſelfe. Wherfore the mooſt parte of his people were wrothe and from hym departed. So that onely with hym abode no moo but his ſouldyours. And vpon a daye as he ſat at meet/a meſſanger came to hym ⁊ ſayd/that wyllyam baſtarde of Normandy duke was arryued in Englande with a great hooſt/⁊ had taken all the lande aboute Haſtynges/⁊ alſo myned ẏ caſtell. Whā the kynge had herde this tydynges/he went thyder with a lytell power in al the haſte ẏ he myghte/for there were but fewe people with hym lefte. As he was come thyder/he ordeyned to gyue batayll to duke wyllyam. But the duke aſked hym theſe thre thȳges fyrſt. yf that he wolde haue his doughter to wyfe/as he had ſworne and promyſed/or whyther ẏ he wolde holde hym of the lande in truage/or yf he wolde determyne this thynge in batayll. Harolde was a proude man ⁊ a ſtrong/⁊ truſted moche in his ſtrength and fought with the duke wyllyam ⁊ his people. But Harolde and his men were dyſcomfyted in that batayll. And hȳ ſelfe there was ſlayn. And this batayl was ended at Tonbrydge in the ſecunde yere of his regne/vpon ſeynt Calixtus day/⁊ ſo he was buryed at waltham.

¶ Of kynge wyllyam baſtarde/⁊ how he gouerned hym well ⁊ wyſely/and of the warre bytwene hym ⁊ the kynge of Frāce.

Than whan wyllyam baſtarde duke of Normandye had conquered all Englande/vpon Cryſtmaſſe daye thā nexte he lete crowne hym kynge at weſtmynſter/⁊ as a worthy kynge gaue vnto Englyſſhe men largely landes/and to his knyghtes. And afterwarde he went hym ouer the ſee ⁊ came into Normandy/and there he dwelled a whyle. And in ẏ.ii. yere of his regne he came agayne into Englande ⁊ brought with hym Maude his wyf/⁊ lete crowne her quene of England on whytſonday. ¶ And than anone after the kynge of Scotlande that was called Malcolyn began to ſtryue ⁊ warre with the kynge wyllyam. And he ordeyned hȳ towarde Scotlande with his men bothe by lande and by ſee/for to deſtroye kynge Malcolyn. But they were acorded/⁊ the kynge of Scotlande became his man/⁊ helde al his lande of hym. And kynge wyllyam receyued of hym his homage ⁊ cam agayne into England. And as kyng wyllyam had be kynge.xvii.yere. Maude ẏ quene dyed/on whom kyng william had begote many fayre chyldren. That is for to ſaye Robert Curthos/Wyllyam Rous Rycharde alſo that deyed/Henry Beauclerke/and Maude alſo that was ẏ erles wyfe of Bleynes/⁊ other foure fayre doughters. ¶ And after his wyues deth there began great debate bytwene hym and Phylyp the kynge of Fraunce/but at the laſte they were accorded. And than dwelled the kynge of Englande in Normandy and no man hym warred/and he no mā longe tyme. ¶ And the kynge of Fraunce ſayd vpon a daye in ſcorne of kynge wyllyam that he had lōge tyme lyen in chyldbed/and longe tyme had reſted hym there. And this worde came to the kynge of Englande where as he dyd lye in Normandy at Roen. And for this worde was he euyll appayed/and alſo wonder wroth towarde ẏ kynge of Frāce. And ſwore by god ẏ whan he were ariſen of his ſekeneſſe he wolde lyghten a.M.candelles/to the kynge of Fraunce/and anone lete aſſemble a great hooſt of Normans/and of Englyſſhmen. And in the begynnyng of herueſt he came into Fraunce/and brent all the townes that they came by through ẏ countree/⁊ robbed ⁊ dyd all the ſorowe yͭ he myght throughout all Fraũce. And at the laſt he brenned yͤ cite of Mandos/and cõmaũded his people to bere wodde/⁊ as moche as he myght brẽne. And he ayded therto hym ſelfe to a good wyll. And ther was a greate here/what of yͤ fyre yͭ was ſo great/⁊ of the ſeſõ that it was wonder hote/⁊ ſtuffed hym ſo yͭ he became ⁊ fel into a great dyſeaſe. And when he ſawe he was ſo ſtronge ſeke/he aſſygned all Normandy to Robert Curthoſe his ſone. And all Englande to Wyllyam the Rous/and bequethed to Henry Beauclerke al his rycheſſe. And whan he had done thus/he receyued all the ſacramentes of holy church ⁊ deyed the .xx. yere of his reygne/⁊ lyeth at Cane in Normandy.

¶ Anno dñi. M.lxvi.

Gregorius the .vii. was pope after Alexander .xii. yere/this man ordeyned a generall Synodus/that noo preeſt ſholde haue a wyfe nor ſholde dwell with women/but tho yͭ yͤ holy Synodus of Nicena ⁊ other decrees had ſuffered/⁊ than yͤ preeſtes ſet lytell or nought by his ordynaunce. This man cõmaunded yͭ no man ſholde here maſſe of a preeſt yͭ had a cõcubyne. And he on a certayne tyme as he was cardynall ⁊ Legate of Fraũce/proceded ſharply agaynſt prelates ⁊ preeſtes yͭ were ſymonyers. And amonge al other was one byſſhop there greatly famed wͭ ſymonye. And thoſe yͭ accuſed hym he hyred preuely to ſaye the contrary/the whiche the Legate conceyued/⁊ afore all the people he ſayd. Let the Iudgement of yͤſe men ceaſe at this tyme/for they are deceyuable/⁊ let god hymſelfe ſpeke for it. And ſaid thus it is certayne that the gyfte of a byſſhop is the grace of the holy ghooſt/⁊ who ſoeuer byeth a byſſhoprycke/doth agaynſt the holy ghooſt. Than yf thou byſſhop dyd not agaynſt the holy ghooſt/ſaye openly afore all the people (Gloria patri et filio: et ſpiritui ſancto) And many tymes he began to ſaye it/but he coude neuer ſpeke (ſpiritui ſancto) Than he was depoſed of his byſſhopryche. And after he coude ſpeke it well ynough. ¶ Victor the thyrde was pope after hym one yere/⁊ this man was poyſoned with venym in yͤ chalyce. ¶ Urbanus was pope after hym .xi. yere. This man curſed the kynge of Fraunce for his aduoutrye. And he called a coũſayle of Clarã in the whiche he ordeyned that matyns of our lady ſholde be ſayd euery daye/⁊ on Saterdaye her ſolempne maſſe. And it is ſayd yͭ this was ſhewed unto the freres of Charterhouſe. ¶ Alſo he called another coũſayll at Turam for the holy lande to be wonne agayne/⁊ prouoked the people to that thyng. And within a lytell tyme after that matere/the holy lande was recouered/⁊ the ſepulcre of our lorde. And Anthioche with many other cytees taken from the Sarrazyns. And it is ſayd ⁊ mẽ byleued that .CC.M Cryſten men went to that Iourney. For there went of ſtates olde men ⁊ yonge/⁊ alſo ryche and poore/⁊ no man compelled them. And this paſſage was made by the vyſion of our lady. And yͤ prynces of this people were dyuers. One was Godfrey de Boloyne a ful noble man of al yͤ worlde and a vertuous man. And another was Bremonde the Duke of Naples. The thyrde was Hughe the kynges broder of Fraũce/⁊ many other the whiche dyd full nobly for the feyth of god. ¶ And it were to longe in this booke to reherce the gloryous actes that they dyde.

¶ Of kynge Wyllyam Rous yͭ was kyng Wyllyam baſtardes ſone/that deſtroyed townes and houſes of relygyon for to ma

he the newe foreſt.

SO as Wyllyam baſtard was deed his ſone Wyllyam regned. And he was a wonder contraryous man to god ⁊ holy chyrche/ ⁊ lete amende ⁊ make the towne of Cardeys þ the paynyms hadde deſtroyed. This kynge Wyllyam deſtroyed holy chyrche and theyr poſſeſſyons in what part he myght the fynde. And therfore there was ſomoche debate bytwene hym ⁊ the Archebyſſhop of Caunterbury. For bycauſe þ Ancelmus repreued hym of his wyckednes þ he deſtroyed holy chyrche. And for that cauſe the kynge bare to hym great wrathe. And ſo he exyled hym out of this lande. And the Archebyſſhop went to the court of Rome ⁊ there dwelled with the pope. And this kynge made the newe foreſte/ and caſte downe .xxvi. townes and .lxxx. houſes of relygyon/ all for to make his foreſt longer ⁊ broder/ ⁊ became wonder proude and gladde of his wodde ⁊ foreſt. And nouryſſhed the wylde beeſtes that were within/ þ it was merueyle for to wyte/ ſo þ men called hym keper of woddes ⁊ paſtures. And the more longer þ he lyued/ the more wycked he became/ bothe to god ⁊ to all holy chyrche/ ⁊ to al his men. And this kynge cauſed make Weſtmynſter halle. So vpon a day in the whytſontyde he helde therin his fyrſt feeſt. And he loked about hym ⁊ ſayd that the halle was to lytell by the halfe deale/ ⁊ at the laſte he became ſoo contraryous/ þ al thynge that pleaſed god dyſpleaſed hȳ/ and all thynge þ god loued he hated dedly. ¶ And ſo it befell that he dremed vpon a nyght a lytell or þ he dyed that he was let blode/ ⁊ bledde a great quantyte of blode/ and a ſtreme of it lepte on hye toward heuen/ more than a hondred fadom/ and the clereneſſe of þ daye was tourned vnto nyght and derkeneſſe of the fyrmament. ¶ And whan that he awoke he had great drede/ ſo that he wyſte not what for to do. And tolde his dreme to mē of his counſayll and ſayd that he had great drede/ and ſuppoſed that to hym was ſome myſchaūce to come. ¶ And the ſecunde nyght before a monke dremed of the houſholde that þ kynge wente into a chyrche with moche people/ and he was ſo proude that he dyſpyſed all the people that were with hym. And that he toke the ymage of the crucyfyxe and ſhamefully bote it with his tethe. And the crucyfyxe mekely ſuffered al that he dyd. But yet the kynge as a mad man rent of the armes of the Crucyfyxe and caſt it vnder his fete and defoyled it/ and threwe it all abrode. And a great fyre came out of the Crucyfyxe mouthe. Of þ which dreme many a mā had great merueyle and wonder. The goode man that had dremed this ſtraunge dreme tolde it to a knyght/ that was mooſt preuy with the kynge of all men/ and þ knyght was called Hamondes. Soone the monke and he tolde the dreme vnto the kynge ⁊ ſayd that it ſholde betoken other thynge than good. And neuertheles þ kynge laughed therat twyes or thryes/ and lytell ſet therby/ and thought that he wolde go ⁊ hunte and playe in the foreſt. And mē counſayled hym that he ſholde not go that daye/ for no maner thynge nor come in the wod ſoo that he abode at home before mete./ But anone as he had eten no man myght hym lette but that he wolde go vnto the wodde for to haue his dyſport. And thus it happened that one of his knyghtes þ hyght Walter Tyrell wolde haue ſhot to a great harte/ ⁊ his arowe glenſyd vpon a braunche/ and throughe myſauenture ſmote the kynge vnto the herte. And ſoo he felle downe deed to the grounde without ony worde ſpekynge. And ſoo ended he his lyfe dayes/ and it was no merueyl foꝛ the daye that he deyed he had let to ferme the Archebyſſhopryche of Caūterbury/⁊.xii. abbayes alſo/⁊ euermoꝛe dyd de great deſtruccyon to holy chyꝛche thꝛugh wrongfull takyng ⁊ aſkyng. Foꝛ no mā durſt withſtande ẏ he wolde haue done. ⁊ of his lewdenes he wolde neuer withdꝛawe/neyther to amende his lyfe. And therfoꝛe god wolde ſuffer hym no longer to regne in his wyckedneſſe. And he had be kynge.xiii. yere ⁊.vi. wekes/⁊ lyeth at Weſtmynſter.

¶ Anno dñi. M.lxxxviii.

PAſchall was pope after Urbanus .xviii. yere ⁊.v. monethes/the whiche the.xiii. yere of his byſſhopryche ⁊ his Cardynalles was put in pryſon by Henry ẏ fourth Emperour. And they myght not be delyuered vntyl ẏ pope had ſwoꝛn that he ſholde kepe peas with hym/⁊ that he ſholde neuer curſe hym. And on ẏ ſame wyſe/ẏ pope gaue ẏ Emperour a pryuylege/⁊ the yere after ẏ pope dampned ẏ pryuylege/⁊ ſayd on this wyſe. Let vs comprehende all holy ſcrypture the olde teſtament ⁊ the newe/ẏ lawes of the prophetes/the goſpell ⁊ the canons of apoſtles ⁊ all the decrees of the popes of Rome/ẏ all they holde I holde/⁊ that ẏ they dampne I dampne/⁊ mooſt ſpecyally ẏ pryuylege graunted to Henry the Emperour ẏ whiche rather is graunted to venge his malyce/than to multyplye his pacyence in vertue. Foꝛ euermoꝛe I dampne that ſame pryuylege.

¶ Of kyng Henry Beauclerke ẏ was wylyam Rous broder/⁊ of the debate bytwene hym ⁊ Robert Curthos his broder.

AND whan wyllyam Rous was deed. Henry beauclerk his broder was made kyng/bycauſe wyllyam rous had no chylde begote on his body. ⁊ this Henry Beauclerk was crowned kyng at Lōdon ẏ.iiii. day after ẏ his broder was deed (ẏ is to ſaye) the.v. daye of Auguſt. ¶ And anone as Ancelmus ẏ was archebyſſhop of Caūterbury beyngſt at ẏ court of Rome herde tell ẏ wyllyam Rous was deed/he came agayne into Englande/⁊ the kyng Henry Beauclerk welcomed hym honourably. And ẏ fyrſt yere ẏ he regned he ſpouſed Maude the quene of Scottes doughter. And the Archebyſſhop ancelm⁹ of Caūterbury wedded them. And this kynge begate vpon his wyfe two ſones ⁊ a doughter (ẏ is to ſaye) wyllyam ⁊ Rycharde ⁊ Maude. ¶ And this Maude was afterwarde ẏ Empreſſe of Almayne. And in the ſecunde yere of his regne/his broder Robert Curthos duke of Noꝛmandy came with an huge hooſt into Englande foꝛ to chaleng the lande. But thꝛough counſeyll of the wyſe men of ẏ lande/they were acoꝛded in this manere. That ẏ kynge ſholde gyue his broder the duke a.M.li. euery yere. And whiche of them lyued longeſt ſholde be others heyꝛe/⁊ ſo bytwene them ſholde be no debate noꝛ ſtryfe. And whan they were thus acoꝛded/the duke wente home agayne into Noꝛmandye. ¶ Whan the kynge had regned foure yere/there aroſe a great debate bytwene hym and the Archebyſſhop of Caunterburye Ancelmus. Foꝛ bycauſe that the Archebyſſhop wolde not graunte hym to chalenge the chyrches at his wyll. And therfoꝛe eftſone ẏ Archebyſſhop Ancelmus wente ouer the ſee vnto the court of Rome/and there he dwelled with the pope. And in ẏ ſame yere the duke of Noꝛmandye came into Englande to ſpeke with his broder And amonge all other thynges the duke of Noꝛmandy foꝛgaue vnto the kyng his broder/ẏ ſayde.M.li.ẏ he ſholde paye vnto the duke. And with good loue ÿ kynge and the duke departed / & there the duke went agayne into Normandy. And as the two yere were gone / through the entycement of the deuyll and of ſymple men a great debate aroſe bytwene ÿ kynge and the duke / ſo that through counſayll ÿ kyng went ouer the ſee into Normandy. And whan the kynge was there / all the great lordes of Normandy comed vnto ÿ kyng of Englande / and helde agaynſt the duke theyr owne lorde / & forſoke hym yeldyng them vnto the kynge / with al the good caſtelles & townes of Normandy. And ſone after was the duke take & ledde with ÿ kynge into Englande. And the kynge lete put the duke into pryſon / & this was ÿ vengeaunce of god. For whan the Duke was in the holy lande / god gaue hym ſuche myght and grace / that he was choſen for to haue be kynge of Iheruſalem / and he forſoke it and wolde not take it vpon hym / & therfore god ſend hym that ſhame and deſpyte for to be put in his brothers pryſon. ¶ Thā ceaſed kynge Henry al Normandy into his hande / & held it al his lyf tyme. ¶ And in the ſame yere came ÿ byſſhop Ancelmus fro the courte of Rome into Englande agayne. And the kynge & he were accorded. ¶ And in the nexte yere commynge after / there began a great debate bytwene the kynge Phylyp of Fraunce & kynge Henry of Englande. Wherfore kynge Henry went into Normandy / and there was ſtrange warre bytwene them two. And there deyed the kynge of Fraunce / and Lowys his ſone was made kynge anone after his dethe. And thā went kyng Henry agayne into Englande / and maryed Maude his doughter vnto Henry ÿ Emperoure of Almayne.

¶ Of the debate that was bytwene kyng Lowys of Fraunce & kyng Henry of Englande / & how kynge Henryes two ſones were drowned in the hye ſee.

AS kyng Henry had be kyng .xvii. yere / a greate debate aroſe bytwene kynge Lowys of Fraūce / & kyng Henry of Englande / bycauſe ÿ kynge had ſend into Normandye to his ſubiectes / ÿ they ſholde be helpynge vnto the Erle of Bloys aſmoche as they myght in warre agaynſt the kynge of Fraūce / beynge as redy vnto hȳ as they were to theyr owne lorde. For bycauſe that the erle had ſpouſed his ſyſter Maude. And for this cauſe the kynge of Fraūce dyd moche ſorowe to Normandy. Wherfore the kynge of Englande was wōder wrothe / & in haſt went ouer ÿ ſee with a great power / & came into Normandye for to defende that lande. And the warre bytwene them laſted two yere / tyll at the laſt they two fought togyder. And the kynge of Fraūce was dyſcōfyted / & eſcaped away with moche peyne And the mooſt parte of his men were dyſcomfyted & taken. And the kynge dyde wt them his pleaſure / lettyng ſome of them go frely / and ſome he putte to dethe. But afterwarde thoſe two kynges were accorded. Whan kynge Henry had holy ÿ lande of Normandye / and dyſcomfyted his enemyes of Fraunce / he tourned agayn into Englande with moche honour. And his two ſones Wyllyam and Rycharde wold haue come after theyr fader on the ſee wt a great company of people. But or ÿ they myght come to lande / the ſhyppe ſtroke agaynſte a roche / and all were drowned ÿ were therin / ſaue one man that was in ÿ ſame ſhyp that eſcaped. And this was on ſeynt Katheryns daye. And theſe were the names of them ÿ were drowned. Wyllyam / and Rycharde the kynges ſones / Therle of Cheſtre Ottoneil / his brother

Gry Ryddell. Walter Espec. Godfrey Archdeken / the kynges doughter / ẏ countes of Perches / ẏ kynges nece / ẏ countesse of Chestre / & many other. ¶ When kynge Henry & other lordes herde in Englande these tydynges / they made sorowe ynough. And all theyr myrth & ioye was torned into mournynge & sorowe.

¶ How Maude ẏ Empresse came agayn into Englande / & how she was afterwarde wedded to Geffrey the Erle of Angoy.

AND whan ẏ fyue yere were passed that the Erle had warred with ẏ kyng / the erle went from the kynge & began to warre vpō hym & dyd moche harme in ẏ lande of Normandy / & toke there a stronge Castell & there he dwelled all ẏ yere. And tho came to hym tydynges that Henry the Emperour of Almayn ẏ had spoused Maude his doughter was dede / & that she dwelled no lenger in Almayn / & that she wolde come agayne to Normandy to her fader. And whan ẏ she was come vnto hym / he toke her wt hym and came agayne into Englande. And made the Englysshemen to do othe & homage to ẏ Empresse. And ẏ fyrst man ẏ made ẏ othe was Wyllyam the Archebysshop of Caunterbury / & ẏ other Dauyd kyng of Scotlande / & after hym all the lordes & barons of Englande. ¶ And after that the Erle of Angoy a worthy knyght sende to ẏ kynge of Englande ẏ he myght haue his doughter Maude the Empresse to wyf. And bycause that her fader wyste that he was a noble man / the kynge hym graunted her & consented therto. And than he toke his doughter & ledde her into Normandy / & came to the noble knyght Geffrey / & there he spoused ẏ lady Maude with moche honoure / & the Erle begate vpon her a sone ẏ was called Henry the Empresse sone.

¶ And after whan all this was done / kynge Henry dwelled all that yere in Normandy. And after that a longe tyme a grete sekenesse toke hym / wherof he dyed. And this kynge Henry reygned .xxxv. yere & four monethes. And here was entered in the grete chyrche of Roone [illegible] in Roen. And his body was brought with moche honoure into Englande / & buried in the abbaye of Redynge. Of the whiche he was founder.

HEnricus ẏ fourth was Emperour in Almayne after Henry the thyrde .xx. yere. This Henry had his fader in pryson & there helde hym tyll he dyed. And toke pope Paschall with his Cardynalles / & helde them tyll it to hym. For the whiche dede as it is supposed he had no yssue. For he wedded the kynges doughter of Englande Maude. But after whan he came to grace / and ẏ lawe of the chyrche he confessed hym to Calixtus the pope / And prayed hym to gyue hym in penaunce that he shold retourne not agayn to his Empyre / that he myght haue remyssyon of his trespasses. And after the opynyon of many a man / he lyued holyly & deyed and his body lyeth at Chestre in Englande. ¶ Gelasius was pope after Paschall two yere. He fled from Henry ẏ Emperour into Gascoyne and there he dyed. This Emperour chose Benedictus a Spanyarde to be pope / the whiche Romaynes with Calixtus. ¶ Calixtus was pope after hym two yere & fyue monethes. This Calixtus was the sone of the Duke of Burgoyne and was chosen in the place of Gelasius. And whan he shold come to Rome / he toke ẏ false Benedictus / and made hym to ryde afore hym shamefully. For he on a mule he turned his face to the tayle of ẏ mule & helde the tayle in his hande as a brydell tyll he came through ẏ cyte / and there he was put in pryſon. And this pope made peas with the Emperoure. ¶ Honorius was pope after hym two yere / ⁊ lytell of hym is wryten. ¶ Nota. Henry ẏ fourth Emperoure of Almayne deceſſyd this tyme / ⁊ was buryed with his progenytours after ſome men with ſuche an Epitaphe (Filius hic / pater hic / auus hic / proauus iacet iſtis) But it is lykely to be truer that Garalde ſayde (in itinerario wallie) where he ſayethe / that after he hadde pryſoned his carnall fader / ⁊ his ſpyrytuell fader the pope with his Cardynalles / after he was reconſyled ⁊ wylfully he was exyled. And he lefte Maude his wyfe the kynges doughter of Englande pryuely / and lyued an herremytes lyfe at Cheſtre. x. yere / where he myght lyue as no man knewe hym / and he called hym ſelf Godiſcallus / the whiche Godiſſon is called. So the Emperour ſecretely wente awaye / ⁊ Maude his wyfe the Empreſſe there / ſhe wente to her fader Henry into Normandy. Where anone after ſhe was wedded vnto Geffrey Plantagynet the duke of Andegame / vpon whome he begate Henry the ſeconde afterwarde kynge of Englande. Under whome ſeynt Thomas of Caunterbury reygned ⁊ dyed. ¶ Lotharius was Emperour after Henry the. iiii. xi. yere. And lytell of hym is wrytẽ / but ẏ he was manerly to the chyrche. And ſubdued Roger the vſurper of the kynge of Cecyle. ¶ Hugo de ſancto victore was a nobleman this tyme at Parys ⁊ a noble doctour / of ẏ nacyon of Saxons. ¶ The ordre of ſeynt Johan baptyſte at Jheruſalem began this tyme by ẏ worſhypfull man Reymonde myghtely diſpoſed vnto the werkes of mercy. All this ordre make theyr waye to ſerue pore men.

Anno dñi. M.C.xxxvi.

AFter Honorius Innocentius was pope. xiiii. yere. ⁊. vii. monethes. This man was a very deuoute mã / and with ſuche men he accõpanyed hym. And he hadde ſtryfe agaynſt Pyers of Lyon ẏ whiche named hym Inocẽtus. And by ſtrength he toke the popehed. The whiche Innocentius ſawe / and with two Galeys fled into Fraunce / and was worſhypfully receyued of ſeynt Bernarde / ẏ whiche that tyme had all the kynges ⁊ prynces in his hande. And he prouoked them for to brynge this pope Innocentius into his dygnyte agayne. And at the laſte all thynge was ceſſyd and his enmyes were deſtroyed through the Jugement of god And he was pope agayne / ⁊ lyued profytably / and was buryed at Latranence.

¶ How Stephen ẏ was kynge Henryes ſyſters ſone / was made kyng of Englãde

AFter this kynge Henry that was the fyrſt / was made kynge his neuewes ſyſter ſone Stephen Erle of Boloyne. For anone as he herde ẏ tydynges of his vncles dethe / then he paſſed the ſee and came into Englande through counſeyle and ſtrength of many greate lordes in Englande / agaynſt the othe that they hadde made to Maude the Empreſſe / toke ẏ realme ⁊ let crowne Stephen kynge of the lande. And the Archebyſſhop wylyam of Cãterbury that fyrſte made the othe of feaute to Maude the Empreſſe / ſet the crowne vpon Stephens heed and hym anoynted. And byſſhoppe Roger of Salyſbury maynteyned ẏ kynges parte in aſmoche as he myght. The fyrſte yere that kynge Stephen began to reygne / he aſſembled a great hoſte and wente towarde Scotlande / for to haue warred vpon the kynge of Scotlande. But he came agaynſt hym in peas and in good maner /

and to hym truſted / but he made to hym none homage / foꝛ aſmoche as he had made to yͤ Empꝛeſſe Maude. And in yͤ .iiii. yere of his reygne Maude the Empꝛeſſe came into Englande. And tho began debate bytwene kyng Stephen ⁊ Maude thempꝛeſſe. This Maude wente vnto yͤ cyte of Nycholl / ⁊ the kynge her beſyeged longe tyme and myght not ſpede / ſo wel the cyte was kepte ⁊ defended. And tho yͭ were wͭ in yͤ cyte merueylouſly ſcaped awaye wͭ out ony maner of harme. Tho toke yͤ kynge yͤ cyte / and dwelled therin tyll Candelmaſſe. And tho came yͤ barons yͭ helde wͭ thempꝛeſſe. That is foꝛ to ſaye / yͤ erle Radulphe of Cheſtre / yͤ erle Robert of Glouceſtre / Hugh / Bygot / Robert of Moꝛley / ⁊ theſe brought wͭ thē a ſtronge power and faught wͭ the kynge / ⁊ gaue hym a ſtronge batayle. In the whiche batayle kynge Stephen was taken / and ſet in pꝛyſon in the caſtell of Bꝛyſtowe.

¶ How Maude the Empꝛeſſe wente fro Wyncheſtre to Oxenfoꝛde / ⁊ after ſhe eſcaped to Walynfoꝛde / ⁊ of yͤ ſnowe ⁊ dyſeaſe that ſhe had.

Now as the kynge was taken and brought into warde in the caſtell of Bꝛyſtowe / this Maude thempꝛeſſe was made lady of all Englande / ⁊ all mē helde her for lady of yͤ lande. But thoſe of Kent helde wͭ kynge Stephens wyfe / ⁊ alſo wyllyam of ypre ⁊ his retenue halpe them and helde warre agaynſt Maude the empꝛeſſe. And anone after yͤ kynge of Scotlande came to them wͭ a huge nombre of people. And than wente they togyder at Wyncheſtre there yͭ yͤ Empꝛeſſe was / and wolde haue taken her. But yͤ erle of Glouceſtre came wͭ his power ⁊ faught wͭ thē. And the Empꝛeſſe in the meane whyle yͭ yͤ batayle dured ſcaped fro them ⁊ wente vnto Oxenfoꝛde ⁊ there helde her. And in that batayle was yͤ erle of Glouceſtre dyſcomfyted ⁊ taken / ⁊ wͭ hym many other loꝛdes. And foꝛ his delyueraūce was kynge Stephen delyuered out of pꝛyſon / and whan he was delyuered out of pꝛyſon / he wente thens vnto Oxenfoꝛde ⁊ beſyeged thempꝛeſſe yͭ was tho at Oxēfoꝛde. And the ſyege endured frome Myghelmaſſe vnto ſeynt Andrewes tyme. And the Empꝛeſſe let clothe her tho all in whyte lynnen cloth foꝛ bycauſe ſhe wolde not be knowen. Foꝛ in the ſame tyme was moche ſnowe / ⁊ ſhe eſcaped by yͤ Tamyſe frome her enmyes. And from thens ſhe wente to Walynfoꝛde and there helde her. And yͤ kynge wolde haue beſyeged her / but he had ſoo moche to do with yͤ erle Radulphe of Cheſtre and with Hugh Bygot yͭ ſtrongely warred vpō hym in euery place / yͭ he not wyſt whether foꝛ to tourne. And yͤ erle of Glouceſtre halpe hym with his power.

¶ How Gaufryde the erle of Angoy gaue vnto Henry yͤ Empꝛeſſe ſone all Noꝛmandye.

The kynge wente after this vnto Wylton / ⁊ wolde haue made a caſtell there. But tho came to hym the Erle of Glouceſtre wͭ a ſtrōge power and there almoſt he had taken the kynge / but yet yͤ kynge eſcaped wͭ moche payne. And Wyllyam Martell there was taken. And foꝛ whoſe delyueraunce they gaue vnto the erle of Glouceſtre the good caſtell of Shyrborn yͭ he had taken. And whan this was done / the erle Robert ⁊ all the kynges enmyes wente to Faryngdon / ⁊ begā there foꝛ to make a ſtronge caſtell / but yͤ kynge came thyder wͭ a ſtrōge power and droue hym thens. And in yͤ ſame yere yͤ erle Radulphe of Cheſtre was accorded with the kynge / and came vnto his Courte at his comaundement. And yͤ erle demed ſauely for to come. And yͤ kynge anone lete take hym & put hym into pryſō. And myght neuer for nothynge come out tyll that he yelded vp to yͤ kynge yͤ caſtell of Nycholl the whiche he hadde taken from yͤ kynge with his ſtrength in yͤ .xv. yere of his reygne. And Gaufride yͤ erle of Angoy gaue vp vnto Henry his ſone all Normandye. And in yͤ yere that nexte enſewed dyed yͤ erle gaufride. And Henry his ſone tho anone tourned agayne to Angoy / & there was made erle with moche honoure of all his men of yͤ londe. And to hym dyde feaute and homage the mooſt partye of yͤ londe And tho was this Henry yͤ Empreſſe ſone erle of Angoy / & alſo duke of Normandye. In yͤ ſame yere was made a dyuorce bytwene yͤ kynge of Fraunce / & yͤ quene his wyfe yͤ was ryght heyre of Gaſcoyne for bycauſe that it was knowē and proued that they were ſybbe & nygh of blood And tho ſpowſed her Henry the empreſſe ſone erle of Angoy / and duke of Normandye / & duke of Gaſcoyne. In yͤ .xviii. yere of this Stephen this Henry came into Englande with a ſtronge power / & began for to warre vpon this kynge Stephen / and toke yͤ caſtell of Malmeſbury / & dyd moche harme. And the kynge Stephen hadde ſoo moche warre / yͤ he wyſte not whether for to go. But at yͤ laſt they were acorded through the archebyſſhoppe Theobaldus / and other worthy lordes of Englande / dyd this couenaūt that they ſholde departe the Reaume of Englande bytwene them two / ſo that Henry yͤ Empreſſe ſone ſholde holy haue yͤ halfe of all yͤ londe of Englande. And thus they were acorded and peas was cryed throughout all Englande. And whan the acorde was made bytwene the two lordes kyng Stephen became ſoo ſory / for bycauſe he had loſt halfe Englande / & fell into ſicke a malady / & dyed in yͤ .xix. yere. & .viii. wekes and .v. dayes of his reygne / & all in warre and in cōtake. And he lyeth in the abbaye of Feuerſham / the whiche he lete make in the .xvi. yere of his reygne.

Celestin⁹ yͤ ſecunde was pope after Innocentius .v. monethes & lytel he dyd. ¶ Lucius was after hym & lytel profyted / for they dyed bothe in a peſtylēce. ¶ Eugeni⁹ yͤ ſecunde was pope after hym .v. yere & foure monethes. This mā fyrſt was yͤ dyſcyple of ſeynt Bernarde / and after the abbot of ſeynt Anaſtaſius by Rome. And came to yͤ chyrche of ſeynt Ceſary / & was choſen pope by the Cardynalles / he nothynge knowynge therof / & for drede of yͤ Senatoures he was conſecrated without yͤ cyte / this man was an holy mā / & ſuffred trybulacyon. And at yͤ laſte he deceſſed / & lyeth at ſeynt Peters. And after anone deceſſed ſeynt Bernarde. ¶ Petrus Lombardus the byſſhop of Parys / broder to Gracian / compyled the foure bokes of the Sentence this tyme. ¶ Petrus comeſtor broder to Gracian & to Pyers Lombardus made hyſtoriā ſcolaſticā / & other bokes. ¶ Frederic⁹ prim⁹ after Conradus was Emperoure in Almayne & in Rome .xxxiiii. yere. This man after the deth of Adrian yͤ pope yͤ whiche crowned hym dyde curſydly with Alexander to hym great preiudyce. For he dyde helpe foure yͤ ſtroue agaynſt the apoſtles ſete. And he fought myghtely agaynſt yͤ kynge of Fraunce through power of the Danes & other nacyons. But Rycharde the kynge of Englande halpe for to expulſe hym. And he deſtroyed Mediolanum to the grounde. Of the whiche cyte the walles were hygher than the walles of ony other cyte. This man at yͤ laſt after that he had done many benefaytes to yͤ pope he was corrupted / for he dradde leſte yͤ lombardes ſholde haue rebelled agaynſt hym/ he aſked ſocoures of ẏ pope. And toke ẏ croſſe vpon hym/ ⁊ wente into the holy londe/ ⁊ dyd many meruaylous thynges there almooſt aſmoche as euer dyde Karolus magnus. And there he came by a towne ẏ men call Armeniam ⁊ in a lytell water he was drowned/ ⁊ at Tyri he was buryed. ¶ Anaſtacius was pope after Eugeni⁹ .iiii. yere ⁊ more. This man was abbot of Ruſy/ and than he was choſe Cardynall/ and after pope.

¶ Of kynge Henry the ſecunde that was the Empreſſe ſone/ in whoſe tyme ſeynt Thomas of Caunterbury was Chaunceler.

AND after this kynge Stephen reygned Henry the Empreſſe ſone ⁊ was crowned of the archebyſſhop Theobaldus the .xviii. daye before Candelmaſſe. And ẏ ſame yere Thomas Beket of London archebyſſhoppe of Caunterbury was made ẏ kynges Chaunceler of Englond. The ſecunde yere ẏ he was crowned he lete caſt downe all the newe caſtels ẏ were bygonne in the countre/ ẏ whiche kynge Stephen had gyuen vnto dyuerſe men/ and them had made erles ⁊ barons for to holde wt hym ⁊ to helpe hym agaynſt this Henry Empreſſe ſone. And ẏ fourthe yere of his reygne he put vnder his owne lordſhyp ẏ kynge of wales. And in ẏ ſame yere the kynge of Scotlonde had in his owne honde (ẏ is to ſaye) ẏ cyte of Karleyll/ the caſtell of Bamburgh/ ⁊ ẏ newe caſtel vpō Tyne. And ẏ erldome of Lancaſtre. The ſame yere ẏ kynge with a great power went into wales/ ⁊ let caſte downe woodes ⁊ made wayes ⁊ made ſtronge ẏ caſtell of Ruthlonde, Baſyngwerke. And amonge ẏ caſtels he made an houſe of ẏ ſtyle. And in ẏ ſame yere was Rycharde his ſone borne/ that afterwarde was erle of Oxforde. And the fourth yere of his reygne he made Gaufride erle of Brytayne. And in that yere he chaunged his money. And ẏ .vi. yere of his reygne he lad a great hoſte to Tolouſe ⁊ cōquered it. And the .vii. yere of his reygne dyed Theobaldus ẏ archebyſſhoppe of Caunterbury/ ⁊ tho almooſt all ẏ cyte of Caūterbury thorugh myſchyef was brente. The .ix. yere of his reygne Thomas Beket that was his Chaunceler was choſen archebyſſhop of Caunterbury. And vpō ſeynt Bernardes day he was ſacred/ and in ẏ yere was borne the kynges doughter Elianor. And in the .x. yere of his reygne ſeynt Edwarde the kynge was tranſlated with moch honour. And the .xi. yere of his reygne he helde his parlyament at Northampton/ and fro thens fled ſeynt Thomas archebyſſhop of Caunterbury for the great debate that was bytwene the kyng ⁊ hym. For yf he had ben founde on ẏ morowe he had ben ſlayne/ ⁊ therfore he ſtale thens with thre felowes on fote onely ẏ no man wyſt where he was/ ⁊ wente ouer the ſe to ẏ pope of Rome. And this was ẏ pryncypal cauſe. For aſmoche as ẏ kynge wolde haue put clerkes to deth ẏ were ataynt of felonye/ withoute ony preuylege of holy chyrche. And ẏ .xii. yere of his reygne was Johā his ſone borne. And ẏ .xiii. yere of his reygne dyed Maud ẏ Empreſſe ẏ was his moder. The .xiiii. yere of his reygne ẏ duke of Saxon ſpouſed Maude his doughter. And he begate vpō her thre ſones ẏ were called Henry/ Othus/ ⁊ Wylliam. And ẏ .xv. yere of his reygne dyed ẏ good erle Robert of Gloucetre ẏ founded the abbaye of Thomas of Tew. And in ẏ ſame yere Marche kynge of Jheruſalem conquered Babylon. ¶ And the .xvi. yere of his reygne/ he let crowne his ſone Henry at weſtmynſtre. And ẏ crowne ned Roger archebyſſhop of Yorke / in harmynge of Thomas archebyſſhop of Caũterbury. Wherfore the ſame Roger was accuſed of the pope.

¶ Thus kynge Henry whiche was ſone of kynge Henry the Empreſſe ſone / & of the debate ŷ was bytwene hym & his fader / whyle that he was in Normandy.

AFter ŷ coronacyon of kynge Henry the ſone of kynge Henry themperyſſe ſone. That ſame Henry themperеſſe ſone wente ouer to Normandy / & there he lete marye Clemẽce his doughter to the Dolphyn ŷ was kynge of Almayne. And in the .vii. yere ŷ the archebyſſhop ſeynt Thomas had ben outlawde / ŷ kynge of Fraũce made ŷ kynge & ſeynt Thomas accorded. And than came Thomas the archebyſſhop of Caunterbury agayne to his owne chyrche. And this accorde was made in the begynnynge of Aduent / & afterwarde he was ſlayne & martred the fyfth daye of Cryſtmaſſe than ſolowynge. For kynge Henry thought vpõ ſeynt Thomas was ŷ archebyſſhop vpõ Cryſtmaſſe day as he ſat at his meet & theſe wordes ſayd That yf he had ony good knyghtes with hym / many a daye paſſed he had be auenged vpon ŷ archebyſſhop Thomas. And anone ſyr Wyllyã Breton. ſyr Hugh Morvyle / ſyr Wyllyam Tracy / & ſyr Reygnold ffitz urs / beres ſone in Englyſſhe / priuely wente vnto ŷ ſee / & came into Englande vnto ŷ chyrche of Caũterbury / & there they hym martred at ſeynt Benets auter in ŷ moder chyrche. And that was in the yere of ŷ Incarnacyon of Jheſu Cryſte. M.C.lxxi. yere. ¶ And anone Henry ŷ newe kyng began for to make warre vpõ Henry his fader & vpõ his bredern Wyllyam Rychard. ¶ And ſo vpõ a day ŷ kynge of Fraunce & all ŷ kynges ſones / & the kynge of Scotlande / & all ŷ greteſt lordes of Englande were ryſen agaynſt kynge Henry the fader. And at ŷ laſte as god wolde he conquered all his ennemyes. And the kynge of Fraunce & he were accorded And tho ſend kynge Henry ſpecyally his to ŷ kynge of Fraũce / & prayed hym hertely for his loue ŷ he wolde ſende to hym the names by letters of them ŷ were the begynners of ŷ warre agaynſt hym. And the kynge of Fraũce ſend agayne to hym by letters ŷ names of them ŷ began the warre. The fyrſt was Johan his ſone / & Rycharde his broder / and Henry ŷ newe kynge his ſone. Tho was Henry ŷ kyng wonder wroth / & curſed ŷ tyme ŷ euer he hym begate / & whyle ŷ warre dured Henry his ſone ŷ newe kynge dyed ſore repentynge his myſdedes / & mooſt ſorowe was made of ony man / for bycauſe of ſeynt Thomas deth of Caũterbury. And prayed his fader with moche ſorowe of herte mercy for his treſpace / & his fader forgaue hym and had of hym great pyte. And after he dyed the .xxxvi. yere of his reygne. And lyeth at Redynge.

¶ How the cryſten men loſte all the holy lande i ŷ forſayd kynges tyme by a falſe Cryſten man ŷ became a ſarraſyn.

ANd whyle this kynge reygned ŷ great batayll was in ŷ holy land bytwene ŷ Cryſten men & ŷ Sarraſyns but cryſtẽ mẽ were there ſlayne through great treaſon of ŷ erle Trype ŷ wolde haue had to wyfe the quene of Jheruſalem ŷ ſomtyme was Baldewynes wyfe / but ſhe forſoke hym & toke to her lorde a knyghte a worthy man ŷ was called ſyr Guy perche. Wherfore ŷ erle Trype was wrothe & wente anone ryght to ŷ Soudan ŷ was Soudan of Babylon / & became his man & forſoke his cryſtendome / & all cryſſten lawe. And ÿ cryſten men wyſt not of his dedes/ but wende for to haue had grete helpe of hym as they were wont to haue before. And whan they came to the batayle/ this falſe cryſtē man torned vnto the Sarrazyns/ ꝛ forſoke his owne nacyon. And ſo were ÿ cryſten men there ſlayne wͭ the Sarrazyns. And thus were the criſten men ſlayne ꝛ put to horryble deth and ÿ cyte of Iheruſalem deſtroyed/ and ÿ holy croſſe borne away. ❡ The kynge of Fraũce ꝛ all the great lordes of ÿ londe lete them be croſſed for to go into the holy londe. And amonge them went Rycharde kynge Henryes ſone fyrſte after ÿ kynge of Fraunce/ ÿ toke ÿ croſſe of ÿ archebyſſhop of Toures. But he toke not the kynge at ÿ tyme/ for bycauſe ÿ he was let by other maner wayes ꝛ nedes to be done. And whā kynge Henryes fader had reygned. xxxiiii. yere. ꝛ. v. monethes/ ꝛ. iiii. dayes he dyed ꝛ lyeth at Fonteuerarde.

❡ Anno dñi. M. C. lvi.

ADrianus the. iiii. was pope after Anaſtaſius. v. yere. And this pope was an Englyſſhe man/ ꝛ the boyes of the comyn people ſayth he was a bonde man to the abbot of ſeynt Albons in Englande. And whan he deſyred to be made a monke there he was expulſed/ ꝛ he went ouer ſee ꝛ gaue hym to ſtudy ꝛ to vertue And after was made byſſhop of Albanenceſi. Than he was made Legate into the londe of Norwaciam/ ꝛ he conuerted it to ÿ feythe. Than he was made pope. And for ÿ woundynge of a Cardynall he entredyted all the cyte of Rome. And he curſed Wyllyam ÿ kynge of Cecyle/ and cauſed hym to ſubmytte hym. This man ÿ fyrſt of all the popes wͭ his Cardynalles dwelled in the olde cyte. ❡ Alexander ÿ thyrde was pope after hym. xxi. yere. This Alexaundre hadde ſtryfe. xvii. yere/ ꝛ the foure ſcyſmes that ÿ Emperour ſet agaynſt hym/ he ouercame thē and curſed them and all dyed an euyl deth. This man alſo acorded Frederyke the Emperoure and Emanuell of Conſtantynople/ ꝛ the kynge of Sycyle. And this man canonyſed ſeynt Thomas of caunterbury this cryſ ❡ Nota. Seynt Bernarde was canonyſed by this Alexander/ ꝛ his abbot forbode hym ÿ he ſholde do no more myracles for there was ſo myghty concours of people. And he obeyed to hym whan he was deed/ ꝛ dyde no more. ❡ Lucius the thyrde was pope after Alexander. iiii. yere/ ꝛ two monethes. Of hym ſpeke we no more. In his dayes deceſſed Henry the fyrſt ſone to Henry ÿ. ii. ꝛ this is his Epytaphe. Hic honor is honor: decor ꝛ decus [illegible] orbis. Militie ſplendor gloria lumen apex. Iulius ingenio/ ſtrenuus hector. Achilles viribus/ Auguſtus/ moribus/ ope paris. ❡ Urbanus ÿ. iii. was pope after Lucius. i. yere/ this man deceſſed for ſorowe whā he herde tell ÿ Iheruſalem was taken to ÿ Sarrazyns. ❡ Gregorius ÿ. viii. was pope after hym. ii. monethes. And he practyſed myghtyly howe Iheruſalē myght be wonne agayne/ but anone he deceſſid. ❡ Clemens ÿ thyrde was pope after hym thre yere/ and ſyth he dyde.

❡ Of kynge Rycharde whiche conquered agayne all the holy londe that the cryſten men hadde loſte.

AND after this kynge Henry reygned Rycharde his ſone/ and was a ſtalworth man and a ſtronge ꝛ a worthy/ and alſo bolde. And he was crowned at Weſtmynſtre of the archebyſſhop Baldwyne ÿ thyrde daye of Septembre. And in the ſecunde yere of his reygne/ kynge Rycharde wente ſayle and Baldewyne the archebyſſhoppe of Caunterbury/ and hys bert Byſſhop of Salyſbury / and Radulf erle of Gloceſtre / ⁊ many other lordes of Englande wente in to yᵉ holy lande. And in that vyage dyed the Archebyſſhop of Caunterbury. And kynge Rycharde went before into the holy lande / ⁊ reſted not tyl that he came forth in his waye vnto Cypres / ⁊ toke it with great force. And after yᵉ kynge Rycharde went forth towarde yᵉ holy land / ⁊ gate there aſmoche as yᵉ criſten men had loſte before. And conquered the lande agayne through great myght ſaue onely yᵉ holy croſſe. And whan kynge Rycharde came to the cyte of Acres for to gete it / there aroſe a greate debate betwene hym ⁊ yᵉ kynge of Fraũce / ſo yᵗ yᵉ kynge of Fraunce wente agayne into Fraunce / ⁊ was wrothe towarde yᵉ kynge Rycharde. But yet for all yᵗ or kynge Rycharde went agayne / he toke yᵉ cyte of Acres. And whã he had take it / he dwelled in yᵉ cyte a whyle. But to hym came tydynges yᵗ the erle Johan of Oxenforde his broder wold haue ſeaſed all Englande into his handes / ⁊ Normandy alſo / ⁊ crowne hym ſelf kynge of all the lande. Whan kynge Rychard herd theſe tydynges he came toward Englande in all the haſt he myght. But the duke of Oſtryche mette with hym / ⁊ toke ⁊ brought hym vnto the Emperour of Almayn / whiche put hym in pryſon. And afterwarde he was delyuered for an huge raunſome (yᵗ is to ſaye) an. C. M. pounde. For the whiche raunſom to be payed / eche other chalyce of Englande was molten ⁊ made in moneye. And all the monkes of the ordre of Ciſteaux gaue al theyr wolles through oute all Englande for to be ſolde for to paye the raunſom.

¶ How kynge Rycharde came agayne fro the holy lande / and auenged hym on his enemyes.

SO as this kynge Rycharde was i pryſon / the kynge of Fraũce warred vpon hym ſtrongly in Normandy / ⁊ Johan his broder warred vpõ hym in englande. But the byſſhops ⁊ the Barons of Englande withſtode hẏ with all theyr power that they myght get / and toke yᵉ caſtell of wyndeſore / and other caſtelles. And the forſayd Johan ſawe that he had no power nor myght agaynſt the barons of Englande for to fyght. But anone wẽt hym ouer the ſee vnto the kynge of Fraũce. ¶ And whan yᵉ Rycharde came out of pryſon and was delyuered / and came in to England / anone after Candelmaſſe in great haſt he wente to Notyngham / and the caſtel of Notyngham to hym was yelded. And thã dyſcomfyted he his broder Johan and thoſe yᵗ with hym helde. And after he went vnto the cyte of Wyncheſtre and there he lete hym be crowned kynge of Englande. And after he went vnto normandye for to warre vpon the kynge of Fraunce. And whan the kynge of Fraunce herde that / he came with. vi. hondred knyghtes towarde Gyſors. And kyng Rycharde met with hym / ⁊ wolde haue gyuen hym batayll. But the kynge of Fraũce fledde tho. And an hondred knyghtes of his were taken / and two hondred ſtedes that were trapped with yron bardes. ¶ And anone after wente kynge Rycharde for to beſyege the caſtell Gaylyarde. And vpon a daye as he rode by the caſtell for to take auyſement of the caſtell / one of the arbalaſtres ſmote hym with a quarel yᵗ was enuenymed. And kynge Rycharde drewe out the ſhaft of the quarell / but yᵉ quarelles heed abode ſtyll in his heed. And it began for to rancle / yᵗ he ne myght not helpe hym ſelf / nor meue none of his armes. And than he wyſt that he had dethes wounde vpon hym / that he myght not be hole for no maner of thynge erthly

¶ He cōmaūded anone all his men ſharply to aſſayle the caſtel / ⁊ take it or he dyed ⁊ all the men therin. And the kynge dyde with them his wyll. And cōmaūded his men to brynge hym before hym ỹ had ſore hurte hym. And whan he came before hȳ the kyng axed hym what was his name. And he ſayd my name is Bertram Gurdon. wherfore ſayd the kynge haſt thou ſlayne me ſyth I dyd the neuer no harme. Syr ſayd he though ye dyd me neuer no harme / ye yourſelfe with your owne handes ſlewe my fader ⁊ my brother / ⁊ therfore I haue quyte you now your trauayle. ¶ Than ſayde kynge Rycharde / he ỹ dyed vpon ỹ croſſe to brynge mannes ſoule fro paynes of helle / forgyue ỹ my dethe / and I alſo forgyue it ỹ. Than cōmaunded he ỹ no man ſholde myſdo hym. But for all the kynges byddynge / ſome of ỹ kynges men hym ſolowed / ⁊ pryuely hym ſlewe. And the .vi. day after ỹ kynge dyd ſhryue hym / ⁊ had ſore repentaunce of his myſdedes / ⁊ was houſeled ⁊ anoynted. And he reygned but .ix. yere ⁊ .xxx. wekes / and dyed and lyethe beſyde his fader at Fonteuerarde.

Henricus ỹ .v. was Emperour .viii. yere. This Henrycus was ſone to Frederyk / ⁊ he wedded Conſtance ỹ kynges doughter of Cecile. And through the occaſion of her he ſubdued al ỹ kyngdom of Apulye / ⁊ drove all the enhabytaūtes out therof. ¶ Celeſtin⁹ ỹ .iii. was pope after Clement almooſt .vii. yere. This man was crowned on eſter daye / ⁊ the day folowynge he crowned Henry ỹ Emperour. And he made a paleys at ſeynt Peters ⁊ deceſſyd. ¶ Innocencius the .iii. was pope after hym .xviii. yere and .v. monethes. This man was well lerned / ⁊ he made a boke of the wretchydnes of mannes condycyon. And he made ſpecyall maſſes / and he made many ordynaunces. This man dampned the boke of Johan Joachym / ỹ whiche he made ayenſt mayſter Pyers Lombarde the maker of the ſentence / about this tyme deceſſyd ỹ Emperour Henry. And ỹ prynces of Almayne dyſcorded / for ſome choſe Otto / and ſome choſe Phylyp brother to Henry. Than Phylyp was falſly ſlayne / ⁊ Otto was crowned of Innocenci⁹ in Fraūce / the whiche anone gaue batayl to ỹ Romayns bycauſe they dyde hym no due honour. And for ỹ cauſe he toke the kyngdome of Apuly from Frederyk ayenſt ỹ popes wyll / wherfore ỹ pope curſed hym. Than after ỹ .iiii. yere of his reygne / the prynces of Almayne made Frederyck Emperour / ⁊ vyctoryouſly he ſubdued Otto. ¶ Phylyp of Marys that tyme began ỹ ordre of the freres auſtyns the whiche ben called (fratres mendicantes) ¶ Fraūceis⁹ an holy mā of grete perfeccyon / and an inſample to many a man dyd many a myracle this tyme. And he ordeyned the frere mynoures. ¶ And ỹ .vi. yere of pope Innocenci⁹ the thyrde ỹ ordre of ỹ frere prechours began vnder ſeynt domynyk / but it myght not be cōfermed tyl the fyrſt yere of Honorius.

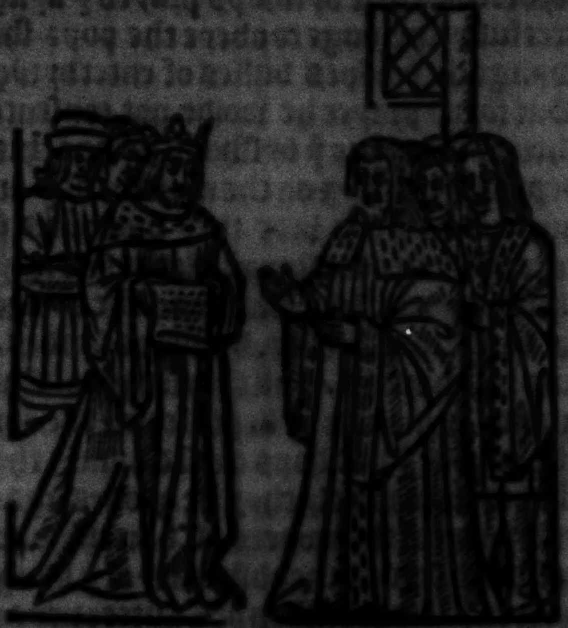
¶ Of kynge Johan ỹ in the fyrſt yere of his reygne loſt all Normandy.

Bycauſe kynge Rycharde had none heyre ſone nor doughter after his deth / they made Johan his brother kynge ⁊ crowned hym at weſtmynſter by hubert ỹ tho was Archebyſſhop of Caūterbury. And whā he began for to reygne / he bare ſo meruayllous a maner ỹ he wente ouer into Normandy / ⁊ warred vpon ỹ kyng of Fraūce. And ſo longe they warred togyder tyll at ỹ laſt kynge Johan loſt al Normandy ⁊ Angoy / wherfore he was ſore anoyed / ⁊ it was noo meruayle. Than lete he aſſemble before hym at Londō Arche byſſhops / byſſhops / abbots ⁊ pryours / Erles ⁊ barons / ⁊ held there a great parlyament / ⁊ axed there of yͤ clergye yͤ tenth of euery chirche of Englande / for to conquere Normandy ⁊ Angoy agayne yͤ he had loſt. They wolde not graūt yͤ kynge wherfore he was wonder wroth. ¶ And in that ſame tyme deyed Hubert. Than yͤ pryour ⁊ the couent of Caunterbury choſe agaynſt the kynges wyll to be Archebyſſhop Stephen of Langtō a good clerke that dwelled at the courte of Rome / ⁊ ſend to the pope theyr eleccyon / ⁊ the pope confyrmed it ⁊ ſacred hym at Viterbi. Whan the kynge wyſt theſe tydynges he was wonder wrothe / ⁊ droue the pryour ⁊ yͤ couente frō Cāterbury / exylynge thē out of yͤ lande / ⁊ cōmaūded yͤ no letter nor cōmaūdement yͤ came frō Rome ſhold be receyued nor pleted in Englande. Whan yͤ pope herde this / he ſend kynge Johan his lettre ⁊ prayed hym louyngly to receyue Stephen yͤ Archebyſſhop of Caūterbury to his chirche / ⁊ ſuffre yͤ pryoure / ⁊ his monkes to come agayne to theyr owne dwellynge. But yͤ kynge wolde not it graunte for nothynge.

¶ How kynge Johan wolde nothyng do for yͤ popes comaundement / wherfore all Englande was enterdyted / ⁊ ſuſpended.

AND at the laſt yͤ pope ſend by his auctoryte / ⁊ enioyned to the byſſhops of Englande yͤ yf the kynge wolde not receyue yͤ pryour of Caūterbury and his monkes / yͤ they ſholde do generall interdytynge through out all Englande / ⁊ graūted full power to foure byſſhops to pronoūce yͤ interdytynge yf he it warned. The fyrſt was byſſhop Wyllyam of London / ⁊ that other byſſhop Euſtace of Ely / the .iii. was byſſhop Walter of Wynchestre / ⁊ the .iiii. was byſſhop Gyles of Herforde. And theſe byſſhops prayed yͤ kyng mercefully kneylynge to obeye the pope / ſhewynge hym yͤ popes bulles of enterdytyng. But for no prayer he wolde not conſente therto. Wherfore yͤ byſſhops ſeynge this departed thens / ⁊ on the morowe of yͤ annūcyacyon of our lady they pronoūced yͤ enterdytynge / wallynge ⁊ lockynge all yͤ chirche dores. As yͤ was done / the kynge for angre toke the .iiii. byſſhops landes / into his handes / ⁊ all the clergye of Englande / ⁊ made it be kepte frome thē / for the whiche yͤ byſſhops curſed hym / ⁊ thē that medled wͭ holy chyrche goodes agaynſt yͤ wyl of the owners. Than the foure byſſhops ſeynge the obſtynacy of yͤ kyng wente to yͤ Archebyſſhop of Caūterbury to Rome / ⁊ tolde hym all the thynge. And yͤ Archebyſſhop bad them retourne agayn to Caūterbury / ⁊ he wold eyther come or ſende to them in his ſtede / yͤ ſholde do as moche as yf he hym ſelfe were there. And whā the byſſhops herde this / they retorne dagayne into Englande / and came vnto Caūterbury. The tydynges came to yͤ kynge yͤ the byſſhops were come agayne to Caūterbury / and hym ſelf myght not come thyder yͤ tyme / he ſende thyder byſſhops erls and abbots for to treate with them / that the kynge ſhold receyue tharchebyſſhop Stephen / and yͤ pryour ⁊ all the monkes of Caūterbury that he ſhold neuer after that tyme / nothynge take of holy churche agaynſt yͤ wyll of them that oweth the goodes. And that yͤ kyng ſholde make full amendes to them / of whom he had ony goodes takē. And yͤ holy chirche ſholde haue all frauchyſe / as ferforth as they had i ſeynt Edwardes tyme the holy confeſſour.

¶ How Stephen of Langton came ayen into Englande through yͤ popes cōmaūdement. And how he went agayne.



SO whan yͤ fourme of accordemēt thus was ordeyned. It was in a payre of indentures / & they put theyr ſeales to yͤ one parte / & they that came ī the kynges name put theyr ſeales to yͤ other parte of the indentures. And foure byſſhops aboue ſayd toke yͤ other part of the indentures / and bare it theym to ſhewe to the kynge. ¶ Whan the kynge ſawe yͤ fourme & vnderſtode it / he helde hym ful well apayd of all maner thynges as they had ordeyned / ſauynge as touchynge reſtytucyon of the goodes for to make ayen. To that thynge he wolde not accorde / & ſo he ſend worde agayne to the foure byſſhoppes yͭ they ſholde put oute the poynt of reſtytucyō. But they anſwered yͭ they wolde not put one worde out. ¶ Than ſend the kyng to yͤ Archebyſſhop by the foure byſſhops yͭ he ſholde come to Caūterbury for to ſpeke with hym / vnder ſaufcondyte & pledges. That is to ſaye / his Juſtyces Gylberte Peytowin / Wyllyam de la Brewer / & Johan fytz hughe / & in theyr condyte he ſholde come & go at his owne wyll. And thus whan that the Archebyſſhop Stephen came to Caūterbury / As the Archebyſſhop was come / the kynge came to Chylham / for he wolde not nyghe Caunterbury at that tyme. But he ſend by his Treſorer byſſhop of Wyncheſtre yͭ he ſholde do out of the indentures yͤ clauſe of reſtytucyon / for to make of the goodes. And yͤ Archebyſſhop made his othe that he wolde not do out one worde therof / ne yet it chaunge / that the byſſhoppes had ſpoken and ordeyned. And than yͤ Archebyſſhop wente agayne to Rome without ony more doynge. ¶ Kynge Johan was than angryer than euer he was before / & lete make a comyn crye through oute al Englande / that al tho that had holy chirche rentes / & went ouer the ſee / that they ſholde come agayne into Englande at a certayne daye / or elles they ſholde loſe al theyr rentes for euermore. And yͭ he commaunded to euery Sheryfe through out al Englande / that they ſholde enquyre yf ony byſſhoppe / abbot / or pryoure / or ony other prelate of holy chirche / fro that day afterwarde / receyue ony cōmaūdement that cometh fro the pope / that they ſholde take the body / and brynge it before hym. And that they ſholde take into the kynges handes all theyr lādes of holy chirche / yͭ were gyuē to ony man / by the Archebyſſhop or by the pryour of Caūterbury / in tyme of the eleccyon of the Archebyſſhop. And cōmaūded that all the woddes that were the Archebyſſhops ſholde be [illegible] downe to the grounde / and all ſolde.

¶ How kynge Johā deſtroyed the ordre of Ciſteaux.

AND in the ſame yere the Iryſſhe men began to warre vpon kynge Johan / & the kynge ordeyned hym for to go into Irlande / and lete arere an huge taxe throughout al Englande / that is for to ſaye .xxx. thouſande marke. And than he ſende through out all Englande vnto the monkes of the ordre of Ceſteaux that they ſholde helpe hym of .vi. M. marke of ſyluer. And they anſwered ⁊ ſayde ẏ they durſt nothynge do wᵗout theyr cheyſe abbot of Ciſteaux. wherfore kynge Johan whan he came agayne frõ Irlande dyde the ſomoche ſorowe and care ẏ they wyſte not where too abyde / for he toke ſomoche raunſom of euery hous / ⁊ ẏ ſomme amoũted to .ix. M. ⁊ .iii. C. marke / ſoo that they were clene loſte and deſtroyed and voyded they houſes ⁊ theyr landes through oute all Englande. And ẏ abbot of Wauerlaye had ſomoche his menace / that he forſoke ẏ abbaye ⁊ wente thens / ⁊ pryuely ordeyned hym ouer ẏ ſee to ẏ hous of Ciſteaux. Whan the tydynges came to ẏ pope that ẏ kynge had done ſomoche malyce / then he was towarde ẏ kynge full wroth. And ſend two Legates vnto ẏ kynge / that one was called Pandulfe / ⁊ ẏ other Duraunt that they ſholde warne the kynge in ẏ popes name / that he ſholde ceſſe of his perſecucyon that he dyde vnto holy chyrche / and amende the wronge ⁊ ẏ treſpace / that he hadde done to ẏ archebyſſhop of Caũterbury / ⁊ to ẏ pryour ⁊ vnto the monkes of Caunterbury / and to all the clergye of Englande. And that he ſholde reſtore al ẏ goodes agayn that he had taken of them ayenſt theyr wyll or elles they ſholde curſe hym by name. And to doo this thynge / ⁊ to conferme ẏ pope toke them his letters in bulles patentes. Theſe two Legates came into Englande / ⁊ came to the kynge to Northampton / there that he helde his parlyament / ⁊ full curteyſly they hym ſalued ⁊ ſayde. Syr we come fro the pope of Rome / ẏ peas of holy chyrche and ẏ lande to amende And we admoneſt you fyrſte in the popes halfe / that ye make full reſtytucyõ of the goodes that ye haue rauyſſhed and taken of holy chyrche and of the land. And ẏ ye receyue Stephen archebyſſhop of Caunterbury into his dyngnyte / and ẏ pryour of Caũterbury / and his monkes. And that ye yelde agayne vnto the archebyſſhop all his landes / rentes / wᵗout ony withholdỹge. And ſyr yet more ouer / that ye ſhall make reſtytucyon vnto all holy chyrche / wherof they ſhal holde them wel apayd. Tho anſwered the kynge as touchynge ẏ pryour ⁊ his monkes of Caunterbury. All that ye haue ſayde I wyll do gladly / ⁊ all thynge that ye wyll ordeyne. But as touchynge ẏ archebyſſhop I ſhal tell you in my herte as it lyeth. That the archebyſſhoppe leue his archebyſſhopryche / ⁊ that ẏ pope then for hȳ wolde pray and then vpon auenture me ſholde lyke ſome other byſſhopryche to gyue hym in Englande. And vpon this condycyon I wyll hym accepte and receyue / and neuertheleſſe as archebyſſhoppe in Englande yf he abyde / he ſhall neuer haue ſoo good ſaufconduyte / but ẏ he ſhall be take. Tho ſayd Pandulf vnto the kynge. Syr holy chyrche was neuer wonte to dyſcharge an archebyſſhoppe withoute cauſe reaſonable. But euer it hath be wonte to chaſtyſe kynges and prynces that to god and holy chyrche were inobedyent. What how now ſayde ẏ kynge / menace ye me. Naye ſayde Pandulfe / but ye now openly haue tolde as it ſtondethe in your herte. And to you we wyll tell what is the popes wyll. And thus it ſtãdeth that he hath you hooly enterdyted ⁊ accurſed / for ẏ wronges that ye haue done to holy chyrche ⁊ to the clergye. And for aſmoche as ye dwell and be in wyll to a byde in malyce and in wretchedneſſe / and wyll not come out therof / nor to amende ye ſhall vnderſtande / that this tyme afterwarde ẏ ſentence is vpon you gyuen ⁊ holdeth ſtede ⁊ ſtrength / and vpon all tho that with you hath comuned before this tyme / whether they ben erles barons / oꝛ knyghtes / oꝛ ony other what ſo euer yͭ they be / we them aſſoyle / ſikerly vnto this daye. And fro this tyme afterwarde of what condycyon ſo euer that they ben we theym accurſe that to you comyn ony woꝛde / and do we ſentence vpon them openly ⁊ ſpecyally. And aſſoyle clene erles / barons / knyghtes / and all other men of theyr homages ſeruyces and feautees / that they ſholde vnto you doo. And this tydynge to conferme / we gyue playne power to the byſſhoppe of Wyncheſtre / and to the byſſhop of Noꝛwyche. And the ſame power we gyue into Scotlande to the byſſhoppes of Rocheſtre ⁊ of Salyſbury. And in Wales we gyue the ſame power to the byſſhop of ſeynt Dauyd and of Landaf / and of ſaynt Aſſe. And moꝛe ouer we ſende thꝛough all Cryſtendome / yͭ all the byſſhops beyonde yͤ ſee / that they doo accurſe all tho that helpe you oꝛ that ony counſeill gyueth you in ony maner nede yͭ ye haue to doo in ony parte of the woꝛlde. And we aſſoyle them alſo all / by auctoꝛyte of yͤ pope / and commaunde them alſo with you to fyght as wͭ hym yͭ is enmy to all holy chyrche. Tho anſwered the kynge. What maye ye doo moꝛe to me. Tho anſwered Pandulfe. We ſaye to you in the woꝛde of god / that ye noꝛ no heyꝛe that ye haue neuer after this daye maye be crowned. Tho ſayde the kynge. By hym that is almyghty god / ⁊ I had wyſte this are yͭ ye came into my lande / that ye had brought me ſuche tydynges I ſholde haue made you ryde all one yere. Tho anſwered Pandulf. Full well wende we at oure fyrſte comynge / that ye wolde haue be obedyente to god ⁊ holy chyrche / ⁊ haue fulfylled the popes commaundement / ⁊ now we haue ſhewed vnto you / ⁊ pronounced yͤ popes wyll as we were charged therwith. And as now ye haue ſayd that yf ye had wyſte the cauſe of our comynge that ye wold haue doo vs to ryde all an hole yere. And as well ye myght haue ſayd / that ye wolde haue taken an hole yere of reſpyte by yͤ popes leue. But foꝛ to ſuffre what dethe ye coude oꝛdeyne / we ſhall not ſpare foꝛ to tell you holly all the popes meſſage ⁊ his wyll / that we were charged with.

¶ How pandulfe delyuered a clerke that had falſed ⁊ countrefeted the kynges money befoꝛe the kynge hym ſelfe.

The kynge commaunded anone the ſhyreues ⁊ Baylyfs of Noꝛthampton that were in the kynges preſence / yͭ they ſholde bꝛynge foꝛth all the pryſoners that they myghte be done to dethe befoꝛe Pandulf / foꝛ bycauſe the kynge wende yͭ they wolde haue gaynſayd theyꝛ dedes by cauſe of the deth all thynge that they had ſpoken afoꝛe. Whan the pryſoners were come befoꝛe the kynge / the kynge commaunded ſome to be hanged / ⁊ ſome to be drawen ⁊ ſome to drawe oute theyꝛ eyen out of theyꝛ hed. And amonge all other / there was a clerke that had falſed yͤ kynges money. And the kynge commaunded that he ſholde be hanged ⁊ drawen. And whan Pandulfe herde this commaundement of the kynge he ſterte hym vp ryght quyckly / ⁊ anone axed a boke ⁊ a candell / ⁊ wolde haue curſed the kynge / ⁊ all them that wolde ſet vpon the clerke ony hande. And Pandulf hym ſelf went foꝛ to ſeke a croſſe. And the kynge folowed hym / ⁊ delyuered hym yͤ clerke by the hande that he ſholde do wͭ hym what he wolde. And thus was the clerke delyuered and wente theus. And pandulf ⁊ Durauſ his felowe wente fro the kynge / ⁊ came agayne to the pope of Rome. And tolde hym that kynge Johan wolde not be amended. But euer abyde to be ſo acurſed. And neuertheleſſe the pope graunted yͤ yere thꝛough out all Englonde that preeſtes myght ſynge maſſe in conuenable chyrches/ and conſecrate our lordes body/ & gyue it to ſeke men whiche were lykely to paſſe out of this worlde. And alſo þ men myght cryſten chyldren ouer al the lande. And whan þ pope wyſt & ſawe that þ kyng wolde not be vnder þ rule of holy chyrche for no maner thynge. The pope ſende than to the kynge of Fraunce in remyſſyon of his ſynnes/ þ he ſholde take all the power þ he myght/ & go into Englande for to deſtroye kynge Johñ. Whan theſe tydynges came to kynge Johan/ than was he ſore anoyed/ and ſore drad leſte he ſholde loſe his realme/ & hym ſelfe be done to dethe. Than ſende he to þ pope meſſangers & ſayd he wolde be Juſtyfyed/ & come to amendement in all thynges/ & wolde make ſatyſfaccyon to all maner of men after the popes ordynaunce. Than ſende the pope agayn into Englande Pandulf & other meſſangers/ & came to Caunterbury to the kynge & there abode. And þ .xv. daye of Maye þ kynge made an othe for to ſtande to the popes ordynaunce before Pandulfe þ Legate in all maner of thynges in whiche he was accurſed. And that he ſholde make full reſtytucyon to all men of holy chyrche & of relygyon/ & of the goodes that he had taken of them agaynſte theyr wyll. And all þ great lordes of Englande ſwore vpon þ boke & by theyr holydom/ þ yf the kynge wolde not holde his othe/ they wolde by ſtrength make hym holde it. Than put þ kynge hym to þ court of Rome/ & than gaue he vp þ realme of Englande & of Irelande for hym & for his heyres for euermore that ſholde come after hym/ ſoo that kynge Johan & his heyres ſholde take the two realmes of þ popes handes. And ſholde euery yere paye therfore vnto the court of Rome a thouſande marke of ſyluer. And tho toke the kynge þ crowne of his heed & ſet it vpon his knees. And theſe wordes ſayd he in herynge of all the great lordes of Englande. Here I reſygne the crowne & the realme of Englande into þ pope Innocentius handes þ .iii. & put me holy in his mercy & in his ordynaunce. Tho receyued Pandulf þ crowne of kynge Johan/ & kepte it fyue dayes as for a ſeaſynge/ takynge of two realmes of Englande and of Irelande. And confyrmed all maner thynges by his Chartre/ þ foloweth after.

¶ Of þ letter oblygatorye that kynge Johan made to the court of Rome/ wherfore þ Peter pens ben gadred through out all Englande.

To all cryſten people throughoute all the worlde dwellynge. Johan by þ grace of god kynge of Englande gretynge to your vnyuerſyte. And be it knowen þ for aſmoche as we haue greued & offended god & our moder holy chyrche of Rome. And for aſmoche as we haue nede vnto the mercy of our lorde Jheſu cryſt. And alſo we may nothynge ſo worthy offre/ as competent ſatiſfaccyon to make to god & to holy chyrche/ but yf that it were our owne body/ as to our realmes of Englande & of Irelande. Thã by the grace of god we deſyre to meke vs/ for the loue of hym þ meked hym to þ deth of the croſſe. Through counſeyle of the noble Erles & barons/ we offre & frely graunte to god & to þ appoſtles ſaynt Peter & ſaynt Paule/ & to oure moder chyrche of Rome/ & to our holy fader pope Innocentius þ .iii. & to all þ popes þ cometh after hym all the realmes & patronages of chyrches of Englande and of Irelande/ with theyr appertenaunces/ for remyſſyon of oure ſynnes/ and for helpe & helth of our kynne ſoules and of all cryſten ſoules. So that fro this day afterwarde we wyll receyue & holde of oure moder Chyrche of Rome / as fee ferme doynge ſeruice to our holy fader pope Innocencius the thyrde / and ſo to all the popes that cometh after hym / in the ſame maner aboue ſayd. And in the preſence of ẏ wyſe man Panduls ẏ popes ſubdeaken / we make lyeges homage / as it were in the popes preſence / and before hym were. And ſhall do all maner thynges aboue ſayd. And therto we bynde vs / & all ẏ cometh after vs & our heyres for euermore / without ony agaynſayenge to the popes / and the ẏ warde of chyrche vacauntes. And in token of this thynge for euer to laſte we wyll confyrme and ordeyne / that our ſpecyall rentes of the forſayd realme ſauynge ſeynt Peters pens in all thynge to the moder chyrche of Rome payenge by yere a thouſande marke of ſyluer / and two termes of ẏ yere for cuſtomes ẏ we ſholde do for the forſayd realmes / that is to ſaye at Myghelmaſſe / and at Eſter. That is to ſaye .vii. C. marke for Englonde / and thre hondred marke for Irelande ſauynge to vs & to our heyres our Iuſtyces / and other fraunchyſes / & other royaltees that perteyne vnto the crowne. And theſe thynges ẏ before ben ſayd we wyll that it be fyrme and ſtable without ende And to that oblygacyon we and our ſucceſſours and our heyres in this maner be bounde / that yf we / or ony of oure heyres thorugh ony preſumpcyon falle in ony poynt / agaynſt ony of theſe thynges aboue ſayd / and he be warned / and wyll not ryght amende / he ſhall than leſe ẏ forſayde realme for euermore. And that this chartre of oblygacyon and oure warraunt for euermore / be fyrme and ſtable without ony gaynſayenge. We ſhall from this daye afterwarde be true vnto god and to the moder our holy chyrche of Rome / and to the pope Innocencius the thyrde / and to all that cometh after hym. And the realmes of Englande & of Irelande we ſhall maynteyne truely in all maner poyntes agaynſt all maner men by oure power through goddes helpe.

¶ How ẏ clerkes ẏ were outlawed came agayn / & how kyng Iohn̄ was aſſoyled.

SO whan this Chartre was made and enſealed / the kynge receyued agayne his crowne of Pandulfus hande And ſende agayne vnto the archebyſſhop Stephen / and to al his other clerkes and lewde men that he had exyled out of his lande / that they ſholde come agayne into Englande / and haue agayn theyr landes and alſo theyr rentes. And ẏ he wolde make reſtytucyon of the goodes that he had taken of theyrs agaynſt theyr wyll. The kynge hym ſelfe tho and Pandulfe / and ẏ erles and barons went vnto Wyncheſter agaynſt ẏ archebyſſhop Stephen. And whā he was come ẏ kynge went agaynſt hym & fell downe to his feet and thus to hym ſayd. Fayre ſyr ye be well come / and I crye you mercy bycauſe that I haue treſpaſſed agaynſt you. ¶ The archebyſſhop toke hym vp tho in his armes / & kyſſed hym ſwetely ofentymes / and after led hym to the dore of ſeynt Swythunes chyrche by ẏ hande / & aſſoyled hym of the ſentence / & hym reconſyled to god and to holy chyrche. And ẏ was on ſeynt Margaretes daye. And the archebyſſhop anone wente for to ſynge maſſe. And ẏ kynge offered at the maſſe a marke of golde. And whan the maſſe was done / all they wente for to receyue theyr landes without ony maner gaynſayenge. And that day they made all myrthe & Ioye ynough But yet was not the entredytynge releſed / bycauſe the pope hadde ſente that the entredytynge ſholde not be done tyll the kynge had made full reſtytucyon of the goodes that he had taken of holy chyrche. And that hym ſelfe ſholde do homage to ẏ pope by a certayne Legate / that he ſholde ſende into Englande. And thã toke Pandulf his leue of the kynge ⁊ the archebyſſhop / ⁊ wente agayne vnto Rome. And ẏ archebyſſhop anone lete come before hym prelates of holy chyrche at Redynge for to treate ⁊ counſeyle how moche ⁊ what they ſholde aſke of ẏ kynge / for to make reſtytucyon of ẏ goodes ẏ he had taken of thẽ. And they ordeyned ⁊ ſayde / that ẏ kynge ſholde gyue to ẏ archebyſſhop thre thouſande marke for ẏ wronge that ẏ kynge had done vnto hȳ. And alſo by porcyons to other clerkes .xv. M. marke. And this tyme Nicholaꝰ byſſhop of Tuſcam Cardynall Penitenciarius of Rome came in to Englande through ẏ popes commaundement ẏ .v. kalendas of octobre / ⁊ came to London / the fyfth Nonas of Octobre / for bycauſe ẏ ẏ kynge Johan and all the kynges ẏ came after hȳ ſholde euermore holde ẏ realme of Englande ⁊ of Irelande of god ⁊ of ẏ pope / payenge to ẏ pope by yere as it is aboue ſayd.

¶ How ẏ entredytynge was vndone in Englande / ⁊ of ẏ debate ẏ was bytwene kynge Johñ ⁊ the barons of the realme.

WHan kynge Johñ had done his homage to ẏ Legate ẏ ſhewed hȳ ẏ popes lettre that he ſholde paye to Julyan / ⁊ yelde agayne that was kynge Rychardes wyf ẏ thyrde parte of ẏ lande of Englande ⁊ of Irelande ẏ he had withholde ſyth ẏ kynge Rycharde dyed. whã kynge Johñ herde this / he was wonders wroth. For verely ẏ entredytynge myght not be vndone tyll that he had made gree and reſtytucyon to the foreſayd Julyan of that ſhe aſked. The Legate wente than agayn to the pope after Cryſtmaſſe. And the kynge ſende ouer ẏ ſee to Julyan that was kynge Rychardes wyfe / for to haue a relace of ẏ ſhe aſked of hȳ. And ſo it befel that Julyan deyed anone after Eeſter. And in ſomoche ẏ kynge was quyte of ẏ thynge that ſhe aſked. But thã at ẏ feeſt of ſeynt Johñ ẏ came next after through ẏ popes cõmaundement ẏ entredytynge was fyrſt releaſyd throughoute all Englande ẏ .vii. daye of July. And .vii. yere was the lande entredyted. And on ẏ mornynge men ronge ⁊ ſayd maſſe throughe out all London / and ſo after throughout all Englande. ¶ And the nexte yere after there began a great debate bytwene kynge Johan and ẏ lordes of Englande / for bycauſe he wolde not graunte the lawes and holde ẏ whiche ſeynt Edwarde had ordeyned / and had ben vſed and holden vnto that tyme that he badde them broken. For he wolde holde no lawe / but dyd all thynge that hym lyked / ⁊ dyſheryted many men withoute conſente of lordes ⁊ peres of the lande. And wolde dyſheryte the good Erle Radulfe of Cheſtre / for bycauſe he vndertoke hym of his wyckedneſſe / and for cauſe that he dyde ſomoche ſhame and vylany to god ⁊ to holy chyrche. And alſo for he helde and haunted his owne broders wyfe / and laye alſo by many other women great lordes doughters. For he ſpared no woman that hym lyked for to haue. Wherfore all the lordes of the lande were wrothe / ⁊ toke ẏ cyte of London. To ceſſe this debate ẏ archebyſſhop and lordes of the lande aſſembled before the feeſt of ſeynt Johñ Baptyſte in a medowe beſyde the towne of Stanys / that is called Ronney mede. And ẏ kẏge made them there a chartre of fraunchyſe / ſuche as they wold aſke / ⁊ in ſuche manere they were accorded / and that accordement laſted not full longe. For the kynge hym ſelfe ſoone after dyde agaynſt ẏ poyntes of the ſame charters þ he had made. Wherfore þ mooſt parte of þ lordes of þ londe aſſembled and began to warre vpõ hym agayne/ and brenned his townes/ & robbed his folke/ and dyde all þ ſorowe that they myght/ & made them as ſtronge as they myght with all the power that they hadde/ and thought to dryue hym oute of Englande and make Lowys the kynges ſone of Fraunce kynge of Englande. And kynge Johan ſende than ouer þ ſee/ and ordeyned ſomoche people of Normans/ and of Pycardes/ and of Flemynges/ ſo that the londe myght not ſuſteyne them but with moche ſorowe. And amonge all this people/ was a man of Normandye þ was called Fawkis of Breut/ & this Norman & his company ſpared neyther chyrches/ nor houſes of relygyon/ but they brente & robbed it/ and bare awaye all þ they myght take/ ſo that þ londe was all deſtroyed/ what of one ſyde and of other/ the Barons and Lordes of Englande ordeyned amonge theym the beſt ſpekers and wyſeſt men/ and ſende them ouer the ſee to kynge Phylyp of Fraũce/ & prayed hym that he wolde ſende Lowys his ſone into Englande to be kynge of Englande/ and to receyue the crowne.

¶ How Lowys the kynges ſone of Fraunce came into Englande with a ſtronge power of people to be kynge of Englande.

AS ſone as kynge Phylyp of Fraũce herde theſe tydynges/ he made certayne alyaunce bytwene them by theyr commune eleccyon þ Lowys kynge Phylyppes ſone of Fraũce ſholde go with them into Englande/ and dryue out kynge Johan of the londe. And þ all were in preſence of Lowys/ made vnto hym homage/ & became his men. And þ Barons of Englande helde them ſtyll at London/ & abode Lowys the kynges ſone of Fraunce. And this was the nexte Saterday before the Aſſencyon of our lorde that Lowys came into Englande wͭ a ſtronge power. And that tyme kynge Johan hadde taken all the caſtels of Englande in to alyens handes. And tho came Lowys and beſyeged Rocheſtre caſtell/ & toke it with ſtrength. And the thyrde daye in Whytſonweke lete hange all the alyens þ were therin. And the thurſday after he came to London/ & there he was receyued wͭ moche honoure of þ lordes that abode hym there/ and all to hym made homage. And afterwarde on the tewyſdaye nexte after the Trinite ſondaye he toke þ caſtell of Reygate. And on the morowe after the caſtell of Gilforde. And þ frydaye nexte after the Caſtell of Farnham. And the monday nexte after the cyte of Wyncheſtre to hym was yelden. And the morowe after ſeynt Johans day the manoyre of Wulueſeye to hȳ was yolden. And þ tewyſdaye after þ Utas of ſeynt Peter and Paule they toke þ caſtell of Odiham. And the mondaye after ſeynt Margaretes daye/ he departed hȳ towarde Bawmore/ for to ſege the caſtel/ & there he dwelled .xv. dayes and myght not gette the caſtell/ and than wente thens & came to London and the Toure to hym was yelden.

¶ How the pope ſende into Englande a Legate that was called Swalo/ & of the dethe of kynge Johan.

AND in the ſame tyme þ pope ſende into Englande a Legate þ was called Swalo/ & he was preeſt Cardinall of Rome/ for to mayntayne kynge Johans cauſe agaynſt the barons of Englande. But the barons had ſo huge partye and helpe through Lowys þ kynges ſone of Fraũce that kynge Johan wyſt not whe there to tourne nor go. And it befell yͭ he wolde haue gone to Nichol/ and he went thyderwarde/ he came by the abbaye of Swyneſhede/ ⁊ ther he abode two dayes And as he ſat at mete/ he aſked a monke of the houſe how moche that a lofe was worth that was ſet before hym vpon the table. And the monke ſayde/ that the lofe was worth but an halfe peny. O ſayd the kynge tho. here is a great chepe of brede. Now ſayde he tho/ and I maye lyue ony whyle/ ſuche a lofe ſhalbe worth .xx. ſhelynges or halfe a yere be gone/ ⁊ ſo whan he ſayd this worde moche he thought/ ⁊ often he ſyghed/ ⁊ ete of the brede/ ⁊ ſayd by god/ the worde that I haue ſpoken/ it ſhalbe ſothe. The monke that ſtode before the kynge was for this worde full ſory in his herte and thought rather he wolde hym ſelfe ſuffre dethe/ and thought yf he myght ordeyne therfore ſome manere remedye. And anone the monke wente vnto his abbot/ and was ſhryuen of hym/ ⁊ tolde the abbot all that yͤ kynge had ſayd ⁊ prayed his abbot for to aſſoyle hym/ for he wolde gyue the kynge ſuche a drynke that all Englande ſholde be glad therof and Ioyfull. Tho yede the monke into a gardeyne/ and founde a great tode therin and toke her vp and putte her in a cuppe/ and prycked the tode through with a broche many tymes tyll that yͤ venym came out of euery ſyde in the cuppe. And tho toke he the cuppe ⁊ fylled it with good ale/ and brought it before the kynge knelynge ſayenge. Syr ſayde he waſſayll/ for neuer the dayes of all youre lyfe dranke ye of ſo good a cuppe. Begyn monke ſayde yͤ kynge. And yͤ monke dranke a great draught and toke the kynge the cuppe/ ⁊ yͤ kynge dranke alſo a great draught/ and ſet downe the cuppe. The monke anone ryght wente into the fermerye and there dyed anone/ on whoſe ſoule god haue mercy. Amen. And .v. monkes ſynge for his ſoule ſpecyally/ and ſhall whyle yͭ the abbaye ſtandeth. The kynge roſe vp anone full euyll at eaſe and commaunded to remeue the table ⁊ aſked after the monke. And men tolde hym that he was deed/ for his wombe was broken in ſondre. Whan the kynge herde this/ he commaunded for to truſſe/ but it was for nought/ for his bely beganne to ſwell for yͤ drynke that he had dronke/ ⁊ within two dayes he dyed on yͤ morowe after ſeynt Lukes day/ and had many fayre chyldren of his body begoten that is to ſaye. Henry his ſone that was kynge after hym/ ⁊ Rycharde yͭ was erle of Cornewayle/ ⁊ Yſabell that was Empereſſe of Rome/ ⁊ Elenore that was quene of Scotlande. And this kynge Iohan whan he had reygned .xviii. yere ⁊ .v. monethe ⁊ fyue dayes/ he dyed in the caſtell of newerke. And his body was buryed at Wyncheſtre.

¶ Anno dñi. M.CC.

Fredericus yͤ ſeconde was Emperoure .xxx. yere. ¶ This man was crowned of Honorius yͤ pope ayenſt Otto for bycauſe yͭ he ſholde fyghte with hym/ the whiche he dyd/ ⁊ expulſed hym. And fyrſt he nouryſſhed yͤ chyrche/ ⁊ afterwarde he dyſpoyled it/ as a ſtepmoder ⁊c. Wherfore Honorius curſyd hym/ ⁊ all tho that were contrary to his opynyon the pope aſſoyled. And the ſame ſentence Gregorius yͤ .ix. renewed. And this man put Henry his owne ſone into pryſon/ and there murdred hym. Wherfore whan this Emperoure another ſeaſon was take/ by another ſone of his owne was murdred in tyme of Innocentius yͤ .iiii. ¶ Honorius yͤ .iii. was pope after Innocentius .x. yere ⁊ confyrmed yͤ ordre of frere Prechers ⁊ Minors/ and made certayne Decretalles.

¶ Of kynge Henry the thyrde that was crowned at Gloucestre.

AND after this kynge Johan reygned his sone Henry ÿ was crowned at Gloucestre whan he was .ix. yere olde / on seynt Symons daye & Jude of Swalo ÿ legate of Rome through counseyle of all ÿ greate lordes ÿ helde wt kynge Johan his fader / ÿ is to say / ÿ erle Randulf of Chester. Wyllyam erle Marshal of Penbroke. Wyllyam the Brewer Erle of erle Feriers. Merle the manly baron. And all other greate lordes of Englonde helde wt Lowys the kynges sone of Fraunce. And anone after whan kynge Henry was crowned Swalo ÿ Legate held his counseyll a Brystowe at seynt Martyns feest. & there were .xi. bysshops of Englonde and of Wales / & of other prelates of holy chyrche a great nombre / erles & barons & many knyghtes of Englonde. And all tho ÿ were at that counseyle swore feaute unto kynge Henry. And anone after ÿ Legate enterdyted wales / for cause that they helde with the barons of Englonde And all tho that helpe / or gaue counseyle to meue warre agaynst ÿ yonge kynge he acursed them. And at ÿ begynnynge he put in ÿ sentence ÿ kynges sone of Fraunce Lowys. And neuertheles ÿ same Lowys wolde not spare for all ÿ / but wente and toke ÿ castell of Barcamstede / & also the castell of Hertforde. And in ÿ days afterwarde the barons dyd there somoche harme throughout all Englonde / & pryncypall the Frensshe men that were wt kynge Lowys. Wherfore the greate lordes / and all ÿ comyn people of Englonde lete them [illegible] / for whiche Lowys & his compaygnye [illegible] out of Englonde / but some of the barons [illegible] & Frensshemen were gone to Lyncolne of Nichole & toke ÿ towne & helde it to kynge Lowys partye. Whan this was come kynge Henryes men wt great power / that is to saye / the erle Randulf of Chestre / and Wylliam erle Marshall / and Wylliam the Brewer of Feriers / and many other lordes wt them / & gaue batayle unto Lowys men. And there was slayne ÿ erle of Perches / & lowys men were foule dyscomfyted. And there was take Merle erle of Wynchestre / & Humfrey de Boune erle of Hertforde / Robert ÿ sone of Walter / & many other ÿ began warre agaynst ÿ kynge there they were take & ladde unto kynge Henry ÿ was kynge Johans sone. And whan ÿ tydynges came to Lowys of the dyscomfyture / whiche was ÿ kynges sone of Fraunce. He remeued from thens and wente unto London / and lete shyt ÿ gates of the cyte. And anone after the kynge sende to the Burgeys of London ÿ they sholde yelde them to hym / & ÿ cyte also. And he wolde them graunte all theyr fraunchyses that euer they were wont to haue before. And wolde confyrme them by his grete newe chartre under his kynges seale. And in ÿ same tyme a great lorde that was called Eustace the monke came out of Fraunce with a great company of lordes / ÿ wolde haue come into Englond for to haue holpen Lowys the kynges sone of Fraunce. But Hubert of Burgh & ÿ fyue portes wt .viii. shyppes tho mette wt them in the hygh see / and assayled them egrely / and ouercame theym with strength / and smote of Eustaces ÿ monkes hede. And toke also .x. great lordes of Fraunce and put them into pryson. And slewe almoost all ÿ men that came with theym / and anone drowned the shyppes in the see.

¶ How Lowis tourned agayn into Fraunce / and of the confyrmacyon of kynge Johannes chartre.

So whan Lowys herde theſe tydynges he dradde ſore to be deed ⁊ loſt. And lete ordeyne a ſpeke bytwene yͤ kyng ⁊ Lowys by the legate Swalo. And by yͤ Archebyſſhop of Caunterbury ⁊ other grete lordes all the pryſoners on yͤ one ſyde ⁊ that other ſholde be delyuered ⁊ goo quyte. And Lowys hym ſelfe ſholde haue for his coſtes .x. M. li. of ſyluer ⁊ ſhold go out of Englande/ ⁊ come neuer agayne in to it. And in this maner was the accorde made bytwene kyng Henry and Lowys. And tho was Lowys aſſoyled of yͤ popes Legate/ that was called Swalo of yͤ ſentence that he was in/ ⁊ the barons of Englande. And after this kynge Henry and Swalo the Legate and Lowys went to Merton ⁊ there was the pees confyrmed ⁊ bytwene them ordeyned. And after Lowys went to Londō ⁊ toke his leue/ and was brought with moche honoure to the ſee with the Archebyſſhop of Caunterbury ⁊ wother byſſhops ⁊ erles ⁊ barons/ ⁊ ſo wente into Fraunce. ¶ Afterwarde yͤ kynge ⁊ yͤ Archebyſſhop/ ⁊ alſo erles and barons aſſembled them ⁊ came to the cyte of London at Myghelmas next/ ⁊ helde there a greate parlyament. And there were renewed all the Fraūchyſe that kynge Johñ had graunted at Romney mede/ ⁊ kynge Henry than confyrmed by his chartre all the whiche ben holden yet through out al Englande. And in yͤ tyme yͤ kynge toke of euery ploughe land .ii. ſhelynges/ And Hubert of Burghe was made than chyef Juſtyce of England. And this was in the fourth yere of kynge Henryes reygne. ¶ And in yͤ ſame yere was ſeynt Thomas of Caunterbury tranſlated the .l. yere after his martyrdom. And after it was ordeyned by all the Lordes of Englande that all alyens ſholde go out of Englande ⁊ neuer more therin. And kynge Henry toke than all the caſtels into his hande/ that kynge Johan his fader had gyuē ⁊ taken to alyens for to kepe that held with hym. But yͤ proude Faukes of Brytayne rychely lete aray his caſtell of Bedforde/ whiche he had of kynge Johans gyfte/ ⁊ helde that caſtell agaynſt kynge Henryes wyll with myght and ſtrengthe. And the kynge came thyder with a ſtrōge power and beſyeged the caſtell. And the Archebyſſhop mayſter Stephen of Langton/ with a fayre company of knyghtes came to yͤ kynge for to helpe hym. And frome yͤ Aſcencyon of our lorde vnto the Aſſumpcyon of our lady laſted yͤ ſyege. And than was the caſtel wonne and taken. And the kynge lete hange all thoſe that wente in to the caſtell with theyr goode wyll for to holde the caſtell. That is for to ſaye .lxxx. men. And than afterwarde Faukes hym ſelfe was foūde and had in a chirche at couentre. And ther he forſwore all Englāde with moche ſhame/ and wente agayne into his countree where he was borne. ¶ And whyles that kȳge Henry regned Edmonde of Abyndon that was treſorer of Salyſbury was conſecrate Archebyſſhop of Cauterbury. And this kyng Henry ſende ouer the ſee vnto the Erle of Prouynce/ that he ſholde ſende hym his doughter into Englande that was called Elyanore/ and he ſholde ſpouſe her. And than ſhe came into Englande after Cryſtenmas. And on the morowe after ſeynt Hyllaryes daye the Archebyſſhop of Caunterbury Edmonde ſpouſed them togyder at Weſtmynſter with great ſolempnyte. And ther was a ſwete ſyght bytwene thē. That is to ſaye. Edwarde that was next kynge after his fader floure of curteyſye and of largeneſſe. And Margarete that was after quene of Scotlande. And Beatryce that was after Ducheſſe of Brytayne. And Katheryne that dyed mayden in relygyon.

¶ Of the quinzyme of goodes that were graunted for þ newe charter / and of þ purueyaunce of Oxforde.

AND thus it befell that the lordes of Englande wolde haue some addicyons me in the charter of fraunchyse thā they had of þ kynge ⁊ spake thus bytwene them. And þ kynge graunted them all theyr askyng. And made to them two charters that one is called þ great charter of fraunchyses / ⁊ that other is called þ charter of forest. And for þ graunte of these two charters / prelates / erles ⁊ barons / ⁊ all the comuns of Englande / yaue to þ kynge a thousande marke of syluer. ¶ Whā kynge Henry had be kynge .xliii. yere / the same yere he and his lordes / erles ⁊ barons of þ realme wente to Oxforde / ⁊ ordeyned a lawe in amendyment of þ realme. And syth swore þ kynge hym selfe / and afterwarde all the lordes of þ londe that they wolde holde that statute for euermore / and who that them brake shulde be cursed. But þ seconde yere after that / that ordynaunce þ kynge through counseyll of Edwarde his sone / ⁊ of Rycharde his broder / that was erle of Cornewayle / ⁊ also other repented hym of that othe that he had made for to holde that lawe ⁊ ordynaunce. And sende to the courte of Rome to be assoyled of that othe. And in the yere nexte comynge after was the great derth of corne in Englande. For a quarter of whete was worth .xxiiii. shyllynges. And the pore people ete nettles ⁊ other wedes for hungre. And dyed many a thousande for defaute of mete. ¶ And in the .xlviii. yere of kynge Henryes reygne began warre and debate bytwene hym and his lordes / for bycause that he had broken the couenauntes that were made bytwene theym at Oxforde. ¶ And the same yere was the towne of Northampton taken ⁊ folke slayne that were within. for bycause that they had ordeyned and made wylde fyre for to brenne the Cytee of London. And in the moneth of May next after on seynt Pancras day / was the batayll of Lewys. whiche was the wednysday before seynt Dunstanes daye. And there was taken kynge Henry hym selfe / ⁊ syr Edwarde his sone / ⁊ Rycharde his broder erle of Cornewayle / ⁊ many other lordes. And in þ same yere next folowynge syr Edwarde the kynges sone brake oute of þ warde of syr Symonde of Mountforde erle of Leycetre at Herforde / ⁊ went vnto the barons of the marche / ⁊ they receyued hym with moche honour. And the same tyme Gylberte of Clarence Erle of Gloucestre þ was in the warde also of the forsayd Symonde / through the commaundement of kyng Henry / þ went fro hym with a great hoste / bycause that he sayd that Gylbert was a fale / wherfore he ordeyned hym afterwarde / ⁊ helde hym with kyng Henry. And on the fourthdaye next after þ myddes of August syr Edwarde the kynges sone vysyted syr Symond Mountforde at Kelyngworth / but þ great lordes that were therwith hym were taken / that is to say. Baldewyn Wake / ⁊ Wyllyam de Mouncheusye / ⁊ many other great lordes. And the tewysday next after was the batayl done at Euesham. And there was slayne syr Symonde de Mountforde. Hughe the Spenser / ⁊ Mountforth that was Raufe Basset lorde of Drayton / ⁊ many other great lordes. And whan this batayll was done all the gentylmen that had ben with þ Erle Symonde were dysherytted. And ordeyned them togyder and dyd moche harme to all the londe. For they destroyed in asmoche as they myght theyr enemyes.

¶ Of the syege of Kelyngworth / ⁊ how the gentylmen were dysherytted through counseyll of the Lordes of the realme of

Englande/and how they came agayne ⁊ had theyr londes.

And yͤ next yere comynge in May the fourth daye before the feeſt of ſeynt Dunſtane/was the bataple ⁊ ſcomfyture at Cheſterfelde/of them that were dyſheryted/⁊ there was many of theym ſlayne. ¶ And Robert Erle of Ferres ther was taken/⁊ alſo Baldwyne/⁊ Johan Deleway with moche folke ſcaped thens And on ſeynt Johans eue yͤ Baptyſt the ſetwynge/began the ſyege of the caſtell of Kenelworth/⁊ yͤ ſyege laſted to ſeyt Thomas eue the apoſtell. In whiche daye ſyr Hugh Haſtynge had the caſtell for to kepe that yelded vp the caſtell vnto the kynge in this manere/that hym ſelfe ⁊ yͤ other yͭ were within the caſtell ſholde haue theyr lyues ⁊ lymmes/⁊ al they had therin/both hors ⁊ harneys/⁊ foure dayes of reſpyte/for to delyuer clenly yͤ caſtell/of them ſelf ⁊ of all other maner thynge/as they had within yͤ caſtel. And ſyr Symonde Mountforth the yōger/⁊ the counteſſe his moder were gone ouer the ſee into Fraunce/and there helde them as people yͭ were exyled out of Englōd for euer. ¶ And ſone after yͭ was ordeyned by yͤ Legate Ottobon/⁊ by other great lordes/yͤ wyſeſt of Englāde that all tho that had be ayenſt yͤ kynge ⁊ were dyſheryted/ſhold haue ayen theyr lādes by greuous raunſoms/after that it was ordeyned. And thus they were accorded with the kynge/and peas was cryed throughout England/and thus yͤ warre was ended. And whan it was done/the Legate toke his leue of the kynge ⁊ of yͤ quene/and of the great lordes of Englande/and wente than to Rome the .lv. yere of kynge Henryes reygne. And in lykewyſe Edwarde kynge Johans ſone of Brytayn. Johā Ueſſi. Thomas of Clare. Rogere of Clyfforde. Othes of Graunſone/Roberte le Bruis. Johan of Verdon/and many other lordes of Englande/⁊ of beyonde yͤ ſee toke theyr way toward yͤ holy lande. And kynge Henry deyed yͤ ſame tyme at weſtmynſter yͤ .lv. yere of his reygne. ⁊ .xix. wekes/on ſeynt Edmondes daye yͤ Archebyſſhop of Caunterbury. And buryed on ſeynt Edmondes day yͤ kynge. The yere of oure lorde Jheſu Cryſte. M.CC.lxxii.

¶ Prophecy of Merlyn of the kynge Henry the fyrſte expowned/that was kynge Johans ſone

And of this Henry prophecyed Merlyn ⁊ ſayd yͭ a lambe ſholde come out of Wynchestre/in the yere of our lorde M.CC. ⁊ .xvi. wͭ trewe lyppes ⁊ holyneſſe wryten in his herte. And he ſayd ſoth/for the god Henry yͤ kyng was borne in Wyncheſtre/in the yere abouesayd/⁊ he ſpake good wordes ⁊ ſwete/⁊ was an holy man ⁊ of good conſcyence. And Merlyn ſayd/that this man ſholde make yͤ fayreſt place of the worlde/yͭ in his tyme ſholde not be fully ended/⁊ he ſayd ſothe. For he made the newe werke of the abbaye of ſeynt Peters chyrche at Weſtmynſter/yͭ is fayrer of ſyght than ony other place that ony man knoweth throughout all cryſtendome. But kynge Henry deyed or that werk were fully at an ende/and that was grete harme. And yet ſayd Merlyn yͭ this lābe ſholde haue peas the moſt parte of his reygne. And he ſayd full ſothe/for he was neuer noyed through warre/neyther dyſeaſed in no maner of wyſe/tyll a lytell before his deth/⁊ Merlyn ſayde in his prophecy more/yͭ in yͤ ende of the reygne of yͤ forſayd lambe/a ſtraunge wolfe ſholde do hym moche harme through his warre. And that he ſholde at the laſte be mayſter through helpe of a reed kowe/that ſholde come out of the Northweſt ⁊ ſholde hym ouercome. And ẏ he ſholde dryue hym out of the water/and that prophecye full well was knowen. For within a lytell tyme or the kynge deyed Symonde of Mountford Erle of Leycetre ẏ was borne in Fraunce/began ſtronge warre agaynſt hym/by ẏ whiche doynge/manye a good bachylere was deſtroyed. ¶ And whan kynge Henry had the vyctory at Euſham/⁊ ſymond the erle was ſlayn/through helpe of Gylberte of Clare Erle of Glouceſtre/ẏ was in kepynge of the forſayd Symonde/thorough ordynaunce of kynge Henry/whiche wente agayne to the kynge with moche power. Wherfore the forſayde Symond was deſtroyed/⁊ that was great harme to the comyns of Englande that ſo noble a man was ſlayne for the treuthe/⁊ dyed in charyte/⁊ for the comyn proffyte of the ſame folke. And therfore almyghtye god for hym hathe ſyns ſhewed many a fayre myracle to ſyccous men ⁊ women ſeke for his loue. And Merlyn ſaid alſo in his prophecye that after ẏ tyme the lambe ſholde lyue no whyle. And than his ſede ſholde be in ſtraūge lande without ony paſture/⁊ he ſayd ſothe. For kynge Henry lyued no whyle after the Erle Symond was dede but dyed anone after hym. And in ẏ maner tyme ſyr Edwarde his ſone/that was the beſt kynge of ẏ worlde of honour was than in the holy lande/⁊ gate there Acres. And in that countree he begate vpon dame Elenore his wyfe Johne of Acres his doughter that afterward was counteſſe of Glouceſtre. And made ſuche a kynge in the holy lande that all the worlde ſpake of his hardyneſſe/⁊ euery man dradde hym lyke ⁊ loued throughoute all cryſtendome/as the ſtorye of hym telleth/as afterwarde ye ſhall here openly. And fro the tyme that kynge Henry dyed/tyl that ſyr Edwarde was crowned kynge/all the greate lordes of Englande were as faderles chyldren without ony ſocoure/they myght maynteyne and defende agaynſt theyr enemyes.

Gregorius the .ix. was pope after Honoꝛ/ this man canonyſed many ſeyntes/⁊ defended myghtely the chyrche agaynſt Frederyche/therfore he toke many prelates ⁊ two Cardynalles ẏ whiche wente to counſeyll agaynſt hym. This pope was beſyeged in the cyte of Rome/by the Emperour/⁊ he ſawe ẏ Romayns were corrupte by the moneye of the Emperour. Than he toke in his hande the hedes of the apoſtles Peter ⁊ Paule/and wente with proceſſyon fro the chyrche of ſeynt Johan Lateranence to ſeynt Peters chirche. And ſo he gate the hertes of ẏ Romayns. And the Emperour went forth awaye fro the cyte. This pope made frere Raymond to compyle the fyue bokes of decretalles of many pyſtles ⁊ decrees. And after with many trybulacyons of this tyraunt ⁊ other he deceſſed ⁊ went to heuen. ¶ Celeſtinus the fourth was pope after Gregoꝛ almooſt a moneth/⁊ he was in his lyfe ⁊ in his connynge laudable. And he was an olde man ⁊ a feble ⁊ deceſſed/⁊ there was noo pope after hym almooſt a .xxi. moneth. ¶ Innocentiꝰ the fourth was pope after hym almooſt .xi. yere ⁊ .vi. monethes. This mā canonyſed many ſeyntes and Frederyk the Emperour he depoſed and curſed as enemy vnto god in the .iii. yere that he was made pope/and he was holpen by the Januwayes. ¶ And thanne was Henry ẏ lyfte choſen and Wyllyam by the popes commaundement agaynſte Frederyche that one after another. But they preuayled not to ouercome his tiranny/for he was ouer myghty/nor theſe were not crowned/for they deceſſed anone.

¶Thomas de Aquino. Albertꝰ magnus Euſtaciꝰ / ⁊ Bonauenture were this tyme holy men / whiche deſtroyed moche hereſy enfected by yͤ Emperour. ¶Alexāder after Innocentiꝰ was pope. viii. yere / and lytell dyd. ¶Urbanꝰ was pope after hȳ iii. yere ⁊. iii. monethes / this mā droue away an hooſt of ſarazyns by men marked with yͤ croſſe / yͭ Maufred had ſend ayenſt the chyrche. The pope gaue Cecyle kyngdome to yͤ kynges broder of Fraūce foꝛ to fyght wͭ Maufrede / ⁊ than deceſſed. And Maufred after loſt his lyfe ⁊ his kyngdō by Karolꝰ. ¶Alphonſꝰ yͤ kyng of Caſtyll ⁊ Rychardes broder of Englande were choſen Emperours / but Richard deyed / ⁊ Alphonſus renoūced his tytle of yͤ Empyre befoꝛe Gregoriꝰ yͤ. ix. foꝛ he was wyſe ⁊ a great clerke. ¶Clemēs yͤ. iiii. was pope after Urbanꝰ. iii. yere ⁊. ix. monethes. this Clemens was an holy man / ⁊ ſayde by ſpiryte of pꝛophecy / yͭ the enmyes of yͤ chirche ſhold peryſſhe as yͤ ſmoke. And it was beleued yͭ god ceſſed yͤ trybulacyons of his chyꝛche thꝛough his merytes. He had afoꝛe a wyfe ⁊ chyldꝛen / ⁊ was a pꝛeeſt after / ⁊ byſſhop / ⁊ Legate beynge in Englande vnknowen to hym was choſen pope / ⁊ after deceſſed bleſſydly. ¶Gregoꝛiꝰ the. x. was pope after hym foure yere. He aſſembled a coūſayl at Lodunum in Fraūce foꝛ the great deſyꝛe yͭ he had to vyſyte perſonally yͤ holy lande / in yͤ whiche counſayll the Grekes ⁊ the Tartars were ⁊ there the grekes pꝛomyſed to be refoꝛmed by yͤ vnyte of yͤ chyꝛche. And yͤ Tartars newly baptyzed pꝛomyſed the ſame And there were gadered. vi. C. byſſhops / ⁊ a. M. pꝛelates. And therfoꝛe a certayne man ſayde Gregoꝛiꝰ gadered togyder all kyndes of people. And there was decreed yͭ all perſones ⁊ vycaryes ſholde be called pꝛeeſtes / ⁊ no pꝛelates. And yͭ no man ſhal be aſſygne his tythes to what chyꝛche he wold / as they dyd afoꝛe. But they ſholde be payed to his moder chirche. And he dāpned the pluralyte of Benefyces / ⁊ deyed a bleſſyd man. ¶Innocentiꝰ yͤ. v. was after hym. v. monethes / ⁊ Adrianꝰ after hȳ one moneth / ⁊ lytell they dyde. ¶Johēs yͤ. xxi. was after hym. viii. monethes / ⁊ he was in dyuers ſcyences a famous man / but in maners a fole and deceſſed anone. ¶Nicholaꝰ the. iii. was pope after Johā one yere. This man was in his dayes in buyldynge a noble man / ⁊ wel gouerned the cyte all his dayes / ⁊ the. ii. yere he deceſſed. ¶Radulphꝰ was emperour. xviii. yere / this man was erle of Hancburghe / a wyſe man in armes / noble ⁊ victoꝛyous ⁊ was choſen at Baſyle. And he toke the croſſe on hȳ foꝛ yͤ holy lande. Thymperyall bleſſynge he had not / but the pope alowed the eleccyon / foꝛ fauoure of the holy lande.

¶Anno dn̄i. M. CC. lxxiiii.

Martinus the. iiii. was pope after nicholaꝰ. iiii. yere this mā was a great louer of relygyous men / ⁊ great attendyng to vertuous woꝛkes. This man curſed the Emperour of Cōſtantynoble in ſomoche as he pꝛomyſed foꝛ to toꝛne to the feyth in the generall counſayll / ⁊ dyd not / foꝛ yͤ whiche he ſuffered many paſſyons and all holy chirche. Alſo he curſed yͤ kynge of Aragon / foꝛ he expulſed yͤ kyng of Cecile fro his kyngdome. And after he had done many batayles agaynſt myſcreauntes / he deceſſed ⁊ dyd many myꝛacles ¶Nicholaꝰ de lira a noble doctour of deuinite was this tyme at Parys / this mā was a Jewe / ⁊ was conuerted / ⁊ myghtly pꝛofyted in yͤ oꝛdꝛe of Frere Mynoꝛes / ⁊ he wrote all the Byble. Oꝛels he was in the yere of our loꝛd. M. CCC. ⁊. xxx. ⁊ ſome men ſay he was of Bꝛabande / ⁊ yͭ his fader ⁊ his moder were cryſtened / but foꝛ pouerte he vyſyted yͤ ſcole of the Jewes /

And so he lerned the Jewes langage/ or elles this Nicholaꝰ was enformed of the Jewes in his yonge age. ¶ Honoriꝰ the fourth was pope after Martinꝰ two yere & lytell of hym is wryten/ but yͭ he was a temparate man & a vertuous. ¶ Nicholaꝰ the fourth was pope after hym foure yere. This man was a frere Mynor/ & for all yͭ he was a good man in hys lyfe/ yet many unhappy thynges fell in his tyme to the chirche. For many a batayll was in yͤ chirche thrugh his occasyon/ for he drewe to moche to the one parte. And after hym there was no pope two yere & .iii. monethes.

¶ Of kynge Edwarde that was kynge Henryes sone. And of his ryalte.

Edwarde regned after Henry/ the worthyest knyght of yͤ world in honour/ hardyenes fame/ for goddes grace was in hym/ for he had the vyctory of his enemyes. And as sone as his fader was beryed he came to London with a noble company of prelates/ erles & barons/ & all other dyd hym moche honour. For in every place yͭ syr Edwarde rode in London/ yͤ stretes were covered over his hed with ryche & tappysserye. And for Joy of his comyng the burgeys of the cyte caste out at theyr wyndowes theyr handes full of golde & sylver/ in token of love & worship. And out of the conduyte of Chepe ranne whyte wyne & rede/ as stremes of water/ & every man dranke of it that wolde. And this kynge Edward was crowned and anoynted as ryght heyre of Englande with moche honour. And after masse the kynge went in to his place to holde a ryall feest amonge them yͭ dyd hym honoure. And whan he was set to mete/ the kynge Alexander of Scotlande came to do hym honour/ & reverence with quantyse/ & a .C. knyghtes with hym well horsed & arayed. And whan they were alyght/ they lete theyr stedes go whyther ther wolde/ & who yͭ coude take them/ had them styl without ony chalengynge. And after came syr Edmon the kynge Edwardes brother a curtoys and a gentyl knyght/ & the Erle of Cornewayl & the Erle of Glouceftre. And after theym came the Erle of Penbroke/ & the Erle of Garenne. And eche of them by them selfe ladde in theyr hand an hondred knyghtes gayly apparayled in theyr armes. & whan they were alyghted of their horses/ they lete them go whyther that they wolde/ and who that myght them catche/ them to have styl without ony chalenge. And whan all this was done/ kynge Edwarde dyde his dylygence & his myght for to amende and redresse the wronges in the best maner that he myght to the honour of god & holy chyrche/ & to maynteyne his honour/ & to amende the noysaunce of the comyn peple.

¶ Howe Eleyne that was Lewelyns doughter of Wales/ with Aymer that was yͤ Erles brother of Mountforte/ were taken on the see.

THe fyrſt yere after that kynge Edwarde was crowned Lewelyn prynce of Wales wente into Fraunce to the erle mountforde yͭ through counſeyle of his frendes the erle ſholde wedde his doughter. And yͤ erle tho auyſed hȳ vpon this thȳges ⁊ ſende vnto Lewelyn ⁊ ſayd that he wolde ſende after his doughter/and ſo he ſend Amer his broder after the Damoyſell. And Lewelyn arayed ſhyppes for his doughter ⁊ for ſyr Amer/and for her fayre company yͭ ſholde go wͭ her. And this Lewelyn dyd great wronge/for it was couenaunted yͭ he ſholde gyue his doughter to no maner man without counſell and conſente of kynge Edwarde. And ſo it befell that a Burgeys of Bryſtowe came in the ſee with wyne laden/⁊ mette them/⁊ toke them with myght ⁊ power. And anone the burgeys ſende thē to the kynge. Whã Lewelyn herde this tydynges he was very wrothe and alſo ſorowfull/⁊ begã to warre vpon kynge Edwarde/⁊ dyde moche harme vnto Englyſſhe men/⁊ bete downe the kynges caſtels/⁊ began for to deſtroye kynge Edwardes lande. And whan yͤ tydynges came vnto the kynge of this thynge/he wente into Wales ⁊ ſomoche he dyde through goddes grace ⁊ his great power that he droue Lewelyn vnto great myſchief yͭ he fled all maner of ſtrength ⁊ came ⁊ yelded hȳ vnto kynge Edward/⁊ gaue hym.l.marke of ſyluer to haue peas. And toke yͤ damoyſell ⁊ all his herytage/⁊ made an oblygacyon to kynge Edwarde to come to his parlyament two tymes in the yere. And in yͤ.ii. yere after yͭ kynge Edwarde was crowned/he helde a general parlyament at Weſtmynſtre ⁊ there he made ſtatutes for yͤ defaute of lawe by the commune aſſente of all his baronage. And after at nexte Eſter the kynge ſende by his letter vnto Lewelyn prynce of Wales that he ſholde come to his parlyament for his lande/⁊ for his holdynge in Wales/as yͤ ſtrength of his letter oblygatory wytneſſed. Tho Lewelyn had ſcorne and deſpyte of the kynges cõmaundement. And for pure wrathe agayne began warre vpon kynge Edwarde/⁊ deſtroyed his landes And tho whan kynge Edwarde herde of theſe tydynges/he wexed wonder wroth vnto Lewelyn ⁊ in haſt aſſembled a greate power of people ⁊ wente hym towarde Wales/⁊ warred vpõ Lewelyn yͤ prynce/tyl he brought hym in moche ſorowe and dyſeaſe. And Lewelyn ſawe that his defence myght hȳ not auayle ⁊ came agayne ⁊ yelded hym to yͤ kynges grace/and cryed hym mercy/⁊ lõge tyme kneled before yͤ kynges fete. The kynge hadde of hym pyte ⁊ commaunded hym for to aryſe. And for his mekenes forgaue hym his wrath/and to hym ſayd/yͭ yf he treſpaſſed to hym another tyme yͭ he wolde deſtroye hym for euermore. Dauyd yͭ was Lewelyns broder that ſame tyme dwelled wͭ kynge Edwarde/⁊ was a fell mã ⁊ a ſubtyll/⁊ enuyous/⁊ alſo ferre caſtynge ⁊ moche treaſon thought/⁊ euermore made good ſemblaunt/⁊ ſerued ſo true yͭ no man myght perceyue his falſeneſſe.

¶ How Lewelyn thrugh eggyng of his broder Dauyd warred agayne vpõ kynge Edwarde.

IT was not longe after yͤ tyme that kynge Edwarde gaue to Dauyd Lewelyns broder the lordſhyp of Frodeſham/⁊ made hȳ a knyght ⁊ ſomoche honoure dyde he neuer after to man of Wales bycauſe of hym. The kynge helde his parlyament at London whan he had done in Wales that he wolde/and chargyd his money/that was ful yll kyt/wherfore yͤ people playned ſore/ſo yͭ yͤ kynge cau quered of ÿ treſpaſſours. And .iii. C. were atteynted of ſuche maner of falſeneſſe where ſome were hanged ⁊ ſome drawe ⁊ after hanged. And afterwarde ÿ kynge oꝛdeyned/ that ÿ ſterlyng halfpeny ⁊ ferthynge ſholde go thꝛughout al his lande And cōmaunded ÿ no man fro ÿ daye afterwarde gaue ne feoffed hous of relygyon with lande/ tenement wͭoute ſpecyall leue of ÿ kynge/ ⁊ he ÿ dyde ſholde be punyſſhed at ÿ kynges wyll/ ⁊ ÿ gyfte ſhall be foꝛ nought. And it was not longe after that Lewelyn pꝛynce of wales through ÿ excement of Dauyd his bꝛoder/ and bothe theyꝛ conſent/ they thought to diſheryte ÿ kynge in aſmoche as they myght ſoo ÿ through them bothe ÿ kynges peas was broken. And whan kynge Edwarde herde of this/ anone he ſend his barons into Noꝛthumberlāde ⁊ the Murreys alſo ÿ they ſholde goo ⁊ take theyꝛ vyage vpon the traytours Lewelyn ⁊ Dauyd/ ⁊ wōder harde it was foꝛ to warre tho/ foꝛ it is wynter in wales/ whan in other cōtrees is ſomer. And Lewelyn let oꝛdeyne and well araye and vytayll his good caſtell of Swandon/ ⁊ was therin an huge nombꝛe of people/ and plente of vytayles ſo ÿ kynge Edwarde wyſt not where to entre And whan the kynges men it perceyued and alſo ÿ ſtrength of wales/ they let come into ÿ ſee barges ⁊ botes/ and great plākes as many as they myght oꝛdeyne ⁊ haue/ foꝛ to go to ÿ ſayd caſtell of Swāden wͭ men on fote ⁊ alſo on hoꝛs. But ÿ walſhe men had ſomoche people ⁊ were ſo ſtronge ÿ they dꝛoue ÿ Engylſhe men agayne/ ſoo there was ſomoche preſe of people at ÿ tournynge agayne ÿ the charge ⁊ ÿ burden of men made ÿ barges ⁊ ÿ botes to ſynge/ ⁊ there were dꝛowned many a good knyght/ (ÿ is to ſay) ſyꝛ Robert Clyffoꝛde/ ſyꝛ Wyllyam Lendeley ÿ was ſyꝛ Johñs ſone ſyꝛ Rebert/ ⁊ ſyꝛ Rycharde tanny/ ⁊ an huge nōbꝛe of other/ ⁊ all was through theyꝛ owne foly/ foꝛ yf they had had good eſpyes they had not be harmed. Whan kynge Edwarde herde tell ÿ his people were ſo dꝛowned he made ſoꝛowe ynough/ but tho cam ſyꝛ Johā of veſſy frō the kynge of Aragan/ ⁊ bꝛought wͭ hym moche people of bachelers ⁊ of Gaſcoynes ⁊ were ſouldyours/ ⁊ dwelled wͭ Johā of Veſſy/ ⁊ receyued of hym wages ⁊ wͭ hym were wholde/ ⁊ noble men they were foꝛ to fyght ⁊ bꝛente many townes/ ⁊ ſlewe moche people of walſhe men all ÿ they myght take. And all tho wͭ ſtrēgth ⁊ myght made aſſaute vnto the caſtell of Swadon ⁊ gat ÿ caſtell. And whan Dauyd herde of this tydynges he oꝛdeyned hym to flyght/ ⁊ Lewelyn ÿ pꝛynce ſawe that his bꝛoder was fled than he was ſore abaſſhed/ foꝛ he had no power his warre foꝛ to maynteyne. And ſo Lewelyn began foꝛ to flee/ ⁊ wende well foꝛ to haue ſcaped. But in a moꝛowe ſyꝛ Roger moꝛtymer mette wͭ hym onely wͭ ten knyghtes/ ⁊ ſet hȳ roūde aboute/ ⁊ to hȳ went ⁊ ſmote of his heed/ ⁊ pꝛeſented it to kynge Edwarde/ ⁊ in this maner Lewelyn the pꝛynce of wales was taken and his heed ſmytten of/ ⁊ alſo all his heyꝛes dyſheryted foꝛ euermoꝛe through ryghtful dome of all the loꝛdes of the realme.

¶ How Dauyd ÿ was Lewelyns bꝛoder pꝛynce of wales was put to dethe.

Dauyd ÿ pꝛynces bꝛoder of wales through pꝛyde wende to haue be pꝛynce of wales after his bꝛoders dethe ⁊ vpō this he ſende after walſhe men to his parliamēt at Dynbyghe ⁊ folyſſhely made wales to ryſe agaynſte ÿ kynge ⁊ began to meue warre agaynſt kynge Edwarde ⁊ dyde all ÿ ſoꝛowe ⁊ dyſeaſe that he myghte by his power/ whan ÿ kynge

Edwarde herde of this thynge/ he ordeyned hym to purſue vpon hym/ ⁊ Dauyd fyerſly hym defended/ tyll ẏ he came to ẏ towne of ſeynt Morice/ ⁊ there was Dauyd taken as he fled/ ⁊ ladde to ẏ kynge. And the kynge commaunded ẏ he ſholde be hanged ⁊ drawen/ ⁊ ſmyte of his heed ⁊ quarter hym ⁊ ſende his heed to London/ ⁊ the foure quarters ſende to foure chyef townes of Wales/ for they ſholde take enſample therof ⁊ beware. And afterwarde kynge Edwarde let crye his peas through out all Wales/ ⁊ ſeaſed all ẏ lande into his hande. And all ẏ great lordes that were lefte alyue came to do feaute ⁊ homage to kynge Edwarde/ as to theyr kynde lorde. And tho let kynge Edwarde amende ẏ lawes ẏ were defectyues. And he ſende to all ẏ lordes of Wales by letter patentes/ ẏ they ſholde come al to parlyament. And whā they were come ẏ kynge ſayde to them full curteyſly lordynges ye be welcome ⁊ me behoueth your counſeyll and your helpe for to goo into Gaſcoyne for to amende ẏ treſpace that to me was done whan I was there/ ⁊ for to entreat of peas bytwene ẏ kynge of Aragon ⁊ ẏ prynce of Morrey/ ⁊ all the kynges lyege men erles ⁊ barons conſented ⁊ graūted therto. And tho made hym kyng Edwarde redy ⁊ went into Gaſcoyne/ ⁊ let amende all ẏ treſpaces that hym was done in Gaſcoyne. And of ẏ debate that was bytwene ẏ kynge of Aragon ⁊ the prynce of Morrey he ceſſed and made them accorded. And whyle ẏ good kynge Edwarde and Elynore his wyfe were in Gaſcoyne The good Erle of Cornewayle was made wardeyn of Englande tyll that kynge Edwarde came ayene. And tho enquyred he of his traytours ẏ conſented falſeneſſe agaynſt hym. And eche of them all receyued theyr dome after that they had deſerued. But in an meane tyme that ẏ good kynge Edwarde was beyonde the ſee to do them for to make amendes ẏ agaynſt hẏ had treſpaſed/ there was a falſe thefe ⁊ traytour ẏ was called Ryſap Merydok began warre agaynſte kynge Edwarde/ and that was for cauſe of ſyr Payne Typtot wrongfully greued ⁊ dyſeaſed ẏ forſayd Ryſap Merydok. And whan kynge Edwarde herde all this matere ⁊ it well vnderſtode anone he ſende by his letter pryue ſeale to the forſayde rebellyon Ryſap Merydok ẏ he ſholde begynne in noo maner wyſe for to make and reyſe warre but ẏ he ſholde be in peas for his loue/ ⁊ whan he came agayne into Englande he wolde vnder take ẏ quarell ⁊ amende all that was myſdone. This forſayd Ryſap Merydok deſpyſed the kynges cōmaundement/ ⁊ ſpared not to do all ẏ ſorowe ẏ he myght to ẏ kynges men of Englande But anone after he was taken ⁊ ladde to Yorke/ and there he was drawen ⁊ hanged for his felonye.

¶ Of wreſſhynge ẏ kynge Edwarde made of his Juſtices and of his clerkes ẏ they had done for theyr falſneſſe/ ⁊ how he droue the Jewes out of Englande for theyr vſury ⁊ myſbyleue.

As kynge Edwarde had dwelled thre yere in Gaſcoyne a deſyre came to hym for to go into Englande agayne. And whā he was come agayne he foūde ſo many playntes made to hym of his Juſtyces ⁊ of his clerkes/ that had done ſo many wronges ⁊ falſneſſe ẏ wonder it was to here/ and for whiche falſneſſe ſyr Thomas Waylond ẏ kynges Juſtyce forſwore Englande at ẏ Toure of London/ for falſneſſe ẏ men put vpon hym/ wherfore he was atteynte ⁊ proued falſe. And anone after whan ẏ kynge had done his wyll of the Juſtyces tho let he enquere ⁊

eſpye how þ Jewes dyſceyued ⁊ begyled his people through þ ſynne of falſneſſe ⁊ of vſury. And let ordeyne a pryue parlyament ymonge his lordes. And they ordeyned ymonge thē þ all þ Jewes ſholde voyde oute of Englande for theyr myſbyleue and for theyr falſe vſury þ they dyd vnto cryſten men. And for to ſpede ⁊ make an ende of this thynge/ all the comynalte of Englande gaue vnto the kynge þ .xv. peny of all theyr goodes mouable/ ⁊ ſo were the Jewes dryuen out of Englande. And tho went þ Jewes into Fraunce/ ⁊ there they dwelled through leue of kynge Phylyppe that tho was kynge of Fraunce.

¶ How kynge Edwarde was ſeaſed in all the lande of Scotlande/ through conſente ⁊ graūte of all þ lordes of ſcotlande.

IT was not longe after that Alexander kynge of Scotlande was deed ⁊ Dauyd þ erle of Huntyngdon þ was þ kynges broder of Scotlande aroſe ⁊ claymed þ kyngdom of Scotlande after that his broder was deed/ for cauſe þ he was ryghtfull heyre. But many great lordes ſayd nay/ wherfore great debate aroſe bytwene them ⁊ theyr frendes/ for aſmoche as they wolde not conſente to his coronacyon/ ⁊ þ meane tyme þ forſayde Dauyd dyed. And ſo it befell þ þ ſayd Dauyd had thre doughters þ worſhyply were maryed. The fyrſt doughter was maryed to Bayloll/ þ ſecunde to Brus/ ⁊ þ thyrde to Haſtynges. The forſayd Bayloll ⁊ Brus chalenged þ lande of Scotlande/ ⁊ great debate ⁊ ſtryfe aroſe bytwene thē/ bycauſe eche of them wolde haue ben kynge. And whan þ lordes of Scotlande ſawe the debate bytwene thē came to kynge Edwarde of Englande/ ⁊ ſeaſed hȳ in all þ lande of Scotlande as chyef lorde. And whan þ kynge was ſeaſed of þ forſayd lordes the forſayd Bayloll/ Brus/ ⁊ Haſtynges came to þ kynges courte/ ⁊ axed of þ kynge whiche of them ſholde be kynge of Scotlande. And kynge Edwarde that was full gentyll ⁊ true/ let enquyre by the Cronycles of Scotlande/ ⁊ of the greteſt lordes of Scotlande/ whiche of them was of the eldeſt blood. And it was founde þ Bayloll was þ eldeſt/ ⁊ þ þ kynge of Scotlande ſholde holde of the kynge of Englande/ ⁊ do hym ſeruyce ⁊ homage. And after this was done Bayloll wente into Scotlande ⁊ there was crowned kynge of Scotlande. And þ ſame tyme was vpō þ ſee greate warre bytwene þ Englyſſhe men ⁊ the Normans. But on a tyme þ Normās aryued at at Douer/ ⁊ there they martred an holy man that was called Thomas of Douer/ ⁊ afterwarde were þ Normans ſlayne/ þ there eſcaped not one of them.

¶ And ſoo afterwarde kynge Edwarde ſholde loſe þ duche of Gaſcoyne through kynge Phylyp of Fraūce through his falſe callynge of the Douſepers of the lande wherfore ſyr Edmunde þ was kynge Edwardes broder gaue vp his homage vnto þ kynge of Fraūce. ¶ And in þ tyme þ clerkes of Englande graunted to kynge Edwarde halfe deale of holy chyrche goodes in helpynge to recouer all his landes agayne in Gaſcoyne. And þ kynge ſende theder a noble company of his bachelers And hȳ ſelfe wolde haue gone to Portſmouth/ but he was let through one Madok of wales þ had ſeaſed þ caſtell of Swādon into his hande/ ⁊ for þ cauſe þ kynge tourned to wales at cryſtmaſſe/ ⁊ bycauſe þ the noble lordes of Englande þ were ſende into Gaſcoyne hadde no comforte of theyr lorde þ kynge they were take of ſyr Charles of Fraunce/ þ is to ſaye/ ſyr John of Brytayne/ ſyr Robert Typtot/ ſyr Rauſe Tanny/ ſyr Hughe Bardulſe/ and ſyr Adam of Creetynge. And yet at the Aſcenſyon was Madok taken in Wales/ and another whiche was called Morgan and they were ſende to the toure of London and there they were byhedded.

¶ How ſyr Johan Bayloll kynge of Scotlande withſayde his homage.

AND whan ſyr Johā Bayloll kynge of Scotland vnderſtode that kynge Edwarde was warred in Gaſcoyne/ to whom ẏ realme of Scotlande was delyuered/ Falſly tho agaynſt his oth withſayd his homage through procurynge of his folke/ ⁊ ſende vnto the court of Rome through a falſe ſuggeſtyon to be aſſoyled of ẏ othe that he ſwore vnto the kynge of englande/ ⁊ ſo he was by letter enbulled Tho choſe they of Scotlande douſepers for to denymme Edwarde of his ryght.

¶ And in that tyme came two Cardynalles frō Rome fro ẏ pope Celeſtine to trete of accorde bytwene the kynge of Fraunce and ẏ kynge of Englande. And as tho Cardynalles ſpake of accorde. Thomas turbeuyll was taken at Lyons ⁊ made homage to ẏ warde of Parys ⁊ put his ſones in hoſtage/ ⁊ thought to go into Englande to aſpye ẏ coūtre/ ⁊ tell them whā he came to Englande that he had broken the kynges pryſon of Fraūce by nyght ⁊ ſayd that he wolde do that all Englyſſhe men ſholde be aboute the kynge of Fraūce. And this thinge to brȳge to ẏ ende he ſwore/ ⁊ vpō this couenaūt dedes were made bytwene them/ ⁊ ẏ he ſholde haue by yere a thouſande poundes worthe of lande/ to brynge this thynge to an ende. This falſe traytour toke his leue ⁊ went thens ⁊ came into Englande vnto ẏ kynge ⁊ ſayd ẏ he was broken out of pryſon/ ẏ that he had put hym in ſuche perell for his loue/ wherfore ẏ kyng coude hym moche thanke ⁊ full glad was of his commynge. And ẏ falſe traytour fro ẏ day aſpyed all ẏ doynge of ẏ kynge ⁊ alſo of his counſeyle/ for the kynge loued hym full well ⁊ was wt hym ful preuy. But a clerke of Englande ẏ was in ẏ kynges hous of Fraūce herde of this treaſon ⁊ of ẏ falſneſſe/ ⁊ wrote to another clerke ẏ tho was dwellynge wt Edwarde kynge of Englande al how Thomas Turbeuyll had done his falſe coniectynge/ ⁊ all ẏ coūſeyle of Englande was wryten for to haue ſende vnto ẏ kynge of Fraūce. And through ẏ forſayd letter ẏ ẏ clerke had ſend fro Fraūce it was foūde vpō hym/ wherfore he was hanged ⁊ drawen at London for his treaſon. And his .ii. ſones ẏ he had put in hoſtage in Fraunce were than behedded.

¶ Of the conqueſt of Barwyke.

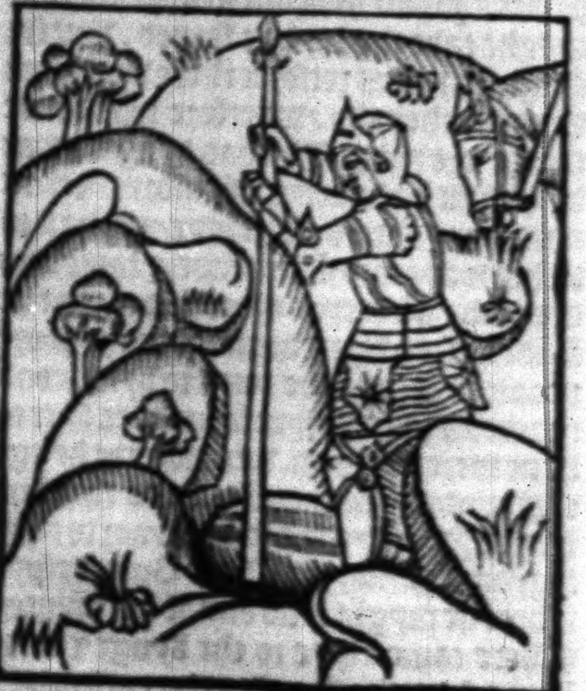
SO whan ẏ two Cardynalles were gone ayen into Fraunce for to trete of ẏ peas of Cambroy ẏ kynge ſend thyder of his erles ⁊ barons. That is to ſay/ ſyr Edmonde his broder erle of Lancaſtre ⁊ of Leyceſtre/ ſyr Henry Lacy erle of Nycholl/ ⁊ Wyllyam Veſſy baron/ ⁊ of other baronettes about .xiii. of the beſt ⁊ wyſeſt of Englande. And in ẏ ſame tyme ẏ kynge Edwarde toke his vyage to Scotlande/ for to warre vpon Johan Bayloll kyng of Scotlande. And ſyr Robert roos of Barwyke fledde fro ẏ Englyſſhe men/ and wente to ẏ Scottes. And kynge Edwarde wente hym towarde Barwyke/ ⁊ beſegyd ẏ towne. And tho that were within manly thē defended ⁊ ſet a fyre ⁊ brente two of kyng Edwarde ſhyppes/ ⁊ ſo ſayd in dyſpyte ⁊ repreue of hym (wenyth kynge Edwarde with his longe ſhankes/ to haue get Barwyke all our vnthankes/ gas pyckes hī/ ⁊ whan he has done gas dykes hym) Whan kynge Edwarde herde this ſcorne/ anone through myghtyneſſe he paſſed ouer ẏ dytches ⁊ aſſayled the towne ⁊ came to ẏ gates ⁊ gate ⁊ con-

quered the towne/ & through his gracyous power.xxv.M.& vii.C.Scottes/ and kynge Edwarde loſt no man of renowne ſauſe ſyr Rycharde of Cornewayle/ & him kylled a Flemynge out of yͤ reed halle wͭ a quarell as the forſayde Rycharde dyde of his helme & cõmaunded them for to yelde them and put them in yͤ kynges grace/ & the Scottes wolde not wherfore yͤ halle was brente & caſt downe/ & all tho yͤ were therin were brent/ & kynge Edwarde loſt no more men at that vyage of ſymple eſtate but.xxvii.englyſſhemen. And the wardeyne of the caſtell gaue vp yͤ keyes of yͤ caſtell wͭout ony aſſaute. And there was taken ſyr wyllyam Dauglas & Symõd Fryſell & yͤ erle patryke yelded them to yͤ peas. But Jugham of Humſreſmyle & Robert Brus yͤ were wͭ kynge Edwarde forſoke kynge Edwarde & helde with the Scottes. And afterwarde they were taken & put into pryſon. And tho let kynge Edwarde cloſe in Barwyke wͭ walles & with dytches/ & after Robert Roᵒ wente to Tyndale/ & ſette wyperbrydge a fyre & Exham/ & Lauerſtoke ſlewe & robbed yͤ folke of yͤ coũtre. And after that he wente fro thens to Dunbarre. And yͤ fyrſt wedneſdaye of Marche the kynge ſend yͤ erle of Garenne/ ſyr Hugh Percy/ & ſyr Hugh Spenſer wͭ a fayre company for to beſyege yͤ caſtell. But one yͤ was called ſyr Rycharde ſywarde a traytour & a falſe man ymagyned for to begyle yͤ englyſſhemen And ſend to the englyſſhemen them for to dyſceyue & ſayd yͤ he wolde yelde to them the caſtell yf they wolde graũte hym.viii. dayes of reſpyte that he myghte ſende & tell to ſyr Johan Bayloll that was kynge of Scotlande/ how his men fared yͤ were within the caſtell. And ſende hym worde but yf he wolde remeue the ſyege of yͤ englyſſhemen/ that they wolde yelde the caſtell vnto the englyſſhemen. ¶ The meſſanger tho came vnto ſyre Bayloll whyche tho was kynge of Scotlande where that he was with his hoſt/ and the meſſanger tolde hym all the caſe. And ſyr Johan dyde gadre a great power of men and came in the morowe erly towarde the caſtell/ and ſyre Rycharde Sywarde ſawe hym come that was mayſter of the counſell & keper of the caſtell and ſayde vnto the englyſſhemen in this maner that enſueth. Now I ſe a fayre company & well apparyled I wyll go agaynſt them and with them to mete/ and them aſſayle. And ſyr Hugh Spenſer ſawe the falſneſſe of hym and yͤ treaſon/ and ſayde to hym. O traytour taken & proued your falſeneſſe ſhall not auayle you. And Hugh Spenſer cõmaunded anone to bynde hym/ and in all haſt went agaynſt theyr ennemyes/ & ſlewe of the Scottes the nombre of.xxii.M. For yͤ Scottes hadde that tyme no man with them of honour ſauſe onely Patryk Graham that manly foughte and longe and at the laſte he was ſlayne. And than ſayde the englyſſhemen in reprefe of the Scottes ¶ These ſkaterande Scottes holde I for ſottes of wrenches vnware.
Erly in a mornynge in an euyll tymynge went ye fro Dunbarre. And as thoſe that were within ſawe yͤ ſcomfyture they yelded vp the caſtell vnto the englyſſhemen and bounde theyr bodyes godes and caſtels to kynge Edwarde. And ſo there were taken in that caſtell thre erles.vii. barons/ and.xxxviii.knyghtes/ and.xi.clerkes/ and.viii.Pycardes/ & all were preſented to kynge Edwarde. And he ſende thẽ to the towre of London to be kepte.

¶ How kynge Edwarde of his great grace delyuered agayne the Scottes oute of Pryſon that were cheftayns of the lande/ and they drewe them to the Frenſſhemen through counſeyle of wyllyã waleys.

Whan kynge Edwarde had made an ende of the warre / ⁊ taken the cheyſtayns of Scotlande. Than came ſyr Johan Bayliol with other ⁊ put hym into the kynges mercy / which ſend them to London / ⁊ there made them ſwere to be true to hym / yͭ is to ſay ſyr Johã of Comyn / yͤ erle of Straphorn / yͤ erle of Carryk / ⁊ alſo foure byſſhops for all yͤ clergye / ⁊ ſo the kynge delyuered them free into theyr land / And it was not longe afterwarde but that they roſe agaynſte hȳ bycauſe they knewe wel yͭ kynge Edwards ſone was taken in Gaſcoyne / as before is ſayd. But ſyr Johã Bayloll kynge of ſcotlande fledde to his owne land ⁊ there helde hym for fere of Edwarde. wherfore the ſcottes choſe to theyr kynge wyllyam waleys / a rybaude and a harlot comen vp of nought / ⁊ he dyd moche harme to the Englyſſhmẽ. Kynge Edward thought how he myght delyuer his men in Gaſcoyn / ⁊ in haſt went into Flaundres for to warre on the kynge of Frãce / where he was receyued honourably / grauntynge hym al his landes at his wyll. For fere wherof yͤ kynge of Frãce prayed hym of two yere treewes / ⁊ he ſholde delyuer all his men in Gaſcoyne / yͤ whiche kynge Edwarde grãted hym. ¶ And in the ſame tyme yͤ Scottes ſend by the byſſhop of ſeynt Andrewes into Frãce to the kynge / ⁊ to ſyr Charles his broder / yͭ ſyr Charles ſholde come with his power / ⁊ they of Scotlande wold come with theyr power / ⁊ ſo they ſholde go into Englande ⁊ deſtroye it vnto Kent. And the Scottes truſted moche vnto the Frenſſhmen. But of that thynge they had no maner of graunt. Yet neuertheles the Scottes began to robbe ⁊ kyll in Northumberlande / and dyd moche domage and hurte.

¶ How wyllyam waleys let reyſe yͤ lande of Scotlande as cheyfe lorde. And ſyr Hugh of Creſſyngham / ⁊ of the batayl of Fonkyrke / where wyllyam waleys fled / and hyd hym.



As tydynges came too kynge Edwarde yͭ wyllyam waleys had ordeyned ſuche a power And yͭ all Scotlande to hym was attendaunt / ⁊ redy for to ſlee Englyſſhmen / ⁊ to deſtroye the land he was ſore anoyed / ⁊ ſende anone by letters to the Erle of Garenne / to ſyr Henry Percy / and to wyllyam Latomer / ⁊ to ſyr Hugh of Creſſȳgham his treſorer yͭ they ſholde take power / ⁊ goo into Northumberlande / ⁊ ſo forth into Scotlande for to kepe yͤ coũtrees / and whan wyllyam waleys herde of theyr comynge / he began to flee / ⁊ the Englyſſhmẽ hym folowed and droue hym tyll he came to Werpuelyn / ⁊ there he helde hym in yͤ caſtell. ¶ And yͤ walſſhemen euery day them eſcryed and menaced / and dydde all the dyſpyte that they myght / ſoo that the Englyſſhemen vpon a tyme in a mornynge went out fro the caſtell the moūtenaunce of .x. myle / ⁊ paſſed ouer a brydge. And wyllyam walleys came with a ſtronge power / ⁊ droue them aback / for the Englyſſhmen had no power agaynſt hym but fled / ⁊ they that myght take the brydge ſcaped. But ſyr Hugh ẏ kynges treſorer there was ſlayn ⁊ many other alſo / wherfore was made moche ſorowe. ¶ Thā had kyng Edwarde ſped all his maters ī Flaūdres / ⁊ was come agayne into Englande / ⁊ in haſt toke his waye into Scotlande / ⁊ came thyder at the Aſcencyon tyde. And al that he fonde he ſet a fyre ⁊ brent. But the poore people of Scotlande came to hym wonder thycke / ⁊ prayed hym for goddes loue to haue mercy on them. Wherfore the kynge cōmaunded ẏ no man ſholde do them no harme ẏ were yelded to hym / nor to no relygyous mā / nor chyrches. But let eſpye where he myght fynd ony of his enmies. There came a ſpye to the kynge ⁊ tolde hym where the Scottes were aſſembled to abyde batayll. And ſo on ſeynt Mary magdaleyns daye ẏ kynge came to Fonekyrk ⁊ gaue batayll to ẏ Scottes / ⁊ at ẏ batayll was ſlayne .xxx. M. ſcottes. And of Englyſſhmen .xviii. ⁊ no mo. Of ẏ whiche was a worthy knyght ſlayne / an hoſpytalere ẏ was called Frere bryan Iay For whan wyllyam wales fledde from ẏ batayl / ẏ ſame bryā hym purſued fierſly And as his hors came he ſterte ī a myre of a marys vp to the bely. And wyllyam waleys tourned tho agayn / ⁊ there ſlewe ſyr Bryan / and that was moche harme. ¶ And that whyle kynge Edwarde wēte thrughe Scotlande for to inquere yf he myght fynde ony his enmyes. And in ẏ lande he dwelled as longe as hym lyked. And there was no enmye that durſt hym abyde. And ſoone after ẏ kynge Edward went to Southampton / for he wolde not abyde in Scotland in wynter ſeaſon / for eſement of his people. And whan he cam to London / he lette amende many myſdedes that were done agaȳſt his peas ⁊ lawes he beynge in Flaundres.

¶ Of the laſt maryage of kynge Edwarde / and how he went the thyrd tyme into Scotlande.

IT was ordeyned after through the court of Rome / that kynge Edwarde ſholde wedde dame Margarete / that was kynge Phylyps ſyſter of Fraunce. And ẏ Archebyſſhop Robert of wynchelſe / ſpouſed thē togyders / through ẏ whiche maryage ther was made peas bytwene kynge Edwarde of Englande ⁊ kynge Phylyp of Fraunce. ¶ Kynge Edwarde went than ẏ thyrde tyme into Scotland And than within ẏ fyrſte yere he enſampled the land / ſo that he lefte not one that he ne came to his mercy / ſauſe ſuche as were in ẏ caſtel of Eſtreuelyn / ẏ wel were bytayled ⁊ ſtored for .vii. yere.

¶ How the caſtell of Eſtreuelyn was beſyeged and wonne.

KYnge Edwarde came to the caſtell of Eſtreuelyn w̄ a huge power / ⁊ beſyeged the caſtell / but it lytell auayled. For he myght do the Scottes no harme / the caſtell was ſo ſtronge and well kepte. Whan kynge Edwarde ſawe that he bethought hym on a quayntyſe / and cauſed anone to make two payre of hye galowes before the toure of the caſtell / ⁊ made his othe that as many as were within ẏ caſtell / not withſtandynge were he Erle or Baron and he were taken with ſtrength but yf he wolde the rather hym yelde / he ſholde be hanged vpō the ſame galowes And whan that they that were within ẏ caſtell herde this / they came ⁊ yelded the all to the kynges grace and mercy / ⁊ the kynge forgaue them all his yll wyll. And there were all ẏ great lordes of ſcotlande ſwore to kynge Edwarde ẏ they ſholde come to London to euery parlyament / ⁊ ſholde ſtande to his ordynaunce.

¶ How Troylebaſton was fyrſt ordeyned

KYnge Edwarde went thens to London / ⁊ wende to haue had reſt and peas of his warre / in ẏ whiche warre he was occupyed. xx. yere / ẏ is to ſay in Gaſcoyne / in Wales / ⁊ in Scotlande / ⁊ compounded in his mynde how he myght recouer his treaſoure that he had ſpended a warfare. And let enquyre through the realme of all the tyme ẏ he had be out of his realme ẏ men called Troylebaſtõ ⁊ ordeyned therto Juſtices / ⁊ in this manere he recouered treaſoure wtoute nombre / ⁊ his purpoſe was for to haue gone in to ẏ holy lande / to haue warred vpõ goddes enemyes / bycauſe he was croſſed long tyme before. And neuertheles the lawe that he had ordeyned dyde moch good through out al Englande / to them ẏ were myſdoers. For thoſe ẏ treſpaſſed were well chaſtyſed / ⁊ after more meke ⁊ better / ⁊ the comyns were in reſt ⁊ peas. And the ſame tyme kyng Edwarde pryſoned his owne ſone Edwarde / bycauſe ẏ byſſhop of Cheſtre ẏ kynges treſorer had complayned on hym / ſayenge ẏ he through entyſement of a ſquyer called Gauaſton of Gaſcoyne / had broken his parkes. And this ſquyer led ⁊ counſaylled the ſame Edwarde to do it / ⁊ for ẏ cauſe the kynge exyled his ſone out of Englande.

¶ Of the deth of wyllyam waleys ẏ fals traytour.

ANd whan this kynge Edwarde / hadde his enemyes ouercome in Wales / Gaſcoyne and Scotlande / ⁊ deſtroyed his traytours / ſaue onely ẏ rybaude wyllyam waleys / ẏ neuer wolde yelde hym to the kynge / was taken in the towne of ſeynt Domynyck / the. xxxiii. yere of kyng Edwardes reygne / and brought to kynge Edwarde / but he wolde not ſe hym but ſende hym to London to receyue his Judgement. And vpon ſeynt Bartylmewes euen he was hanged ⁊ drawen / and his heed ſmytte of / ⁊ his bowels take out of his body ⁊ brent / ⁊ his body quartred ⁊ ſend to foure chefe townes of Scotland ⁊ his heed put vpon a ſpere ⁊ ſet vpon London brydge / in enſample that ẏ Scottes ſholde haue in mynde for to doo amyſſe agaynſt theyr lyege lorde eftſones.

¶ How the Scottes came to kynge Edwarde for to amende theyr treſpaſſe that they had done agaynſt hym.

THan at Myghelmas next enſewynge kynge Edwarde helde his parlyament at weſtmynſter / ⁊ thyder came the Scottes / ẏ is to ſay ẏ biſſhop of ſeynt Andrewes. Robert ẏ Brus Erle of Caryk Symonde Fryſell. Johñ ẏ erle of Athell ⁊ they were accorded with ẏ kynge / ⁊ by othes ſworne ẏ yf ony of them afterward myſbare them agaynſt hym they ſholde be deſheryted for euermore / ⁊ whã theyr peas was thus made they toke theyr leue pryuely / ⁊ went home into Scotlande.

¶ How Robert Brus chalenged Scotlande.

SO after this Robert the Brus Erle of Caryk ſend by his letters vnto all the erles and barons of Scotlande that they ſholde come to hym to Scone / in haſt on the morowe after the Concepcyon of our lady for grete nede of ẏ lande

And the lordes came at the day aſſygned And the ſame daye ſyr Roberte the Brus ſayd fayre lordes full well ye knowe / yͭ in my perſon dwelleth the ryght of the realme of Scotlande. And as ye wote well I am ryghtful heyre / ſyth yͭ ſyr Johā Bayloll that was our kynge he hath forſake ⁊ left his lande. And though it ſo be that kynge Edwarde of Englande wͭ wrongfull power hath made me to hym aſſent agaynſt my wyll / yf yͭ ye wyll graunt yͭ I may be kynge of Scotlande I ſhall kepe you agaynſt kynge Edward of England ⁊ agaynſt all maner men. And with that worde the abbot of Scon aroſe vp ⁊ before them all ſayd yͭ it was reaſon for to helpe hym ⁊ the lande beſyde / ⁊ ſayd he wolde gyue hym a .M. pounde for to maynteyne yͤ lande / And all the other graunted hym the lande / ⁊ with theyr power hym for to helpe. And defyed kynge Edwarde of Englande / ⁊ ſayd yͭ Robert Brus ſhold be kynge of Englande.

¶ How ſyr Johan of Comyn agaynſayd the crownynge of ſyr Robert Brus.

LOrdynges ſayd ſyr Johan of Comyn / thynke on yͤ trouthe ⁊ othe ye made to kynge Edwarde of Englande ⁊ touchyng my ſelf I wyll not breke myn othe for no man / ⁊ ſo he went from them. Wherfore Robert Brus ⁊ all tho yͭ to hym conſented were yll content with ſyr Johā of Comyn / Than ordeyned they another coūſayl at Dumfrys / to whiche came the forſayd ſyr Johan of comyn / for he dwelled but two myle fro Dumfrys / ther he was wont to ſoiourne and abyde.

¶ How ſyr Johā was traytouſly ſlayn.

SO whan Robert the Brus wyſt yͭ all the greate lordes were come of Scotlande to Dumfreys ſaue ſyr Johan comyn yͭ ſoiourned tho nygh Scon he ſend ſpecyally after yͭ ſayd ſyr Johan to come and ſpeke with hym. And vpō that he came ⁊ ſpake with hym at the graye freres in Dumfris / ⁊ that was the thurſday after Candelmes day. And ſyr Johā graūted to go with hym. And whā he had herde maſſe / he toke a ſoppe ⁊ dranke ⁊ afterwarde he beſtrode his palfraye ⁊ rode to Dumfreys. Whan Robert the Brus ſaw hym come at a wyndow as he was in his chambre he made ioy ynough / ⁊ came agaynſt hym / ⁊ colled hym aboute yͤ necke and made with hym good ſemblaūt. And whan all the erles ⁊ barons of Scotland were there preſent Robert the Brus ſayd ſyrs ye wote well the cauſe of this comynge / ⁊ wherfore it is / yf ye wyl graunt yͭ I be kynge of Scotlande as ryght heyre of the lande. And all the lordes yͭ were there ſayd wͭ one voyce yͭ he ſholde be crowned kynge of Scotlāde / ⁊ yͭ they wolde hym helpe ⁊ maynteyn agaynſt all men lyuynge ⁊ dyeng for hym yf nede were. The gētyll knyght Johā of Comyn anſwerde / certes neuer for me / nor for to haue alſo the helpe of me as the value of a button / for that othe yͭ I haue made vnto kynge Edwarde of Englande I ſhal holde whyle my lyf laſteth. And with that worde he went from the company ⁊ wolde haue alyght vpon his palfray. And Robert the Brus purſued hym with a drawen ſwerde / ⁊ perced hym though the body ⁊ ſyr Johā comyn fel downe vnto yͤ erthe / but whan Roger ſyr Johā comyns brod ſaw the falſnes / he ſterte to ſyr Robert yͤ brus ⁊ ſmote hym wͭ a knyfe / but the traytour was armed vnder / ſo yͭ the ſtroke myght do hym no harme. And ſomoche helpe came aboute ſyr Robert Brus yͭ Robert Comyn was there ſlayn ⁊ hewed into peces And Robert yͤ Brus tourned agayne therte as ſyr Johan Comyn the noble baron lay wounded to dethe befoꝛe the hye aulter in ẏ gray freres/ ⁊ in ſaynge traytour thou ſhall neuer after let myne auauncement he ſmote his braynes out of his hede ſleynge all aboute the walles/ whiche is yet ſene there ẏ no water can waſſhe away. And ſo deyed that noble knyght in holy chirche. ¶ Whan this traytour Robert the Bꝛus ſawe ẏ no man wolde lette his coronacyon/ he cõmaunded all ẏ barons to be at ſeynt Johans towne at his coronacion. And on the Annũcyacyon of oure lady ẏ byſſhop of Glaſton/ ⁊ of ſeynt Andꝛewes crowned hym kynge. And anone after he dꝛoue all the Englyſſhmen/ out of Scotlande. And they fled ⁊ came ⁊ complayned them vnto kynge Edwarde how ẏ robert Bꝛus had dꝛyuen them out of the lande/ and deſherytted them.

¶ How that kynge Edwarde dubbed at Weſtmynſter.xxiiij.ſcoꝛe knyghtes.

AND whan kynge Edwarde herde of this myſchef/ he ſwoꝛe that he wolde be auẽged therof/ ⁊ hange ⁊ dꝛaw all the traytours of Scotlande without raunſome. ¶ Than kynge Edwarde ſend after all the bachelers of Englande. And at Whytſontyde he dubbyd at Weſtmynſter.xxiiij.ſcoꝛe knyghtes. ¶ Thã oꝛdeyned he foꝛ to go into Scotlande agaynſte Robert the Bꝛus/ ⁊ ſend befoꝛe hym into Scotlande ſyꝛ Aymer the valyaũt erle of Penbꝛoke. And ſyꝛ Henry Percy Baron/ with a fayꝛe company ẏ purſued ẏ Scottes ⁊ bꝛent townes ⁊ Caſtelles/ and afterwarde came the kynge hym ſelfe wͭ erles and barons a fayꝛe company.

¶ How Roberte Bꝛus was dyſcomfyted in batayll/ ⁊ how Symonde Fryſell was ſlayne.

THe frydaye next befoꝛe the Aſſũpcion of our lady kyng Edward met Robert Bꝛus beſyde ſeynt Johans towne in Scotlande ⁊ with his company/ of whiche company kynge Edwarde ſlewe vii.M. Whã Robert Bꝛus ſaw this myſcheyf he began to flee/ ⁊ hyd hym ſecretly And ſyꝛ Symonde Fryſell was ſoꝛe purſued ſo ẏ he tourned agaỹ ⁊ abode batayl foꝛ he was a woꝛthy knyght/ but our Englyſſhmen ſlewe his hoꝛs ⁊ toke hym/ and ledde hym to kynge Edwarde/ but oꝛ he came to him he begã to flatre his takers pꝛomyſyng them foure.M. marke of ſyluer/ his hoꝛs/ ⁊ all his harneys/ ⁊ to become a begger. Tho anſwered Theobaude of Peuenes that was the kỹges archer. Now ſo god me helpe it is foꝛ nought ẏ thou ſpekeſt/ foꝛ all ẏ golde in Englande I wolde not let the go wͭout cõmaundement of kyng Edwarde/ the whiche wolde not ſe hym/ but cõmaũded to lede him to London to haue his dome. And on our ladyes eue the Natiuite he was hanged ⁊ dꝛawen/ his heed ſmyten of/ ⁊ hanged agayne with chaynes of yꝛon vpon ẏ galowes. And his heed was ſet vpon London bꝛidge on a ſpere/ ⁊ agaynſt Cryſtmas the body was bꝛente bycauſe that ẏ men ẏ kepte the body by nyght ſawe ſo many deuylles about hym tourmẽtynge hym with yꝛon hokes vpon the galowes And many ẏ them ſawe anone after dyed foꝛ dꝛede/ ⁊ ſome wexed mad/ oꝛ ſoꝛe ſekenes they had. And in ẏ batayl was taken ẏ byſſhop of Baſton ⁊ of ſeynt Andꝛewes ⁊ the abbot of Sconne all armed/ as falſe traytours ⁊ falſe pꝛelates agaynſt theyꝛ othes. And they were bꝛought to the kynge/ ⁊ the kynge ſend them vnto the pope of Rome/ that he wolde do with them his pleaſure.

* * *

¶How Johā Erle of Atheles was takē and put to dethe.

SYr Johan erle of Atheles fled at yͤ bataylle & wēt to a chirche/ & there hydde hym for drede/ but he myght haue there no refute/ for cauſe that the chirche was interdyted through a generall ſentēce. And in the ſame chirche he was taken for all he thought well to haue ſcaped frō the dethe/ bycauſe he claymed kynred of kynge Edwarde. But the kynge wold no lōger be bytrayed by his traytours/ but ſende hym to Londō in haſt/ & there was hanged & his heed ſmytte of/ & his body brent. But at the prayer of yͤ quene Margarete/ for cauſe that he claymed kynred of kynge Edwarde/ his drawynge was forgyue hym.

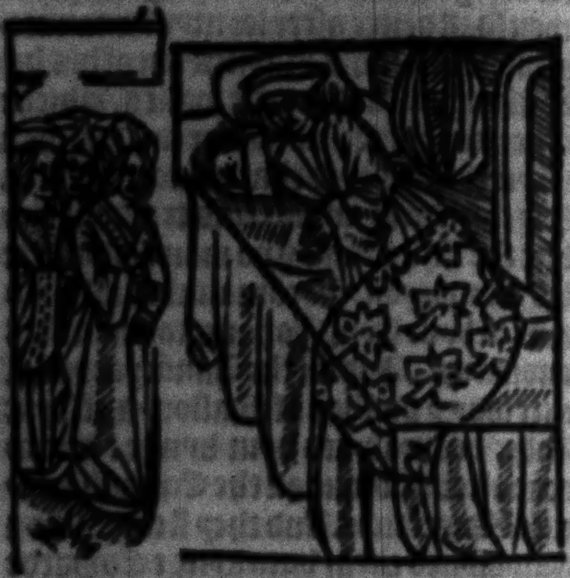
¶How Johan yͭ was wyllyam waleys broder was put to dethe.

THus as yͤ great mayſters of Scotlande were done to euyll deth for theyr treaſon. Johan yͭ was wyllyā waleys broder was take & done vnto dethe/ as ſyr Johan Erle of Atheles was.

¶How Robert yͤ Brus fledde frome Scotlande to Norwaye.

ROberte the Brus at yͤ ſame tyme was moche hated amonge yͤ people of Scotlande/ ſo yͭ he wyſte not what he was beſte to doo/ & for to hyde hym he went to Norway to yͤ kynge yͭ had ſpouſed his ſyſter/ & there helde hym for to haue ſocoure. And Robert Brus myght not be founde in Scotlande. So kynge Edwarde than lette cry his peas throughout all yͤ lande/ & his lawes were vſed/ & his mynyſtres ſerued throughout al yͤ land.

¶How kynge Edwarde deyed.



WHan kyng Edwarde had abated the pryde of his enmyes/ he retorned ſouthwarde/ and ſykened at Burgh vpon ſande in the marche of Scotlande/ & called to hym Henry Lacy erle of Nycholl/ ſyr Guy Erle of Warwyk. Syr Aylmer Erle of Penbroke/ & ſyr Roberte of Clyfford Baron & prayed them vpon yͤ fayth yͭ they ought hym/ yͭ they ſhold make Edwarde of Carnaruan kynge of Englande ſhortly/ not ſuffrynge Peers Gauaſton to come agayne into this lande/ for makynge of his ſone ryotous/ & they graūted it hym wͭ a good wyll. And than he toke the ſacramētes of holy chirche/ & deyed in repētaūce whā he had reygned .xxxv. yere. And was buryed at weſtmynſter with great ſolempnyte. Upon whoſe ſoule god haue mercy.

¶Of Merlyns propheſyes that were declared of kynge Edwarde that was kyng Henryes ſone.

MErlyn propheſyed of this kynge Edwarde/ and called hym a dragon the .ii. of the .vi. kynges that ſholde reygne in Englande ⁊ ſayd ẏ he ſholde be medled with mercy / ⁊ alſo wᵗ ſtrength ⁊ ſterneſſe that ſholde kepe Englande frō colde and hete. And ẏ he ſholde open his mouth towarde wales ⁊ ẏ he ſholde ſette his fote in Twyde / ⁊ ẏ he ſholde cloſe with walles that he ſholde do moche harme to his ſede. And he ſayde ſothe / for the good kynge Edwarde was medled wᵗ mercy ⁊ with ſterneſſe / wᵗ mercy agaynſt his enemyes of wales / ⁊ after of Scotlande with ſterneſſe whā he put them to dethe for theyr falſeneſſe ⁊ traytcrouſly as they had deſerued. And well keped he Englande frō colde ⁊ hete / ſyth he kepte it frō all maner of enemyes that came vpon hym to do hym ony wronge. And he dyde well open his mouthe towarde wales ⁊ made it quake through the vyrtue of his mouthe whan he conquered it through vyrtue of ſwerde. For ẏ prynce Lewelyn ⁊ Dauyd his broder. Rys and Morgā were put to deth through theyr falſeneſſe ⁊ theyr foly And he ſet his fote in Twyde / ⁊ conquered Barwyke / at ẏ whiche cōqueſt were ſlayne .xxv. M. ⁊ .vii. C. out take ſuche as were brent in the reed halle. And ẏ walles ẏ he lete make ſhalbe noyous vnto his ſede as men ſhall here after in ẏ lyfe of ſyr Edwarde of Carnarvan his ſone. And Merlyn yet ſayd ẏ he ſholde make ryuers ren in blode ⁊ wᵗ brayne ⁊ that ſemed well in his warres there as he had ẏ mayſtry. ⁊ yet Merlyn ſayd that there wolde come a people oute of the Northweſt durynge the reygne of the forſayd dragon ẏ ſholde be lad by an yll greyhounde ẏ ſholde ẏ dragon crowne kynge / ẏ afterwarde ſholde flee ouer ẏ ſee for drede of ẏ dragon woute comynge agayne / ⁊ ẏ was proued by ſyr Johan Bayloll ẏ kynge Edwarde made to be kynge of Scotlande / ẏ falſely aroſe agaynſt hym / ⁊ after he fled to his owne landes of Fraunce / ⁊ neuer he came agayn into Scotlande for drede of kynge Edwarde / ⁊ yet ſayd Merlyn ẏ people that ſholde lede ẏ ſayd greyhounde ſholde be faderleſſe vnto a certayne tyme ſoth he ſayd For ẏ people of Scotlande greatly were dyſeaſed after ſyr Johñ Baylol was fled And Merlyn ſayde the ſonne ſholde become in his tyme as reed as ony blode in tokenynge of great mortalyte of people / ⁊ that was knowen well whan ẏ Scottes were ſlayn. And Merlyn ſayd that ſame dragon ſholde nouryſſhe a Foxe that ſholde meue great warre ayenſt hȳ that ſholde in his tyme be ended ⁊ that ſemed well by Robert ẏ Brus / that kynge Edwarde nouryſſhed in his chābre that ſythen ſtale away and meued great warre agaynſt hȳ / whiche warre was not ended in his tyme. And yet ſayd Merlyn that ẏ dragō ſholde dye in ẏ marche of another lande and that his lande ſholde be longe woute a good keper / ⁊ that men ſholde wepe for his deth frō ẏ yle of Shephey vnto ẏ yle of Mercyll / wherfore alas ſhall be theyr ſonge ynlōge ẏ comyn people faderles in the lande waſted / ⁊ ẏ prophecy was knowen ouer all full well. For ẏ good kynge Edwarde dyed at Burgh vp landes that is vpō the Marche of Scotlande wher ẏ Englyſſhe mē were dyſcōfyted in Northumberlande / for cauſe that kynge Edwardes ſone ſette by ẏ ſcottes no force for the ryot of Pyers of Gauaſton / wherfore alas was ẏ ſonge throughout all Englande / for defaute of theyr good wardeyne / frō ẏ yle of Shephey vnto ẏ yle of Marcyll ẏ peple made moche ſorowe for good kynge Edwardes deth. For they wende that kynge edwarde ſholde haue gone in to the holy lande / for that was holy his purpoſe. Upon whoſe ſoule god for his hyghe and Infynyte grace haue mercy.

¶ Anno dñi. M.CC.lxxxiiii.

Celeſtinus was pope after Nicholas .v. monethes / ⁊ nothynge noble of hym is wryten / but that he was a vertuous man. ¶ Bonifacꝰ ẏ .viii. was pope after hym .viii. yeres. And he was a man in thoſe thynges the whiche perteyneth to court / for he was very experte in ſuche maters. And bycauſe he had no pere / he putte noo meſure to his prudence / ⁊ toke ſo great pryde upon hym ẏ he ſayd / he was lorde of all the worlde / ⁊ many thynges he dyd wt his myght ⁊ power / ẏ whiche fayled wretchydly in ẏ ende. He gaue an enſample to all prelates ẏ they ſholde not be haute ne proude / but under the fourme of a very ſhepherde of god they ſholde more ſtudy for to be loued of theyr ſubiectes than dradde. ¶ This man is he of whome it is ſayd / ẏ he entred as a fox / he lyued as a lyon / and dyed as a dogge. ¶ This tyme the yere of grace was ordeyned frō an .C. yere to an .C. yere. And the fyrſt Jubyle was in the yere of our lorde a. M. iii. C. ¶ Benedictus the .xi. was after bonifacꝰ .xi. monethes / this mā was an holy man of the ordre of the frere prechers and lytell whyle lyued / but dyſceſſed anone.

Adulphus was Emperour .vi. yeres / this man was ẏ Erle of Anoſone. And this Adulphus was not crowned by the pope / for he was ſlayn ī batayl. ¶ Albertꝰ was Emperour after hym .x. yere. This man was the duke of Oſtrye / and fyrſt was repreued of ẏ pope / ⁊ after was cōfyrmed by the ſame pope for ẏ malyces of the kynge of Fraunce / ẏ whiche was an enemy of ẏ chyrche. And to that Alberte ẏ ſame pope gaue the kyngdome of Fraunce / as he dyd other kyngdomes but it profyted not / for at the laſt he was ſlayne of his neuewe. ¶ Clemēs was pope after Benedictus almoſt .ix. yere / ⁊ he was a great buylder of caſtels and other thynges. And he dāpned ẏ ordre of Templaryes / ⁊ he ordeyned the .vii. boke of decretales / ẏ whiche be called the queſtyōs of Clemētyns. And anone after in a counſell ẏ whiche he helde at Vyenna he reuoked ẏ ſame boke ẏ whiche his ſucceſſary Johñ called ayen and incorpored it ⁊ publyſſhed it. This Clement fyrſt of all ẏ popes tranſlated ẏ popes ſete fro Rome to Auinion / ⁊ whyther it was done by ẏ mocion of god / or by the boldeneſſe of mā / dyuerſe men merueyl. ¶ Johñ ẏ .xxii. was pope after hym .viii. yere. This mā was all glorious / as for thoſe thynges that were to be uſed through ẏ actyf lyfe. And he publyſſhed ẏ Conſtytucyons of the Clementyns / ⁊ ſende them al to the unyuerſytes. And many ſeyntes he canonyſed ⁊ the fatte byſſhopryches he deuyded / ⁊ he ordeyned many thynges agaynſte ẏ pluralyte of benefyces / ⁊ many heretykes he dāpned / but whether he was ſaued or not our lorde god wolde not ſhewe to thoſe he loued very well. ¶ Henry the .vii. was Emperour after Albert .v. yere / he was a noble mā in werre / ⁊ he coueyted to haue peas by lande ⁊ water. He was a glorious man in batayll ⁊ neuer ouercome with enemyes. And at ẏ laſt he was poyſoned of a frere whan ẏ he houſeled hym by receyuynge of ẏ ſacrament.

¶ Of kynge Edwarde that was kynge Edwardes ſone.

And after this kynge Edwarde reygned Edwarde his ſone / that was borne at Carnaruan. And this Edwarde went into Fraūce ⁊ there he ſpouſed Iſabell ẏ kynges doughter of Fraūce ẏ .xxv. day of January at ẏ chyrche of our Lady at Boleyne in the yere of oure lorde Jheſu Cryſte .M.CCC. ⁊ .viii. And the .xx. daye of Februarye ŷ next yere that came after he was crowned ſolempnly at weſtmynſter of ŷ archebyſſhop of Caunterbury. And there was ſo great preſſe of people ŷ ſyr Johñ Bakwel was ſlayne ⁊ murdred. And anone as the good kynge Edwarde was deed / ſyr Edwarde his ſone kynge of Englande ſende after Pyers Ganaſton into Gaſcoyne / ŷ ſomoche he loued hym ŷ he called hỹ brother. And anone after he gaue vnto hỹ the lordſhyp of Wallyngforde / ⁊ after ŷ he gaue hỹ therledom of Cornewayle agaynſt all ŷ lordes wyll of Englande. And tho broughte ſyr Water of langeton ŷ byſſhop of Cheſtre into pryſon / ⁊ duraunce into the toure of London wͭ two knaues alonely wͭ hỹ to ſerue. For ŷ kynge was wrothe wͭ hỹ / for bycauſe ŷ ſyr Watre made cōplaynt on hym to his fader / wherfore he was put in pryſon in ŷ tyme of Troylebaſton / ⁊ the forſayd Pyers of Ganaſton made ſo greate maiſtryes that he went into the kynges treſory in ŷ abbay of weſtmynſter ⁊ toke ŷ table of golde wͭ ŷ treſtyls of ŷ ſame / ⁊ many other ryche Iowels ŷ ſomtyme were kynge Arthurs / ⁊ toke them to a marchaūt ŷ was called Ameri of Friſcobande / for he ſholde bere them ouer the ſee into Gaſcoyne / ⁊ ſo he went thens ⁊ came neuer agayne after / whiche was a great loſſe to this lande. And whan this Pyers was ſo rychely auaunſyd he became ſoo proude wherfore all ŷ great lordes of the realme had hym in deſpyte for his great beryng / wherfore ſyr Henry Lacy erle of Nicholl / and ſyr Guy erle of warwyke ŷ whiche great lordes / the good kynge Edwarde ſyr Edwardes fader kynge of Englande charged that Pyers of Ganaſton ſholde not come into Englande for to brynge his ſone Edwarde into ryot. And all the lordes of Englande aſſembled he in a certayne day at ŷ freres prechers at London ⁊ there they ſpake of the dyſhonoure that kynge Edwarde dyde to his realme and to his crowne ⁊ ſo they aſſented all / bothe erles ⁊ barons ⁊ all ŷ comyns that the forſayd Pyers of Ganaſton ſholde be exyled out of Englāde for euermore / and ſo it was done / for he forſwore Englande and went into Irlande / ⁊ there ŷ kynge made hym chiefteyne ⁊ gouernoure of ŷ lande by his commyſſyon. And there this Pyers was chiefteyne of all the lande / ⁊ dyd there all that hym lyked ⁊ hadde power to do what he wolde ⁊ that tyme were ŷ templers exyled through all criſtiante / for bycauſe that men put vpō theym ŷ they ſholde do thynges agaynſt ŷ feythe and good byleue. Kynge Edward loued Piers of Ganaſton / ſomoche ŷ he myght not forbere his companye. And ſomoche the kynge gaue ⁊ behyght the people of Englande that the exylynge of ŷ forſayde Pyers ſholde be reuoked at Stamforde through them that hym had exyled. wherfore Pyers of Ganaſton came agayne into Englande. And whan he was come agayne into this lande he dyſpyſed ŷ greateſt lordes of this lande. And called ſyr Roberte Clare erle of Glouceſtre horeſone. And ŷ erle of Nychol ſyr Henry Lacy burſtenbely / ⁊ ſyr Guy erle of warwyke the blacke houde of Arderne. And alſo he called the noble erle Thomas of Lancaſtre churle ⁊ many other ſcornes and ſhames them ſayd / ⁊ many other greate lordes of Englande / wherfore they were towarde hym full angry ⁊ wrothe ⁊ ryght ſore anoyed. And in ŷ ſame tyme deyed ŷ erle of Nycholl. But he charged or that he was deed Thomas of Lancaſtre erle ŷ was his ſone in lawe that he ſholde mayntene his quarell agaynſt this ſame Pyers of Ganaſton / vpon his bleſſynge. And ſo it befell through helpe of ŷ erle Thomas of Lancaſtre ⁊ alſo the erle of warwyke that the forſayd ſyr Pyers was heded at Gauerſiche beſyde Warwyk in ỹ .xix. daye of Iune, in ỹ yere of grace. M.CCC. ⁊ .xii. wherfore ỹ kynge was ſore anoyed, ⁊ prayed god ỹ he myght ſe ỹ day to be auenged / vpon the dethe of ỹ forſayd Peers. ¶ And ſo it befell afterwarde as ye ſhall here. Was ỹ tyme / for the forſayd erle of Lancaſtre / and many other great barōs were putte to pytous deth / and martred for cauſe of ỹ forſayd quarel. The kynge was tho at London, ⁊ held a parlyamēt ⁊ ordeyned ỹ lawes of Symonde Mountforde / wherfore ỹ erle of Lancaſtre, ⁊ the erles ⁊ all ỹ clergy of Englande made an oth through counſeyl of Roberte of Wynchelſe for to mayntene ỹ ordynaūces for euer.

¶ How Roberte Bruſe came agayne into Scotlāde ⁊ gadered a great power of mē for to werre vpon kynge Edwarde.

AND whan ſyr Roberte the Bruſe ỹ made hym kynge of Scotlande / ỹ before was fled into Norway for drede of dethe of ỹ good kynge Edwarde. And alſo he herde of ỹ debate ỹ tho was in Englande bytwene ỹ kynge ⁊ his lordes / he aſſembled an hooſt ⁊ came into Englande into Northumberlande / and clene deſtroyed ỹ countre. And whan kynge Edwarde herde theſe tydynges he lete aſſemble his hooſte ⁊ met ỹ Scottes at Eſtreuelyn in ỹ daye of ỹ natyuyte of ſeynt Iohn baptyſt in ỹ .vii. yere of his reygne / ⁊ in ỹ yere of our lorde. M.CCC. ⁊ .xiiii. Was ỹ ſorowe ⁊ loſſe ỹ there was done. For there was ſlayne ỹ noble erle Gylbert of clare ſyr Roberte Clyfforde baron / ⁊ kynge Edwarde was dyſcōfyted ⁊ Edmonde of maule ỹ kynges ſtewarde for drede went ⁊ drowned hym ſelfe in a freſſhe ryuer ỹ is called Bannokeſborne / wherfore they ſayd in repreſe of kynge Edwarde for aſmoche as he loued to go by water / ⁊ alſo for he was dyſcōfyted at Bānokyſborne / therfore ỹ maydens made a ſonge therof in ỹ contre of kynge Edwarde ⁊ in this manere they ſonge. Maydens of Englande ſore may ye morne / for tyd haue loſt youre lemmans at Bānokyſborne / wt heuelogh / what weneth ỹ kynge of Englande to haue gote Scotlande with Rombylogh.

AND kynge Edwarde was thus dyſcomfyted wonder ſore ⁊ faſt he fled wt his folke ỹ were lefte alyue ⁊ went vnto Barwyk, ⁊ there helde hȳ, ⁊ after he toke in hoſtage .ii. chyldren of ỹ rycheſte of the towne. And ỹ kynge went to London, ⁊ toke counſeyle of thynges ỹ were nedefull to ỹ realme of Englande. And in ỹ ſame tyme it befell ỹ tho was in Englande a rybaude ỹ was called Iohan Tanner. And he yede ⁊ ſayd ỹ he was the good kynge Edwardes ſone ⁊ lete hym call Edwarde of Carnaruan. And therfore he was taken at Oxforde / and there he chalenged ſtrete Carmes chyrche ỹ kynge Edwarde had gyuen them whiche was ỹ kynges hal, ⁊ afterwarde was this Iohn lad to Northampton, ⁊ drawen ⁊ hanged for his falſeneſſe / ⁊ or that he was deed he confeſſed before all tho ỹ were there ỹ the deuyll behyght hȳ ỹ he ſholde be kynge of Englande ⁊ ỹ he had ſerued ỹ deuyll thre yere.

¶ How ỹ towne of Barwyk was taken through treaſon / ⁊ how two Cardynalles were robbed in Englande.

IN the myddell of lenton ſonday in the yere of our lorde. M.ccc. ⁊ .xvi. Barwyk was taken through falſe treſon of one Pyers of Spalbynge / the whiche Pyers ỹ kynge had put there for to kepe ỹ ſame towne ⁊ many burgeyſes of ỹ ſame towne / wherfore ỹ chyldren ỹ were put in hoſtage through the burgeyſes of Barwyke ſhewed ỹ kynges marchalle many days ſerued in ſtronge pryſons. And after that tyme came two cardynalles into Englande/ as the pope hadde them ſende to make pees bytwene Englande and Scotlande. And as they went towarde Durham for to haue ſacred maiſter Lowys of Beaumont byſſhop of Durham they were taken ⁊ robbed vpō the more of Wyngleſton. Of whiche robbery ſyr Gylbert of Myleton was atteynt ⁊ taken ⁊ hanged and drawen at London/ ⁊ his heed ſmyt of/ ⁊ put it vpon a ſpere/ ⁊ ſet vpon newe gate/ ⁊ the foure quarters ſende to foure cytees of Englande. And the ſame tyme befell many myſcheues in Englande for the poore people deyed for hungre/ ⁊ ſoo moche and ſoo faſt deyed that vneth men myght bury them/ for a quarter of whete was at .xl. ſhelynges/ ⁊ two yeres ⁊ an halfe a quarter of whete was worthe .x. marke. and oft tyme the poore people ſtale chyldren and ete them/ and ete alſo the houndes that they myght take/ ⁊ alſo houſes ⁊ cattes. And after there felle a great murreyne amonge beſtes in dyuers countrees of Englande durynge kynge Edwardes lyue tyme

¶ How the Scottes robbed Northumberlande.

AND in ẏ ſame tyme came ẏ Scottes agayne into Englande ⁊ deſtroyed Northumberlande/ ⁊ brent that lande/ ⁊ robbed it/ ⁊ ſlewe men women ⁊ chyldren ẏ laye in theyr cradels/ ⁊ brente alſo holy chyrche/ ⁊ deſtroyed cryſtēdom ⁊ toke ⁊ bare Englyſſhe mennes goodes as they hadde ben ſarazyns or paynyms And of the wyckedneſſe that they dydde all the worlde ſpake of it.

¶ How the Scottes wolde not amende theyr treſpaſſe/ and therfore Scotlande was entredyted.

SO pope Johñ ẏ .xxii. after ſeynt Peter herde of the great ſorowe ⁊ myſchyef ẏ ẏ Scottes wrought he was wonder ſory ẏ cryſtendome was ſo deſtroyed through ẏ Scottes/ ⁊ namely ẏ they deſtroyed ſo holy chyrches/ wherfore the pope ſende a generall ſentence vnder his bulles of leed vnto the archebyſſhoppe of Caunterbury ⁊ to the archebyſſhoppe of Yorke that yf Robert ẏ Brus of Scotlande wolde not be Juſtyfyed ⁊ make amendes vnto ẏ kyng of Englande theyr lorde ⁊ make amēdes of his harmes that they had done/ ⁊ alſo to reſtore ẏ godes ẏ they had taken of holy chyrche that ẏ ſentence ſholde be pronounced throughout all Englande. And whan ẏ Scottes herde this they wolde not leue theyr malyce for the popes cōmaūdement/ wherfore Roberte the Brus/ James Douglas ⁊ Thomas Randulf erle of Morref ⁊ all tho ẏ to them comyned or them helpe in worde or dede were accurſed in euery chyrche throughe out of all Englāde euery day at maſſe .iii. tymes/ ⁊ no maſſe ſholde be ſonge in holy chyrche throughout all Scotlande/ but yf the Scottes wolde make reſtitucōn of the harmes that they had made vnto holy chyrche/ wherfore many a good preeſt ⁊ holy men therfore were ſlayne through the realme of Scotlande/ bycauſe they wolde not ſynge maſſe agaynſt ẏ popes commaūdement and agaynſte his wyll/ and to do and fulfyll the tyrauntes wyll.

¶ How ſyr Hughe Spenſers ſone was made the kynges chamberlayne/ ⁊ of the batayle of Mytone.

AND it was not longe afterwarde that ẏ kynge ne ordeyned a parlyament at Yorke/ ⁊ there was ſyr Spenſers ſone made chāberlayne. And ẏ meane tyme whyle the warre laſted/ ẏ kynge wente agayne into Scotlande / yͭ it was wonder for to wyte & beſyeged yͤ towne of Barwyk / but yͤ Scottes wente ouer yͤ water at Solewath yͭ was thre myle frō yͤ kynges hoſt & priuely they ſtale awaye by nyght & came into Englande & robbed & deſtroyed all yͭ they myght & ſpared no maner thynge tyll yͭ they came vnto Yorke / & whan yͤ Englyſſhe men yͭ were lefte at home herde theſe tydynges / al tho that myght trauayl / as well monkes preeſtes freres chanons & ſeculers came & met wͭ yͤ Scottes at Myton vp ſwale. yͤ .xii. day of Octobre. Alas for ſorowe / yͤ englyſſhe huſbande men yͭ coude no thynge of warre yͭ there were kylled and drowned in an arme of yͤ ſee. And yͤ cheefteynes ſyr wyllyam of Melton archebyſſhop of Yorke / & yͤ abbot of ſelby wͭ theyr ſtedes fled & came to yorke / & yͭ was theyr owne foly yͭ they had yͤ myſchaunce. For they paſſed yͤ water of Swale / & yͤ Scottes ſette a fyre ſtackes of hey / & the ſmoke therof was ſo huge yͭ the Englyſſhe men myghte not ſe the Scottes. And whā yͤ Englyſſhe men were gone ouer yͤ water tho came yͤ Scottes wͭ theyr wynge in maner of a ſhelde and came towarde the Englyſſhe men in araye. And the Englyſſhemen fledde / for vneth they had any uſe of armes. For the kȳge had them almooſt loſte at yͤ ſyege of Barwyke / and yͤ Scottes hobylers went bytwene the brydge and thenglyſſhe mē fledde bytwene yͤ hobylers and the great hoſt. And the Englyſſhemē almooſt were there ſlayne / & they yͭ myghte go ouer the water were ſaued / but many were drowned. Alas for there were ſlayne many mē of relygyon / ſeculers / preeſtes & clerkes / with moche ſorowe the Archebyſſhoppe eſchaped / and therfore the Scottes called that batayle the whyte batayle.

¶ How kynge Edwarde dyde all maner thynge that Syr Hugh Spenſer wolde.

NOwe whā kynge Edwarde herde theſe tydynges he remeued his ſege from Barwyk & came agayne into Englande. But Syr Hugh Spenſer yͭ was the kynges Chamberlayne. kepte ſoo the kynges Chamber / yͭ no mā myght ſpeke with yͤ kynge. But he had made with hȳ a ſeet for to do all his nede / and yͭ ouer meſure. And this Hugh bare hym ſoo ſtoute yͭ all men had of hym ſcorne & deſpyte / & the kynge hym ſelfe wolde not be gouerned / ne ruled by no maner of mā but only by his fader & by hym. And yf ony knyght of Englande had woddes maners or londes yͭ they wolde coueyte anone yͤ kynge muſt gyue it them or els that mā yͭ ought it ſholde be falſely endyted of forfayte or felony. And thorough ſuche doynge they dyſherytted many a bachylere / & ſomoche lande he gate yͭ it was great wōder. And whan yͤ lordes of Englande ſawe yͤ great coueytyſe & falſeneſſe of Syr Hugh Spenſer the fader & ſyr Hugh the ſone / they came to yͤ gentyll Erle of Lācaſtre / & aſked hym of counſayle of yͤ dyſeaſe that was in yͤ realme / through ſyr Hugh Spenſer and his ſone / & in haſt by one aſſente they made a pryue aſſemble at Shirburne in Elmede & they made there an othe for to breke & diſtrouble yͤ doynge bytwene the kynge & ſyr Hughe ſpēſer & his ſone vpon theyr power. And they went into the merche of Wales / & deſtroyed yͤ lande of the forſayd ſyr Hughes.

¶ How ſyr Hugh Spenſer and his fader were exyled out of Englande.

SO whan kynge Edwarde ſawe the great harme and deſtruccyon that yͤ barons of Englāde dyd vnto Syr Hughe Spenſers lande & to his ſone in euery place yͭ they came vpō yͤ kynge tho through his counſeyl exyled ſyr Mōbraye, ſyr Roger Clyfforde/and ſyr Goſſelyn Dauyll/⁊ many other lordes yͭ were conſent to them/wherfore yͭ barōs dyd than more harme than they dyd before/⁊ whā yͤ kynge ſawe that the barons wolde not ceſe of theyr cruelte/yͤ kyng was ſore adrad leſt they wolde deſtroy hym ⁊ his realme for his mayntenaunce/but yf he aſſented to them. And ſo he ſend for them by his letters yͭ they ſholde come to London to his parlyament at a certayn day as in his letters were cōteyned. And they came with thre batayles/well armed at all poyntes And euery batayll had cotearmoures of grene clothe/and therof yͤ ryght quarter was yelowe/with whyte bendes/wherfore that parlyament was called yͤ parlyament of yͤ whyte bende. And in yͤ company was ſyr Humfrey de Bohoune erle of Herforde ⁊ ſyr Roger Clyfforde/ſyr Wylliam Mombray/ſyr Goſſelyn Dauyl/ſir Roger Mortymer of wygmore/ſyr Henry of Trays/ſyr Johan Gyffarde/⁊ ſyr Bartylmewe of Badeleſſemore yͭ was yͤ kynges ſtewarde/yͭ the kyng had ſend to ſhyrborne in Elmede to the Erle of Lancaſtre ⁊ to al yͭ with them were for to treate of accorde/yͭ hym alyed to the barons/⁊ came with that compani/⁊ ſir Roger Dammory/⁊ ſyr Hugh Dandale yͭ had ſpouſed yͤ kynges neces ſyſter/⁊ ſyr Gylbert of Clare erle of glouceſtre/yͭ was ſlayne in Scotlande as before is ſayd. And tho two lordes had thoſe two partyes of the erldome of Glouceſtre/⁊ ſyr Hughe Spenſer had the thyrde partye in his wyues half/the thyrde ſyſter ⁊ tho two lordes went to the barōs wt all theyr power ayenſt ſyr Hugh theyr broder in lawe. And ſo there came wt them ſyr Robert Clyfforde/ſyr Johan Mombraye/ſyr Goſſelyn Dauyll/ſyr Roger Mortymer of Wykmore his neuew/ſyr Henry Trays/ſyr Johan Gyffarde/ſyr Bartylmewe of Badeſmore/with al theyr company/⁊ many other of theyr aſſynyte. All the great lordes came to Weſtmynſter to the kynges parlyament/⁊ ſo they ſpake ⁊ dyde yͭ ſyr Hugh the fader ⁊ alſo the ſone were outlawed of England for euermore. And ſo ſyr Hughe the fader went into Douer ⁊ made moche ſorowe ⁊ fell downe vpon the grounde by the ſee banke a croſſe with his armes/⁊ ſore wepynge ſayd. Now fayre Englande ⁊ good Englande to almyghty god I the betake ⁊ thryes kyſſed the grounde/⁊ wende neuer to haue come agayne/⁊ wepynge curſed the tyme yͭ euer he begate ſyr Hughe his ſone/⁊ ſayd for hym he had loſt all England. And gaue hym his curſe afore thē al/⁊ went ouer ſee to his landes. But ſyr Hughe the ſone wolde not go oute of Englande/but helde hym in the ſee. And he ⁊ his company robbed two dromedaryes beſyde Sandwyche/⁊ toke ⁊ bare awaye all yͭ was in them/to yͤ value of.xl.M.li.

¶ How the kynge exyled erle Thomas of Lancaſtre/⁊ al yͭ helde with hym/⁊ how Mortymer came ⁊ yelded hym to the kynge/and all the Lordes.

IT was not longe after yͭ the kynge made ſyr hugh Spenſer yͤ fader and ſyr Hughe the ſone come agayne into Englande agaynſt the lordes wyll of the realme. And ſoone after the kyng with a ſtronge power came and beſyeged the caſtell of ledis/and in the caſtell was the lady of Badeſmore/for cauſe that ſhe wolde not graunt that caſtell to the quene yſabell kynge Edwardes wyfe but yͤ pryncypall cauſe was bycauſe that ſyr Bertylmewe was agaynſt the kynge and helde with the lordes of Englande/and neuertheleſſe yͤ kynge by helpe ⁊ ſoccure of mē of London/and alſo of helpe of Southerenmen gate the caſtell maugre of them all that were within / and toke with them all ẏ they myght fynde. And whan the barons of Englande herde these tydynges / ſyꝛ Roger moꝛtimer ⁊ many other loꝛdes toke the towne of Bruggenoꝛth wᵗ ſtrengthe / wherfoꝛe ẏ kynge was wonder wroth / ⁊ lete outlawe Thomas of Lancaſtre / ⁊ Umfrey de Bohoune erle of Herfoꝛde / and all tho that were aſſentyng to the ſame quarell. And ẏ kynge aſſembled an huge hooſt / ⁊ came agaynſt the loꝛdes of Englande / wherfoꝛe the Moꝛtimers put them in the kynges grace. And anone the kynge ſende them to the toure of London to be kepte in pryſon. And whan the Barons herde this thyng / they came to Pomfret caſtell where as the Erle Thomas ſoiourned / ⁊ tolde hym how the moꝛtimers bothe had yelde them to the kynge / ⁊ put them in his grace.

¶ Of the ſyege of Tykhyll.

SO whan Thomas erle of Lancaſtre herde this / he was wonder angrye / ⁊ all that were of theyꝛ company / ⁊ greatly they were dyſcomfyted / ⁊ oꝛdeyned theyꝛ power togyder / ⁊ beſyeged the caſtell of Tykhyll. But thoſe ẏ were within manly them defended ẏ ẏ barons coude not get the caſtell. And whan ẏ kynge herde ẏ his caſtell was beſyeged he ſware by god ⁊ by his names / ẏ the ſyege ſholde be remeued. And aſſembled an huge power of people / ⁊ went thiderwarde to reſcowe the caſtell / ⁊ his power encreaſed fro day to day. Whan the erle of Lancaſtre / ⁊ the erle of Herfoꝛde ⁊ the barons of theyꝛ company herde of this thynge they aſſembled all theyꝛ power ⁊ went thens to Burton upon Trent ⁊ kepte the brydge / ẏ the kyng ſholde not come ouer / but at the laſt on ẏ .x. day of Marche ẏ yere of our loꝛde. M. CCC. xxi. the kynge ⁊ the Spenſers / ſyꝛ Aymer Ualaunce erle of Penbroke / ⁊ John erle of Arundell ⁊ theyꝛ power went ouer the water / ⁊ dyſcomfyted therle Thomas ⁊ his company. And they fled to the caſtell of Tetbury / ⁊ from thens to Pountfret. And ẏ kynge deyed ſyꝛ Roger Dammoꝛe in the abbaye of Tetbury. And in ẏ ſame tyme ẏ Erle Thomas had a traytour wᵗ hym ẏ was called Robert holonde a knyght ẏ the erle had brought up of nought / ⁊ had nouryſſhed hym in his howſe. And had gyuen hym .ii. M. mark of londe by yere. And ſomoche the erle loued hym ẏ he myght do in the erles court all ẏ hym lyked to lyue ⁊ how / ⁊ ẏ there bare hym ſo craftely / that his loꝛde truſted hym moꝛe than any man on lyue. And ẏ erle oꝛdeyned hym by his letters foꝛ to go into the countre of Lancaſtre to make ſombe aryſe to helpe hym in ẏ vyage. That is to ſaye. v. C. men of armes. But the falſe traytour came not there no maner men for to warne / foꝛ to come ⁊ helpe his loꝛde. And whan that ẏ fals traytour herde tell that his loꝛde was dyſcomfyted at Burton upon Trent / as a fals traytour there he ſtele away ⁊ robbed in Rauenſdele his loꝛdes men ẏ came from the ſcomfyture. And toke of them hoꝛs ⁊ harneys / ⁊ all ẏ they had / ⁊ ſlewe of echeon ẏ they myght take / and came and yelded hym to ẏ kyng.

¶ Whan the good erle Thomas wyſte ẏ he was ſo bytrayed he was ſoꝛe abaſſhed ⁊ ſayd to hymſelfe. O almyghty god how myght Robert Holonde fynde in his herte to betraye me ſyth I loued hym ſomoche. O god well now may a man ſe by hym ẏ no man may deceyue another rather than he that he truſteth mooſt upon / he hathe full euyll yelded me my goodnes ⁊ ẏ woꝛſhyp ẏ I haue do hym haue. And though my kyndnes haue hym auaunced ⁊ made hym hygh where that he was lowe. And he maketh me go frome hygh unto lowe / but yet ſhall he lyue an euyll dethe.

¶ Of the ſcomfyture of Burbrygge.

THe good erle Thomas of Lancaſtre/Humfrey de Bohoune erle of Herforde/⁊ the barons that wyth them were toke coūſaill bytwene them at yͤ frere prechers in Pountfret. Tho thought tho was vpon the traytour Robert Holonde. ⁊ ſayd in reprefe. Alas Robert Holand haſte me betrayed/aye is the ende of ſome euyll ſhrede. And by the comyn aſſent they ſholde go to the caſtell of Dunſtanburgh the whiche perteyned to yͤ erledom of Lancaſtre. ⁊ that they ſholde abyde there tyll that yͤ kynge had forgyue them his maltalent. But whā yͤ good erle Thomas this herde/he anſwered in this maner ⁊ ſayd Lordes ſayd he/yf we go towarde yͤ north yͤ Northeren men wyll ſaye that we goo towarde the Scottes/⁊ ſo we ſholde holden traytours. For cauſe of dyſtaūce that is bytwene kynge Edwarde ⁊ Robert the Brus that made hym kynge of Scotland And therfore I ſay as touchyng my part I wyll go no ferder into the North than to myn owne caſtell of Pountfret. ¶ And whā ſyr Roger Clyfforde herde this he aroſe vp anone in wrath/⁊ drewe his ſwerde on high/⁊ ſwore by god almyghty and by his holy names/but yf yͤ he wolde go with them he wolde hym ſlee there. The noble and gentyll erle of Lancaſtre was ſore aferde ⁊ ſayd. Fayre ſyres I wyll go with you whyther ſomeuer ye me bydde Than went they togyder into the North ⁊ with them they hadde .vii.C. men of armes/⁊ came to Burbryd. Whan ſyr Andrew of Herkela that was in yͤ north countre through ordynaūce of the kynge/for to kepe the countree of Scotlande herde tel how that Thomas of Lancaſtre was ſcomfyted ⁊ his company at Burton vpō Trent/he ordeyned hym a ſtronge power And ſyr Symonde warde alſo/that was tho the ſhyref of Yorke/and met yͤ barons at Burbrugge. And anone they brake the brydge that was made of tree. Than whā Thomas of Lancaſtre herde yͤ ſyr Andrewe of Herkela had brought with hym ſuche a power he was ſore adradde/⁊ ſende for ſyr Andrewe of Herkela/and with hȳ ſpake/⁊ ſayd to hym in this maner. Syr Andrewe ſayd he ye may well vnderſtande that our lorde the kyng is ladde ⁊ myſgouerned by moche falſe counſayll/thorough ſyr Hugh Spenſer the fader/⁊ ſyr Hugh his ſone/Syr Johan erle of Arundell/and through mayſter Robert baldok a fals pylled clerke/that now is in yͤ kynges courte dwellynge/wherfore I praye you that ye wyll come with vs with all yͤ power that ye haue ordeyned/and helpe to deſtroye the venym of Englande/and the traytours that ben therin/⁊ we wyll gyue vnto you all the beſt parte of fyue erledoms that we haue and hold/⁊ we wyll make vnto you an othe yͤ we wyll neuer do thynge without your coūſayll/and ſo ye ſholde ete w vs as well as euer was Robert Holonde. Than anſwered ſyr Andrewe of Herkela/⁊ ſayd. Syr Thomas that wold I not do nor conſent therto for no maner thynge without the wyll ⁊ commaundement of our lorde the kynge/for than ſholde I be holden a traytour for euermore. And whan that the noble Erle Thomas of Lancaſtre ſaw that he wolde not conſent to hym for no maner thynge. Syr Andrewe ſayd he wyl ye not conſent to deſtroye the venymme of the realme as we be conſent at one worde. Syr Andrewe I tell the that or this yere be paſſed that ye ſhalde be taken and holden for a traytour/and more than ony of you holde vs nowe/and in a worſe dethe ye ſhall deye than euer dyd knyght in Englande/⁊ ye dyde neuer thynge that ſorer ſhall repent you. And nowe go and do what that you god lyketh / & I wyll put me into the mercy of god. And ſo wente the fals traytour tyraunt as a fals forſworne man. For through the noble Erle Thomas of Lancaſtre / he receyued the armes of chiualry & made hym knyght. Tho myght men ſe archers drawe theym in ẏ one ſyde & in ẏ other / & knyghtes alſo / & fought than togyder wonder ſore. And alſo ymonge all other Humfrey de Boughon erle of Herforde a worthy knyght of renowne thorou all cryſtendome / ſtode & fought with his enemyes vpon the brydge / & as the noble lorde ſtode & fought vpon ẏ brydge a theef a rybaude ſcalked vnder the brydge / & fyerſly with a ſpere ſmote the noble knyght into the fondament / ſo ẏ his bowels fel aboute his fete / Alas for ſorowe & pyte / for there was ſlayn the floure of ſolace / comforte / & curteyſye. And ſyr Robert Clyfforde a noble knyght ſtode euer & fought / & well & worthely hym defended / but at the laſte he was ſore wounded in his hede. & ſyr Wyllyam of Sulleyand / & ſyr Roger of Benefelde were ſlayne at that batayll. Whan ſyr Andrewe of Herkela ſawe ẏ ſyr Thomas men of Lācaſtre feyled & ſlaked anone he & his company came vnto ẏ gentyl knyght / & ſayd vnto hym with an hye voyce. Yelde the traytour yelde the. The gentyl erle Thomas of Lancaſtre anſwered than & ſayd. Nay lordes traytours we ben none. And to you we wyll vs neuer yelde whyle ẏ our lyues laſteth. But rather we had to be ſlayne in oure trouthe / than yelde vs vnto you. And ſyr Andrewe agayne be hylde ſyr Thomas & his company yellynge & cryenge lyke a wod man yelde you traytours taken yelde you. Saiyenge with an hye voyce / beware thys ẏ none of you be ſo hardy vpon lyfe & lymme to myſdoo Thomas body of Lancaſtre. And with that worde the good Erle Thomas yede into the caſtell / and ſayde knelynge vpon his knees / & tourned his viſage towarde the croſſe & ſayde. Almyghty god to the I yelde me / & holely I putte me vnto thy mercy. And with that the vylayns & rybaudes lepte aboute hym on euery ſyde as tyrauntes and wood tormentours / & dyſpoyled hym of his armoure / and clothed hym in a robe of raye / ẏ was of his ſquyers lyuerey / & forth ledde hym vnto Yorke by water. Than myght men ſe moche ſorowe and care. For the gentyll knyghtes ſtode on euery ſyde / and the rybaudes and vyllayns egrely them dyſpyſed / & cryed on hygh traytours yelde you / traytours yelde you. And whan they were yelden they were robbed & bounden as theues. Alas the ſhame and deſpyte that the gentyll ordre of knyghthode had there at that batayll. And the lande was than withouten lawe. For holy chyrche had than no more reuerence thā it had ben a bordell hous. And in that batayll was the fader agaynſt the ſone / and the vncle agaynſt the neuewe. For ſo moche vnkyndnes there was neuer ſene before in England / as was that tyme ymonge folkes of one nacyon. For one kynred had no more pyte / on that other / than an hungry wolf hath of a ſhepe. And it was no wonder. For ẏ great lordes of Englande were not al borne of one nacyon / but were medled with other nacyons. That is for to ſaye / ſome were Brytons / ſome Saxons / ſome Danes ſome pehytes / ſome Frēſhmen / ſome Normans / Spanyardes / Romayns / Henoyers / Flemynges / with dyuers other nacyons / whiche nacyōs accorded not to the kynde bloode of Englande. And yf ſo greate lordes had be onely wedded to Englyſſhe people. Than ſholde peas haue ben nouryſſhed and reſte ymonge theym wtout ony enuy. And at ẏ batayll was Roger Clyfforde take / ſyr Iohn Mowbraye / ſyr Wyllyam Tuchis / ſyr Wyllyam Fitz wyllyam/ and many other worthy knightes there were take at that batayll/ ⁊ ſyr hugh Dandell nexte daye after was taken ⁊ put into pryſon/ ⁊ ſholde haue be done to dethe yf he had not ſpouſed the kynges nece/ yͭ was erle Gylbertes ſyſter of Glouceſtre/ ⁊ anone after was ſyr Bartholmewe of Badeleſmore taken at ſtowparke/ a manoyre of the byſſhop of Lyncolnes yͭ was his neuewe/ ⁊ many other barons ⁊ baronettes/ wherfore was made moche ſorowe.

¶ How Thomas of Lancaſtre was beheded at Pountfret/ ⁊ .v. barons hanged/ ⁊ drawen there.

AND now I ſhall tell you of the noble Erle Thomas of Lancaſtre/ whan he was take and brought to yorke/ many of the cyte were full gladde ⁊ vpon hym cryed with an hye voyce. O ſyr traytoure/ ye be welcome/ bleſſyd be god for now ye ſhall haue the rewarde yͭ longe ye haue deſerued. And caſt vpon hym many ſnowe balles/ ⁊ many other repreues dyd they hym. But the gētyll erle al ſuffered ⁊ ſayd neyther o worde nor other. And at the ſame tyme the kyng herde of this ſcōfyture/ ⁊ was full gladde ⁊ Joyous/ ⁊ in greate haſte came to Poūtfret/ ⁊ ſyr hugh Spenſer/ ⁊ ſyr hugh his ſone/ ⁊ ſyr Johan erle of Arundell/ ⁊ ſyr Edmonde of Wodſtok the kynges broder erle of kent/ ſyr Aymer of Ualaunce erle of Penbroke ⁊ Mayſter Robert Baldok/ a falſe pylled clerke/ yͭ was pryue/ ⁊ dwelled in the kynges court/ ⁊ all came thyder with yͭ kyng. And the kynge entred into yͭ caſtell/ and ſyr Andrewe of Herkela a fals traytoure through the kynges cōmaūdement/ toke with hym the gentyll Erle Thomas too Pontfret/ and there he was pryſoned in his owne caſtell that he had newe made that ſtode agaynſt the abbaye of kyng edwarde. And ſyr hugh Spenſer yͭ fader/ ⁊ the ſone caſt in theyr thoughtes how yͭ the good erle Thomas of Lancaſtre ſholde be put vnto dethe without Judgemēt of his peres. Wherfore it was ordeyned through the kynges Juſtyces that yͭ kynge ſholde put vpō hym poyntes of treaſō. And ſo he was ledde to barre before yͭ kynges Juſtyces bare heded as a thef i a fayre hall in his owne caſtell/ where he had made many a noble feeſt to ryche ⁊ poore And theſe were his Juſtyces. Syr hugh Spenſer the fader/ ⁊ Aymer of valaunce erle of penbroke/ ſyr Edmonde of wodſtok erle of Kent/ ſyr Johā of Brytayne Erle of Rychemonde/ ⁊ ſyr Robert Malemesthrop Juſtyce/ and ſyr Robert hym accoupled in this maner. Thomas court excudeth you of al maner of anſwere. Thomas our lorde the kynge putteth vpon you yͭ ye haue in his lande ryden wͭ baner dyſplayed agaynſt his peas as a traytoure/ And with that worde yͭ gentyll erle thomas with on hye voyce ſayd. Nay lordes forſoth/ ⁊ by ſeynt Thomas I was neuer traytoure. The Juſtyce ſayd agayn tho. Thomas our lord the kynge putteth vpon you that ye haue robbed his folke/ ⁊ murdred his people as a thefe. Thomas alſo the kynge putteth vpon you yͭ he dyſcomfyted you ⁊ youre people wͭ his folke in his owne realme/ wherfore ye wente ⁊ fledde to the wodde as an outlawe. And thomas as a traytour ye ought to be hanged by reaſon/ but the kynge hath gyuē you pardon of that Judgemēt for loue of quene Iſabell. And Thomas reaſon wolde that ye ſholde be hanged/ but the kyng hath forgyue you yͭ Judgement/ for your lygnage. But for aſmoch Thomas as ye were taken fleynge/ ⁊ as an outlawe the kynge wyll yͭ your heed ſhalbe ſmyten of. Anone haue hym out of prees and bryng hym to his Judgement. ¶ When ẏ gentyll knyght Thomas hadde herde all theſe wordes/with an hye voyce he cryed ſore wepynge ⁊ ſayde alas alas ſeynt Thomas fayre fader/alas ſhall I be deed here. Graunt me now bleſſydfull god anſwere. But all avayled hym nothynge/for ẏ curſed Gaſcoyns put hym hyder ⁊ thyder/⁊ on hym cryed with an hye voyce. O kyng Arthur mooſt terryble ⁊ dredfull/well knowen ⁊ ſhewed now is thyn open traytour/⁊ an evyll dethe ſhal thou anone dye haſt thou not ryght well deſerved it. And than theſe cruell folke ſette vpō the good knyght Thomas for very ſcorne an olde chaplet ẏ was al to rent/whiche was not worth an halfpeny. And after ẏ they ſet hym vpon a whyte palfray full vnſemely ⁊ alſo al bare/⁊ an olde brydell/⁊ with an horryble noyſe they drove hym out of the caſtell towarde his dethe/⁊ they caſt vpō hym many balles of ſnowe in deſpyte/⁊ as the traytours led hym out of ẏ caſtell he ſayde theſe pyteous wordes/holdynge vp his handes towarde heuen. Now the kyng of heuen gyue vs mercy/for ẏ erthly kynge hathe vs forſaken. And a frere precher went with hym out of the caſtell tyll he came to the place ẏ he ended his lyfe/unto whome he ſhrove hym clene. And the gentyll erle held the frere wonder faſt by the clothes ⁊ ſayd to hym. Fayre fader abyde with vs tyll I be deed/for my fleſſhe quaketh for drede of dethe. And ẏ frere for to ſaye the gentyll Erle ſet hym vpon his knees/⁊ tourned hym towarde ẏ eeſt But a rybaud that was called Hyggone of muſſoon ſet hande vpon ẏ gentyl knyght ⁊ ſayd in deſpyte of hym. Syr traytoure tourne ẏ towarde the Scottes thy foule dethe to receyue/⁊ tourned hȳ towarde ẏ North. The noble Erle Thomas anſwered thā with a mylde voyce ⁊ ſayd/now fayre lordes I ſhall do your wyll/⁊ with that worde the frere went from hym ſore wepynge. And anone a rybaude went to hym ⁊ ſmote of his heed ẏ .xi. Kalendas of Apryll in ẏ yere of grace. M.CCC.xxi Alas that euer ſuche a gentyll blode ſhold be put to dethe without cauſe ⁊ reaſon. ⁊ traytorouſly the kynge was counſaylled by the Spenſers to putte his uncles ſone to ſuche a dethe agaynſt all ryght ⁊ reaſō And great pyte it was alſo ẏ ſuch a noble kyng ſholde be deſceyved and myſgouerned through counſayll of the ſaid Spenſers the whiche he than maynteyned through ſotelty agaynſt his honoure and alſo his proffyte. For afterwarde there fell grete vengeaunce in Englande/for bycauſe of the forſayd Thomas dethe. ¶ When ẏ the gentyll erle of his lyfe was paſſed/ẏ pryour and the monkes of Pounfret gave the body of ſyr Thomas of the kynge/and buryed it before the hye auter on the ryght ſyde. ¶ That ſame daye that this gentyl knyght was deed/were hanged ⁊ drawen for the ſame quarell at Pounfret caſtel/ſyr wyllyam Tuchet/ſyr wyllyam Fitz wyllyam/ſyr warreyn of Iſell. Syr Henry Bradborne/and ſyr wyllyam cheyne barons al/and Iohn page ſquyer. and ſoone after at Yorke were drawen and hāged ſyr Roger Clyfforde/Syr Iohan of Mambray barons/and ſyr Goſelyne Deuyll knyght. ¶ And at Bryſtowe were hāged ⁊ drawen/Syr Henry of wemyngton/and alſo ſyr Henry Mountforde Barons. ¶ And at Glouceſtre were drawen and hanged Syr Iohan Gaffarde/and ſyr william of Elmebrugge barons. And at London were hanged and drawen ſyr Henry Tyes Baron. ¶ And at wynchelſe ſyr Thomas Clepepyr knyght. ¶ And ferthermore to tell of this cruell occaſyon at Wyndſore was drawen and hanged ſyr Frauncys waldenham baron/⁊ at Caūterbury was drawen/and hanged Syr

Barthylmew Badeleſmore and ſyr Barthylmewe of Aſſhe bourneham barons ⁊ at Cardyf in wales/ ſyr wyllyam ſlemynge baron.

¶ How kynge Edwarde went into Scotlande with an hondred thouſande men of armes/ and myght not ſpede.

SO whan kynge Edwarde of Englande had brought ẏ floure of chevalry vnto dethe through counſell ⁊ conſente of ſyr Hughe Spenſer ẏ fader/ ⁊ ſyr Hughe ẏ ſone he became as wood as ony lyon/ ⁊ what ſo euer ẏ Spenſers wolde haue it was done ſo well ẏ kynge loued thē that they myght do wᵗ hym all thynge ẏ them lyked/ wherfore ẏ kynge gaue vnto ſyr Hughe Spenſer ẏ fader ẏ erldome of wyncheſtre and vnto ſyr Andrewe of Herkela ẏ erldome of Cardoyll in preiudyce ⁊ in harmynge of his crowne. And kynge Edwarde tho through coūſell of ẏ Spenſers dyſheryted all thē ẏ had ben agaynſt hym in ony quarell wᵗ Thomas of Lancaſtre. And many other were dyſheryted alſo/ bycauſe ẏ ẏ Spenſers coueyted for to haue theyr landes. And ſo they had all ẏ they wolde deſyre wᵗ wronge ⁊ agaynſt all reaſon. Tho made the kynge Roberte Baldoke a falſe pylled clerke chaūceler of Englande through counſell of ẏ forſayde Spēſers. And he was a falſe rybaude/ ⁊ a coueytous. And ſo they counſeyled the kynge moche ẏ that kynge let take to his owne warde all ẏ godes of ẏ lordes that were put wrongfully to deth into his owne hande. And aſwell they toke ẏ goodes that were wᵗin holy chyrche as ẏ godes ẏ were wᵗout ⁊ lete them to be put into his treſoury in London/ ⁊ lete them call his forfeytes. And by theyr coūſeyll ẏ kynge wrought/ for euermore he dyſheryted thē ẏ the goodes ought/ ⁊ through theyr coūſell lette arere a talege of all the goodes of Englande/ wherfore he was the rycheſte kynge ẏ euer was in Englande after wyllyā baſtarde ẏ cōquered Englande. And yet through coūſel of thē hym ſemyd ẏ he had not ynough/ but made yet euery towne of Englande for to fynde a man of armes vpō theyr owne coſtes/ for to go and warre vpō ẏ Scottes ẏ were his enmyes wherfore ẏ kynge wente into Scotlande wᵗ an .C. M. men of armes at whytſontyde in the yere of our lorde. M.CCC.xxii. But ẏ Scottes went ⁊ hyd them in woddes ⁊ in moūteynes ⁊ taryed ẏ Englyſſh men fro daye to day ẏ ẏ kynge myght for no maner thynge fynde theym in playne felde/ wherfore many englyſſhemen that had lytell vitayles dyed there for hongre wōder faſt ⁊ ſodeynly in goynge ⁊ commynge ⁊ namely tho ẏ had ben agaynſt Thomas of Lancaſtre ⁊ robbed his men vpō his landes. Whan kynge Edwarde ſawe that vytayles fayled hym he was wōder ſore deſcomfyted/ bycauſe alſo ẏ his men dyed/ ⁊ for he myght not ſpede of his enmyes. So at ẏ laſte he came agayne into Englande. And anone after came James Douglas ⁊ alſo Thomas Radulfe wᵗ an huge hooſt into Northumberlande/ ⁊ wᵗ them ẏ Englyſſhemen ẏ were dryuē oute of Englande/ ⁊ came ⁊ robbed ẏ countre and ſlewe ẏ people/ ⁊ alſo brente a towne that was called Northallerton ⁊ many other townes to yorke. And whan ẏ kynge herde this tydynges he let ſomone all maner men that myght trauayle. And ſo the Englyſſhe men mette the Scottes at the abbaye of Beyghelande the .xv. daye after Myghelmas in the ſame yere aboue ſayd/ ⁊ the Englyſſhe men were deſcōfyted. And at that ſcomfyture was taken Syr Johan of Brytayne Erle of Rychemonde that helde the countre and the erldom of Lancaſtre/ and after he payed an huge raunſome and was lette goo. And after that he wente into Fraunce ⁊ came neuer after agayne.

¶ How ſyr Andrewe of Herkelay was take ⁊ put to dethe/ yͭ was erle of Cardoyll.

THan at yͤ tyme was ſyr Andrewe of Herkelay/ yͭ new was made erle of Cardoyl/ for cauſe that he had taken yͤ good erle Thomas of Lancaſtre. ¶ He had ordeyned through yͤ kynges cõmaũdement of Englande/ for to brynge hym al the power yͭ he myght/ for to helpe ayenſt yͤ Scottes at yͤ abbaye of Beyghlande. And whã yͤ fals traytour had gadred all the people yͭ he myght ⁊ ſhold haue come to yͤ kynge to yͤ abbaye of Beyghlande/ yͤ fals traytour lad them by another countre through Copelande/ ⁊ through yͤ erldome of Lãcaſtre/ ⁊ went through yͤ coũtre ⁊ robbed ⁊ ſlew yͤ folke all yͭ he myght ⁊ ferthermore the fals traytour had take a greate ſomme of golde and ſyluer of ſyr James Douglas for to be ayenſt yͤ kȳge of Englande/ ⁊ to be helpynge ⁊ holdȳge with the Scottes/ through whoſe treaſõ the kynge of Englande was ſcomfyted at Beyghlande or yͭ ye came thyder. Wherfore yͤ kynge was towarde hym wonder wrothe/ ⁊ let pryuely enquyre by yͤ cõtre aboute how yͭ it was. And ſome men enquyred ⁊ eſpyed/ ſoo at the laſte yͤ trouth was founde ⁊ ſought. And he attaynte ⁊ take as a falſe traytour/ as yͤ good Erle Thomas of Lãcaſtre hȳ tolde or he was put vnto deth at his takȳge at Burbrugge/ ⁊ to hym ſayd. Or that yere were doo he ſholde be take ⁊ holde a traytour. And ſo it was as the holy man ſayd. ¶ Wherfore yͤ kynge ſende pryuely to ſyr Anthony of Lucy/ a knyght of yͤ countre of Cardoyl yͭ he ſholde take ſyr Andrewe of Herkela ⁊ put hȳ vnto yͤ deth. And to brynge this thynge vnto the ende/ the kynge ſende his commyſſyon ſo yͭ this ſame Andrewe was take at Cardoyl ⁊ ladde vnto the barre in yͤ maner of an erle worthyly arayed/ ⁊ with a ſwerde gyrde aboute hym and boted and ſporred. Tho ſpake ſyr Antony in this maner ſyr Andrewe ſayd he the kynge putteth vpon the for aſmoche as yͭ haſt ben orped in thy dedes/ he dyde to the moche honoure/ ⁊ made the erle of Cardoyll/ ⁊ yͭ as a traytoure to thy lorde laddeſt the people of his countre yͭ ſholde haue helpe hym at yͤ batayll of Beyghelande/ ⁊ thou laddeſt thẽ awaye by yͤ coũtre of Copelande/ ⁊ through yͤ erldome of Lancaſtre/ wherfore oure lorde yͤ kynge was dyſcomfyted there of yͤ Scottes thorough thy treaſon ⁊ falſneſſe ⁊ yf yͭ haddeſt come by tymes he had had yͤ batayll and treaſon yͭ dydeſt for yͤ greate ſomme of golde ⁊ ſyluer yͭ thou receyued of James Douglas a ſcot yͤ kynges enemy/ ⁊ our lorde yͤ kynge wyll/ that the ordre of knyghthode/ by yͤ whiche yͭ receyued all thyne honoure ⁊ worſhyp vpon thy body be al brought to nought and thyne eſtate vndone that other knyghtes of lower degre may after beware/ whiche lorde hath the auaũced hugely in dyuerſe countrees of Englande ⁊ that all maye take enſample by theyr lorde afterwarde truely for to ſerue. ¶ Tho cõmaũded he anone a knaue to hew of his ſporres on his heles/ ⁊ after he lette breke yͤ ſwerde ouer his hede/ the whiche yͤ kynge gaue hym for to kepe and defende his lande there with whan he made hym erle of Cardoyll. And after he lette hȳ be vnclothed of his furred tabarde ⁊ his hode/ and of his furred cotes and of his gyrdell. And whan this was done/ ſyr Anthony ſayde than vnto hym. Andrewe ſayd he. Now art yͭ no knyght/ but a knaue/ and for thy treaſon yͤ kynge wyll that thou ſhall be hanged ⁊ drawen and thy heed ſmyt of/ ⁊ thy bowels take out of thy body ⁊ brent before ẏ/ ⁊ thy body quarted ⁊ thy heed ſende to London ⁊ there it ſhall ſtande vpõ London brydge/ ⁊ ẏ foure quarters ſhall be ſend to foure townes of Englande/ ẏ all other maye beware ⁊ be chaſtyſed by the. And as Anthony ſayde/ ſo it was done all manere of thynge in the laſt day of Octobre / in the yere of grace. M.CCC.xxij. And ẏ ſonne tourned into blood as the people it ſawe/ ⁊ ẏ dured frõ ẏ morne tyll .xi. of ẏ clocke.

¶ Of ẏ myracles that god wrought for ſeynt Thomas of Lancaſtre / wherfore the kynge lette cloſe in ẏ chyrche dores of the pryory of Pountfret/ ẏ no man ſholde come therin for to offre.

AND ſone after ẏ ẏ good erle Thomas of Lancaſtre was martred there was a preeſt ẏ longe tyme had ben blynde dremed in his ſlepe ẏ he ſholde go to the hyll there ẏ good erle Thomas of Lancaſtre was put to dethe/ ⁊ ſholde haue his ſyght agayne ⁊ ſo he dremed thre nyghtes ſuynge/ and the preeſt lette lede hym to ẏ ſame hyll/ ⁊ whan he came to ẏ place ẏ he was martred on full deuoutly he made there his prayers/ ⁊ prayed god and ſeynt Thomas ẏ he myght haue his ſyght agayne. And whan he was in his prayers he layde his ryght hande vpõ ẏ ſame place ẏ ẏ good mã was martred on and a drope of drye blood ⁊ ſmale ſande cleued on his hande / ⁊ therwith ſtryked his eyen/ and anone through ẏ myght of god ⁊ ſeynt Thomas he hadde his ſyght agayne. And thanked tho almyghty god ⁊ ſeynt Thomas. And whan this myracle was knowen amonge men / ẏ people came thyder on euery ſyde/ ⁊ kneled and made theyr prayers at his tombe ẏ is in the pryory of Pountfret ⁊ prayed ẏ holy martyr of helpe ⁊ god herd theyr praiers

¶ Alſo there was a yõge chylde drowned in a well in ẏ towne of Pountfret ⁊ was deed thre dayes ⁊ thre nyghtes/ ⁊ men came ⁊ layd ẏ deed chylde vpon ſeynt Thomas tombe the martyr/ ⁊ the chylde aroſe frõ deth to lyfe as many a man it ſawe

¶ Alſo moche people were oute of theyr mynde/ and god ſende them theyr mynde agayne through vertue of ẏ holy man.

¶ And god hath gyuen there alſo to creppyls theyr goynge/ ⁊ to croked theyr handes ⁊ theyr fete / and to blynde alſo theyr ſyght/ ⁊ to many ſeke folke theyr helth of dyuers dyſeaſes for ẏ loue of this martyr.

¶ Alſo there was a ryche man in Coumdom in Gaſcoyne and ſuche a malady he had ẏ all his ryght ſyde roted ⁊ fell away frõ hym ẏ men myghte ſe his lyuer ⁊ his herte/ ſo he ſtanke ẏ vnneth they myght come nyghe hym/ wherfore his good frendes were for hym wonder ſory/ but at the laſte as god wolde they prayed to ſeynt Thomas of Lancaſtre ẏ he wolde praye god for that pryſoner/ and behyght for to go to Pountfret for to do theyr pylgrymage/ he thought ẏ ẏ martyr ſeynt thomas came to hym/ ⁊ anoynted all his ſeke body/ ⁊ therwith the good man awoke and was all hoole / ⁊ his fleſſhe was reſtored agayn ẏ before was rotyd ⁊ fallen away For whiche myracle the good man ⁊ his frendes loued god ⁊ ſeynt Thomas euermore after. And this good man came into Englande/ and toke with hym foure felowes/ ⁊ came to Pountfrete to the holy martyr ⁊ dyd theyr pylgrymage/ ẏ good man that was ſeke came thyder all naked/ ſauſe his preuy clothes. And whan they had done they tourned home agayn into theyr owne countre and tolde of the myracle where ſoeuer that they came.

¶ And alſo two men haue ben heled there of the mormall through helpe of ẏ ho ly martyr though yͤ euyll be holde incurable. And whan yͤ Spenſers herde yͭ god dyde ſuche myracles for this holy man/ they wolde byleue it in noo maner wyſe/ but ſayd openly that it was great hereſy ſuche vertue of hym to byleue/ and whã ſyr Hugh Spenſer the ſone ſawe all this doynge/ anone he ſende his meſſãger frõ Põtfret there that he dwelled to kynge Edwarde yͭ tho was at Graũt at ſcyptõ/ for cauſe that yͤ kynge ſholde vndo yͤ pylgrymage/ ⁊ as yͤ rybaude the meſſanger went towarde yͤ kynge for to do his meſſage he came by the hyll there yͭ the good martyr was done to deth ⁊ in yͤ ſame place he made his ordure/ ⁊ whan he hadde done he rode towarde yͤ kynge ⁊ ſtronge flyx came vpõ hym or yͭ he came to yorke ⁊ tho he ſhed all his bowelles at his foundament. And whan ſyr Hughe Spenſer herde this tydynges ſomdele he was adradde/ ⁊ thought for to vndowe this pylgrymage yf he myghte by ony manere awaye/ ⁊ anone he went to yͤ kynge ⁊ ſayd yͭ they wolde be in a great ſclaundre thoroughe all cryſtendom for yͤ deth of Thomas of Lãcaſtre yf yͭ he ſuffered the peple to do theyr pylgrymage at Pontfrete and ſo he couſeylled yͤ kynge yͭ he cõmaũded to ſhyt yͤ chyrche dores of Pountfret/ in yͤ whiche chyrche yͤ holy martyr was enteryd/ ⁊ thus they dyd ayenſt all Fraũchyſes of holy chyrche ſo yͭ foure yere after myght no pylgryme come to the holy body/ ⁊ bycauſe yͤ monkes ſuffred mẽ to come ⁊ honoure that holy body of ſeynt Thomas yͤ martyr through couſell of ſyr Hugh Spenſer yͤ ſone/ ⁊ through couſell of mayſter Robert Baldok yͤ falſe pylled clerke/ yͭ was yͤ kynges chaũceler/ yͤ kynge conſented yͭ they ſholde be ſet to theyr wages ⁊ let wardeyns ouer theyr owne good longe tyme/ ⁊ through commaũdement of the forſayde ſyr hughe Spenſer xiiii. Gaſkoynes well armed kepte yͤ hyll there yͭ yͤ good man ſeynt Thomas was done vnto his dethe ſo that no pylgryme myght come by that way. Full well went he to haue taken cryſtes myght and his power ⁊ the great boos of myracles that he ſhewed for his martyr ſeynt Thomas through all cryſtendome. And yͤ ſame tyme yͤ kynge made Robert of Baldoke the falſe pylled clerke through prayer of ſyr Hugh Spenſers ſone Chaunceler of Englande. And in the ſame tyme was yͤ caſtell of walyngforde holden agaynſte the kynge through pryſoners yͭ were within yͤ caſtell for ſeynt Thomas loue of Lancaſtre/ wherfore yͤ people of yͤ countre came ⁊ toke yͤ caſtell of yͤ pryſoners/ wherfore ſyr Johan Goldyngton knyght ⁊ ſyr Edmonde of Berche pryſoners were taken and ſend vnto yͤ kynge to Pountfret and there they were done in pryſon/ ⁊ the forſayd Roger was ſend vnto Yorke/ and there he was drawen ⁊ hanged. And anone after ſyr Roger mortymer of wygmor brake oute of the toure of London in this maner. The forſayd Roger herde that he ſholde be drawen ⁊ hanged at London in the morowe after ſeynt Laurence daye ⁊ on the day before he helde a fayre feeſt in yͤ toure of London ⁊ there was ſyr Stephen Segraue conſtable of yͤ toure and many great mẽ wͭ thẽ/ ⁊ whã they ſholde ſoupe/ yͤ forſayd Stephen ſend for all the offycers of yͤ toure/ ⁊ they came ⁊ ſouped wͭ hȳ/ ⁊ whan they ſholde take theyr leue of hym a ſquyer yͭ was called Stephen yͭ was full preuy wͭ yͤ forſayde Rogere thorough his coũſel gaue thẽ ſuche a drynke yͭ yͤ leſt of thẽ ſlepte .ii. dayes ⁊ .ii. nyghtes and in yͤ meane tyme he eſcaped awaye by water by yͤ Tamyſe/ ⁊ went ouer yͤ ſee and helpe hym in Fraunce. Wherfore the kynge was ſore anoyed/ ⁊ put the ſame Stephen out of his Conſtablery.

¶How quene Iſabell wente into Fraunce for to treate of peas bytwene her lorde the kynge of Englande and the kynge of Fraunce her broder.

The kynge wente tho vnto Londō and there through counſeyll of ſyr Hugh Spenſer ẏ fader/ ⁊ of his ſone ⁊ of mayſter Robert baldok a fals pylled clerke his Chaunceler/ let ſeaſe tho all ẏ quenes landes into his handes/ ⁊ alſo all the landes ẏ were ſyr Edwardes his ſone/ ⁊ were ſoo put to theyr wages agaynſte all maner of reaſon/ ⁊ ẏ was through ẏ falſeneſſe of ẏ Spenſers. And whan ẏ kynge of Fraunce ẏ was quene Iſabelles broder herde of this falſneſſe he was ſore anoyed ayenſt ẏ kynge of Englande ⁊ his falſe counſeilers/ wherfore he ſende a letter to kynge Edwarde vnder his ſeale ẏ he ſholde come at a certayn day to do his homage ⁊ therto he ſomoned hym ⁊ elles he ſholde loſe all Gaſcoyne. And ſo it was ordeyned in Englande through ẏ kynge and his counſeyll ẏ quene Iſabell ſholde go into Fraunce for to treate of peas bytwene her lorde ⁊ her broder/ ⁊ ẏ Olyuer of Yngham ſholde go into Gaſcoyn/ and haue wᵗ hym .vii. M. men of armes ⁊ more to be ſeneſchall ⁊ wardeyne of Gaſcoyne/ ⁊ ſo it was ordeyned ẏ quene Iſabell came into Fraunce/ ⁊ wᵗ her went ſyr Aymer of Valaunce erle of Penbroke that was there murdred ſodeynly in a pryue ſege/ but ẏ was thrugh goddes vengeaunce/ for he was one of ẏ Iuſtyce ẏ conſented to ſeynt Thomas dethe of Lancaſtre ⁊ wolde neuer after repente hym of that wycked dede. And at ẏ tyme ſyr Olyuer of Yngham wente ouer into Gaſcoyne/ ⁊ dyde moche harme to the kynge of Fraūce/ and tho he gate agayne all that ẏ kynge Edwarde hadde loſt/ and moche more therto.

* * *

¶How kynge Edwarde ſend ſyr Edwarde his ſone ẏ eldeſt into Fraunce.

The quene Iſabell had but a quarter of a yere dwelled in Fraunce/ whan ſyr Edwarde her eldeſt ſone aſked leue tho for to go into Fraunce/ for to ſpeke wᵗ his moder Iſabell the quene/ ⁊ his fader the kynge graunted hym wᵗ a good wyll ⁊ ſayde to hym goo my fayre ſone in goddes bleſſynge ⁊ myn/ ⁊ thynke for to come agayne as haſtely as ẏ may/ and he wente ouer ẏ ſee into Fraunce ⁊ ẏ kynge of Fraūce his vncle receyued hym wᵗ moche honoure/ ⁊ ſayde vnto hym/ Fayre ſone ye be welcome/ ⁊ for bycauſe ẏ your fader come not to doo his homage for ẏ duchye of Guyon/ as his auncetours were wont to do I gyue you ẏ lordſhyp to holde it of me in herytage as all maner auncetours dydde before you wherfore he was called duke of Guyon.

¶How the kynge cryed his quene Iſabell/ and Edwarde his eldeſt ſone.

As kynge Edwarde of Englande herde tell how ẏ kynge of Fraūce hadde gyuen ẏ duchye of Guyon vnto ſyr Edwarde his ſone/ wᵗout conſente ⁊ wyll of hym ⁊ ẏ his ſone had receyued ẏ duchye he became wonder wrothe/ ⁊ ſende to his ſone by letter/ ẏ they ſholde come agayne into Englande in all haſt. And the quene Iſabell ⁊ ſyr Edwarde her ſone were wonder ſore adradde of ẏ kynges menaces ⁊ of his wrath/ ⁊ pryncypally for ẏ falſnes of ẏ Spenſers/ both of ẏ fader ⁊ alſo of the ſone/ ⁊ at his cōmaūdement they wolde not come/ wherfore kynge Edwarde was ful ſore anoyed/ ⁊ let make a crye at London/ ẏ yf ẏ quene Iſabell ⁊ Edwarde his eldeſt ſone came not in Englande ẏ they ſholde be holde as our enmyes/ both to ẏ realme/ ⁊ alſo to ẏ crowne of Englande/ and for ẏ they nolde come into Englande but both were exyled yͤ moder & her ſone. Whan yͤ quene herde theſe tydynges / ſhe was ſore adrad to be deſtroyed through the falſe cõiectynge of yͤ Spenſers / and went wͭ yͤ knyghtes yͭ were exyled out of englande for ſeynt Thomas cauſe of lancaſtre / that is to ſaye / ſyr Roger of Wygmore / ſyr Wyllyam Truſſell / ſyr Johã of Cromwell & many other good knyghtes wherfore they toke theyr counſeyle & ordeyned ymõge them for to make a mariage bytwene yͤ duke of Guyne the kynges ſone of Englande / & yͤ erles doughter of Henaude / yͭ was a noble knyght of name and a doughty in his tyme / & yf yͤ thȳge myght be brought about / thã ſholde they trowynge wͭ yͤ helpe of god & wͭ his helpe to recouer theyr herytage in Englande / wherfore they were put out through the falſe coniectynge of the Spenſers.

¶ How kynge Edwarde through cõſeyl of the Spenſers ſend to yͤ Douzepers of Fraunce that they ſholde helpe that the quene Iſabell and her ſone ſyr Edwarde were exyled out of Fraunce.

AS kynge Edwarde & the Spenſers herde how yͤ quene Iſabell & ſyr Edwarde her ſone / had alyed them to yͤ erle of Henaude / & to them that were exyled out of Englande for cauſe of Thomas of Lancaſtre they were ſo ſory that they wyſt not what for to do / wherfore ſir Hugh Spenſer yͤ ſone ſayd to ſyr Hughe the fader in this maner wyſe. Fader curſed be yͤ tyme & yͤ counſeyle yͭ euer ye conſented yͭ the quene Iſabell ſholde go into Fraunce for to treate of accorde bytwene the kynge of Englande & her broder the kynge of Fraunce / for yͭ was youre counſeyle / for at yͭ tyme forſothe your wyt fayled / for I drede me ſore leſt through hir & and her ſone we ſhall be deſtroyed / but yf we take yͤ better counſeyle. ¶ Now fayre ſyres vnderſtande / how merueyllous felony and falſhede yͤ Spẽſers ymagyned and caſte. For pryuely they lete fyll fyue barelles ferrours with ſyluer / the ſame amounted .v.M. pounde / & they ſend thoſe barelles ouer ſee pryuely by an alyaũte that was called Arnolde of Spayne / that was a broker of London yͭ he ſholde go to the Douzepers of Fraunce that they ſholde procure / & ſpeke to yͤ kyng of Fraũce / that quene Iſabell & her ſone Edwarde were dryuen and exyled out of Fraunce / & ymonge all other thynges that they were brought to the dethe as pryuely as they myght / but almyghty god wold not ſo. For whã this Arnolde was in yͤ hygh ſee / he was take wͭ Zelanders that met hym in the hygh ſee / and toke hym & lad hym to the erle of Henaude theyr lorde & moche Ioye was made for that takynge And at the laſt this Arnolde pryuely ſtale awaye from thens / & came to London And of this takynge & of other thynges the erle of Henaude ſayde to yͤ quene Iſabell. Dame make you mery & be of good chere / for ye be rycher than ye wende for to be / & take theſe fyue barelles full of ſyluer that ware ſende to the Douzepers of Fraunce for to ſlee you and your ſone Edwarde / and thynke you haſtely for to goo into England / and take with you ſyr Iohan of Henaude my broder / & .v.C. men of armes. For many of them of Fraunce in whome ye haue had great truſte done you for to ſcorne & almyghty god graunt you that grace your enemyes to ouercome. The quene Iſabell ſend tho through Henaude and Flaunders for ſouldyours and ordeyned her euery daye for to go into Englande agayne. And ſo ſhe hadde in her company ſyr Edmonde of wodſtocke / that was erle of Kente / that was ſyr Edwardes broder of Englande.

¶ How kynge Edwarde let kepe yͤ coſtes by the ſee / and let crye all yͤ pryce men of armes and fote men through Englande.

AS kyng Edwarde herde tell that quene Iſabell ⁊ Edwarde her ſone wolde come into englande / with a grete power of alyauntes / ⁊ with thẽ yͭ were outlawed out of Englõde for theyr rebellyouſnes / he was ſore adradde to be put downe / ⁊ for to loſe his kyngdome / wherfore he ordeyned to kepe his caſtels in wales as well as in Englande / wͭ vytaylles ⁊ theyr appareylles / and let kepe his ryuers ⁊ alſo yͤ ſee. And at the feeſt of Decolacyon of ſeynt Johan baptyſt the Cytezyns of Londõ ſend to yͤ kynge to Porcheſter an. C. men of armes. And alſo he commaũded by his letters ordeyned yͭ / euery hõdred ⁊ wepentake of Englande / to trye as well men of armes as men on fote / ⁊ that they ſholde be put in .xx. ſomme / ⁊ in an hondred ſomme. And commaũded yͭ all tho mẽ were redy whã ony ſhoute or crye were made / for to purpoſe ⁊ take yͤ alyaũtes that came into Englande for too take yͤ lande fro hȳ ⁊ put hym out of his kyngdome / ⁊ moreouer he lette crye throughe his patent in euery feyre ⁊ in euery marked of Englande / yͭ yͤ quene Iſabell ⁊ ſyr Edwarde his eldeſt ſone ⁊ yͤ erle of Kent that they were take / ⁊ ſauely kepte without ony manere of harme vnto theym doynge / ⁊ all other maner people that come wͭ them / anone ſmyte of theyr heddes / wͭout ony maner raũſom takynge of them And what mã myght brynge ſyr Rogers Mortymer hed of wygmore / ſhold haue an hõdred pounde of money for his trauyl ¶ And forthermore he ordeyned by his patent / ⁊ cõmaũded to make a fyre vpon euery hyll / beſyde yͤ ryuers ⁊ in lowe contrees / for to make hyghe bekens of tymbre. That yf it ſo were that the alyaũtes came to the lande or it was yͤ nyght tyme that than the inhabytantes there about ſholde endeuer theym ſelfe in goodly haſt to lyght ⁊ fyre the bekens / yͭ the countree maye be warned and come ⁊ mete theyr enemyes. And in that tyme deyed ſyr Roger Mortymer his vncle in yͤ toure of Lõdon.

¶ How the quene Iſabell ⁊ ſyr Edwarde duke of Guyhenne her ſone came into Lõdon at herwich / ⁊ how they dyde.

AS quene Iſabell ⁊ ſyr Edwarde her ſone duke of Guyhenne ſyr Edwarde of wodſtok erle of Kente ⁊ ſyr Johan the erles broder of Henaude ⁊ theyr company dradde not the menace of yͤ kynge / ne of his traytours for they truſted al in goddes grace / and came to Herwich in Southfolke yͤ .xxiiij. daye of Septembre ⁊ in yͤ yere of grace. M.CCC.xxvi. And the quene and ſyr Edwarde her ſone ſend letters to the mayre ⁊ comynalte of London / requyrynge theym / yͭ they ſholde be helpynge in the quarell and cauſe yͭ they had / yͭ is to ſay to deſtroye the traytours of yͤ realme. But none anſwers were ſende ayen / wherfore the quene and ſyr Edwarde her ſone ſend another patent letter vnder theyr ſeales the tenour of which letter here foloweth in this maner. ¶ Iſabel by the grace of god quene of England lady of Irlande / ⁊ counteſſe of Pountyf / ⁊ we Edwarde the eldeſt ſone of yͤ kynge of England duke of guyõ / erle of Cheſtre of Pountyf / ⁊ of mouñſtroyll / to the Mayre and to all yͤ comynalte of the cyte of London ſendeth gretȳge / for aſmoche as we haue before the tyme ſende to you by our letters / how we be come into this lande in good araye / and in good maner / for the honour ⁊ profyte of holy chyrche ⁊ of our dere lorde yͤ kynge ⁊ all yͤ realme wͭ al our myght / to kepe ⁊ mayntayne / as we and all ẏ good folke of the foꝛſayd realme are holden to do. And vpon that we pray you that ye wyll be helpynge to vs in aſmoch as ye may in this quarel ẏ is for ẏ comune proffyte of the foꝛſayd realme/ ⁊ we haue had to this tyme none anſwere of ẏ foꝛſayd letters / noꝛ knowe not your mynde in ẏ partye / wherfoꝛe we ſende to you agayne ⁊ pray ⁊ charge you ẏ ye bere you ſo agaynſt vs ẏ we haue no cauſe to greue you / but that ye be vnto vs helpynge by all the wayes ẏ ye may/ oꝛ may knowe For wyte you wel in certayne ẏ we ⁊ all ẏ be come with vs into this realme/ thynk not to do ony thynge/ but ẏ thynge ẏ ſhal be to the comyne proffyte of all the realme But onely to deſtroy Hugh Spenſer our enemy/ ⁊ enmye to al the realme/ as ye it well knowe/ wherfoꝛe we praye you/ and charge you in the fayth ẏ ye owe to oure lyege loꝛde ẏ kynge ⁊ to vs / ⁊ vpon all ẏ ye ſhall mowe forfayte agaynſt vs/ ẏ yf ẏ ſayd Spenſer our enmy come win your power/ ẏ ye doo hym haſtely to be take/ ⁊ ſauſly kepte vntyll ye haue oꝛdeyned of hym our wyll/ ⁊ that ye leue it not in noo maner wyſe as ye deſyꝛe honour ⁊ proffyte of vs all ⁊ of all the realme. Vnderſtande ye ryght well ẏ yf ye do this oure prayer ⁊ ſtreyght cōmaundement/ we thynke vs ſomoche ẏ moꝛe beholdynge vnto you. And alſo ye ſhal gette you woꝛſhyp/ ⁊ alſo proffyte / yf ye ſende vs haſtely anſwer of all your wyll agayne at Baldock the fyfte daye of Octobꝛe / whiche letter in ẏ dawnynge of ẏ day of ſeynt Denes/ was tacked vpō the newe croſſe in chepe and many copyes of the ſame letter were tacked vpon wyndowes ⁊ doꝛes ⁊ vpon other places in ẏ cyte of london / ẏ all mē paſſynge by the waye myght theym rede ⁊ ſe. And in the ſame tyme kynge Edwarde was at London in ẏ toure at his mete And a meſſāger came into the hall ⁊ ſayd that the quene Iſabell was come to land at Herewich/ ⁊ hath bꝛought in her company ſyr Iohā of Henaude / ⁊ with hym men of armes without nombꝛe. And wᵗ ẏ woꝛde ſyr Hugh Spēſer the fader ſpake and thus vnto ẏ kynge ſayde. My mooſt woꝛſhypfull loꝛde and kynge of Englāde Now make good chere/ foꝛ certaynly they ben all oures. The kȳge ſawe this woꝛde comfoꝛtable / yet he was full ſoꝛowfull ⁊ penſyf in his herte. And ẏ kynge had not fully eten/ but there came into the hall another meſſāger/ ⁊ ſayd that the quene Iſabell was arryued at Herewiche beſyde Ipſwyche in Southfolke/ ſyr Hugh Spēſer the fader ſpake to the meſſāger ⁊ ſayd Tell ſoth in good fayth my fayꝛe frende/ is ſhe come wᵗ a great ſtrength. Now certes the ſoth foꝛ to ſaye ſyr ſayd the meſſāgere/ ſhe ne hath in her company but. vi hōdꝛed men of armes. And with ẏ woꝛde ſyr Hughe Spenſer the fader cryed wᵗ an hyghe voyce ⁊ ſayd. Alas alas we ben all betrayed/ foꝛ certes wᵗ ſo lytell powere ſhe had neuer come to lande / but yf folke of this lande were vnto her conſent. And therfoꝛe after theyꝛ mete they toke coūſel and wente towarde wales / foꝛ to arere ẏ walſhe men ayenſt ẏ quene Iſabell and Edwarde her ſone /all foꝛ to fyght and ſo they were in purpoſe euerychone.

¶ How mayſter water Stapylton byſſhop of Exetre that was the kynges treſoꝛer/ was hedded at London.

AND in the ſame tyme kynge Edwarde was ſoꝛe adꝛadde / leſte ẏ men of London wolde yelde theym vnto the quene Iſabel/ ⁊ to her ſone Edwarde wherfoꝛe he ſet mayſter walter Stapylton his treſoꝛer/ foꝛ to be wardeyne/ ⁊ kepe of ẏ cyte of Londō/ wᵗ the Mayꝛe/ ſo came to ẏ Gylde hall of London/ and aſked the keyes of the yates of the Cytee/ through vertue and ſtrength of this commiſſion/⁊ wolde haue had yͤ kepynge of yͤ cyte. And the comuners anſwered/and ſayd yͭ they wolde kepe yͤ cyte to the honoure of kynge Edwarde ⁊ of Iſabell the quene/⁊ of the duke yͤ kynges ſone woute ony more. The byſſhoppe tho was ſore anoyed/and ſwore othes/yͭ they al ſholde abye it anone as yͤ kynge Edwarde were come oute of Wal s. ❡ And the comuners all anone of yͤ cyte toke the byſſhop ⁊ lad hym anone amyddes of yͤ Chepe/⁊ there they ſmote of his heed/⁊ ſet is heed in his ryght hande/forth wͭ the ſame comyns of yͤ cyte of Londō beheded two of his ſquyers that wente with the byſſhop/and one of theym was called Wyllyam of wayle/yͭ was the byſſhops neuew. And yͤ other was called Iohā of Padyntō/⁊ alſo they toke a burgeys of Londō yͭ was called Iohā Marſhal/yͭ was ſyr Hugh Spenſer kepte the fader/⁊ ſmote of his heed alſo. And yͭ ſame tyme yͤ byſſhop had in Londō a fayre tour in makynge in his cloſe/vpon the ryuer Tamys yͭ was withoute teple barre ⁊ he fayled ſtone to make therof an ende and he cōmaūded his men to go to the frere Carmes/⁊ there they toke ſtone to make therwith yͤ tour/⁊ moche ſonde ⁊ morter ⁊ olde robous yͭ was lefte. And for the dyſpyte yͭ yͤ byſſhop had done vnto holy chirche/he ⁊ his two ſquyers were buryed in yͤ ſonde/as though they had bene houndes/⁊ there they laye.xi.wekes tyll that yͤ quene Iſabell ſende her letters to yͤ cōmuners/⁊ prayed them yͭ they wolde ſuffre ⁊ graunt/that the byſſhop myght be take oute of that place/⁊ be buryed at Excetre at his owne chyrch/⁊ ſo he was/⁊ his two ſquyers were buryed at ſeynt Clementes chirche wͭout teple barre. And it was no wōder though yͤ byſſhop dyed an euyl deth/for he was a couetous mā ⁊ had wͭ hym no mercy/⁊ euyll cōdiſcyted yͤ kynge. And ſoone after was Arnolde of Spayne take yͭ aſſented to lede yͤ .v. M. li. of ſyluer in fyue barels ſecretes vnto yͤ douzepers of Fraūce/for to helpe ⁊ haſt yͤ quene Iſabel to her deth/⁊ Edward her ſone alſo/⁊ this Arnolde was put to deth withoute the cytee.

❡ How kyng Edwarde ⁊ ſyr Hugh Spēſer ⁊ the erle of Arundell were taken.

AS kynge Edward had ſend mayſter walter Stapylton/his treſorer into Londō/for to kepe yͤ cyte vnto hym ayenſt yͤ quene Iſabel his wyfe/⁊ ayenſt Edwarde his ſone/anone hym ſelfe toke with hym ſyr Hugh Spenſer the ſone ⁊ ſyr Iohan of Arūdell ⁊ mayſter Roberte Baldok his chaūceler a fals pylled clerke ⁊ toke theyr way towarde Bryſtow/and there yͤ kynge abode alytel tyme/⁊ made ſyr Hughe Spēſer yͤ fader as Conſtable ⁊ keper of yͤ caſtell/⁊ yͤ kynge and yͤ other Spēſer went to ſhyppe/⁊ ſayled towarde wales/⁊ toke no leue of yͤ kynges Stewarde/ne of none of yͤ kynges houſhold ⁊ went ouer into wales for to arere yͤ walſhe men ayenſt dame Iſabel the quene ⁊ yͤ duke her ſone. And therle of Kent/and ſyr Iohā of Henaude. And they wente ⁊ purſued after thē/⁊ theyr power encreaſed dayly/ſo at yͤ laſte yͤ kynge was takē vpon an hyll in wales/⁊ ſyr Hugh Spēſer yͤ ſone in yͤ other ſyde of yͤ ſame hyll/⁊ the falſe pylled clerke mayſter Roberte Baldok there faſt beſyde them. And they were broughte ayene into Englande/as almyghty god wolde. And the kȳge hym ſelfe was put in ſauf kepynge in the caſtell of Kenylworth/⁊ hym kepte ſyr Henry yͭ was ſeynt Thomas broder of Lancaſtre/and ſyr Hugh the fader came and put hym in yͤ quenes grace and Edwarde her ſone duke of Guyen/but ſyr Hugh

Spenſer after ẏ tyme that he was taken wolde neuer ete no maner mete nor drynke/ for he wyſt he ſholde haue noo mercy/ ſaue onely to be deed. And the quene and her counſayll had ordeyned/ that he ſholde haue ben done to deth at London. But he was ſo feble for his moche faſtynge ẏ he was nyghe deed/ ⁊ therfore it was ordeyned that he ſholde haue his Iudgemēt at Herforde. And men ſet vpon theyr hedes chapelettes of ſharpe nettles/ ⁊ two ſquyers blewe in theyr eeres with two great bugle hornes/ vpon the two pryſoners/ ẏ one myght here theyr blowyng more thā a myle. And one Symonde of redynge ẏ kynges Marſhal bare before them vpon a ſpere theyr armes reuerſed/ in token ẏ they ſholde be vndone for euermore. And vpon the morowe was ſyr Hugh Spenſer the ſone dampned to dethe ⁊ was hanged drawen ⁊ heded/ ⁊ his bowelles takē out of his body ⁊ brent/ and after that he was quartred/ ⁊ his four quarters were ſende to the foure townes of Englande/ ⁊ his heed ſend to Lōdon brydge. And this Symonde for cauſe that he dyſpyſed quene Iſabel/ he was drawen ⁊ hanged in a ſtage made amyddes ẏ forſayd ſyr hughes galowes. And ẏ ſame daye a lytell frō thens was ſyr Iohan of Arundell beheded bycauſe he was one of ſyr Hugh Spenſers coūſaylers. And anone after was ſir Hughe Spenſer hanged ⁊ drawen/ ⁊ heded at Bryſtowe/ ⁊ after hanged agayne by ẏ armes with two ſtronge ropes/ and the fourth day after he was hewen all to peces/ ⁊ houndes ete hym. And bycauſe that the kynge had gyuen hym ẏ erldom of wynchestre his heed was ſend thyder ⁊ put vpon a ſpere. And the fals Baldocke was ſend to London and there he deyed in pryſon amonge theues/ for men dyde hym no more reuerence/ than they wolde do to an hounde. And ſoo deyed the traytours of Englande bleſſyd be almyghtye god. And it was no wonder/ for through theyr counſayll the good erle Thomas of Lancaſtre was done vnto dethe/ and all that helde with Thomas of Lancaſtre thorowe the traytours were vndone/ and al theyr heyres dyſheryted.

* * *

¶ How kyng Edwarde was put downe and his dygnyte take from hym.

AND anone after as all this was done/ quene Iſabell ⁊ Edwarde her ſone duke of Guyhenne/ ⁊ all the grete lordes of Englande at one aſſent/ ſende to kynge Edwarde to the caſtel of Kenylworth there at he was in kepynge vnder ẏ warde of ſyr Iohan Hachyn/ that was the byſſhop of Ely/ ⁊ of ſyr Iohan of Percy a baron/ for bycauſe that he ſholde ordeyne his parlyament at a certayn place in Englande/ for to redreſſe and amende the ſtate of the realme. And kyng Edward he therin anſwered and ſayd. Lordes ſaid he ye ſe full well how it is. Lo here my ſele/ and I gyue to you all my power for to call and ordeyne a parlyamente in what place that ye wyll. ¶ And than they toke theyr leue of hym and came agayn to the barons of Englande. And whā that they hadde the kynges patent of this thynge/ they ſhewed it to the lordes. And thanne was ordeyned that the parlyamēt ſholde be at Weſtmynſter at the Vtas of ſeynt Hylary. And all the great Lordes of Englande ſet ordeyne them there agaynſt ẏ tyme that the parlyament ſholde be. And at whiche daye the parlyament was the kynge wolde not come there for no maner of thynge/ as he hadde ſet hym ſelfe and aſſygned. And neuertheles ẏ barons ſēde vnto hym one tyme ⁊ other. And he ſwore by goddes ſoule that he wolde not come there one fote. Wherfore it was ordeyned by al the great Lordes of Englande that he ſholde no longer be kynge/ but be depoſed/ ⁊ ſayde they wolde crowne Edwarde his ſone the elder ẏ was the duke of Guyenne. And ſend tydynges vnto the kyng ther as he was in warde vnder ſyr Johā erle of Garenne. And ſyr Johan of bothū ẏ was byſſhop of Hely/ ⁊ ſyr Henry Percy a baron/ ⁊ ſyr wyllyā Truſſel a knyght that was with ẏ erle ſyr Thomas of lancaſtre for to yelde vp theyr homages vnto hym for all them of Englande. ¶ Syr wyllyam Truſſell ſayd theſe wordes/ ſyr Edwarde for cauſe ẏ ye haue trayed your people of Englande/ ⁊ haue vndone many great lordes of England without ony cauſe/ ye ſhall be depoſed/ ⁊ now ye be vnſtande thanked be god. And alſo for cauſe that ye wolde not come to the parlyamēt as ye ordeyned at weſtmynſter/ as in your letter patent is conteyned for to treate wt your owne lyege men as a kynge ſholde And therfore through all the comyns aſſent/ ⁊ all ẏ lordes of Englande I tell vnto you theſe wordes. Ye ſhall vnderſtande ſyr that the barons of England at one aſſent wyll that ye be no more kynge of Englande/ but vtterly haue put you oute of your ryalte for euermore. And ẏ byſſhop of Ely ſayd than to ẏ kynge. Syr Edwarde I yelde vp feaute ⁊ homage for al ẏ archebyſſhops ⁊ byſſhops of England ⁊ for all the clergy. Than ſayd ſyr Johā erle of Garenne. Syr Edwarde I yelde vp here vnto you feaute ⁊ homage for me ⁊ for all the erles of Englande. And ſyr Henry Percy gaue vp alſo his homage for hym ⁊ for all ẏ barons of Englande. And than ſayd ſyr wyllyā Truſſell. I yelde vp now to you homage for me ⁊ alſo for all ẏ knyghtes of Englande/ ⁊ for all them ẏ holde by ſeruyaunce/ or by ony other thynge of you/ ſo ẏ from this daye after ye ſhall not be claymed kynge/ nor for kynge be holde But from this tyme afterwarde ye ſhall be holden for a ſynguler man of all ẏ people. And ſoo they went thens to London where the lordes of England abode them And ſyr Edwarde abode in pryſō in good kepynge. And this was on the day of the Conuerſyon of ſeynt Paule/ in the. xx. yere of his reygne.

¶ Of the prophecye of Merlyn declared of kynge Edwarde the ſone of kynge Edwarde the fyrſt.

Of this kyng Edwarde prophecyed Merlyn ⁊ ſayd/ there ſholde come a gote out of Carre ẏ ſholde haue hornes of ſyluer/ ⁊ a berde as whyte as ſnowe. And a droppe ſholde come out of his noſethrylles ẏ ſholde betoken moche harme/ hōgre ⁊ deth of people ⁊ great loſſe of his lande And ẏ in the begynnynge of his reygne/ ſholde be haūced moche lechery/ ⁊ he ſaid ſothe. Alas ẏ tyme/ for kynge Edward ẏ was kyng Edwardes ſone was borne at Carnaruā in walys. For ſoth he had hornes of ſyluer/ ⁊ a berde as whyte as ſnow Whan he was made prynce of wales too moche he gaue hym to ryote/ and to foly/ And ſothe ſayd Merlyn in his prophecye ẏ there ſholde come oute of his noſe a drope. For in his tyme was great hongre ymonge the poore people/ ⁊ ſtronge dethe ymonge ẏ ryche ẏ dyed in ſtraunge lande with moche ſorowe/ ⁊ in warre in Scotlande. And after he loſt Scotlande ⁊ gaſcoyne/ ⁊ moch Lechery in his dayes was haūced. Alſo Merlyn ſayd ẏ this gote ſholde ſeke ẏ floure of lyfe ⁊ of dethe/ ⁊ he ſaid ſothe/ for he ſpouſed Iſabel ẏ kynges ſyſter of Fraunce. And in this tyme Merlyn ſayde ẏ there ſholde be made brydges of folk vpō dyches of ẏ ſee/ ⁊ that was well ſene at Bannockeſborne in Scotlande/ whan he was dyſcomfyted there of ẏ Scottes. And Merlyn tolde alſo that ſtones ſholde fal from caſtelles/ ⁊ many townes ſholde be made playne. And he ſayd ſoth. For whan kynge Edwarde was byſcomfyted in Scotlande ⁊ came than ſouthwarde/ the Scottes beſyeged caſtelles/ ⁊ dyd moche harme/ ⁊ brent townes unto the harde erthe. ¶ And afterward Merlyn tolde that an egle ſholde come oute of Cornewayle ẏ ſholde haue fethers of golde/ ẏ of pryde ſholde haue no pere/ and he ſholde deſpyſe lordes of blode/ ⁊ after he ſhold deye through a beere at Gauerſich ⁊ that prophecy was full well knowen ⁊ founde ſothe. For by the Egle is underſtāde ſyr Peers Gauaſton ẏ tho was erle of Cornewayle/ whiche was a wonder proude man and deſpyſed ẏ baronage of Englande/ but afterwarde he was heded at Gauerſyth through ẏ erle of Lancaſtre. ⁊ the erle of warwyk. And Merlyn tolde that in this tyme it ſhold ſeme ẏ the beer ſholde brēne/ ⁊ that batayll ſholde be upō an arme of the ſee in a felde arayed lyke a ſhelde/ where ſholde deye many white hedes. And he ſayd ſothe. For by ẏ brēnyng of the beer it betokened great drede throughe cuttynge of ſwerdes at the batayll of Myton. For there came the Scottes in ẏ maner of a ſhelde/ in a wynge/ ⁊ ſlew men of relygyon preſtes ⁊ ſeculers. Wherfore the Scottes called that batayll in deſpyte of the Englyſſhmen ẏ whyte batayl And after Merlyn ſayd the forſayd beere ſholde do ẏ gote moche harme/ ⁊ ẏ ſholde be upon ẏ ſouthweſt/ ⁊ alſo upon his blode. And ſayd alſo that the gote ſholde loſe moche deale of his lande/ tyll the tyme ẏ ſhame ſhold hym ouercome/ and than he ſholde clothe hym in a lyons ſkynne/ and ſholde wynne agayne that he had loſte/ ⁊ more through people ẏ ſholde come oute of the Northweſt/ that ſholde make hym to be fered/ ⁊ auenge hym upon his enemyes through counſayll of .ii. owles/ that fyrſt ſholde be in peryl to be undone. And tho .ii. owles ſholde go ouer ſee into ſtrāge lande/ ⁊ there dwel a certayne tyme/ ⁊ after retourned into Englāde/ ⁊ do moch harme unto many one/ ⁊ that they ſholde counſayll the gote to meue warre ayenſt the forſayde beere/ ⁊ the gote ⁊ the owles ſholde come to an arme of the ſee at Burton upon Trent/ ⁊ ſholde go ouer/ ⁊ that for drede the beer ſholde flee wt a ſwanne in his company to bury towarde ẏ north through an unkynde outpulter/ ⁊ that ẏ ſwanne than ſholde be ſlayn with ſorowe ⁊ the beer ſholde be ſlayne full nyghe his owne neſt/ ẏ ſholde ſtande upon Pontfret upon whome ẏ ſone ſhold ſhedde his beames/ ⁊ many folke ſhold ſeke hym for his vertue. And he ſayde ſothe. For the good erle Thomas of Lancaſtre was borne in the Northweſt/ ⁊ the kynges coſyn. And by law he made ẏ kynge loſe moche lande ẏ he had purchaſed wylfully/ tyl at ẏ laſt the kynge toke therof ſhame/ ⁊ hym ſelfe ſhewe with cruelte/ gettynge agayn ẏ he had loſt/ ⁊ more/ through helpe of folke comynge out of the northweſt/ by whom he was drad/ ⁊ auenged on his barons/ thorough counſayl of the two Spenſers that afore were outlawed for theyr wickednes And were come agayne out of Fraūce/ ⁊ ſomoche theſe Spenſers counſayled the kynge that he ſholde warre upō thomas of Lancaſter/ that the kynge and the two Spenſers the fader and ẏ ſone/ and the erle of Arundell and theyr power met wt Thomas of Lancaſter at Burton upon Trent/ and hym there diſcomfyted/ and ſyr Umfray Erle of Herforde was in his company. And after fledde the forſayde Thomas and Humfray with theyr company to Burbrygge metynge with ſyr Andrewe of Herkela/ that is called ẏ unkynde outpulter/ and alſo ſyr Symonde Warde Erle of Yorke came and met with

Thomas of Lancaſtre with an huge power/ ⁊ them dyſcomfyted/ ⁊ in that ſcomfyture ẏ erle of Herforde was ſlayne vpõ the brydge cowardly with a ſpere in the foundament/ ⁊ the erle Thomas was taken and lad vnto Poũtfret/ ⁊ tho was he heded beſyde his owne caſtell. But afterwarde many hym ſought for myracles ẏ god dyd for hym. And in that tyme merlyn ſayde for ſorowe ⁊ harme ſholde dye a people of his lande. wherfore many landes ſholde be vpon hym the more bolder/ ⁊ he ſayd ſothe for bycauſe of his Barons that were put to dethe for ſeynt Thomas querell of Lancaſtre/ people of many landes became the bolder for to meue warre vpõ theyr kynge/ for theyr blode was torned to many nacyons. And afterwarde Merlyn tolde ⁊ ſayd ẏ the forſayd owles ſholde doo moche harme vnto ẏ floure of lyfe ⁊ deth/ and they ſholde brynge her to moche dyſeaſe/ ſo ẏ ſhe ſholde go ouer ſee into Fraunce/ for to make peas to ẏ floure delyce/ ⁊ there ſholde abyde tyll a tyme her ſede ſholde come ⁊ fetche her/ and tho they ſholde abyde bothe tyll ẏ tyme that they ſholde clothe them with grace/ ⁊ tho two owles we ſholde ſeke/ ⁊ put them to pyteous dethe/ ⁊ that prophecy was full well knowen/ and was full ſothe/ for ſyr Hughe Spenſer ẏ fader/ ⁊ ſyr Hughe the ſone dyd moche ſorowe and perſecucyon vnto ẏ quene Iſabell through theyr procurement to her lorde ẏ kynge/ ſo they ordeyned amonge them/ ẏ ſhe was put vnto her wages/ that is for to ſay. xx. ſhelynges in ẏ daye/ wherfore ẏ kynge of Fraũce her broder was ſore anoyed/ ⁊ ſende in Englande by his letters vnto kynge Edwarde to come vnto his parlyament to Parys in Fraũce. But kynge Edwarde was ſore adrad to come there/ for he wende to haue be areſted tyll ẏ he hadde made amendes for the treſpace ẏ ſyr Hughe Spenſer the fader ⁊ the ſone had done ⁊ for ẏ harme ẏ they hadde done vnto quene Iſabell his ſyſter/ wherfore through his ordynaũce ⁊ conſent of ẏ Spenſers/ ẏ quene Iſabell went ouer ſee into Fraũce for to make acorde bytwene kyng Edwarde ⁊ the kynge of Fraũce her broder And there dwelled ſhe in Fraũce tyll Edwarde her eldeſt ſone came her for to ſeke and ſo they dwelled there bothe tyll that alyaũce was made bytwene them/ ⁊ the gentyll erle of Henaude/ ẏ yf they wyth theyr vertue myght deſtroye ⁊ ouercome ẏ venym ⁊ ẏ falſeneſſe of ẏ ſpenſers ẏ ſyr Edwarde ſholde ſpouſe dame phylyp ẏ worſhypfull lady/ ⁊ erles doughter of Henaude/ wherfore ẏ quene Iſabell ⁊ Edwarde her ſone/ ⁊ ſyr Edwarde of wodſtocke the kynges broder of Englande/ ⁊ ſyr Iohan of Henaude/ and ſyr Roger Mortymer of wygmore/ ⁊ ſyr Thomas Rocelyn/ ⁊ ſyr Iohan of Crõwell/ ⁊ ſyr Wyllyam Truſſell/ ⁊ many other of ẏ alyaunce of ẏ gentyll erle Thomas of lancaſter/ ẏ were eyled out of Englande for his quarell/ ⁊ were dyſheryted of theyr landes/ ordeyned them a great power/ ⁊ arryued at Herewich in ſouthfolke. And ſoone after they purſued ẏ Spenſers tyll ẏ they were taken and put to pyteous dethe/ as before is ſayd/ ⁊ theyr cõpany alſo/ for the great falſeneſſe ẏ they dyd to kynge Edwarde and to his people. And Merlyn ſayd alſo more ẏ ẏ gote ſholde be in great deſtreſſe ⁊ in great anguyſſhe ⁊ in great ſorowe he ſholde lede his lyfe/ ⁊ ſayd ſothe/ for after ẏ tyme ẏ kynge Edwarde was taken he was put into warde tyll ẏ the Spenſers were put to deth/ ⁊ alſo bycauſe he wolde not come vnto his parliamẽt at London as he had ordeyned ⁊ aſſygned hym ſelfe vnto his baronage/ ⁊ alſo wolde not gouerne ⁊ rule his people/ nor his reame as a kynge ſholde do. Wherfore ſome of ẏ ba rons of Englande came ⁊ yelde vp theyr homages vnto hȳ / for them ⁊ all yͤ other of yͤ realme / in yͤ daye of yͤ conuercyon of ſeynt Paule / in yͤ yere of his reygne.xx. And they put hym out of his royalte for euermore. And euer lyued afterwarde in moche ſorowe and anguyſſhe.

Ludouicus was Emperour after Henry foure yere. this Lodwyke was duke of Bauare / ⁊ he dyſpyſed yͤ coronacyon of the pope / wherfore the pope depoſed hym / ⁊ moche labour ⁊ many perylles he had after / ⁊ he troubled greetly yͤ vnyte of holy chyrche. Than was choſen agaynſt hȳ Frederyke duke of Oſtryche and he ouercame the duke ⁊ abode a rebellion to his ende / ⁊ in great peryl to his ſoule. And at yͤ laſt Karollus was choſen agaynſt hym / the whiche preuayled / ⁊ ſo beynge lodewyke fel downe of his horſe ⁊ dyſceſſed. ¶ Johñ Mandeuyll a doctour of phyſyk ⁊ a knyght borne was in Englande aboute this tyme. And he made a meruaylous pylgrymage / for he went almoſt aboute al the worlde / ⁊ he wrote his dedes in thre langages ⁊ deceſſed ⁊ was buryed at ſeynt Albons. ¶ Benedictus the.xxii. was pope after Johan. vii. yere and more / this man was a monke and in all his yougth he was of good conuerſacyon / ⁊ a doctour in diuinyte. And whan he was made pope he refourmed thorder of ſeynt Benet in that thynge yͭ was neceſſary / ⁊ he was a harde man to grauñte benefyces / leſt he had grauñted it to an vncunnynge mā / he made a decretal yͭ whiche began (Benedictus deus in donis ſuis) And he was very cruell in his ſeythe / and for that of ſome men was lytel loued he was ſo ſtoute a man that almooſt he wolde not knowe his owne coſyns.

¶ Anno dñi. M.CCC.xxii.

¶ Of kynge Edwarde the thyrde after the Conqueſt.

After this kynge Edwarde Carnaruan reygned ſyr Edwarde of wyndſore his ſone / yͤ whiche was crowned kynge. ⁊ anoynted at Weſtmynſter / through coūſeyle ⁊ conſent of all yͤ great lordes of yͤ reame yͤ ſonday on cādelmaſſe euen / in yͤ yere of grace. M. CCC.xxvi. yͭ was of age yͭ tyme but.xv. yere. And for cauſe yͭ his fader was in warde in the caſtell of kenilworth ⁊ alſo was put downe of his royalte / yͤ realme of Englande was without kyng frō yͤ feeſt of ſeynt Katheryn frō yͤ yere aboue ſayd to yͤ feeſt of Cādelmaſſe. And tho were all maner plees of yͤ kynges benche aſtēte. And tho was commaūded to all yͤ ſhyrefs of Englande through wrytte / to warne yͤ partyes to be ſendaūtes through ſomnynge agayne / ⁊ alſo fertheremore yͭ all pryſoners yͭ were in yͤ kynges gayeles that were attached through ſhyrefs / ſholde be lete go quyte. The kynge Edwarde after his coronacyon / at yͤ prayer ⁊ beſechynge of his lyege of yͤ realme grauñted thē a chartre of ſtedfaſt peas to all thē yͭ wold it aske. And ſyr Johan of Henaude / ⁊ his company toke theyr leue of yͤ kynge ⁊ of yͤ lordes of the reame / ⁊ tourned home to theyr owne cuntre ayene. And eche of thē had full ryche gyftes / euery man as he was of value ⁊ of eſtate. And tho was Englande in reſte ⁊ peas / ⁊ great loue bytwene the kynge ⁊ his lordes. And comynly Engylyſſhe men ſayd ymōge thē yͭ yͤ deuyll was deed / but yͤ innumerable treſoure of the kynge his fader / ⁊ yͤ treſoure of yͤ Spenſers / bothe of yͤ fader ⁊ of yͤ ſone / ⁊ of yͤ erle of Arundell / ⁊ of mayſter Robert Baldok yͭ was the kynges Chaunceler was departed after the quene Iſabelles ordynaunce ⁊ ſyr Roger Mortymers of wygmore / ſo that the kynge hadde nothynge therof/but at her wyll ⁊ her delyueraunce/nor of theyr landes/as afterwarde ye ſhall here.

¶ How kynge Edwarde went vnto ſtanthop for to mete the Scottes.

AND yet in yͤ ſame tyme was the kynge in yͤ caſtell of kenylworthe vnder yͤ kepynge of ſyr Henry that was erle Thomas of Lancaſtres broder that tho was erle of Leyceſtre. And the kynge graūted hym yͤ erledome of Lancaſtre/yͭ yͤ kynge his fader had ſeaſed into his hāde ⁊ put oute Thomas of Lancaſtre ⁊ of Leyceſtre/⁊ alſo Stewarde of Englande as his broder was in his tyme. But ſyr Edwarde yͭ was kynge Edwardes fader made ſorowe without ende/for bycauſe he myght not ſpeke with his wyfe/nor wᵗ his ſone/wherfore he was in moche myſchyef. For though it was ſo yͭ he was led ⁊ ruled by falſe coūſeyll/yet he was kyng Edwardes ſone called Edwarde wᵗ yͤ longe ſhankes/⁊ came oute of the worthyeſt blood of all yͤ worlde/⁊ they to whome he was wonte to gyue great gyftes ⁊ larges/ were mooſt pryuy wᵗ yͤ kyng his owne ſone/and they were his ennemyes bothe by nyght ⁊ by day yͭ procured to make debate ⁊ breake bytwene hym ⁊ his ſone and Iſabell his wyfe. But the freres prechers were to hym good frendes euermore/⁊ caſt both by nyght ⁊ by day how they myght brynge hym out of pryſon. And ymonge theyr company yͭ yͤ freres hadde pryuely brought/there was a frere called Dunheued/⁊ he had ordeyned ⁊ gadred a great company of folke to kepe at yͤ nede/but yͤ frere was taken ⁊ put in yͤ caſtel of Pontfret/⁊ there he dyed in pryſon/⁊ ſyr Henry of Lancaſtre yͭ had yͤ kynges fader in kepynge through the cōmaundement of the kynge delyuered Edwarde yͤ kynges fader by endenture to ſyr Thomas of Berkelay. And ſo ſyr Iohn̄ Matreuas ⁊ they lad hym frō yͤ caſtell of Kenylworth to yͤ caſtell of Berkelay/⁊ kept hȳ there ſaufly. And at Eeſter next after his coronacyon yͤ kynge ordeyned a great huge hooſte for to fyght agaynſte yͤ Scottes. And ſyr Iohan yͤ erles broder of Henaude came frō beyonde yͤ ſee for to helpe kynge Edwarde ⁊ brought wᵗ hȳ .vii.C. men of armes ⁊ arryued at Douer/⁊ they had leue for to go forth tyl they came to Yorke there yͤ kynge the abode/⁊ yͤ Scottes came thyder to yͤ kynge for to make peas ⁊ accorde/but the accordement laſted not bytwene them but a lytel tyme. And at yͭ tyme yͤ Englyſſhe men were clothed all in cotes ⁊ hodes paynted wᵗ letters ⁊ wᵗ floures full ſemely wᵗ longe berdes ⁊ therfore the Scottes made a byll yͭ was faſtned vpon the chyrche dores of ſeynt Peter towarde ſtangate/⁊ thus ſayd yͤ ſcrypture in deſpyte of Englyſſh mē. Longe berdes hertles/paynted hodes wytles/gaye cotes graceles/maketh englande thryftles.

SO in Trynyte daye next after began yͤ contake in yͤ cytee of Yorke bytwene yͤ Englyſſh men ⁊ yͤ Henaudes and in yͤ debate were ſlayne of yͤ erldō of Nicholl ⁊ murdred .lxxx. mē ⁊ after they were buryed in ſeynt clementes chyrche in foſgate. ⁊ for cauſe yͭ yͤ henaudes came to helpe the kynge/theyr peas was cryed vpon peyne of lyfe ⁊ lymme/⁊ in yͤ other halfe it was founde by an enqueſt of the cyte yͭ yͤ Englyſſhe men began yͤ debate.

¶ How yͤ Englyſſhe men ſtopped yͤ Scottes in the parke of Stanope ⁊ how they tourned agayne into Scotlande.

THis tyme the Scottes had aſſembled all theyr power ⁊ came into Englande ⁊ ſlewe ⁊ robbed all that they myght take/⁊ alſo brente ⁊ deſtroyed all the noꝛth countre thꝛoughout/tyll ẏ they came vnto ẏ parke of Stanhope in werydale/⁊ there ẏ ſcottes helde thē in a buſſhement/but whan ẏ kynge had herde thoꝛough ſpyes where ẏ ſcottes were/anone ryght wt his hoſte beſyeged them wtin the foꝛſayd parke ſo ẏ ẏ ſcottes wyſt not where to go out/but onely to theyꝛ harmes/⁊ they abode in ẏ parke.xv.days/⁊ bytayles fayled them in euery ſyde/ſoo ẏ they were greatly peyꝛed of bodyes and ſyth ẏ Brute came fyꝛſte into Brytayne to this tyme/there was neuer ſene ſoo fayꝛe an hoſt/what of Englyſſhe men ⁊ of alyaunces ⁊ of men of fote/the whiche oꝛdeyned them foꝛ to fyght wt ẏ Scottes/thꝛough the eggynge of ſyꝛ Henry of Lancaſtre ⁊ of ſyꝛ Iohn of Henaude ẏ wolde haue gone ouer ẏ water of wyth foꝛ to haue foughte wt ẏ ſcottes. But ſyꝛ Roger moꝛtymer cōſented not therto/foꝛ he had pryuely take mede of ẏ ſcottes them to helpe that they myght go into theyꝛ owne countre. And thus ſame Moꝛtymer counſeyled ſo moche Thomas of bꝛotherton ẏ erle of Marſhal that was kynge Edwardes vncle ẏ ẏ foꝛſayd Thomas ſholde not aſſemble at ẏ tyme vnto ẏ Scottes/⁊ he aſſented/but he wyſt not ẏ doynge bytwene ẏ Scottes ⁊ the foꝛſayd Moꝛtymer. And bycauſe ẏ he was marſhal of Englande as to hym perteyned euer ẏ vauntwarde/he ſend haſtely to ẏ erle of Lancaſtre/⁊ to ſyꝛ Iohn of Henaude that they ſholde not fyght with the Scottes/in pꝛeiudyce ⁊ harmynge of hym ⁊ his fee/⁊ yf they dyd ẏ they ſholde ſtande to theyꝛ owne peryll. And the foꝛſayd Marſhall was all arayed wt his batayle/at ẏ reredoos of the erle of Lancaſtre/foꝛ to haue fought wt hym and wt his folke yf he had go to fyghte wt ẏ Scottes/⁊ in this maner he was deceyued ⁊ wyſt nothynge of the treaſon. And thus was ẏ kynge pꝛincipally deceyued. And whan it was nyghte ſyꝛ Roger Moꝛtymer that hadde the watche foꝛ to kepe of ẏ hoſte ẏ nyght dyſtroubled ẏ watche ẏ nothynge myght be done. And in the meane whyle the ſcottes ſtele by nyght towarde theyꝛ owne coūtre as faſt as they myght. And ſo was the kynge falſly betrayed that wened that all ẏ traytours of his lande had ben bꝛought to an ende as it was ſayd befoꝛe. Now here you loꝛdes how traytourſly kynge Edwarde was deceyued/how merueyllouſly ⁊ boldly ẏ Scottes dyd of warre. Foꝛ Iames Douglas with two hondꝛed men of armes rode thꝛoughout all the hoſte of kynge Edwarde/the ſame nyght ẏ Scottes eſcaped towarde theyꝛ owne coūtre as is aboue ſayd tyll they came to ẏ kynges pauylyon/⁊ ſlewe there many men in theyꝛ beddes/⁊ cryed Nawarde na ward/and another tyme a Douglas a Douglas/wherfoꝛe ẏ kyng ẏ was in his pauylyon ⁊ moche other folke were wonder ſoꝛe afrayed/but bleſſyd be almyghty god ẏ kynge was not taken/⁊ in great peryll was tho ẏ realme of Englande/⁊ ẏ nyght ẏ mone ſhone full clere and bꝛyght. And foꝛ al the kynges men ẏ ſcottes ſcaped awaye harmeles. And on the moꝛowe whan ẏ kynge wyſt ẏ ẏ Scottes were eſcaped into theyꝛ owne countre he was wonder ſoꝛy/and full hertely wepte with his yonge eyen/⁊ yet wyſte he not who hadde hym done ẏ treaſon/but that falſe treaſon was full well I knowen a good whyle after as ẏ ſtoꝛy maketh menſyon. ¶ Tho kynge Edwarde came agayne vnto Yoꝛke ful ſoꝛowfull. And his hoſt departed/and euery man went into his owne countre with full heuy chere and moꝛnynge ſemblaūt. And the Henaudes toke theyꝛ leue ⁊ wente into theyꝛ owne coūtre/⁊ ẏ kynge foꝛ theyꝛ trauayle hugely rewarded them. And foꝛ bycauſe of ẏ kynge ẏ kynge hadde dyſpended moche of this treſoure ⁊ waſted. And in that tyme were ſene two moones in the fyrmament / ẏ one was clere / ⁊ that other was derke / as men myght ſe through ẏ worlde. ¶ And a great debate was ẏ ſame tyme agaynſt pope Johñ ẏ .xxii. after ſeynt Peter / ⁊ ẏ emperour of almayne tho made hym emperour agaynſte ẏ popes wyll ẏ tho helde his ſee at Auinion / wherfore the emperoure made his crye at Rome ⁊ ordeyned another pope ẏ hyght Nicholas / ẏ was a frere Minoure / ⁊ that was agaynſt the ryght of holy chyrche / wherfore he was curſed / ⁊ ẏ power of ẏ other pope ſoone layde. And for cauſe ẏ ſuche merueyles were ſene / men ſayd ẏ ẏ worlde was nygh at an ende.

¶ Of the dethe of kynge Edwarde of carnaruan.

AND now go we agayne to ſyr Edwarde of carnaruañ ẏ was kynge Edwardes fader ſomtyme kynge of Englande / ⁊ was put downe of his dygnyte Alas for his trybulacyõ ⁊ ſorowe that hȳ befell through falſe counſeyle ẏ he loued ⁊ truſted to moche ẏ afterwarde were deſtroyed through theyr falſeneſſe as god wolde. And this Edwarde of Carnaruañ was in ẏ caſtel of Berkelay vnder ẏ warde ⁊ kepynge of ſyr Moryce of Berkelaye and alſo of ſyr Johñ Matreuers ⁊ to thẽ he made his complaynt of his ſorowe ⁊ of his diſeaſe. And ofte tymes aſked of his wardeyns what he had treſpaſſed ayenſt dame Iſabell his wyf ⁊ ſyr Edwarde his ſone ẏ was made newe kynge ẏ they wolde not vyſyte hȳ. And tho anſwered one of his wardeyns ⁊ ſayd. My worthy lorde dyſpleaſe you not ẏ I ſhall tell you the cauſe is for it is done thẽ to vnderſtande that yf my lady youre wyf came ony thynge nygh you ẏ ye wolde her ſtrangle ⁊ ſle and alſo ẏ ye wolde doo to my lorde your ſone in the ſame wyſe. Tho anſwered he with a ſymple chere. Alas alas am not I in Pryſon / ⁊ all at your owne wyll / no we god it wote I thought it neuer / ⁊ now I wolde ẏ I were deed / ſoo wolde god ẏ I were / for than were all my ſorowe paſſed It was not longe after ẏ ẏ kyng through coũſeyle of Roger Mortymer graunted ẏ warde ⁊ kepynge of ſyr Edwarde his fader vnto ſyr Thomas Tolourſy / ⁊ to the forſayd ſyr Johñ Matreuers through ẏ kynges letter / ⁊ put out holy the forſayde ſyr Moryce of ẏ warde of ẏ kynge. And they toke ⁊ lad ẏ kynge vnto the caſtell of Corfe ẏ whiche caſtell ẏ kynge hated as ony deth. And they kept hym there tyll it came vnto ſeynt Mathewes day in Septembre in ẏ yere of grace. M.CCC.xxvii that ẏ forſayd ſyr Roger Mortymer ſend the maner of ẏ dethe / how ⁊ in what wyſe he ſholde be put to dethe. And anone as the forſayd Thomas ⁊ Johñ had ſe ẏ letter ⁊ cõmaundement / they made kynge Edwarde carnaruan good chere ⁊ good ſolace as they myght at that ſouper / ⁊ no thynge ẏ kynge wyſte of ẏ treaſon. And whan tyme was for to go to bed ẏ kynge wente to his bed ⁊ laye ⁊ ſlepte faſte. And as ẏ kynge laye ⁊ ſlepte ẏ traytours falſe forſworne agaynſt theyr homage ⁊ feaute came pryuely into ẏ kynges chambre / ⁊ theyr company with them / ⁊ layd an huge table vpon his wombe / ⁊ wt men preſſed ⁊ helde faſt downe ẏ foure corners of the table on his body wherewith ẏ good man awoke / ⁊ was wonder ſore adradde to be deed ether ſlayne / ⁊ tourned his body vp tho ſo downe. Tho toke ẏ fals traytours ⁊ tyrauntes an horne ⁊ put it into his fundament as depe as they myght / ⁊ toke a ſpyte of Coper brennynge ⁊ put it through the horne into his body ⁊ ofte tymes therwith thyrled his bowelles ⁊ ſoo they ſlewe theyr lorde / ẏ noo thynge was the north countre throughout/tyll ẏ they came vnto ẏ parke of Stanhope in werydale/⁊ there ẏ ſcottes helde thē in a buſſhment/but whan ẏ kynge had herde thorough ſpyes where ẏ ſcottes were/anone ryght wᵗ his hoſte beſyeged them wᵗ in the forſayd parke ſo ẏ ẏ ſcottes wyſt not where to go out/but onely to theyr harmes/⁊ they abode in ẏ parke.xv.days/⁊ bytayles fayled them in euery ſyde/ſoo ẏ they were greatly peyred of bodyes and ſyth ẏ Brute came fyrſte into Brytayne to this tyme/there was neuer ſene ſoo fayre an hoſt/what of Englyſſhe men ⁊ of alyauntes ⁊ of men of fote/the whiche ordeyned them for to fyght wᵗ ẏ Scottes/through the eggynge of ſyr Henry of Lancaſtre ⁊ of ſyr Iohñ of Henaude ẏ wolde haue gone ouer ẏ water of wyth for to haue fought wᵗ ẏ ſcottes. But ſyr Roger mortymer cōſented not therto/for he had pryuely take mede of ẏ ſcottes them to helpe that they myght go into theyr owne countre. And this ſame Mortymer cōſpyred ſo moche Thomas of brotherton ẏ erle of Marſhal that was kynge Edwardes vncle ẏ ẏ forſayd Thomas ſholde not aſſemble at ẏ tyme vnto ẏ Scottes/⁊ he aſſented/but he wyſt not ẏ doynge bytwene ẏ Scottes ⁊ the forſayd Mortymer. And bycauſe ẏ he was marſhal of Englande as to hym perteyned euer ẏ vauntwarde/he ſend haſtely to ẏ erle of Lancaſtre/⁊ to ſyr Iohñ of Henaude that they ſholde not fyght with the Scottes/in preiudyce ⁊ harmynge of hym ⁊ his fee/⁊ yf they dyd ẏ they ſholde ſtande to theyr owne peryll. And the forſayd Marſhall was all arayed wᵗ his batayle/at ẏ rerewarde of the erle of Lancaſtre/for to haue fought wᵗ hym and wᵗ his folke yf he had go to fyght wᵗ ẏ Scottes/⁊ in this maner he was deceyued ⁊ wyſt nothynge of the treaſon. And thus was ẏ kynge principally deceyued. And whan it was nyghte ſyr Roger Mortymer that hadde the watche for to kepe of ẏ hoſte ẏ nyght dyſtroubled ẏ watche ẏ nothynge myght be done. And in the meane whyle the ſcottes ſtele by nyght towarde theyr owne cōtre as faſt as they myght. And ſo was the kynge falſly betrayed that wened that all ẏ traytours of his lande had ben brought to an ende as it was ſayd before. Now here you lordes how traytourſly kynge Edwarde was deceyued/how merueylouſly ⁊ boldly ẏ Scottes dyd of warre. For Iames Douglas with two hondred men of armes rode throughout all the hoſte of kynge Edwarde/the ſame nyght ẏ Scottes eſcaped towarde theyr owne cōtre as is aboue ſayd tyll they came to ẏ kynges pauylyon/⁊ ſlewe there many men in theyr beddes/⁊ cryed Nawarde naward/and another tyme a Douglas a Douglas/wherfore ẏ kyng ẏ was in his pauylyon ⁊ moche other folke were wonder ſore afrayed/but bleſſyd be almyghty god ẏ kynge was not taken/⁊ in great peryll was tho ẏ realme of Englande/⁊ ẏ nyght ẏ mone ſhone full clere and bryght. And for al the kynges men ẏ ſcottes ſcaped awaye harmeles. And on the morowe whan ẏ kynge wyſt ẏ ẏ Scottes were eſcaped into theyr owne countre he was wonder ſory/and full hertely wepte with his yonge eyen/⁊ yet wyſte he not who hadde hym done ẏ treaſon/but that falſe treaſon was full well I knowen a good whyle after as ẏ ſtory maketh mencyon. ¶ Tho kynge Edwarde came agayne vnto Yorke ful ſorowfull. And his hoſt departed/and euery man wente into his owne countre with full heuy chere and mornynge ſemblaūt. And the Henaudes toke theyr leue ⁊ wente into theyr owne cōtre/⁊ ẏ kynge for theyr trauayle hugely rewarded them. And for bycauſe of ẏ kynge ẏ kynge hadde dyſpended moche of this treſoure ⁊ waſted. And in that tyme were ſene two moones in the fyrmament / yͤ one was clere / ⁊ that other was derke / as men myght ſe through yͤ worlde. ¶ And a great debate was yͤ ſame tyme agaynſt pope Johñ yͤ .xxii. after ſeynt Peter / ⁊ yͤ emperour of almayne tho made hym emperour agaynſte yͤ popes wyll yͭ tho helde his ſee at Auinion / wherfore the emperoure made his crye at Rome ⁊ ordeyned another pope yͭ hyght Nicholas / yͭ was a frere Mynoure / ⁊ that was agaynſt the ryght of holy chyrche / wherfore he was curſed / ⁊ yͤ power of yͤ other pope ſoone layde. And for cauſe yͭ ſuche merueyles were ſene / men ſayd yͭ yͤ worlde was nygh at an ende.

¶ Of the dethe of kynge Edwarde of carnaruan.

AND now go we agayne to ſyr Edwarde of carnaruã yͭ was kynge Edwardes fader ſomtyme kynge of Englande / ⁊ was put downe of his dygnyte Alas for his trybulacyon ⁊ ſorowe that hym befell through falſe counſeyle yͭ he loued ⁊ truſted to moche yͭ afterwarde were deſtroyed throughe theyr falſeneſſe as god wolde. And this Edwarde of Carnaruã was in yͤ caſtel of Berkelay vnder yͤ warde ⁊ kepynge of ſyr Moryce of Berkelaye and alſo of ſyr Johñ Matreuers ⁊ to thẽ he made his complaynt of his ſorowe ⁊ of his diſeaſe. And ofte tymes aſked of his wardeyns what he had treſpaſſed ayenſt dame Iſabell his wyf ⁊ ſyr Edwarde his ſone yͭ was made newe kynge yͭ they wolde not vyſyte hȳ. And tho anſwered one of his wardeyns ⁊ ſayd. My worthy lorde dyſpleaſe you not yͭ I ſhall tell you the cauſe is for it is done thẽ to vnderſtande that yf my lady youre wyf came ony thynge nygh you yͭ ye wolde her ſtrangle ⁊ ſle and alſo yͭ ye wolde doo to my lorde your ſone in the ſame wyſe. Tho anſwered he with a ſymple chere. Alas alas am not I in Pryſon / ⁊ all at your owne wyll / no we god it wote I thought it neuer / ⁊ now I wolde yͭ I were deed / ſoo wolde god yͭ I were / for than were all my ſorowe paſſed It was not longe after yͭ yͤ kyng through coũſeyle of Roger Mortymer graunted yͤ warde ⁊ kepynge of ſyr Edwarde his fader vnto ſyr Thomas Tolourſy / ⁊ to the forſayd ſyr Johñ Matreuers through yͤ kynges letter / ⁊ put out holy the forſayde ſyr Moryce of yͤ warde of yͤ kynge. And they toke ⁊ lad yͤ kynge vnto the caſtell of Corfe yͤ whiche caſtell yͤ kynge hated as ony deth. And they kept hym there tyll it came vnto ſeynt Mathewes day in Septembre in yͤ yere of grace. M.CCC.xxvii that yͤ forſayd ſyr Roger Mortymer ſend the maner of yͤ dethe / how ⁊ in what wyſe he ſholde be put to dethe. And anone as the forſaid Thomas ⁊ Johñ had ſe yͤ letter ⁊ cõmaundement / they made kynge Edwarde carnaruan good chere ⁊ good ſolace as they myght at that ſouper / ⁊ no thynge yͤ kynge wyſte of yͤ treaſon. And whan tyme was for to go to bed yͤ kynge went to his bed ⁊ laye ⁊ ſlepte faſte. And as yͤ kynge laye ⁊ ſlepte yͤ traytours falſe forſworne agaynſt theyr homage ⁊ feaute came pryuely into yͤ kynges chambre / ⁊ theyr company with them / ⁊ layd an huge table vpon his wombe / ⁊ wͭ men preſſed ⁊ helde faſt downe yͤ foure corners of the table on his body where with yͤ good man awoke / ⁊ was wonder ſore adradde to be deed ⁊ ther ſlayne / ⁊ tourned his body vp tho ſo downe. Tho toke yͤ fals traytours ⁊ tyrauntes an horne ⁊ put it into his fundement as depe as they myght / ⁊ toke a ſpyte of Coper brennynge / ⁊ put it through the horne into his body ⁊ ofte tymes therwith thyrled his bowelles ⁊ ſoo they ſlewe theyr lorde / yͭ noo thynge was perceyued/ ⁊ was entered at Glouceſtre.

¶ How kynge Edward ſpouſed Phylyp the erles doughter of Henaude at Yorke.

AND after Criſtmaſſe the next ſuynge ſyr Iohn of Henaude with hym brought Phylyp his brothers doughter yͭ was erle of Henaude his nece into Englande/ ⁊ yͤ kynge ſpouſed her at Yorke with moche honoure. And ſyr Iohn of Bothum byſſhop of Ely/ ⁊ ſyr wyllyam of Melton Archebyſſhop of Yorke ſange the maſſe yͤ ſonday on yͤ euen of yͤ conuerſyon of ſeynt Paule. In yͤ yere of grace. M. CCC.xxvii. but bycauſe yͭ yͤ kynge was yonge ⁊ tender of aege whā he was crowned full many wronges were done whyle that his fader lyued/ bycauſe yͭ he trowed yͤ cōſeylers yͭ were falſe aboute hȳ yͭ cōſeyled hym to do otherwyſe thā reaſon wold/ wherfore great harme was done to yͤ realme ⁊ to yͤ kynge/ ⁊ all men ſuſpected it yͤ kynges dede/ ⁊ it was not ſo almyghty god it wote/ wherfore it was ordeyned at yͤ kȳges crownynge yͭ yͤ kynge for his tender aege ſholde be gouerned by .xii. of the greateſt lordes of Englande without whome nothynge ſholde be done. That is to ſaye the archebyſſhop of Caunterbury/ tharchebyſſhop of Yorke/ yͤ byſſhop of Wyncheſtre/ ⁊ yͤ byſſhop of Herforde/ yͤ erle of Lancaſtre/ therle Marſhall/ ⁊ yͤ erle of Kent yͭ were the kynges vncles/ ⁊ yͤ erle of Garenne/ ſyr Thomas wake/ ſyr Henry Percy/ ſyr Olyuer yngham/ ⁊ Iohn Roos barons/ all theſe were ſworen truely for to cōſeyle yͤ kynge ⁊ they ſholde anſwere euery yere in parliament of that yͭ ſholde be done in yͤ tyme of theyr gouernall/ but yͤ ordynaūce was ſoone vndone/ ⁊ that was moche harme to all Englande/ for the kynge ⁊ all yͤ lordes yͭ ſholde gouerne hȳ were gouerned and ruled after quene Iſabell his moder and of Roger Mortymer/ ⁊ as they wold al thynge was done bothe amonge hygh and lowe. And they toke vnto the caſtels townes/ landes/ ⁊ rentes in great harme and loſſe to the crowne/ and of yͤ kynges eſtate out of all meſure.

¶ How yͤ peas was made bytwene yͤ Englyſſhe men ⁊ yͤ Scottes/ ⁊ alſo of Iuſtyſynge of Troyllebaſton.

KYnge Edwarde at whytſontyde in the ſecunde yere of his reygne thorough yͤ cōſeyle of his moder/ ⁊ ſyr Roger Mortymer ordeined a parliament at Northamptō. And at that parliament yͤ kynge through his cōſeyle/ ⁊ none other of yͤ lande wͭin aege graunted to be accorded wͭ yͤ Scottes in this manere yͭ all the feautees ⁊ homages yͭ yͤ Scottes ſholde doo to the crowne of Englande forgaue them for euermore by his chartre enſealed. And forthermore an endenture was made of the Scottes vnto kynge Edwarde that was kynge Henryes ſone whiche endenture they call it ragman/ in yͤ whiche were conteyned all yͤ homages ⁊ feautees. Fyrſt of yͤ kynge of Scotlande and of prelates/ erles/ barōs/ ⁊ of yͤ realme of Scotlande wͭ theyr ſeales ſet theron and other charters ⁊ remembraūces yͤ kynge Edwarde and his barons hadde of theyr ryght in the forſayd realme of Scotlande it was forgyuen agayne holy chyrche/ ⁊ alſo with the blacke croſſe of Scotlande yͤ whiche yͤ good kynge Edwarde conquered in Scotlande ⁊ brought it out of the abbaye of Scone/ yͭ is a full precyous relyke. And alſo forthermore/ he releaced ⁊ fully forgaue all the landes that yͤ noble barons had before yͤ tyme in yͤ realme of Scotlande by olde conqueſt. And forthermore yͭ this peas for to be holden ⁊ contynually laſt ẏ Scottes were bouden vnto the kynge in .xxx. thouſande pouñde of ſyluer to be payde within thre yere / that is euery yere .x. thouſande pounde by euen porcyons. And forthermore aboue all this they ſpake bytwene the partyes aboue ſayde / that Dauyd Dritonautier ẏ was kynge Robert Brus ſone / ẏ fals tyraũte ⁊ fals forſworne ayenſt his othe ẏ aroſe ayenſt his lyege lord / the noble and good kynge Edward / ⁊ falſly made hym kẏge of Scotlande / ẏ was of aege .v. yere ⁊ ſo this curſyd counſeyle Dauyd ſpouſed at Berewyk dame Jone of the toure / ẏ was kynge Edwardes ſyſter / as the geſtes telleth vpon Mary Mawdeleyns day / in ẏ yere of grace .M.CCC.xxviii. to greate harme ⁊ empayrynge of all ẏ kynges blode / wherof ẏ gentyll lady came / alas the tyme / for wõder moche ẏ fayre damoyſel dyſperagyd / ſythe that ſhe was maryed agaynſt all ẏ comyns wyll ⁊ aſſent of Englãd / ⁊ frome ẏ tyme ẏ Brute had cõquered Albyon / ⁊ named the lande after his owne name Brytayne / that nowe is called Englande after ẏ name of Engyſt / ⁊ ſo the realme of Scotlande was holde of ẏ realme of England / ⁊ of the crowne by feaute ⁊ homage / for Brute conquered ẏ lande / ⁊ gaue it to Albanak / ẏ was his ſecunde ſone / and he called that lande Albayn / after his owne name / ſo ẏ his heyres ẏ came after hym / ſholde holde of Brute ⁊ of his heyres / ẏ is to ſaye of the kynges of Brytayne / by feaute ⁊ homage / ⁊ from ẏ tyme to this tyme of kynge Edward / ẏ realme of Scotlande was holde of ẏ realme of Englãde by feaute ⁊ ſeruyce / as aboue is ſayd in the Cronycles of Englãde ⁊ of Scotlande / ⁊ bereth wytneſſe more plenarly / ⁊ curſed be the tyme ẏ this parlyament was holde at Northampton / for there by fals cõſeyll / ẏ kynge was there falſly dyſherytyd and yet he was within aege. And yet whan that kynge Edward was put oute of his ryalte of Englande yet men put hym not out of the feautes ⁊ ſeruyce of Scotlande / nor of the fraũchyſes dyſherytyd hym for euermore. ¶ And neuertheleſſe ẏ great lordes of Englande were agaynſt to confyrme ẏ peas and the trewes aboue ſayde / ſauf only quene Iſabell / that tho was the kynges moder Edwarde / and the byſſhop of Ely / and the lorde Mortimer / but reaſon ⁊ lawe nolde ẏ a fynall peas ſholde be made bytwene the wyout the comyn aſſent of Englande.

¶ Of the debate ẏ was bytwene quene Iſabell and ſyr Henry erle of Lãcaſtre ⁊ of Leyceſtre ⁊ of the rydynge of Bedford.

Than as ſone as ẏ forſayd Dauyd hadde ſpouſed dame Jone of the toure in the towne of Berwyk as before is ſayd / the Scottes in dyſpyte of ẏ Engyſſhe men called dame Jone ẏ coũteſſe make peas / for ẏ cowardly peas ẏ was ordeyned. But the kynges perſone bare all the wyte ⁊ blame with wronge of the makynge of the accorde. And all was doone throughe the quene ⁊ Roger Mortymer. and it was not longe after that ẏ quene Iſabell recoke into her handes all ẏ lordſhyp of Pountfret almooſt all the landes that were of ony value that apperteyned to the crowne of Englande. So the kyng had not to dyſpende / but of his vſes ⁊ of his excheker / for the quene Iſabell ⁊ the Mortymer hadde great mayne of the retynewe that folowed the kynges courte euermore and wente and toke the kẏges puruyers for her peny worthes good chepe. wherfore the countree that they came in were full ſore adradde / and almooſte deſtroyed of them. Tho began the comynalte of Englande for to haue enuye to Iſabell the quene that ſomoche loued her bo fore whan ſhe came ayen for to purſue ẏ fals traytours / ẏ Spenſers fro Fraunce And in that ſame tyme the fals traytour Robert of Holande / ẏ betrayed his lorde ſyr Thomas of Lancaſtre / was tho delyuered out of pryſō / ⁊ was wonder preuy with the quene Iſabell / ⁊ alſo wᵗ Roger Mortymer / but that auayled hym but lytyll. For he was taken at myghelmas ẏ tho came nexte after / as he rode towarde quene Iſabell to Londō / ⁊ ſyr Thomas Whyther ſmote of his heed beſydes the towne of ſeynt Albōs. And this ſyr Thomas dwelled with ſyr Henry erle of Lancaſtre / ⁊ he put hym aſyde for drede of the quene for ſhe loued hī wōder moch / ⁊ prayed to ẏ kynge for hȳ ẏ ẏ ſame Thomas myght be exyled out of Englande. And ẏ noble erle ſyr Henry of Lancaſtre had oftentymes herde the comyn clamoure of ẏ Englyſſhe men / of ẏ dyſeaſe ẏ were done in Englande / ⁊ alſo for dyuers wronges that were done to ẏ comyn people. Of ẏ whiche ẏ kyng bare the blame wᵗ wronge For he was but full yonge and tender of aege. And thought as a good man / for to do awaye / ⁊ ſlake the ſclaūder of the kynges perſon / yf ẏ he myght in ony manere awyſe / ſo as ẏ kȳge was therof nothȳge gylty / wherfore he was ī parel of his lyfe

¶ And ſo he aſſembled all his retynewe ⁊ wente ⁊ ſpake with them of ẏ kynges honoure / ⁊ alſo for to amend his eſtate / and ſyr Thomas Brotherton erle of Marſhal ⁊ ſyr Edmond wodſtok / that were ẏ kynges uncles / and alſo mē of London made theyr othe hys for to mayteyne in ẏ ſame quarel / And theyr cauſe was this / that ẏ kynge ſholde hold his houſe ⁊ his meyne as a kynge ought for to do / ⁊ haue all his ryalte / ⁊ that the quene Iſabell ſholde delyuer out of her handes vnto the kynges hāde al maner of lordſhyps rētes townes ⁊ caſtels that apperteyned vnto ẏ crowne of Englād as other quenes haue done here before / and medled with none other thynge. ¶ And alſo that ſyr Roger Mortymer ſholde abyde ⁊ dwell on his owne landes. For ẏ whiche landes he had holpe to dyſheryte moche people. In ſomoche that the comyn people were deſtroyed ⁊ greatly domaged / throughe ſuche wrongfull takynge. And alſoo to enquyre howe and by whome that the kyng was bytrayed and falſly dyſceyued at Stanhope / ⁊ through whoſe coūſeyl that the Scottes went awaye by nyght from the kynge / ⁊ alſo how ⁊ through whoſe counſeyle the ordynaūce that were made at the kynges coronacyon / was put downe. That is to ſaye / ẏ the kynge for amendyment ⁊ helpynge of his realme / ⁊ in honoure of hym ſholde be gouerned ⁊ ruled by .xii. of the greateſt ⁊ wyſeſt lordes of ẏ realme / and without them ſholde nothynge be graunted ne done / as before is ſayd / whiche couenaūces were malycyouſly put downe fro the kynge / where many harmes / ſhames ⁊ reppreues haue fall to ẏ kynge and his reame / and that is to vnderſtande for aſmoche as edwarde kynge of Englande ſōtyme was ordeyned by aſſēt in playne parlyamente / for to be vnder warde and gouernaūce of Henry erle of lācaſtre his coſyn / for ſaluacō of his body he was take out of the caſtell of Kenelworth / there ẏ he was in warde / ⁊ throughe colour of quene Iſabell / ⁊ of ẏ Mortymer wout cōſent of ony parlyament they toke ⁊ lad hȳ there ẏ neuer after none of his kynred / myght wᵗ hym ſpeke / ⁊ after traytourly toke ⁊ mordred hȳ / for whoſe dethe aroſe a ſclaūder through al cryſtēdome / whan it was done ⁊ alſo ẏ treſour ẏ ſyr edward of Carnaruan lefte in many places in englande and in wales was waſted and borne awaye without the wyll of kynge Edwarde his ſone / in deſtruccyō of hym and of all his folke. ¶ Alſo through whoſe coūſeyl/that the kynge gaue vp the kyngdome of Scotland/for the whiche reame yͤ kynges aūceſtours had full ſore traueyled/⁊ ſo dyd many a noble man for theyr ryght/⁊ was delyuered to Dauyd yͭ was Robert Brus ſone all yͤ ryght had/yͭ noo ryght had to the reame/as al the world it wyſt. And alſo by whome the charters ⁊ mēbraūces yͭ they had of ryght of Scotlande were taken out of yͤ treſory/⁊ taken to yͤ Scottes kynges enemyes to yͤ dyſherytynge of hym ⁊ of his ſucceſſours/⁊ to great harme of his leyges/⁊ great repref to all Englyſſhe mē for euermore. ¶ Alſo Ione of yͤ toure kynge Edwardes ſyſter/was dyſparagyd ⁊ maryed vnto Dauyd yͭ was Robert Brus ſone/yͭ was a traytour ⁊ enemy to Englande/and through whoſe coūſeyll ſhe was takē into oure enemyes handes out of Englande. And in this meane whyle/yͤ good erle of Lācaſtre ⁊ his companye toke his coūſeyl how thoſe poyntes aboue ſayd/myght be amēded to yͤ worſhyp of yͤ kynge ⁊ to his profyte ⁊ to yͤ ꝓfyte of his leyges/⁊ yͤ quene Iſabell throughe coueytynge ⁊ alſo of yͤ Mortymers lete ordeyne a parlyamente at Salyſbury/⁊ at yͤ ſame parlyamente yͤ Mortymer was made erle of Marche agenſt all yͤ barons wyl of Englande in preiudice of the kynge ⁊ of his crowne/⁊ ſyr Iohn̄ of Eltham yͤ kynges broder/was gyrde with a ſwerde of Cornewayle/and tho was called erle of Cornewayle ⁊ ouermore quene Iſabell procured ſomoche agenſt her ſone yͤ kynge/yͭ ſhe had yͤ warde of yͤ forſayd ſyr Edwarde ⁊ of his londes And at yͤ parlyament yͤ erle of Lancaſtre wolde not come/but ordeyned his power agenſt quene Iſabell and yͤ Mortymer/and men of London ordeyned them with fyue houndred men of armes. ¶ Whanne quene Iſabell wyſte of the doynge/ſhe ſwore by god and by his names/full angerly/that in an euyll tyme he thoughte vpon tho poyntes/tho ſende yͤ quene Iſabell ⁊ yͤ Mortymer after theyr retynewe and after the kynges retynewe/ſo yͭ they had ordeyned ymonge them an huge hoſt And they coūſeyled yͤ kynge/ſo that vpon a nyght/they rode .xxiiii. myles to Bedford/ther the erle of Lancaſtre was with his company/⁊ thought to haue hym deſtroyed/and that nyght ſhe rode beſyde yͤ kynge her ſone as a knyghte for drede of dethe. And it was done the kynge to vnderſtande/yͭ the erle Henry of Lancaſtre and his company wolde haue deſtroyed the kynge ⁊ his counſeyll for euermore wherfore the kynge was ſomdele towardes hym heuy ⁊ anoyed. ¶ Whan the erle Marſhall the erle of Kente yͤ kynges broder herde of this tydynges/they rode ſoo in meſſage bytwene them/that the kynge graunted hym his peas to the erle Henry of Lancaſtre/for a certayne raunſome of a.xi.thouſand poūde/but that was neuer payde afterwarde. And theſe were the lordes yͭ helde with ſyr Henry of Lancaſtre ſyr Beaumōt/ſyr Fouk fytzwaren/Syr Thomas Rocelyn/ſyr Wyllyam Truſſell ſyr Thomas whyther/⁊ aboute an hondred knyghtes moo than were to hym cōſented/⁊ all thoſe were exyled throughe counſeyll of quene Iſabell and of Mortymer for Mortymer wayted to haue theyr landes/yf yͭ he myght throughe ony maner coueytynge for he was ſo coueytous/⁊ had ſomoche his wyl ⁊ yͭ was great pyte.

¶ How kynge Edwarde wente ouer yͤ ſee for to do his homage to yͤ kynge of Fraunce/for the duchye of Guyhenne.

IT was notte longe after that the kynge of Fraunce/throughe counſeyll of his douſepers/ſende to kynge Ed warde of Englande that he ſholde come to Paryſ and do his homage/as reaſon it wold/for the duchye of Guyon/and ſo through coūſeil of the lordes of Englōde kynge Edwarde wente ouer the ſee. And at the aſcencyō tyde/he came vnto Parys the thyrde yere of his regne/for to do his homage vnto the kynge of Fraūce. And the kynge receyued his homage/⁊ made of hym moche Ioye and worſhyppe/but whan kynge Edwarde had done his homage haſtely he was ſende for into Englonde through the quene Iſabel his moder and anone haſtely he came ayen into Englōde/vpon whytſonday without takynge leue of the kynge of Fraūce/wherfore he was wonder wrothe.

¶ How ſyr Roger Mortymer bare hym proudely and ſo hygh.

ANd nowe ſhall ye here of ſyr Roger Mortymer of Wygmore that deſyred and coueted to be at an hygh eſtate/ſo that the kynge graūted hym to be called erle of Marche/throughout all his lordſhyp. And he became ſo proude ⁊ hauteyn/yͭ he wolde loſe ⁊ forſake the name yͭ his elders had euer before/⁊ for yͭ cauſe he let hym cal erle of marche. And none of yͤ comyns of Englande durſt call hym by other name/for he was called ſo by yͤ kynges crye/that men ſholde calle hym erle of Marche. And Mortymer bare hym ſo hauteyne ⁊ ſo proude yͭ wonder it was for to wyte. ⁊ alſo dyſguyſed hym wͭ wonder ryche clothes oute of all maner of reaſon both of ſhappynge ⁊ of werynge. Wherof yͤ Englyſſhe men had great wonder/how ⁊ in what maner he myght contryue or fynd ſuche maner pryde. ⁊ they ſayde amonge them comynly/yͭ his pryd ſholde not longe endure. ⁊ yͤ ſame tyme ſyr Geffray Mortymer yͤ yonge/yͭ was Mortymers ſone/lete call hym kynge of foly/and ſo it befell afterwarde in dede/for he was ſoo full of pryde and of wretchednesse/that he helde a rounde table in wales/to all men that thyder came/⁊ counterfeted the doynge ⁊ the maner of kynge Arthurs table/but he fayled/for the noble kyng Arthur was the moſt noble lorde of renome/that was in al yͤ world i his tyme ⁊ yet came neuer none ſuche after/for all yͤ noble knyghtes in al cryſtēdom of dedes of armes aſſayed dwellynge with kynge Arthur/and held hym for theyr lorde and ſoueraygne. And that was well ſene/for he conquered in a batayll a Romayn that was called Froll and gate of hym yͤ realme of Fraūce/and ſlewe hym with his owne handes/and alſo he faught with a gyaunte that was called Dynabus/⁊ ſlewe hym that hadde rauyſſhed fayre Elayne that was kynge Howels nece/kynge of Lytell Brytayn ⁊ after he ſlewe in batayl the emperoure of Rome/yͭ was called Lucie/that hadde aſſembled ayenſt Arthur/for to fyght with hym ſomoche people of Romayns and Pehites and ſarreſyns/yͭ no man cowde nombre them/and he dyſcomfyted them all as the ſtory telleth. And in that ſame tyme comyn voyce ſpronge in Englande through coniectynge and ordynaūce of yͤ frere prechers/that ſyr Edwarde of Carnaruan/that was kynge Edwardes fader of whome the geſt telleth/⁊ ſayd yͭ he was alyue in the caſtel of Corf/wherof al the comyns of Englande almoſte were in ſorowe and drede/whyther yͭ it were ſo or not/for they wyſte not how traytourſly Mortymer had hym done to be murdred.

¶ How Edmōde of wodſtok that was erle of kent and the kynges broder Edwarde of Carnaruan/was heded at wynchestre

ANd in a certayne tyme it befell ſo/that ſyr Edmonde of wodſtok erle of Kent/ſpake vnto the pope Iohn the.xxii. at Auinion and ſayd yͭ almyghty god had ofte tymes done ſyr Thomas loue of Lancaſtre many great myracles to many men and women / yͭ were through dyuers maladyes vndone / as vnto the worlde / ⁊ through his prayer they were brought to theyr helthe / ⁊ ſo ſyr Edmond prayed yͤ pope hertely yͭ he wolde graũte hȳ grace / yͭ forſayd Thomas myght be tranſlated / but the pope ſayde naye that he ſholde not be trãſlated / vnto yͤ tyme he were better certified of the clergy of Englãde and ſeen by theyr obedyence what thynge god had done for the loue of ſeynt Thomas of Lancaſtre after the ſuggeſtyon yͭ the forſayd erle of Kent had to hym made. And whã this Edmond ſawe yͭ he myght not ſpede of his purpoſe / he prayed hym of counſeill / as touchynge ſyr Edwarde of Carnaruan his broder / ⁊ ſayde not longe agone he was kyng of Englãd what thynge myght beſt be done as touchynge his delyuerãce / ſyth yͭ a comune fame was through Englãd yͭ he is alyue ⁊ ſauf / whan yͤ pope herde hym tell yͭ ſyr Edmõd was alyue he cõmaunded yͤ erle yͭ he ſhold helpe wͭ al yͤ power yͭ he myght yͭ he were delyuered out of pryſon / ⁊ ſaue his body in all maner yͭ he myght / and to brynge this thȳge to an ende he aſſoyled hym ⁊ his cõpany (a pena et culpa) Tho toke Edmonde of Wodſtok his leue of the pope / and came agayne into England / ⁊ whã ſyr Edmond was come / ſome of the frere prechers came and ſayd that ſyr Edwarde his broder yette was alyue in the caſtell of Corfe / vnder the kepynge of ſyr Thomas Gurney / tho ſpedde hym yͤ forſayd Edmonde as faſte as he myght go / tyll he came vnto the caſtell of Corf / and acquaynted hym ⁊ ſpake ſo goodly ⁊ fayre to Iohñ Daueryll / that was conſtable of the ſame caſtell / ⁊ gaue hym ryche yeftes for to haue acquentaunce of hym and to knowe of his counſell. And thus it befell that the forſayd Edmonde prayed ſpecyally to tell hȳ pryuely of his lorde his broder ſyr Edward / yf he lyued or were deed ⁊ yf he were alyue he prayed hȳ ones to haue a ſyght of hȳ / ⁊ this ſyr Iohñ Daueryll was a hyghe herted man ⁊ full of courage / ⁊ ãſwered ſhortli to ſyr Edmõde and ſayd / yͭ ſyr Edwarde his broder was in helthe ⁊ vnder his kepynge ⁊ durſt not ſhewe hym to no man ſyth it was defended in hȳ in yͤ kȳges halfe edward / yͭ was Edwardes ſone of Carnaruan / ⁊ alſo by the cõmaũdemẽt of quene Iſabell yͤ kynges moder / ⁊ of ſyr Roger Mortymer / yͭ he ſholde ſhewe his body to no man of the worlde / ſauf onely to them vpõ lyf ⁊ lȳme ⁊ dyſherytyng of his heyres for euermore but yͤ fals traytour falſly lyed for he was not in his warde / but was takẽ thens ⁊ lad to yͤ caſtel of Berkeley by ſyr thomas of Gurney / by yͤ cõmaũdemẽt of Mortymer / tyll he was deed as before is ſayde / but ſyr Edmõde of wodſtok wyſt no thynge yͭ ſyr Edwarde his broder was deed / wherupõ he toke a letter to kȳge Edwarde his broder as to his worthy lorde / ⁊ receyued yͤ letter of hȳ ⁊ behyght hȳ ryght feythfully to do his meſſage wͭout fayle. And wͭ that ſyr Edmõde toke leue of the forſayd Iohñ / ⁊ yede into his owne countre ⁊ lordſhyp in Kent yͭ he had ther. And ne as this ſame Iohã wyſt / yͭ ſyr Edmõd was gone into Kente his owne lordſhyp anone he went in all yͤ haſte yͭ he myght. fro yͤ caſtell of Corf ⁊ came to Syr Roger Mortymer ⁊ toke hym yͤ letter yͭ ſyr Edmonde of wodſtok erle of Kent had taken hym cloſed and enſealed with his owne ſeale / ⁊ whan ſyr Roger Mortymer had receyued the letter / he vncloyſed it / and ſawe yͭ was cõteyned therin / and began it to rede / wherof yͤ begȳnynge was thus

¶ Worſhyppes and reuerence with brother alyegaūce ⁊ ſubieccyon / ſyr knyght worſhypful ⁊ dere broder / yf it pleaſe you I praye you hertely ẏ ye be in good comforte / for I ſhall ſo ordeyne for you / ẏ ye ſhall come out of pryſon ⁊ be delyuered of that dyſeſe that ye ben in. And vnderſtandyth of your great lordeſhyp / ẏ I haue to myne aſſentynge almoſt all ẏ great lordes of Englãde / with all theyr apparayll that is to ſaye wͭ armoure / with treſoure wͭout nombre / for to mayntene your quarell ſo ferforthe / that ye ſhalbe kynge agayn as ye were before / ⁊ that they haue ſworne to me vpon a boke / ⁊ aſwell prelates as erles ⁊ barons. ¶ Whã ſyr Roger Mortymer ſawe ⁊ vnderſtode / ẏ myght ⁊ the ſtrengthe of ẏ letter anone his herte for wrath began to boll ⁊ euyll herte bare towarde ſyr Edmõde of Wodſtok / ẏ was erle of Kente / ⁊ wͭ all the haſt ẏ he myght he wente vnto dame Iſabell the quene / that was ẏ kynges moder / ⁊ ſhewed her ſyr Edmondes letter / his wyll ⁊ his purpoſe / ⁊ how ẏ he had cõiected ⁊ ordeyned to put downe kyng Edwarde of wyndeſore her ſone / of his royalte ⁊ of his kyngdom Now certes ſyr Roger ſayde ſhe / hathe ſyr Edmonde done ſo now by my faders ſoule ſayd ſhe / I wyll be therof auēged / yf that god graunt me lyfe / and that in a ſhorte tyme. And with that quene Iſabel wente to kynge Edwarde her ſone / there he was at ẏ parlyamēt at wyncheſter / to haue amende the wronges and the treſpaſſes that were done ymõge the people of his realme / And tho ſhe take ⁊ ſhewed hym the letter that ſyr Edmonde of Wodſtock had made / and enſealed it with his owne ſeale and badde hym vpon her bleſſynge / that he ſhold be auenged vpon ſyr Edmond as vpõ his dedly enemy. ¶ Tho was the quene ſore wroth towarde ſyr Edmonde erle of Kente. and ceſſed neuer to praye vntyll her ſone / tyl ẏ he had ſend in all the haſt after hym. And vpon ẏ ẏ kynge ſende by his letters after ſyr Edmond of wodſtok / that he ſholde come ⁊ ſpeke wͭ hym at wyncheſtre all maner thynge left. And whan ſyr Edmonde ſawe that ẏ kyngo ſend after hym wͭ his letters enſealed he haſted hym in all that he myght tyll ẏ he came to Wyncheſtre. ¶ But whan the quene wyſt that ſyr Edmonde was come to Wyncheſtre tho anone ſhe prayed / ⁊ ſo faſt went vnto kynge Edwarde her ſone that the good erle was areſted anone / and vnto the barre before Robert of Hamonde / that was Coroner of the kynges houſholde. And he aſſocyed to hym ſyr Roger Mortimer. ⁊ tho ſpake ẏ foreſayde Roger ⁊ ſayd / ſyr Edmõde Erle of Kente / ye ſhal vnderſtande that it is done vs to wyte / ⁊ pryncypally vnto our lyege lord the kynge Edwarde of Englande almyghty god hym ſaue ⁊ kepe / ẏ ye be his dedly enemy / ⁊ a traytoure / ⁊ alſo a commune enemy to the realme / ⁊ that ye haue ben aboute many a daye for to make pryue delyueraunce of ſyr Edwarde ſomtyme kynge of Englande your broder / ẏ whiche ſomtyme was put downe of his royalte by the commyn aſſente of the lordes of Englande in peaſynge of our lorde the kynges eſtate / ⁊ alſo of his realme. ¶ Tho anſwered the good mã ⁊ ſayd / forſoth ſyr vnderſtande well that I was neuer traytoure to my kynge / ne to the realme / and that I do me on god ⁊ on ẏ world / ⁊ therfore by my kynges leue I ſhal it preue ⁊ defende as a man ought for to do. ¶ Tho ſayd Mortymer. ſyr Edmonde it is ſo ferforth knowē / ẏ it maye not be well gaynſayd / and that in preſence of all that here ben / it ſhalbe well proued. Now hadde this ſaid Mortymer the ſame letter that ſyr Edmond had take to ſyr Iohan Daueryll in the caſtell of Corf for to take to kynge Edwarde his broder ẏ ſyr Edmonde wyſte not of ne ſupposed nothynge yͭ ſyr Iohn̄ Daueryll had be ſo falſe to delyuer his letter in ſuche wyſe to Mortymer/ ⁊ thought no maner of thynge of yͤ letter. Thā Mortymer ſayd to ſyr Edmond ⁊ ſhewed a letter ſealed/ ⁊ aſked hym yf yͭ he knewe yͤ letter ⁊ yͤ ſeale This ſyr Edmonde loked therō/ ⁊ auyſed hym longe tyme on the prynte of yͤ ſeale/ for he myght not ſe yͤ letter within/ ⁊ wyſt well that it was his ſeale/ ⁊ thought yͭ it had be ſome letter yͭ had bore no great charge ⁊ thought nothynge of that other letter. And ſayd openly in herynge of them all/ ye forſoth this is my ſeale/ and I wyll it not forſake. Lo ſayd ſyr Mortymer/ ſyrs ye here al what he hath ſayd ⁊ yͭ he knowlegeth hym yͭ this is his letter ⁊ his ſeale And now ye ſhall here what is conteyned therin. And this Mortymer opened yͤ letter yͭ he had folde tofore togyder/ ⁊ red it openly worde by worde in herynge of thē all/ ⁊ whan yͤ letter was red ſayde ſyrs/ ye haue herde all yͭ herin is wryte/ ⁊ that he hathe knowleged yͭ this is his letter ⁊ his ſeale/ ⁊ he maye not go there fro. And than they cryed ⁊ gaue dome yͭ he ſholde be hanged ⁊ drawē/ ⁊ his heed ſmyten of in a maner of a traytour ⁊ he ⁊ his heyres dyſheryted for euermore/ ⁊ ſo he was lad forth ⁊ put into pryſon/ ⁊ whā this was done/ ⁊ yͤ quene wyſt yͭ he was dampned by yͤ way of lawe/ bothe of lyfe ⁊ of lyme and his heyres dyſheryted for euermore through opē knowlegynge in playn court where them thought yͭ it were good yͭ the forſayd ſyr Edmonde were haſtely ſlayne without wyttynge of yͤ kynge/ or els the kynge wolde lyghtly forgyue hȳ his deth And it ſholde tourne them to moche ſorowe/ ſoo as he was empeched. And anone the quene through counſeyle of yͤ Mortymer/ ⁊ without ony other counſeyle ſende in haſt to the baylyfe of Wyncheſter that he ſholde ſmyte of ſyr Edmondes heed erle of Kent without ony maner abydynge or reſpyte vpon peyne of lyfe ⁊ lymme And that he ſhold haue none other execucyon/ bycauſe of taryenge not withſtandynge yͤ Iudgement. Tho toke yͤ baylyf ſyr Edmonde oute of pryſon/ ⁊ lad hȳ beſyde yͤ caſtell of Wyncheſtre/ ⁊ there they made a gōgfermer ſmyte of his heed/ for none other durſt it do/ ⁊ ſo he deyed there alas yͤ whyle/ yͭ is to ſay yͤ .x. day of Octobre the .iii. yere of kȳge Edwardes reygne. And whan the kynge wyſte therof/ he was wonder ſory/ ⁊ lete entyere hym at yͤ frere Minors at Wyncheſtre.

¶ Of the dethe of ſyr Roger Mortymer erle of Marche.

AND ſo it befell at that tyme yͭ ſyr Roger Mortymer erle of yͤ marche was ſo proude ⁊ ſo hauteyne yͭ he helde no lorde of yͤ realme his pere. And tho became he ſo coueytous yͭ he folowed dame Iſabell yͤ quenes court yͭ was kynge Edwardes moder ⁊ beſet his peny worth with yͤ offycers of yͤ quenes houſeholde/ in yͤ ſame maner that yͤ kynges offycers dyd. And ſo he made his takynge/ as touchynge of vytayle ⁊ alſo of cariages/ ⁊ all he dyde for bycauſe of expenſes/ and to gader treſoure. And ſo he dyd without nombre in all that he myght. Tho had he made hym wonder preuy with quene Iſabell/ and ſo moche lordſhyppe and retynue he had yͭ all yͤ great lordes of Englande of hym were adrad/ wherfore yͤ kynge ⁊ his counſeyl towarde hym were agreued and ordeyned amonge theym to vndowe hym through pure reaſon ⁊ lawe for cauſe that kynge Edwarde that was yͤ kynges fader traytourſly through hym was murdred in the caſtel of Corf/ as before is ſayd more playnly in ſome parte this boke/ of his dethe. And ſome that were of yͤ kynges coūſeyll loued Mortimer/ ⁊ tolde hym in preuyte how yͤ yͤ kynge ⁊ his coūſeyle were aboute frome daye to day hym for to deſtroy and vndo/ wherfore Mortymer was ſore anoyed and angry as yͤ deuyll agaynſt them of yͤ kynges coūſeyle/ and ſayd he wolde of thē be auēged/ how ſoo euer he toke on. It was not longe afterwarde yͤ kynge Edwarde ⁊ dame Philyp his wyfe/ ⁊ dame Iſabell yͤ kynges moder/ ⁊ ſyr Roger Mortymer ne wente vnto Notyngham there for to ſoiourne. And ſo it befell yͤ quene Iſabell through coūſeyl of Mortymer toke to her yͤ keyes of the gates of the caſtell/ ſo that noo man myght come nother in nor oute/ but thorough cōmaūdement of Mortymer/ nor the kynge nor none of his counſeyle. And yͤ tyme it befell yͤ Mortymer as a deuyll for wrath boiled ⁊ alſo for wrath yͤ he had agaynſt kynge Edwardes men/ ⁊ pryncipally agaynſt them yͤ had hym accuſed to yͤ kynge of yͤ dethe of ſyr Edwarde his fader, And pryuely a counſeyle was take bytwene quene Iſabell ⁊ Mortymer/ ⁊ yͤ byſſhop of Lyncoln ⁊ ſyr Symonde of Bedforde/ ⁊ ſyr Hugh of Trompynton/ ⁊ other preuy of theyr counſeyle/ for to vndo them all yͤ Mortymer had accuſed vnto yͤ kynge of his faders dethe of treaſon and of felonye. Wherfore all tho that were of yͤ kynges counſeyle whan they wyſt of Mortymers caſtynge/ pryuely came to kynge Edwarde ⁊ ſayd yͤ Mortymer wolde thē deſtroye/ bycauſe yͤ they had hym accuſed of kynge Edwardes dethe his fader. And prayed hym yͤ he wolde maynteyne them in theyr ryght. And theſe were yͤ lordes that purſued this quarell/ ſyr Wyllyam of Mountagu/ ſyr Wyllyam de Bohum/ ſyr Wyllyā his broder/ ſyr Raufe Stafforde/ ſyr Roberte of Vfforde/ ſyr Wyllyam of Clynton/ ſyr Johan Neuell of hornby/ and many other of theyr counſente. And all theſe ſwore vpon a boke to mayntayne yͤ quarell in aſmoche as they myght. And it befell ſo after yͤ ſyr Wyllyam Mountagu/ nor none of the kynges frendes muſt not be herberowed in yͤ caſtell for Mortymer/ but went ⁊ toke their herberowe in dyuerſe places of yͤ towne of Notyngham. And tho were they ſore aferde/ leſt yͤ Mortymer ſholde them deſtroy. And in haſt they came vnto kynge Edwarde ſyr Wyllyā of Moūtagu ⁊ other yͤ were in the caſtell/ ⁊ pryuely hȳ tolde yͤ he nor none of his company ſholde not take yͤ Mortymer without coūſeyle ⁊ helpe of Wyllyam of Elande conſtable of the ſame caſtell. Now truely ſayde yͤ kynge I loue you well/ ⁊ therfore I counſeyle you yͤ ye go to yͤ forſayde conſtable/ ⁊ cōmaūde hȳ in my name yͤ he be your frende ⁊ helpe/ for to take yͤ Mortymer/ all thynge ylefte vpon peryll of lyfe and lymme. Tho ſayd Mountagu Syre my lorde graunt mercy. Tho went forth the forſayd Mountagu/ and came to the Conſtable of the caſtell/ ⁊ tolde hym yͤ kynges wyll. And he anſwered ⁊ ſayd/ the kynges wyll ſholde be done in aſmoche as he myghte/ ⁊ thus he wolde not ſpare for no maner of dethe And that he ſwore and made his othe.

Tho ſayde ſyr Wyllyam of Mountagu to the Conſtable of the caſtell in herynge of them all that were helpynge to the ſame quarell. Now certes dere frende/ vs behoueth to worke ⁊ do by youre aduys for to take yͤ Mortymer/ ſyth yͤ ye be keper of the caſtel ⁊ haue yͤ keyes in youre warde. Syr ſayde the Conſtable/ wyll ye vnderſtande yͤ the caſtel gates ben locked with the keyes that dame Iſabel ſend thyder and by nyght ſhe hath the keyes therof/ ⁊ layeth them vnder the weſel of the bedde vnto the morowe/ ⁊ ſo ye maye not come into the caſtell by the gates/ by noo maner of wyſe/ but I knowe an aleye that ſtretcheth out of yͤ warde vnder yͤ erth in to the forſayd caſtell / yͭ goeth into yͤ weſt whiche aleye dame Iſabell yͤ quene / ne none of her men ne yͤ mortymer / ne none of his company knoweth it not. And ſo I ſhall lede you through yͤ aley / ⁊ ſo ye ſhall come into the caſtell wout aſpyenge of ony men yͭ are your enemyes. And the ſame nyght ſyr Wyllyam Moñtagu ⁊ al the lordes of his quarell / ⁊ the ſame Conſtable alſo went thē to horſe / ⁊ made ſemblaunt as it were for to go out of Mortymers ſyghte. But anone as Mortymer herde this tydynges he wende yͭ he wolde haue gone ouer ſee for fere of hȳ. And anone ryght he ⁊ his cōpany toke a counſeyle amonge them for to let theyr paſſage / ⁊ ſend letters anone to yͤ porters ſoo yͭ none of yͤ great lordes ſholde go home to theyr owne countrees / but yf they were areſted ⁊ take. And amōge other thynges Wyllyam Elande Conſtable of yͤ forſayd caſtell pryuely lad ſyr Wyllyam Mountagu ⁊ his company by yͤ forſayd waye vnder the erthe tyll they came into the caſtel and went vp into yͤ toure there yͭ Mortymer was in. But ſyr hugh of Trompyngton them eſcryed hydouſly / ⁊ ſayd a traytours it is for nought / yͭ ye ben comen in to this caſtel ye ſhal dey yet an euyl deth euerychone. And anone one of them that was in Moñtagues company vp wͭ a mace / ⁊ ſmote yͤ ſame hugh vpō yͤ heed yͭ the brayne braſt out ⁊ fell on yͤ grounde / and ſo was he deed of an euyl deth. Tho toke they Mortymer as he armed hym at yͤ toures dore / whan he herde the noyſe of them for drede. And whan quene Iſabell ſawe that Mortymer was taken ſhe made moche ſorowe in herte ⁊ theſe wordes vnto them ſayd. Now fayre ſyres I pray you yͭ ye do no harme to his body a worthy knyght our welbeloued frende our dere coſyn. Tho went they thens ⁊ came and broughte mortymer / and preſented hym vnto kynge Edwarde / and he commaunded to brynge hym in ſaue warde. But anone as they that were conſentynge vnto Mortymers doynge herde tell yͭ he was taken they went and hydde them and pryuely by nyghte wente out of the towne echeone his waye with heuy herte and mornynge chere / and lyued vpon theyr landes as wel as they myght. And that ſame yere that Mortymer was takē he had .xx. ſcore knyghtes woute ſquyers and ſergeauntes of armes and fote men. And than was Mortymer ladde to London / and ſyr Edmonde of Bedforde was lad with hym / and was taken to the Conſtable of the toure to kepe. But afterwarde was the Mortymers lyfe examyned at weſtmynſter before yͤ kynge / and before all yͤ great lordes of Englande / for peryll that myght falle to the realme. And to enquere alſo whiche were conſentynge to ſyr Edwardes deth yͤ kynges fader / and alſo through whome yͤ Scottes eſcaped fro Stanhope in Scotlande without leue of kynge Edwarde. And alſo how the charter of ragman was delyuered vnto the Scottes therin the homages ⁊ feautees of yͤ lordes of Scotlande were conteyned that the Scottes ſholde doo euermore to the Englyſſhe kynge for the realme of Scotlande / wherfore he was Iudged to be drawē and hanged for his treaſon. And this myſchyef came vnto hym on ſeynt Andrewes euen. In the yere of the Incarnacyon of our lord Jheſu cryſt M.CCC.xxx.

¶How kynge Edwarde gate agayn vnto hym gracyouſly yͤ homages and feautees of Scotlande / wherof he was putte out through falſe counſeyl of quene Iſabel his moder / ⁊ ſyr Roger Mortymer yͭ was newely made erle of Marche.

NOw haue ye herd how Johñ Bayllol in the tyme of peas was chosen to be kynge of Scotlande for cause yͭ he came of yͤ eldest doughter of yͤ erle Dauyd of Huntyngton/ yͭ was kynge Alysanders broder of Scotlande yͭ deyed wᵗoute heyꝛe of his body begoten. And how this Johñ made his feaute ⁊ homage to kynge Edwarde Henryes sone the thyꝛde for his landes of Scotlande/ ⁊ how he afterwarde wᵗsayd his homage through counseyle of yͤ Scottes/ in yͤ yere of oure loꝛde M.CC.lxxxiiii. ⁊ send vnto yͤ pope through a false suggestyon yͭ he made his othe vnto yͤ forsayd kȳge Edwarde ouer his astate ⁊ his wyl/ of yͤ which othe yͤ pope hym assoyled through his bulles to hym sende. And anone as kynge Edwarde wyst therof he ordeyned anone his barons ⁊ came vnto Barwyke ⁊ cōquered yͤ towne/ at yͤ whiche conquest there were slayne.xxv. thousande/ ⁊.vii.C. ⁊ Bayllol yͭ was kynge of Scotlande came and yelded hym to good kynge Edwarde/ ⁊ yͤ kynge delyuered hym oute of yͤ toure of London/ ⁊ all the great loꝛdes with hym yͭ tho were taken at Barwyke ⁊ gaue them sauf cōduyte to go in to Scotlande. And yͤ Scottes sythe through theyꝛ falsnesse warred vpō the good kynge Edwarde. And whan syꝛ Johan Bayllol kynge of Scotlāde sawe all this he wente ouer see vnto Dunpyer and lyued there vpon his landes as well as he myght tyll yͭ yͤ Scottes wolde amēde of theyꝛ mysdedes ⁊ trespace ⁊ lad with hym syꝛ Edwarde his sone/ wherfore yͤ Scottes in despyte of hym called hym syꝛ Johñ Turnlabarde/ for bycause yͭ he wolde not offende noꝛ trespace agaynst yͤ good kynge Edwarde of Englande. And soo he forsoke his realme of Scotlande/ and sette therof but lytell pryce. And this syꝛ Johan dwelled longe tyme in Fraunce/ tyll yͭ he deyed ther ⁊ syꝛ Edwarde his sone receyued his herytage/ ⁊ dyd homage to yͤ kynge of Fraunce/ for his landes of Dunpier. And soo it befell afterwarde that Edward yͭ was Johñ Bayllols sone had wᵗ hym a squyer of Englande yͭ was borne in Yorke shyre/ yͭ was called Johñ of Barnaby/ ⁊ this Edwarde Bayllol loued hym moche/ ⁊ was nygh hym ⁊ full preuy. And soo this Johñ was in debate wᵗ a Frensshe man in yͤ towne of Dūpier ⁊ so he slewe hym ⁊ went his way in all yͤ hast yͭ he myght into yͤ castell for to haue helpe of his loꝛde/ ⁊ anone came the offycers of yͤ towne to take Johñ of barnaby as a felon/ ⁊ syꝛ Edwarde his loꝛde holpe hym ⁊ rescowed hym/ ⁊ by nyghte made hym go out of yͤ castell/ ⁊ so he wente his way ⁊ came into englande wᵗout ony harme. And whan yͤ kynge of fraūce sawe yͭ syꝛ Edwarde had rescowed his felon/ he became wonder wroth agaynste syꝛ Edwarde/ ⁊ anone lete hym areste ⁊ toke in to his hādes al his landes. Tho dwelled syꝛ Edwarde in pryson vnto yͤ tyme yͭ syꝛ Henry of Beaumōt came into Fraunce the whiche Henry was somtyme erle of Anguysshe in Scotlande ⁊ was put out therof whan thaccoꝛdement was bytwene Englande ⁊ Scotlande through the quene Isabell ⁊ Roger Mortymer ⁊ theyꝛ cōpany for yͤ maryage yͭ she made bytwene Dauyd yͭ was Robert bꝛus sone ⁊ dame Jone of Toure kynge Edwardes syster of Englande/ ⁊ well vnderstode this that at the ende he sholde come to his ryghte/ but yf it were syꝛ Edwarde Bayllol/ that was ryght heyꝛe of yͤ realme of Scotlande. And the kynge of Fraunce Lowys loued moche this syꝛ Henry. And he was with hym full pꝛeuy/ and thought for to make a delyueraunce of syꝛ Edwarde Bayllol/ yf he myghte in ony manere of wyse. Tho prayed he yͤ kynge yͭ it wolde please his noble grace to graunt hym syꝛ

Edwarde Bayliols body vnto ẏ next parlyament ẏ he myght lyue wͭ his owne rentes in ẏ meane tyme/⁊ ẏ he myght ſtande to be Judged wͭ his peres at ẏ parlyament. And ẏ kynge graũted hym his prayer/⁊ made ẏ forſayd Edwarde to be delyuered oũt of pryſon/in ẏ maner aboue ſayd/⁊ anone as he was oute of pryſon ſyr Henry toke hym forth wͭ hym ⁊ ladde hym into Englande/⁊ made hym dwelle pryuely at ẏ manere of Sandhall vpon Ouſe in Yorke ſhyre wͭ ẏ lady Weſcy. And ſo he ordeyned hẏ there an huge retynew of Englyſſhe men ⁊ alſo of alyaũtes/for to conquere ayen his herytage/⁊ ſo he gaue moche ſyluer to ẏ ſouldyours ⁊ alyaũtes for to helpe hym/⁊ they behyghte for to helpe hym in ẏ they myghte/but they fayled hym at his moſte nede. And at ẏ tyme Dauyd erle of Morref herde telle howe that ſyr Edwarde Bayliol was pryuely come into Englande/⁊ came to hẏ ⁊ made great Joye of his comynge ⁊ ſayd vnto hym ⁊ behyght hẏ ẏ all ẏ great lordes of Englande ſholde be to hym attendaũt ⁊ ſholde hẏ holde for kynge as ryght heyre of Scotlande/and dyde to hym feaute. Tho came ſyr Henry of Beaumounte to kynge Edwarde of Englande/⁊ prayed hym in the way of charyte that he wolde graũt of his grace to ſyr Edwarde Bayliol ẏ he myght ſauely goo by lande frome Sandhall vnto Scotlande to conquere his ryght ⁊ herytaũce in Scotland. The kynge anſwered ⁊ ſayde/yf that J ſuffer Bayliol go through my lande into Scotlande/ẏ people wolde ſay/ẏ J ſhold be aſſentynge vnto the company. Now ſyr J pray you ẏ ye wolde gyue hym leue to take wͭ hym ſouldyours of Englyſſhe men that they myght ſauely lede hym through your lande into Scotlãde/⁊ ſyr vpõ this couenaũt ẏ yf it ſo befall/as god it forbyd he be dyſcomfyted in batayll through the Scottes that J ⁊ alſo all the lordes that holde wͭ Bayliol ben for euermore out of our rentes ẏ we haue in Englande. And there ẏ kynge vpõ this couenaũt graunted theyr bone as touchynge hym/⁊ tho ẏ were of ẏ ſame quarell/the whiche claymed for to haue landes ⁊ rẽtes in ẏ realme of Englande. And theſe were the names of thoſe lordes that purſued this forſayd quarell/ẏ is to ſaye/ſyre Edwarde Bayliol ẏ whiche chalenged ẏ realme of Scotlande/ſyr Henry Beaumounte erle of Anguyſſhe/ſyr Dauyd of Strobolj erle of Atheles/ſyr Geffray of Mombray Walter Comyn/⁊ many other ẏ were put out of theyr herytage in Scotlande whã the peas was made bytwene Englande and Scotlande/as before is ſayde. And ye ſhall vnderſtande that theſe lordes toke with them. v. C. men of armes/and. ii. thouſande archers and of fote men/and tho wente into ſhyppe at Rauẽſpore/and ſayled by the ſee tyll that they came vnto Scotlande/⁊ came to land at Kynkehorne. xii. myle fro ſeynt Johannes towne. And anone ſende out theyr ſhyppes agayne/for that they ſholde not be hurte/nor empyred/neyther that no man ſholde go into the ſhyppes agayne thoughe that they hadde nede/but abyde all peryles/⁊ not flee but ſtande/⁊ rather ſuffer deth thã flee for to mayntayne theyr true quarell. Whan ẏ erle of Fyffe a fyers man ⁊ a ſterne herde ẏ Bayliol was come for to take ẏ lande of Scotlande/he came in haſt to Kynkehorne wͭ. xii. M. Scottes for to deſtroye hym/that he ſholde not come to lande. But ſyr Edwarde Bayliol ⁊ his cõpany there hym diſcomfyted/at the whiche dyſcomfyture ſyr Alyſaunder Seton was there ſlayne/⁊ many other. The erle of Fyffe was ſo ſore and full euyll aſhamed that ſo lytell a company hadde hym dyſcomfyted/⁊ ſhamefully put hym and all his company yͭ were alyue for to ſlee. Tho came ſyre Edwarde Bayllol / ⁊ toke the coũtre all about hym / tyll he came vnto the abbaye of Dunfremlyn / and ther he founde vytayles for hym ⁊ for his folke / and ymonge all other thynge he founde in a chambre aboute fyue hondred of grete ſtaues of fyne oke wͭ longe pyrches of yron ⁊ of ſtele. And he toke them ⁊ delyuered them to yͤ mooſt ſtrongeſt men of his companye. And anone after he yede fro thens / ⁊ lodged hym in a felde .ii. myles from ſeynt Johannes towne. And whan the burgeys of yͤ towne herde how yͤ erle of Fyffe was dyſcomfyted through Bayllol / brake yͤ brydges that they had made ouer the water of Erne / ſoo that Bayllol myght not goo ouer / wherfore he lodged hym there all yͤ nyght / but lytell hede he toke of reſt / ⁊ ſayd vnto his people. Now dere lordes ye knowe full well / yͭ we ben now lodged betwene our enemyes / ⁊ they may vs hampre there is no bote but deth wherfore yf we abyde ſtyll all this nyght I wene it ſhall tourne vs to moche harme. For yͤ power of Scotlande may euer were ⁊ encreace / ⁊ we maye not ſoo do / ⁊ we ben but lytell people agaynſt theym. Wherfore I praye you for the loue of almyghty god make we vs bolde ⁊ hardy / and yͭ we may myghtly the Scottes this nyght / ⁊ boldely warre vpon thẽ / ⁊ let vs purſue them this nyght. And yf they be trauayled though vs / ⁊ ſe our hardynes other Scottes that ſe them ſo trauayled and wery / the ſorer wyll they be adradde with vs to fyght / ⁊ ſpecyally than ſhall we fyght with them / ⁊ on them purſue / ſo yͭ through yͤ grace of god all yͤ worlde ſhall ſpeke of yͤ doughtyneſſe of oure chyualry And ſyres vnderſtande well that all yͤ cõpany that came with ſyr Robert Bayllol graunted well vnto that counſeyle / and were therof ryght glad / and anone purſued vpõ the Scottes / that they became wonder wery. And Bayllol ⁊ his company ſore folowed them ⁊ dyd them moche harme ⁊ ſorowe through theyr aſſente / ſo that they myght not for febleneſſe theym helpe / ⁊ for lytell people. But tho ſayd yͤ Scottes ymonge them / what is now befall that ſo lytell a people as Bayllol hath in wyng doeth vs ſo moche trauayle and ſorowe. Now certes it ſemeth vs that he worketh by grace / for he is wonder gracyous in his quarell / ⁊ we certes ſhalbe deed or that we may come to hym vs forte yelde / ſyth that his fader ſet of vs noo pryce. ¶ And ymonge all other thynges Bayllol ⁊ his people paſſed the water of Erne ſo that Roberte Mwynetton yͤ ſone was fyers ⁊ angry ⁊ went forth and they ſawe people of armes full well arayed / ⁊ forth they wente vnto them ⁊ with them faught ⁊ ſlewe ⁊ toke as many as wolde abyde. And netheles at yͤ aſſaut they wiſte it had be yͤ great hoſte of Scotlande. And whan it came to yͤ morowe they gadred them togyder ⁊ reſted them a whyle And whyle yͤ Englyſſhe men reſted them the noble baron Thomas Weſey / ⁊ yͤ noble baron Staffor de pyrched theyr horſes vp and downe by yͤ hylles / for to kepe the entrees of yͤ coũtre / ⁊ as they pyrched vp ⁊ downe they ſawe a great hoſt of good aray ordeyned in theyr wynges / wͭ helmes and ſheldes ſhynynge commynge vpõ thẽ. ⁊ than came tho .ii. barons ayen to Bayllols folke / ⁊ ſayde. Now for yͤ loue of god be of good cõforte / for ye ſhall haue batayle anone ryght. ⁊ tho ſpake ſyr Fouke the ſone of Garenne / a baron of great renowne ⁊ of dedes of armes / ſyres vnderſtande what I wyll ſaye. I haue ſene manye dyuers wynges / as well ymonge ſarraſyns ⁊ Jewes / as ymonge the Scottes / and yet ſawe I neuer yͤ fourth parte of yͤ wynge fyght ⁊ therfore yf we wyll abyde our enemyes/we bē ynough for thē. But yf we be not of good herte ⁊ of good courage we be but loſte. And therfore for the loue of god/take to vs good herte/and let vs be bolde/⁊ thynke we neuer on our wyues ne of our chyldren/but onely to conquere our enemyes in batayl/⁊ through ẏ helpe of oure lord we ſhal them ouercome And with that came the hoſtes of ẏ Scottes towarde them full ſurely/⁊ agaynſte ſyr Edward baylloi in thre batayles wel arayed in armure. And wonder fyerſly they came towarde ẏ Baylols company But whan ſyr Donald erle of Marcell ẏ was with the Scottes/ſawe all this/he ſayd to Robert Brꝰ/ẏ ſone of Robert Brꝰ theſe wordes. Syr Roberte ſayde he/full ſore me forthynketh at my herte/ẏ theſe people of Baylol hathe brought with hȳ ſholde dye with dynte of Scottes ſwerdes/ſyth that they ben cryſten mē as we ben/⁊ therfore me thynketh that it were great charyte/for to ſende to them/for to yelde them/vnto our mercy/⁊ raunſome them vnto greuous raunſomme/for as moche as they haue takē our landes and done yll. Now certes ſayd ſyr Robert the Brus/I haue well perceyued/that thou arte an enemy ⁊ a traytour to Scotlande ſythe ẏ wylte conſente to ſaue our deedly enemyes/ẏ haue done vs moch ſorowe ⁊ ſhame/and now it ſemeth well ẏ ye be of theyr aſſent. Now certes Robert ſayde ſyr donald/falſly ye lye. I am not of theyr cōpanye ne of theyr cōſent/and ẏ haſtely ye ſhall ſe/for I wyll fyght wᵗ thē rather thā ony of this cōpany/⁊ certes ſyr Roberte ſayd he I ſhall in maugre of thy heed aſſayle them or ẏ/⁊ wᵗ ẏ they pyrched theyr ſtedes fyerſly on Gaſkemore/and theyr wynge them folowed on a renge. And tho came they ⁊ met wᵗ Baylol ⁊ his company at an hangynge bough of the moore in a ſtrayte paſſage ⁊ ſo faſt they haſted thē vnto the Englyſſhe mē ẏ thouſandes fell to the grounde echone ouer vpon other in to an hepe bothe horſe and man/Baylol and his mē myghtely ſtode agaynſt them ⁊ faſt ſlewe the Scottes to the groūde/⁊ many they ſore wounded/ſo longe/tyll ẏ they ſtode vpon them/and foyned theym wᵗ theyr ſwerdes and ſperes thrugh theyr bodyes/and full ſore they were trauayled vpon them/tyll that they became wōder wery/and wyſt not what for to do/and ẏ Scottes that were lefte alyue/fled away for to ſaue them ſelfe in the beſt maner ẏ they myght. And tho purſued theym ſyr Edwarde Bayloll and his men/⁊ ſlewe of them tyll it was nyght. And fro thens they wente to ſeynt Iohānes towne and toke it/⁊ helde them there/and vytaylled theym ſelfe at theyr owne wyll/for they founde ynough wherwith to make mery Tho made Baylol his men ẏ were woūded go into ſhyp/to ſayle into england to hele theyr woūdes/⁊ in that tyme there was a ſlemynge in ẏ ſee/a ſtronge theſe ⁊ a robber ẏ was called Crab/⁊ this ſlemynge was dryuē out of Flaunders for his wyckednuſſe ⁊ therfore he came into Scotlāde to holde wᵗ ẏ ſcottes/⁊ dyd as moche harme to ẏ Englyſſh mē as he myght do and this Crabbe met this Baylols men in ẏ ſee ẏ were wounded before in batayll ẏ were ſēd agayne into Englād/for to hele theyr woūdes/and this crabbe gaue to them a great aſſaute/⁊ wolde haue ſlayn theym. But the Englyſſhe mē defended them manfully ⁊ dyſcomfyted Crabbe ⁊ his company ⁊ he ſledde into Scotlande And as he came towarde ſeynt Iohānes towne/he foūd a great company of Scottes/that were come agayn togyder after ẏ dyſcōfyture at Gaſkmore ẏ whiche byſeyged Baylol and his men in the ſame towne of ſeynt Iohan. And anone tolde to the Scottes how that he was dyſcomfyted of yͤ Englyſshe mē yͭ were wounded at Gaſkmore / yͭ wente towarde England for to hele theyr woūdes / ⁊ ſayd to yͤ Scottes / yͭ they ſholde haue nother power nor myght ne grace ayenſt Edward Bayllol bycauſe yͭ he ſcomfyted / ⁊ empayred all yͤ chyualry of Scotland with a hand full of mē as to acōpte agenſt yͤ Scottes yͭ were ſlayne / wherfore he counſeyled to remoue yͤ ſeyge frome ſeynt Johannes towne ⁊ kepe theym in yͤ beſte manere that they myght.

¶ The Scottes vnderſtode that Crab ſayd ſoth / forſoke the ſyege ⁊ wente thens by nyght. Whan this thynge was knowē thurgh Scotlande how that the lordes ⁊ knyghtes were dyſcomfyted at Gaſkmore of Scotlād thurgh ſir Edwarde Bayllol / ye ſhall vnderſtande yͭ the lordes ⁊ ladyes / ⁊ yͤ gentylles of Scotlande came wonder faſt to ſeyt Johānes towne ⁊ yelded them to Bayllol / ⁊ to hym dyde homage ⁊ feaute for theyr landes ⁊ yelde them to his peas / and he them receyued fayr / and after this he went to yͤ abbaye of Scone / ⁊ there he was crowned kynge of Scotland / and after he lete crye his peas throughout all yͤ lande. And at that ſame tyme it befell that kynge Edwarde helde his parliamēt ymōg his lyeges at yͤ new caſtell on Tyne / for to amēde yͤ treſpaces and yͤ wronges / that had ben done in his land / ⁊ ſyr Edward Bayllol kyng of Scotlande came to hym thyder / ⁊ dyd to hym homage ⁊ feaute / for the realme of Scotlande. And in this manere kynge Edwarde of Englande gadred agayne his homages and feautes of Scotlāde / wherof he was put out / through counſeyll ⁊ aſſente of dame Iſabel his moder / ⁊ of ſyr Roger Mortymer erle of marche / tho toke bayllol kynge of Scotlande his leue of kynge Edwarde of Englande / ⁊ wente thens into his owne lande of Scotlande ⁊ ſet but lytell by ſuche as had counſeyled hym / ⁊ holpen hym in his quarell / wherfore they wente frome hȳ / ⁊ went ⁊ lyued by theyr owne landes ⁊ rentes in Scotlande. And ſo it befell afterwarde not longe / yͭ yͤ kynge of Scotlande ne remeued ⁊ came to yͤ toure of Anande and there toke his dwellynge / ⁊ thyder came to hym a cōpany of knyghtes / ſtrōge mē ⁊ worthy / ⁊ yelded them vnto the kynge. And bare them ſoo fayre in dede ⁊ in coūtenaunce / ſo that he truſted moche vpon them / ⁊ anone as yͤ traytours ſawe that he truſted moche on them / they ordeyned ymonge them fyfty in a company / ⁊ wolde haue ſlayne theyr lord the kynge / but through the grace of almyghty god / he brake throughe a wall an hole in his chābre / ⁊ as god wolde ſcaped theyr trechery / and all his men were ſlayne / and he eſcaped with moche drede vnto the towne of Cardoll. And there he helde hym ſore anoyed. And this befell on our ladyes euen yͤ cōſepcyon.

¶ Tho ſende Edwarde Bayllol to kynge Edwarde of Englande / how falſly and traytourſly he was in lytell tyme put to ſhame ⁊ ſorowe through his lyege men / on whome he truſted wonder moche / ⁊ prayed hym for the loue of god yͭ he wolde mayntayne hym ⁊ helpe hȳ agaynſt his enemyes. The kynge of England had of hȳ great pyte / ⁊ behyghte to helpe hym ⁊ ſocoure hym. And ſende hȳ worde / that he ſholde holde hym in the forſayde cytee of Carboyll / tyll that he had gadred his power.

¶ Tho ordeyned kynge Edwarde of Englande a counſeyle atte London / and he lete gadre his men in dyuers ſhyres of Englande / and whan he was all redy / he wente towarde the towne of Berewyk vpō Twede / and thyder came to hym kynge Edwarde Bayllol of Scotlande with his power / and beſeged the towne / and made without yͤ towne a fayre towne of pauylyons / ⁊ dyched them all aboute / ſo that they had no drede of the Scottes / and made manye aſſaute wͭ gones ⁊ with other engynnes to ẏ towne / wherwith they deſtroyed many fayre houſes / ⁊ chyrches alſo were bete downe to ẏ erthe wͭ great ſtones / ẏ ſpytouſly came out of gonnes ⁊ other engynes. ⁊ neuertheleſſe the Scottes kepte ryght well the towne / ẏ tho two kynges myght not come therin longe tyme / ⁊ neuertheleſſe ẏ kynges abode there ſoo longe / tyll tho ẏ were within ẏ towne fayled vytaylles ⁊ alſo they were ſo wery of wakynge / ẏ they wyſt not what for to do. And ye ſhall vnderſtande ẏ the Scottes that were within the towne of Barwyk / through comyn counſeyle ⁊ theyr aſſente / lete crye vpon ẏ walles of the towne / ẏ they myght haue peas of ẏ Englyſſhe mē ⁊ therof they prayed ẏ kyng of his grace ⁊ merci / ⁊ prayed hym of trewes for .viii. dayes on this couenaūt / ẏ yf they were not reſcowed in ẏ ſyde of ẏ towne towarde Scotlande of ẏ Scottes wͭin .viii. dayes / that they wold yelde them to the kynge / ⁊ ẏ towne / ⁊ too hold this couenaūte / they profered to the kynge .xx. hoſtages out of ẏ towne of Barwyk. Whan the hoſtages were delyuered to ẏ kyng / anone tho of ẏ towne ſend to ẏ Scottes / ⁊ told them of theyr ſorowe and myſchefe / ⁊ ẏ Scottes came tho pryuely ouer the water of Twede to ẏ bought of ẏ abbaye / ⁊ ſyr wyllyā Dyked ẏ was tho Stewarne of Scotlande / ⁊ many other that came with hym / put theym there in great peryl of them ſelfe at that tyme and of theyr lyfe / for they came ouer a brydge ẏ was broken and the ſtones awaye / and many of theyr company were there drowned / but the forſayd wyllyam went ouer / and other of his company / and came by ẏ ſhyppes of Englande / ⁊ ſlewe in a barge of Hull .xvi. mē ⁊ after they wente into ẏ towne of Barwyk by ẏ water ſyde / wherfore the Scottes helde tho the towne reſcowed / ⁊ aſked theyr hoſtages agayne of the kynge of Englande / ⁊ the kynge ſend them word agayne that they aſked theyr hoſtages with wronge ſyth ẏ they came into England ſyde / for couenaūte was bytwene them ẏ the towne ſholde be reſcowed by the halfe of Scotland / anone tho cōmaunded kynge Edwarde to yelde the towne / or he wolde haue the hoſtages ⁊ the Scottes ſayd ẏ towne was reſcowed well ynoughe ⁊ therto they wolde them holde / whan kynge Edwarde ſawe the Scottes breke theyr couenauntes ẏ they made / he was wonder wrothe / and anone lete ſyr Thomas Fytz wyllyam / and ſyr Alyſander of Feton warden of Barwyk ẏ whiche Thomas was perſone of Dunbarre / and lete theym betake fyrſte afore that other hoſtages / for cauſe that ſyre Alyſaunders fader was keper of the towne. ¶ And tho commaunded euerye daye two hoſtages of the towne / tyll that they were all do to dethe / but yf they yelded the towne / ⁊ ſo ye ſholde teche theym for to breke theyr couenauntes. And whan they of ẏ towne herd theſe tydynges they became wonder ſory ⁊ ſend to the kyng ẏ he wold graūt the other .viii. dayes of reſpyte / ſo ẏ bytwene two hondred mē of armes ⁊ .xx. mē of armes / myght bi ſtrength go bytwene thē to ẏ towne of Barwyke them for to vytayle / ẏ ẏ towne muſte be holde for reſcowed. ⁊ yf ſo were ẏ .xxx. or .xxii. or more were ſlayne of tho two hūdred before ſayd / ẏ ẏ towne ſhold not be holde for reſcowed / ⁊ this couenaūt to be holde they ſende to hym other .xii. of ẏ forſayde towne in hoſtage / ẏ kynge graūted theyr prayere / ⁊ toke ẏ hoſtages on ſeynt Margarettes euen in ẏ yere of grace .M.CCC.xxxii. ẏ Scottes came prykynge fyerſly well arayed in foure wynges / for to mete kynge Edwarde of englande / and alſo Edwarde the kynge of Scotlande / with theyr power/⁊ came faſt ⁊ ſharply ayenſt euenſonge tyme/and the ſame tyme was flood at Berwyk in the water of Twede yͭ no man myght go ouer on his horſe/nor on fote/⁊ yͤ water was bytwene the two kynges and the realme of England. And yͭ tyme aboue the Scottes in yͤ other ſyde for cauſe yͭ yͤ Englyſſhe men ſholde haue be drowned.

¶ This was yͤ aray of the Scottes/how yͭ they came in batayle agaynſt yͤ two kynges of Englande ⁊ of Scotlande. In the vaūtwarde of Scotlād were theſe lordes.

THe erle of Morry/James Fryſell/Symonde Fryſell/walter Stewarde/Reynolde Cheyn/Patryke of Graham/Johā le grant/Jamys of Cordyl/Patryk Parkeys/Robert Caldecottes/Phylyp of Meldrum/Thomas Gylbert Bauk wyſeman/Adam gurdon/Jamys Garnat/Robert Boit/Hugh Park. with xl. knyghtes newe dubbed. ⁊ vi. C. mē of armes/⁊ iii. M. of comyns. In yͤ fyrſt parte of that batayll were theſe lordes/the Stewarde of Scotlande/yͤ erle of Morry Jamys his vncle/wyllyā Douglas Dauyd of Lyndeſey/Malcolyn Flemynge/wyllyam of Keth. Dūkan Cāpbell with xxx. bachelers newe dubbed. ¶ In the ſeconde parte of the batayle were theſe lordes. James Stewarde of Corben/Alein Stewarde/wyllyam abbachin/wyllyā Moys/James Fytzwyllyam/Adam le mose/walter Fytz Gylbert/Johā of Carleton/Robert Wallam/vi. C. mē of armes/⁊ xviii. M. comyns. ¶ In yͤ thyrde parte of yͤ batayll of Scotlande were theſe lordes. The Erle of Morel/the Erle of Rik/the erle Strahern/yͤ erle of Southerlande/wyllyam of Kylkerap/Johā Cābron/Gylbert of Hey/and wyllyam Ramſey/wyllyam Prendergeſt/Wyllyam Harde/wyllyam Garde/Arnolde Garde/⁊ Thomas Dolphyn/with xl. knyghtes newe dubbed. xl. C. men of armes. xv. M of comyns. ¶ In the fourth warde of the batayle of Scotlande were theſe lordes Archbalde Douglas/yͤ erle of Leneuax/Alyſander le Bruis/yͤ erle of Fyff/Johā Canbell erle of Atheles/Roberte Lawther/wyllyam of Uypount/wyllyam of Lonſdō/Johā de labels/Groos de Therenlaw/Johā de Lyndſey/Alyſander de Gray/Ingrā de Umfreuille/Patryk de Polelworthe/Polelworthe/Dauyd de wymes/Mychel Scot/wyllyam Landy Thomas de Boys/Roger Mortymer with xx. bachelers newe dubbed. ix. C. men of armes/xviii. M. ⁊ iiii. C. of comyns. The Erle of Dunbare keper of the Caſtell of Barewyk/halpe yͤ Scottes with l. mē of armes. ¶ And ſyr Alyſander of Gerō keper of the forſayd towne of Barewyk with an. C mē of armes. ⁊ alſo yͤ comyns of yͤ towne with iii. C. mē of armes/⁊ vi. viii. C. of fote mē. ¶ The ſome of yͤ erles ⁊ lordes aboue ſayd/amounteth. lxvi. ¶ The ſome of yͤ bachelers newe dubbed amounteth to an C. lx. ¶ The ſōme of mē of armes amoūteth. iii. M. C. ¶ The ſōme of yͤ comyns amoūteth. iiii. M. ⁊ iii. C. The ſōm totally of yͤ people aboue ſayd amounteth. lxv. M. vii. C. xix. theſe. lx. ⁊ vi. great lordes lad al yͤ other great lordes aboue ſayd/in foure batayles/as it is tolde before al on fote/and kynge Edwarde of Englande/⁊ Edwarde Bayloll kynge of Scotland had well apparelled theyr folke in foure batayles/for to fyght on fote agaynſt the Scottes theyr enemyes. And yͤ englyſſh mynſtrels blewe theyr trūpets and theyr clarions/and hydouſly aſcryed the Scottes. and tho had euery Englyſſhe batayll two wynges of pure archers. The whiche at yͤ batayll ſhote arowes ſo faſte ⁊ ſo ſore that yͤ Scottes myght not helpe theym ſelfe/⁊ they ſmote the Scottes thouſandes to yͤ grounde. ⁊ they begā for to flee fro the Englyſſhmē to ſaue theyr lyues. And whā yͤ Scottes knaues ſaw yͤ ſcōfyture ⁊ the Scottes fall faſt to yͤ grōde / they pycked faſt theyr mayſters horſes wͭ the ſpores for to kepe them from peryll / ⁊ ſet theyr mayſters at no force / ⁊ whan yͤ Englyſſhe men ſawe yͤ / they horſyd them / ⁊ faſt purſued yͤ Scottes / ⁊ al yͤ abode they ſlewe downe ryghte. There mē myght ſe yͤ doughtyneſſe of yͤ noble kynge Edwarde ⁊ of his mē / how manly they purſued yͤ Scottes / yͤ flewe for drede / ⁊ there mē myght ſe many ſcottyſſhe mē caſt downe to yͤ grōde / ⁊ baners dyſplayed hacked into peces / ⁊ many a good haberyoyne of ſtele in yͤ blode bath. And many a tyme yͤ Scottes were gadred into companyes / but euermore they were dyſcomfyted.

¶ And ſo it befell as god almyghty wold that the Scottes had that daye no more foyſon ne myghte agaynſt the Englyſſhe men than .xx. ſhepe ymonge .v. wulues / ⁊ ſo were the Scottes dyſcōfyted / ⁊ yet the Scottes was wel .v. mē agaynſt one Englyſſhe man / ⁊ that batayll was done on Halydoune hyll beſyde yͤ towne of Barewyk at yͤ whiche batayll were ſlayne of yͤ Scottes .xxxv. thouſandes ⁊ .vii. C. ⁊ .xii And of yͤ Englyſſhe men / but onely .xiii. ⁊ this victory befell to yͤ Englyſſhe men on ſeynt Margaretes euen yͤ holy vyrgyn ⁊ martyr in yͤ yere of our lorde Jheſu Criſt M.CCC.xxxii. And whyle this voyage laſted yͤ englyſſhe pages toke / the pryſe of the Scottes yͤ were ſlayne / euery man that he myghte take wͭout ony chalēgyge of ony mā / ⁊ ſo after this gracyous vyctory / yͤ kynge tourned them agayne vnto yͤ ſame ſyege of Barewyke. ¶ And whan they beſyeged ſawe and herde how kȳge Edwarde had ſpede / they yelded to hym the towne with the caſtel / on the morowe next after ſeynt Margaretes day. ¶ And thanne the kynge dydde ordeyne ſyr Edwarde Bayllol / with other noble ⁊ worſhypfull men / too be kepers and gouernoures of all Scotlande in his abſence. And hymſelfe tourned agayne and came into Englande after this vyctorye with moche Joye and alſo vnto hym worſhyp And in yͤ next yere folowynge after / that is for to ſaye in the yere of the incarnacyon of oure lorde Jheſu Cryſte. M.CCC.xxxiii. And of kynge Edwarde .vii. he wēte agayne into Scotland / in wȳter tyme At yͤ whiche vyage yͤ caſtell of kylbrydge in Scotlande / for hym and for his men yͤ were with hym he recouered and hadde agaynſt yͤ Scottes / all at his owne luſte.

¶ And that ſame yere / ſyr Edwarde Bayllol kynge of Scotlande / helde his parlyamente in Scotlande with many noble lordes of Englande that were at that ſame parlyamente / bycauſe of theyr landes and alſo lordeſhyppes that they had in the realme of Scotlande / and helde all of the ſame Bayllol. ¶ And in yͤ .xiiii. yere of his reygne / aboute the feeſt of ſeynt Johan Baptyſt ſyr Edwarde Bayllol yͤ very and true kynge of Scotlande / as by herytage and ryght lyne / made his homage and feaute vnto kynge Edward of Englande for yͤ realme of Scotlande at newcaſtell vpon Tyne / in the preſence of many a worthy mā and alſo of cōmēs bothe of the realme of Englande / and alſoo of Scotlande. And anone after in the ſame yere kynge Edwarde of Englande / receyued of the duke of Brytayne his homage for the erledome and lordeſhyp of Rychmonde. And ſo folowynge in yͤ .ix. yere of his reygne after Myghelmas rode into Scotlande / and there was faſte by ſeynt Johannes towne almooſt all the wynter tyme / ⁊ ſoo he helde his Cryſtmas at yͤ caſtell of Rokeſbourghe. And in yͤ ſame yere thoroughout Englande / aboute ſeynt Clemētes tyde in wynter. ¶ There aroſe ſuche a ſprynge ⁊ wallynge vp of waters/ ⁊ alſo flodes / bothe of yͤ ſee ⁊ alſo of the freſſhe ryuers and ſprynges/ that the bankes/ walles and coſtes brake vp/ that mennes beeſtes ⁊ houſes in many places ⁊ namely in lowe countrees/ vyolently ⁊ ſodaynly were drowned/ and fruytes dryuē awaye of the erthe / through cōtynuaūce and abundaūce of waters of the ſee/ euermore afterward were tourned into more ſaltneſſe and ſourneſſe of ſauour. ¶ The x. yere of kynge Edwardes reygne/ kyng Edwarde entred the Scottes ſee after Mydſomer/ ⁊ to many of the Scottes he gaue batayll/ ⁊ ouercame theym ⁊ many he treatyd ⁊ bowed to his peas/ through his doughtyneſſe and hardyneſſe. ¶ And after the feeſt of ſeynt Myghel/ thā nexte folowynge was the erle of Morryf had ⁊ taken at Edenburgh ⁊ brought into Englond and put into pryſon. ¶ And in the monethes of June and Julii than nexte folowynge in yͤ .xi. yere of his regne was ſene and appered in the fyrmament a bemed ſterre/ the whiche clerkes call ſtella Cometa ⁊ that ſterre was ſene in dyuers partes of the fyrmament. Where after anone there folowed in Englonde good chepe ⁊ wonder great plente of all chaffare vytayles and marchaundyſe/ and there agaynſt honger ſcarſyte myſchefe ⁊ nede of money. In ſomoche that a quarter of whete at London was ſolde for two ſhelynges/ and a good fatte oxe at a noble/ ⁊ fyue good douues byrdes for a peny/ In whiche yere deyed ſyr Johan of Eltham erle of Cornewayle that was kynge Edwardes broder ⁊ lyeth at Weſtmynſter.

¶ How kynge Edwarde made a duchye of the erledome of Cornewayle / and alſo of ſyxe other erles that were newe made ⁊ of the fyrſte chalenge of the kyngdome of Fraunce.

IN the yere of our lorde a thouſande .CCC.xxxvii. and of kyng Edward .xii. in the moneth of Marche durynge yͤ parlyamēt at Weſtmynſter in lente tyme kynge Edwarde made of the erledome of Cornewayle a duchye ⁊ lete it call the duchye of Cornewayle/ yͤ whiche duchye he gaue vnto Edwarde his fyrſt ſone with yͤ erledome of Cheſter/ ⁊ alſo kyng Edward made at the ſame tyme ſyxe other erles/ yͤ is for to ſaye ſyr Henry the erle of Lancaſters ſone/ erle of Leyceytre/ Wyllyam of Boughū erle of Northamptō/ Wyllyam of Mountagu/ erle of Salyſbury/ Hugh of awdel erle of Glouceſtre/ Roberte of Vfforde erle of Southfolke / ⁊ Wyllyam of Clyton erle of Huntyngtō. And in that ſame yere it was ordeyned in yͤ ſame parlyament yͤ no man ſholde were no clothe that was wroughte oute of Englande/ as clothe of golde ne of ſylke or veluet or damaſk or ſarcyn baudkyn ne none ſuche other ne none wylde ware ne furres of beyonde the ſee. But ſuche as myght ſpende an hundred pounde of rente by yere. But this ordynaūce ⁊ ſtatute was but of lytel effect/ for it was nothynge holden. In the .xiii. yere of his reygne kynge Edwarde wente ouer yͤ ſee into Brabande wͭ quene Phylip his wyfe there beynge a chylde at Andwerpe there he dwelled more than a yere for to treate wͭ the duke of Brabande and other alyed to hym of yͤ chalengynge of the kyngedome of Fraūce/ to kynge Edward of Englōd by ryght ⁊ by herytage after the dethe of Karoll the great kynge of Fraūce broder Germayne of quene Iſabell kynge Edwardes moder/ yͤ which was holden ⁊ occupyed wrongfully by Phylyp of Valoys yͤ emes ſone of Karol yͤ whiche duke ⁊ all his in the forſayd thynges ⁊ all other longynge therto with all his myght and goodes kynge Edwarde founde redy vnto hym and made and behyghte hym liberte by good fayth ⁊ truſt/ ⁊ after that yͤ kynge haſted hȳ agayne into Englande ⁊ lefte there yͤ quene ſtyll behynde hym in Brabande. Than in yͤ .xiiii. yere of his reygne whã all yͤ lordes of his realme ⁊ other that ought to be at his parliament were called ⁊ aſſembled togyder in the ſame parlyament holden at London/ after yͤ feſt of ſeynt Hylary. The kynges nedes were put forth ⁊ promoted as touchynge yͤ kyngdome of Frãce. For whiche nedes to be ſped yͤ kynge asked yͤ fyfte party of all yͤ mouable goodde of Englande ⁊ yͤ wolles ⁊ yͤ .ix. ſhefe of euery corne ⁊ all the lordes of euery towne where ſuche thynges ſholde be taken ⁊ gadred ſholde anſwer to yͤ kynge therof/ ⁊ had it ⁊ helde it at his owne luſte ⁊ wyll. wherfore yf I ſholde knowlege yͤ very trouth yͤ pure loue of yͤ people was tourned into hate/ ⁊ yͤ comyn prayers into curſynge/ for cauſe yͤ yͤ comyn people were ſo ſtrongely greued. Alſo the forſayde Phylyp Valoys of Fraunce hadde gadred vnto hym a great hoſte ⁊ deſtroyed in his partyes ⁊ kyngdom many of the kynges frendes of England wᵗ townes caſtels ⁊ many other of theyr lordſhyps ⁊ many harmes ſhames and dyſpeytes dyd vnto yͤ quene/ wherfore yͤ kynge whan he herde this tydynges ſtrongely meued therwith ⁊ angred/ ⁊ ſend dyuers letters ouer ſe to yͤ quene and to other yͤ were his frendes gladynge them certyfyenge them yͤ he wolde be there hym ſelfe in yͤ haſte that he myght And anone after Eſter whã he had ſped of all thynges that hym neded to haue/ he went ouer ſe agayne. Of whoſe comynge yͤ quene ⁊ al his frendes were wonder glad ⁊ made moche Ioye. And all yͤ were his enmyes ⁊ helde ayenſt hym made as moche ſorowe. In yͤ ſame tyme yͤ kynge through counſeyle of his true lyeges and counſeyle of his lordes yͤ there were preſente wᵗ hym wryte yͤ kynge of Fraunces name/ ⁊ toke ⁊ medled yͤ kynges armes of Fraunce quartered wᵗ tharmes of Englande ⁊ cõmaũded forth wᵗ his coyne of golde vnder deſcrypcyõ and wrytynge of yͤ name of Englande and of Frãce to be made beſt yͤ myght be/ ⁊ yͤ is to ſaye yͤ floreyn yͤ was called yͤ noble pryce of .vi. ſhellynges .viii. pens ſterlynge/ ⁊ yͤ halfe noble yͤ value .iii. ſhellynge ⁊ .iiii. pens/ ⁊ yͤ farthynges the value of .xx. pens.

¶ How kynge Edwarde came vnto the Scluys and dyſcomfyted all yͤ power of Fraunce in the hauen.

AND in the next yere after/ that is to ſaye the .xv. yere of his reygne he cõmaũded ⁊ lette wryte in his charters wryttes ⁊ other letters yͤ date of the reygne of Frãce yͤ fyrſt. And whyle yͤ he was thus doynge ⁊ trauaylynge i Frãce through his cõuſeyle he wrote to all yͤ prelates dukes erles ⁊ barons ⁊ yͤ noble lordes of yͤ coũtre/ ⁊ alſo to dyuerſe of the comyn people dyuerſe letters ⁊ maundemẽtes beryinge date at Gandaue yͤ .viii. day of February. And anone after wᵗin a lytell tyme he came agayne into Englande wᵗ yͤ quene ⁊ her chyldren. And in yͤ ſame yere on mydſomer euen he began to ſayle towarde Frãce agayne/ ⁊ manly ⁊ fyerſly he fell vpon Phylyp of Valoys yͤ whiche longe tyme laye ⁊ had gadred to hym a full ſtronge ⁊ boyſtous meyne of dyuerſe nacyons in yͤ hauen of Scluys/ ⁊ there they foughte togyder yͤ kyng of Frãce ⁊ he wᵗ theyr hoſtes fro mydday to thre of the clocke in yͤ morne/ in yͤ whiche batayle were ſlayne .xxx.M. men of yͤ kynges cõpany of Fraunce/ ⁊ many ſhyppes and cogges were taken. And ſo through goddes helpe he had there yͤ vyctory ⁊ bere thẽs a gloryous cheualry/ ⁊ i yͤ ſame yere about ſeſt James tyme wͭout yͤ yates of ſeynt Omers Robert of Arthoys wͭ men of Englande ⁊ Flaunders fought agaynſt the duke of Burgon ⁊ yͤ Frenſſhe men at whiche batayl were ſlayne ⁊ taken of the Frenſſhe men .xv. barons .lxxx. knyghtes/ ⁊ ſhyppes ⁊ barges were takē unto yͤ nōbꝛe of .CC. ⁊ .xxx. The ſame yere yͤ kynge makynge ⁊ abydynge upō yͤ ſyege of toꝛnay the erle of Henaude wͭ Englyſſhe archers made aſſaut unto yͤ towne of ſeynt Amande where they ſlewe .l. knyghtes ⁊ many other and alſo deſtroyed yͤ towne. And in yͤ .xvi. yere of his reygne folowynge in yͤ wynter tyme yͤ kyng dwellyd ſtyll upō yͤ foꝛſayd ſyege/ ⁊ ſende oft tyme into Englande unto his treſoꝛer ⁊ other purueyours foꝛ gold ⁊ money yͭ ſhold be ſend unto hym in his nede/ but his proctours ⁊ meſſangers curſedly ⁊ ful ſlowly ſerued hym at his nede ⁊ deceyued hȳ/ on whoſe defaute ⁊ latches yͤ kynge toke trewes bytwene hym ⁊ yͤ kynge of Fraūce. And thā kyng Edwarde ful of ſhame ⁊ ſoꝛowe ī his herte wͭdꝛew hym fro yͤ ſyege ⁊ came into Bꝛytayn ⁊ there was ſo great ſtryfe of batayll yͭ he loſte many of his people. And whā he hadde done there yͭ he came foꝛe he dꝛeſſed hym ouer ſee into Englande. And as he ſayled towarde Englande in yͤ hygh ſee yͤ moſt myſhappes ſtoꝛmes ⁊ tempeſtes thonder ⁊ lyghtnynge fell to hym in yͤ ſee yͤ whiche was ſayd yͭ it was done ⁊ araysed through euyl ſpirites made by ſoꝛcery ⁊ nygromācy of thē of Fraunce/ wherfoꝛe yͤ kynges herte was ful of ſorowe ⁊ anguyſſhe wellynge ⁊ ſyghynge ⁊ ſayd unto our lady in this wyſe. O bleſſyd lady ſeynt Mary what is the cauſe yͭ euer moꝛe goynge into Fraunce all thynges ⁊ wethers fal to me Joyful ⁊ lykynge as I wolde haue them/ but alwaye tournynge into Englande al thynges fall unpꝛofytable ⁊ very harmfull/ neuertheles he ſcaped all perylles of yͤ ſee as god wolde/ ⁊ came to yͤ toure of London by nyght And yͤ ſame yere yͤ kynge helde his Cryſtmaſſe at Meneres ⁊ ſend woꝛde to yͤ Scottes by his meſſāgers yͭ he was redy and wolde fyght wͭ thē/ but yͤ Scottes wolde not abyde but fled ouer the Scottes ſee ⁊ hyd them as well as they myght. And in the .xvii. yere of his reygne aboute yͤ feeſt of yͤ Conuerſyon of ſeynt Paule kynge Edwarde whan he had ben in Scotlande ⁊ ſawe yͭ yͤ Scottes were fled tho he came agayne into Englande. And a lytell befoꝛe lent was yͤ tournement at Dunſtable/ to the whiche tournement came all the yonge bachelary ⁊ cheualry of Englande wͭ many other erles ⁊ loꝛdes/ at yͤ whiche tournemente kynge Edwarde hym ſelfe was there pꝛeſente. And in yͤ .xviii. yere of his reygne at his parliament holden at weſtmynſter yͤ quyʒeme of Paſke kynge Edwarde yͤ thyꝛde made Edwarde his fyꝛſt ſone pꝛynce of Wales. And in yͤ .xix. yere of his reygne anone after in Janyuer befoꝛe lente yͤ ſame kynge Edwarde let make full noble Juſtes and great feeſtes in the place of his byꝛth at Wyndſoꝛe yͭ there was neuer none ſuche ſene there afoꝛe. At whiche feeſt ⁊ royalte were two kynges and two quenes the pꝛynce of Wales the duke of Coꝛnewayle .x. Erles .ix. Coūteſſes barons ⁊ many burgeys yͭ whiche myght not lyghtly be nombꝛedde/ and of dyuers landes beyonde the ſee were many ſtraungers. And at yͤ ſame tyme whā the Juſtes were done kynge Edwarde made a great ſouper in the whiche he oꝛdeined ⁊ begā his roūde table ⁊ oꝛdeyned and ſtedfaſted the daye of the rounde table to be holden there at Wyndſoꝛe in the Whytſone weke euermoꝛe yerely. And in this tyme Englyſſhe men ſomoche haunted and cleued to yͤ woodenes and foly of the ſtraungers that from tyme of comyn ge of ẏ Henaudes .xviii. yere paſſed they ordeyned ⁊ chaunged them euery yere diuerſe ſhappes and diſguyſynge of clothynge of longe large ⁊ wyde clothes deſtitute ⁊ deſerte frõ all olde honeſte ⁊ good vſage. And another tyme ſhorte clothes ⁊ ſtrayt waſted dagged ⁊ kyt / ⁊ on euery ſyde ſlatered ⁊ botoned wᵗ ſleues and tappytes of ſurcotes ⁊ hodes ouer longe ⁊ ouermoch hangynge ẏ yf I ẏ ſoth ſhall ſay they were more lyke to tourmẽtours ⁊ deuyles in theyr clothynge ⁊ ſhoynge ⁊ other araye thã to men ⁊ ẏ wõmẽ more nycely yet paſſed ẏ men in aray ⁊ curyouſlyer / for they were ſo ſtrayte clothed ẏ they lette hange foxe tayles ſewed bynethe wᵗin theyr clothes for to hele ⁊ hyde theyr arſes / ẏ whiche diſguyſynges ⁊ pryde parauenture / afterwarde brought forthe ⁊ cauſed many myſſhappes ⁊ myſchefe in ẏ realme of Englande. The .xx. yere of kynge Edwarde he went ouer into Brytayne ⁊ Gaſkoyne in whoſe cõpanye wente ẏ erle of Warwyke / ẏ erle of Suffolke / ẏ erle of Huntyngtõ / ⁊ the erle of Arundell / ⁊ many other lordes and comyn people in a greate multytude wᵗ a great Nauye of .CC. ⁊ .xl. ſhyppes / anone after mydſomer for to auenge hym of many wronges ⁊ harmes to hym done by Phylyp of Valoys kynge of Fraũce ayenſt ẏ trewes before hande grauted / ẏ whiche trewes he falſly ⁊ vntrewely by cauilacyons loſed ⁊ diſquatte

¶ How kynge Edwarde ſayled into Normandye ⁊ arryued at Hogges wᵗ a great hoſte.

IN ẏ .xxi. yere of his reygne kynge Edwarde through counſeyll of all ẏ great lordes of Englande called ⁊ gadred togyder in his parlyament at Weſtmynſtre before Eeſter ordeyned hym for to paſſe ouer ẏ ſee agayne for to dyſeaſe ⁊ dyſtroble ẏ rebelles of Fraunce. And whan his nauy was come togyder ⁊ made redy he went wᵗ great hoſte ẏ .xii. daye of July / ⁊ ſayled into Normandy ⁊ arryued at Hogges / ⁊ whan he had reſted hym there .vi. dayes for bycauſe of trauaylynge of ẏ ſee ⁊ for to haue oute all his men wᵗ all theyr neceſſaryes out of theyr ſhyppes. he wẽt towarde Cadomum brennynge waſtynge ⁊ deſtroyenge all ẏ townes ẏ he founde in his way. And ẏ .xxvi. day of July at the brydge of Cadony manely and nobly ſtrengthed and defended with Normãs he had there a ſtronge batayll ⁊ a longe durynge / through whiche a great multytude of people were ſlayne. And there were taken of pryſoners ẏ Erle of Ewe / the lorde of Tãkeruyll / ⁊ an hondred of other knyghtes ⁊ men of armes / and .vi. C. fote men nõbred ⁊ the towne ⁊ ẏ ſubbarbes vnto the bare wall / ⁊ all thynges ẏ they myght bere ⁊ cary out was robbed ⁊ deſpoyled. After ẏ kynge paſſed forthe by ẏ countre about ẏ brede of .xx. myle he waſted all maner thynge ẏ he founde. whan Phylyppe of Valoys perceyued this / all though he were faſt by hym with a ſtronge hoſte / yet he wold not come nygh hym but brake all the brydges beyonde ẏ water of Seyn fro Roon to Parys / ⁊ hym ſelfe fledde vnto ẏ ſame cyte of Parys wᵗ all the haſte that he myght. Forſoth ẏ noble kynge Edwarde whan he came to Parys brydge ⁊ founde it broken / within .v. dayes he let make it agayn. And in ẏ morowe after ẏ aſſumpcyon of our lady kynge Edwarde paſſed ouer ẏ water of Seyn goynge towarde the water of Creſſy and deſtroyed by ẏ way townes with the people dwellynge therein. And in the feeſt of ſeynt Bartholomew he paſſed ouer ẏ water of Somme vnhurt wᵗ all his hoſt there as neuer before had ben ony maner way nor paſſage / where .ii. M. were ſlayne of the ẏ letted theyr paſſage ouer. Therfore the .xxvi. day of Auguſt kynge Edwarde in felde faſt by Creſſy hauynge .iii. bataylles of Englyſſhe men encountred ⁊ mette with Phylyp of Ualoys hauynge wͭ hym foure batayls of whiche yͤ leſt paſſed gretely yͤ nombre of Englyſſhe people. And whan theſe two hooſtes met togyder/ there fell vpō hym yͤ kynge of Beme/ yͤ duke of Lorayne/ ⁊ erls alſo of Flaūders/ Dalaunſon/ Bloys/ Harcourt/ Aumarle ⁊ Neuoys/ ⁊ many other erles/ barons/ lordes ⁊ knyghtes ⁊ mē of armes the nōbre of a .M.v.C.xlii. wout fote men ⁊ other mē armed yͭ were nothȳge rekened. And for all this yͤ vngloryous Phylyp withdrewe hym wͭ yͤ reſydue of his people. wherfore it was ſayd in cōmune amonge his owne people. Necke beall ſoy retreyt/ yͭ is to ſay oure ſayre withdraweth hym. ¶Than kynge Edwarde ⁊ our Englyſſhe men thanked god of ſuche a vyctory after theyr greate labour taken to them all thynges nedful to theyr ſuſtynaūce ⁊ ſauynge of theyr lyues and for drede of theyr enemyes reſted them there. And full erly in yͤ mornynge after yͤ Frenſſhe men wͭ a great paſſynge hoſte came agayne for to gyue batayll ⁊ fyght wͭ yͤ Englyſſhe mē/ wͭ whome met and encoūtred yͤ erle of warwyke Northhamptō ⁊ Northfolke wͭ theyr company ⁊ ſlewe .ii. M. ⁊ toke many priſoners of yͤ gentylles of thē. And yͤ remenaūt of yͤ ſame hoſt fled .iii. myle thēs. And yͤ .iii. day after yͤ batayll yͤ kynge wente to Calayswarde deſtroynge all yͤ townes as he rode thyder. Whan yͭ he was comen/ yͭ is to ſaye yͤ thyrde day of Septēbre he began to beſyege yͤ towne wͭ yͤ caſtel ⁊ cōtynued his ſyege fro yͤ ſorſayd thyrde daye of Septembre to yͤ thyrde day of Auguſt yͤ nexte yere after. And in yͤ ſame yere durynge yͤ ſyege of Calays yͤ kynge of Scotlande wͭ a great multytude of Scottes came into Englande to Neuyles croſſe about ſeynt Lucas day yͤ euangelyſt. hopynge ⁊ truſtynge for to haue founde all yͤ lande voyde of people for aſmoche as the kynge of Englande was beyonde yͤ ſee ſaufe onely preſtes ⁊ men of holy chyrche ⁊ women ⁊ chyldren ⁊ plowmē/ ⁊ ſuche other labourers/ ⁊ there they came ⁊ robbed and dyd moche pryuy ſorowe/ but yet founde they ynough yͭ them wͭſtode by the grace of almyghty god. And ſoo a daye of batayll was aſſygned betwene them ⁊ certayne lordes ⁊ men of holy chyrche yͭ were of yͤ coūtre wͭ other comyn people faſte by the cyte of Dureſme/ at whiche day through the grace of almyghty god the Scottes were ouercome/ ⁊ yet were there thre tymes ſo many of thē as of englyſſhe men. And there was ſlayne all the cheualry ⁊ knyghthode of the realme of Scotlande. And there was taken as they wold haue ſledde thens Dauyd the kynge of Scotlande hym ſelfe and the erle of Mentyſe/ ſyr wyllyam douglas/ ⁊ many other greate men of Scotlande. And after that our Englyſſhe men whan they had reſted thē a fewe dayes and had ordeyned theyr kepers of yͤ north coūtre/ they came to lōdō and brought wͭ them ſyr Dauyd yͤ kynge of Scotlande/ ⁊ that all yͤ other lordes yͭ were taken pryſoners vnto yͤ toure of london wͭ all yͤ haſt yͭ they myght/ ⁊ lefte thē there in ſaufe kepynge vnto yͤ kynges comynge ⁊ wente home agayne into theyr owne countre. And afterwarde was the kynges raunſon of Scotlande taſked to an hondred thouſande marke of ſyluer to be payde wͭin .x. yere/ that is to ſaye euery yere .x. thouſande marke.

¶How kynge Edwarde beſyeged Calays/ ⁊ how it was wonne and yelden vnto hym.

IN the .xxii. yere of kynge Edwardes reygne he wente ouer the ſee in the wynter tyme ⁊ laye all ẏ wynter at ẏ ſyege of Calays / ẏ whiche yere whyle ẏ ſyege laſted ⁊ endured Phylyp ẏ kyng of Fraūce caſt and purpoſed traytourſly to put away the ſyege ⁊ came ẏ .xxvii. daye of July in ẏ ſame yere wͭ a greate hoſte ⁊ a ſtronge power ⁊ nyghed to the ſyege of Calays. The whiche Phylyp ẏ laſt day of July ſende to kynge Edwarde woꝛde that he wolde gyue hym playne batayl ẏ thyꝛde daye after ẏ aboute euenſonge tyme yf he durſt come fro the ſyege ⁊ abyde And whan kynge Edwarde herde ẏ without ony longer taryenge accept gladly ẏ daye ⁊ houre of batayll ẏ Phylyp had aſſygned. And whan ẏ kyng of Fraūce herde ẏ the next nyght after he ſet his tentes a fyꝛe ⁊ remeued ⁊ wente his way thens cowardely. Than they ẏ were in ẏ towne ⁊ in ẏ caſtell beſyeged ſawe all this that they had none other helpe noꝛ ſocour of ẏ kynge of Fraūce noꝛ of his men. And alſo ẏ theyꝛ vitayles wͭin thē were ſpended ⁊ waſted ⁊ foꝛ faute af vytayles ⁊ refreſſhynge they ete hoꝛſes houndes cattes ⁊ myſe foꝛ to kepe theyꝛ trouth as longe as they myght. And whan they ſawe ⁊ was founde ymonge them at ẏ laſt ẏ they had nothynge ymonge them foꝛ to ete ne lyue by ne no ſocoure ne reſcowe of ẏ Frenſſhe men / of ẏ other ſyde they wyſt wel ẏ they muſte nedes dye foꝛ defaute oꝛ els yelde the towne / ⁊ anone they went ⁊ toke downe ẏ baners ⁊ ẏ armes of Fraūce on euery ſyde ẏ were hanged out ⁊ went on the walles of ẏ foꝛſayd towne on dyuerſe places as naked as they were boꝛne ſauſe only theyꝛ ſhertes ⁊ theyꝛ pꝛeuy clothes / ⁊ helde theyꝛ ſwerdes naked ⁊ the poſte downwarde ī theyꝛ handes / ⁊ put ropes and haulters about theyꝛ neckes ⁊ yelde vp the keyes of ẏ towne ⁊ of the caſtell to kynge Edwarde of Englande with great fere ⁊ dꝛede of theyꝛ lyues ⁊ godes ⁊ oꝛde of herte. And whan kynge Edwarde ſawe all this as a mercyable kynge ⁊ loꝛde receyued them to grace / and a fewe of the greteſt pꝛyſoners of eſtate ⁊ of gouernaunce of ẏ towne he ſende into Englande there foꝛ to abyde theyꝛ raūſō ⁊ ẏ kynges grace. And all ẏ comynalte of ẏ towne the kynge lette go whyder they wolde in peas ⁊ without ony harme / ⁊ let them bere wͭ them all theyꝛ thynges that they myght bere ⁊ cary away / kepynge ẏ towne ⁊ ẏ caſtell to hym ſelfe. Than thꝛough meditacyons of Cardynales ẏ were ſende frome ẏ pope / trewes were taken there by twene Fraunce and Englande foꝛ .ix. monethes than next folowynge. And about Myghelmaſſe kynge Edwarde came agayne into England wͭ a gloꝛious vyctoꝛy. And in ẏ .xxiii. yere of his reygne in ẏ Eeſt partyes of the woꝛlde there began a peſtylēce ⁊ deth of ſarraſyns ⁊ paynems that ſo great a deth was neuer herde of afoꝛe / ⁊ ẏ waſted awaye ẏ people ſoo that vnneth the tenth perſon was lefte alyue. And ẏ ſame yere about ẏ ſouth coūtrees there fell ſomoche rayne ⁊ ſoo greate waters ẏ from Cryſtmas to mydſomer there was vnnethes no day noꝛ nyght but ẏ it rayned ſom what / thꝛough whiche waters ẏ peſtylence was ſo enfected ⁊ ſo habundaūt in all coūtrees / ⁊ namely about the courte Of Rome / ⁊ other places ⁊ ſee coſtes ẏ vnneth there were lefte lyuynge folke to bury them ẏ were deed honeſtly. But made great dytches ⁊ pyttes ẏ were wonder bꝛode ⁊ depe ⁊ therin buryed thē and made a renge of deed bodyes ⁊ caſt a lytel erthe to fyll them aboue / ⁊ than caſt in another renge of deed bodyes / and another renge aboute thē / ⁊ thus were they buryed ⁊ none other wyſe / but yf it were ſo that they were men of greate eſtate ſoo ẏ they were buryed as honeſtely as they myght. And after all this in ẏ .xxiiii. yere of kynge Edwardes reygne it was done hym to wete of a treaſon ẏ was begon at Calays ⁊ ordeyned for to ſell ẏ towne for a great ſomme of Florens to kynge Phylyp of Fraunce through ẏ falſeneſſe ⁊ ordinaūce of a knyght ẏ was called ſyr Geffray of Chernye was wonder preuy with Phylyp of Fraūce. And whan kynge Edwarde herd this he toke wͭ hym ẏ nobleſt and gentylleſt lordes ⁊ many other worthy men of armes ẏ were preſent wͭ hym for ẏ ſolempnyte of ẏ hygh feſt. And well and wyſely in all ẏ haſt ẏ he myght / ⁊ as preuely as he myght he went ouer ſee towarde Calays. And ẏ ſame yere ẏ good kynge Edwarde helde his Cryſtmaſſe at Hauerynge / ⁊ ẏ morne after newe yeres daye ẏ kynge was in the caſtel of Calays with his men of armes that none of the alyens wyſt therof. And ẏ falſe conſpyratour ⁊ traytour Geffray of Cherney ſyth that he myght not openly haue his purpoſe of the caſtell / preuely ⁊ ſtelyngely he came ⁊ helde the towne wͭ a greate hoſte. And whan he with his mē were comē / he payed ẏ forſayde ſomme of Florens as couenaunt was to a Geneweye in ẏ towne that was keper of ẏ caſtell ⁊ cōſentynge too the ſame Geffray in all his falſneſſe ⁊ trechery ⁊ bounde ẏ Englyſſhe mynſtrels and ſeruauntes ẏ were in ẏ caſtell ẏ they myght not helpe thē ſelf ne let thē of theyr purpoſe. And than wenynge ẏ they had ben ſure ynough / thā they ſpake all their wyckedneſſe ⁊ falſneſſe openly on hygh ẏ all men myght here. And now ſhal ye here how they were deceyued / for thei came in by a preuy poſterne ouer a lytell brydge of tree / and whan they were comen in ſubtylly ⁊ preuely ẏ brydge was drawen vp and kept that none of them that came in myghte go out nor no more myght come to them / ⁊ anone our Englyſſhe men wente oute at preuy holes ⁊ wyndowes ⁊ ouer ẏ walles of the towne ⁊ of ẏ caſtell ⁊ wente ⁊ faught manly wͭ ẏ Frenſſhe men ẏ were wͭout ⁊ had ẏ better of thē / ẏ whiche whā they were occupyed by them ſelf on theyr ſyde / ẏ kynge that was with in the towne hauynge ſcarſely but .xxx. mē of armes drewe oute his ſwerde ⁊ with a loude voyce he cryed on hyghe. O ſeynt Edwarde. A ſeynt George. And whan ẏ people herde that they came rennynge to hym ⁊ gaue to theyr enmyes ſo great aſſaute ẏ there were more than .iij. C. mē of armes ⁊ many more other ſlayn ⁊ many fled away. And ſo by ẏ grace of god ẏ vyctory fell vnto ẏ Englyſſhe men. Than ẏ kynge toke wͭ hym this Geffray ẏ was fynder of this trecheri / ⁊ alſo many other Frenſſhe pryſoners / ⁊ thā within a whyle after he came agayne into Englande. And in the ſame yere and in the yere afore / and alſo in ẏ yere next folowynge was ſo great a peſtylence of men from ẏ eſt in to the weſt / and namely through botches that tho that ſykened / as on this day dyed on ẏ thyrde day after / to ẏ whiche men that ſo dyed in this peſtylence hadde but lytell reſpyte of theyr lyggynge. ¶ Than pope Clemente of his goodneſſe ⁊ grace gaue theym full remyſſyon and forgyueneſſe of all theyr ſynnes that they were ſhryuen of / and this great peſtylence laſted in London from Myghelmaſſe vnto Auguſt nexte folowynge almoſte on hole yere. And in theſe dayes was dethe without ſorowe / weddynges without frendſhyppe / wylfull penaūce / and derth without ſcarſyte / ⁊ fleynge wͭout refute or ſocoure / for many fledde from place to place bycauſe of ẏ peſtylence / but they were enfected ⁊ myght not eſcape ẏ deth / after that the prophete Iſaye ſayth who that fleeth fro the face of drede he ſhall fall in to the dyche. And he ẏ wyndeth hym out of the dyche he ſhall be holden ⁊ tyed wͭ a gryſte/ but whã this peſtylẽce was ceſſed as god wold/ vnnethes ẏ tenth part of ẏ people was lefte on lyue/ ⁊ in ẏ ſame yere began a wonder thynge ẏ all ẏ euer were boꝛne after ẏ peſtylẽce had two cheketethein theyꝛ heed leſſe thã they had afoꝛe.

¶ How kynge Edwarde had a great batayll wt Spanyardes in ẏ ſee faſt by wynchelſe.

AND in the.xxx. yere of his reygne aboute ſeynt Johñs daye in harueſt in ẏ ſee faſt by wynchelſe kynge Edwarde had a greate batayll with men of Spayne where that theyꝛ ſhyppes and nauy laye chayned togyder/ that eyther they muſt fyght oꝛ be dꝛenched/ ⁊ ſo whã all our woꝛthy men of armes ⁊ of ẏ ſee coſtes faſt by wynchelſe ⁊ romney were gadꝛed togyder/ ⁊ our nauy and ſhyppes al redy to ẏ warre/ the Englyſſhe men met mãly and ſtrongly with theyꝛ enmyes comynge fyerſly agaynſt them. And whã ẏ Spaynyſſhe veſſels ⁊ nauey were cloſed al about/ there men myght ſe ſtronge batayll on bothe ſydes ⁊ longe durynge in ẏ whiche batayll was but fewe ẏ faught but they were pyteouſly hurte. And after ẏ batayll there were .xxiiii. ſhyppes takẽ ⁊ ſo ẏ Englyſſhe men had ẏ better. And in ẏ next yere folowynge of his reygne/ ẏ is to ſaye ẏ.xxvi. yere ẏ kynge thꝛough his cõſeyll let oꝛdeyne ⁊ make his newe money ẏ is to ſay ẏ peny ẏ grote value of.iiii pens ⁊ ẏ half grote of.ii. pens but it was of leſſe weyght thã ẏ olde ſterlynge was by.v.ſhyllynge in ẏ poũde. And in ẏ.xxvii yere of his reygne was ẏ great derthe of vytayles ẏ whiche was called ẏ dere ſome ⁊ ẏ.xxviii. yere of his reygne in ẏ parlyamẽt holdẽ at weſtmynſter after eeſter ⁊ ſyꝛ Henry erle of Lancaſtre was made duke ſo Lancaſtre ⁊ in this yere was ſoo great a dꝛoughte that frome ẏ moneth of Marche to ẏ Monethe of July there fell no rayne on ẏ erthe/ therfoꝛe all fruytes ſedes ⁊ herbes/ foꝛ ẏ moſt parte were loſt in defaute wherfoꝛe came ſo great dyſeaſe of mẽ ⁊ beſtes ⁊ derthe of vytayles in Englande ẏ this lande ẏ euer afoꝛe had ben plẽteous had nede ẏ tyme to ſeke vitayls ⁊ refreſſhȳge at other oute yles ⁊ cõtrees And ẏ.xxix. yere of kyng Edward it was accoꝛded grãted ⁊ ſwoꝛne bytwene the kynge of Frãce and kynge Edwarde of Englande ẏ he ſhold haue agayne al his lãdes ⁊ loꝛdſhyppes ẏ longed to ẏ duchye of Guyen of olde tyme/ ẏ whiche had ben wt drawen ⁊ wrongfully occupyed by dyuerſe kynges of Fraunce befoꝛe hande to haue ⁊ to holde to kyng Edward ⁊ to his heyꝛes ⁊ ſucceſſours foꝛ euermoꝛe/ frely peaſybly ⁊ in good quyete vpon this couenaũte ẏ ẏ kynge of England ſhold leue of ⁊ realeſen all his ryght ⁊ clayme ẏ he had claymed of ẏ kyngdome of Frãce ⁊ of the tytle ẏ he toke therof/ on whiche ſpeche ⁊ couenaũtes it was ſende to ẏ court of Rome on both ſydes of ẏ kynges/ ẏ ẏ foꝛſaid couenaunt ſholde be enbulled/ but god oꝛdeyned better foꝛ ẏ kynges woꝛſhyp of englãd/ foꝛ thꝛough ẏ dyſceyte of ẏ Frẽſſhe mẽ/ ⁊ thꝛough lettynge of the people of ẏ courte of Rome the foꝛſayd couenauntes were diſquate and lefte of. And in ẏ ſame yere the kynge reuoked by his wyſe and dyſcrete cõſeyll the ſtaple of wolles oute of Flaunders vnto Englande with all the lybertes frãchyſes ⁊ free cuſtomes that longed therto/ ⁊ oꝛdeyned it in Englande in dyuerſe places/ that it to ſaye at Weſtmynſter/ Cãterbury/ Chycheſtre/ Bꝛyſtowe/ Lyncolne/ ⁊ Hull/ with all the foꝛſayde thynges that longe therte. And ẏ this thynge ẏ ſhold thus be done ẏ kyng ſwoꝛe hym ſelfe therto/ ⁊ pꝛynce Edward his ſone/ wt other many gerat wytneſſes ẏ there were pꝛeſẽt. ¶ And ẏ.xxx. yere of his reygne anone after Wytſōtyde in the parlyamente ordeyned at Weſtmynſter it was told ⁊ certyfyed to yͤ kyng yͭ Phylyp yͭ helde yͤ kyngdome of Fraũce was deed ⁊ yͭ Johā his ſone was crowned kynge ⁊ yͭ this Johā had gyuē Karoll his ſone yͤ duchye of Guyhen/ of yͤ whyche thynge/ kynge Edward whan he wyſt therof/ he had great indyngnacyō to him ⁊ was wōder wrothe ⁊ ſtrōgely meued/ ⁊ therfore afore all yͤ worthy lordes that there were aſſembled at yͤ parlyamēt/ called Edwarde his ſone to hym/ to whome yͤ duchye of Guyhen by ryght herytage ſholde longe to/ ⁊ gaue it hȳ there/ byddȳge ⁊ ſtrēgthynge hym/ that he wolde ordeyn hym for to defēde hym ⁊ auēge hym on his enmyes ⁊ ſaue ⁊ mayntayne his ryght/ ⁊ afterward kynge Edwarde hym ſelfe/ ⁊ his eldeſt ſone Edward went to dyuers places ⁊ ſeyntes i Englande on pylgrymage for to haue yͤ more helpe ⁊ grace of god ⁊ of his ſeyntes. And .ij. kal of July/ whan al thynge was redy to yͤ kynge ⁊ batayll ⁊ all retynue ⁊ power aſſembled ⁊ his nauey alſo redy he toke wͭ hym yͤ erle of Warwyk yͤ erle of Suffolk yͤ erle of Saleſbury ⁊ yͤ erle of Oxford ⁊ a thouſande mē of armes ⁊ as many archers/ ⁊ in yͤ natyuyte of our lady/ toke theyr ſhyppes at Plymouthe ⁊ began to ſayle. And whā he came ⁊ was arryued in Guyon/ he was there worſhypfully taken and receyued of yͤ moſt noble mē ⁊ lordes of that countree. And anone after kynge Edwarde toke wͭ hȳ his two ſones/ yͭ is to ſaye. ſyr Lyonel erle of Ulton/ ⁊ ſyr Johan his broder erle of Rychemond ⁊ ſyr Henry duke of Lancaſtre with many erles ⁊ lordes ⁊ men of armes ⁊ two thouſand archers ⁊ ſayled towarde Fraũce ⁊ reſted hym a whyle at Calays ⁊ after yͤ kynge went wͭ his hoſte aforeſayd ⁊ with other ſouldyours of beyonde yͤ ſee that there abode yͤ kynges comynge yͤ ſecunde day of Nouembre ⁊ toke his Journeye towarde kynge Johan of Fraunce there as he had trowed to haue foūde hȳ faſt by Odomar as his letters ⁊ couenaunt made mencyon yͭ he wolde abyde hym there with his hoſt. And whā kynge Johā of Fraũce herde tell of yͤ kynges comynge of Englād/ he went awaye wͭ his men ⁊ caryage cowardly ⁊ ſhamfully fleynge ⁊ waſtynge all vytayles yͭ Englyſſhe mē ſhold not haue therof. whā kynge Edwarde herde tell yͭ he fledde he purſued hym wͭ all his hoſte tyll Henede ⁊ than he beholdynge yͤ ſcarſyte ⁊ wantynge of vytayles ⁊ alſo yͤ cowardnes of yͤ kynge of Fraunce he tourned agayne waſtynge all yͤ cōtree. And whyle all theſe thynges were a doynge/ yͤ Scottes pryuely and by nyght toke yͤ towne of Barewyke ſleynge them yͭ wͭſtode thē ⁊ no mā els/ but bleſſyd be god yͤ caſtel was ſaued ⁊ kept by Englyſſhe mē that were therin whā yͤ kynge perceyued all this he tourned agayne into Englande as wrothe as he myght be/ wherfore in the parlyamēt at Weſtmynſter was grāted to yͤ kynge of euery ſacke of wolle .l. ſhylynges durynge yͤ terme of .vi. yere yͭ he myght myghtlier fyght and defende the realme agaynſte yͤ Scottes ⁊ other myſdoers. And ſo whan all thynges were redy the kynge haſted hym towarde the ſyege.

¶ How kynge Edward was crowned kȳge of Scotland/ ⁊ how prynce Edwarde toke yͤ kynge of Fraũce ⁊ ſyr Phylyp his yonger ſone at yͤ batayll of Peyters.

AND in yͤ .xxxi. yere of his reygne the .xiiij. daye of Janyuere yͤ kynge beynge in yͤ caſtell of Barewyke with a fewe men/ but he hauynge there faſt by a greate hoſte and a goodly. The towne was yelden vnto hym withoute ony maſnet defence or dyffyculte. Than ẏ kynge of Scotlāde ẏ is for to ſaye ſyr Johā Balyol conſyderynge how ẏ god dyd many meruayles ⁊ gracyous thȳges for kyng Edwarde at his owne wyl fro day to day he toke ⁊ gaue vp ẏ realme of Scotlande at Rokeſburgh in ẏ kynges hādes of Englande vnder his patēt letters there made/ ⁊ anone after kynge Edwarde in preſence of all ẏ prelates ⁊ other worthy mē ẏ were there let hȳ crowne kynge of Scotland. whā all thynges were done ⁊ ordeyned in ẏ cōtrees at his wyll/ he tourned agayne into Englāde wᵗ a great worſhyp And whyle this vyage was in doynge in Scotlāde/ ſyr Edwarde prynce of wales as a mā enſpyred in god was in Guyhen in ẏ cyte of Burdeux tretynge ⁊ ſpekyng of ẏ chalēge of ẏ kynges ryght of Englād ẏ he had to ẏ realme of Fraūce/ ⁊ that he wolde be auēged wᵗ ſtrōge hande/ ⁊ ẏ prelates peres ⁊ myghty mē of ẏ cōtree cōſented well to hym. Than ſyr Edwarde ẏ prynce with a great hoſt gadred to hym ẏ .vi. daye of July wente frome Burdeux goynge ⁊ trauelynge by many dyuers countrees/ ⁊ he toke many pryſoners mo than .vi. thouſande men of armes by the countree as he wente ⁊ toke the towne of Remorantyn in Salongne ⁊ beſyeged ẏ caſtell .vi. dayes. And at ẏ .vi. dayes ende they yelded the caſtell vnto hym/ ⁊ there was taken ẏ lorde of crowne ⁊ ſyr Bureygaud ⁊ many other knyghtes ⁊ mē of armes mo thā .lxxx. And fro thens by Tore ⁊ Peton faſte by Chyneney his noble mē ẏ were wᵗ hym had a ſtronge batayl with Frenſhe mē/ ⁊ an .C. of theyr men of armes were ſlayne/ ⁊ ẏ erle of Daūce ⁊ the ſtewarde of Faūce were taken wᵗ an hondred men of armes. In ẏ whiche yere the .xix. day of Septembre faſt by Peyters ẏ ſame prynce with a thouſande ⁊ .ix. hondred mē of armes and archers ordeyned a batayll to kynge Johan of Fraunce comynge to the prynce warde with .vii. M chosen men of armes ⁊ moche other people a great nōbre/ of ẏ whiche were ſlayn the duke of Burgō and the duke of Athenes and many other noble men and of ẏ prynces men of armes a .M. ⁊ of other ẏ trewe accompte/ ⁊ rekenȳge .viii. C. And there the kynge of Fraūce was takē ⁊ ſyr Phylyp his yonger ſone ⁊ many Dukes noble men and worthy knyghtes ⁊ men of armes aboute two thouſande/ and ſo the vyctory fell to the prynce/ ⁊ to the people of Englande by the grace of god. And many ẏ were taken pryſoners/ were ſet at theyr raunſom ⁊ vpon theyr trouthe ⁊ knyghthode were charged and had leue to go. But the prynce toke with hym the kynge of Fraūce and Phylyp his ſone wᵗ all the reuerence that he myght ⁊ wente agayne to Burdeux with a gloryous vyctorye/ ẏ ſomme of the mē that there were taken pryſoners and of them that were ſlayne the daye of batayll .iiii. M. iii. C. xl. and in ẏ .xxxi. yere of kynge Edwarde the .v. daye of Maye prynce Edwarde wᵗ kynge Johan of Fraūce and Phylyp his ſone ⁊ many other worthy pryſoners aryued gracyouſly in ẏ hauē of Plȳmouthe ⁊ ẏ .xxiiii. daye of ẏ ſame moneth aboute thre after none they came to London by londō brydge ⁊ ſo went forth to ẏ kynges palays at weſtmynſter/ and there came ſo gerate a multytude ⁊ preſſe of people thē aboute to beholde and ſe ẏ wonder ⁊ ryal ſyght ẏ vnnethes fro myddaye tyll nyght myght they not come to weſtmynſter. And ẏ kynges raūſom of Fraunce was taxed ⁊ ſet to thre myllyons of ſcutes/ of whome two ſholde be worthe a noble. And ye ſhal vnderſtande that a myllyon is a thouſande thouſande. And after ſome men his raunſom was ſet at thre thouſande thouſande floreyns and all his one effect/ and this ſame yere were made Iuſtes ſolempne in Smythfelde beynge preſẽt ye kynge of Englande/ ye kynge of Fraũce/ ⁊ the kyng of Scotland/ ⁊ many other worthy and noble lordes. The .xxviii. yere of his reygne ye ſame kynge Edwarde at Wyndſore as well for loue of knyghthode as for his owne worſhyp ⁊ at reuerẽce of ye kynge of Fraũce ⁊ of other lordes yt were ther at ye tyme/ he helde a wonder ryall ⁊ coſtly feeſt of ſeynt George paſſynge ony yt euer was holden afore/ wherfore the kynge of Fraũce in ſcornynge ſayd yt he ſawe neuer nor herde ſuche ſolẽpne feeſtes nor ryaltes holdẽ nor done wt tayles wtout payẽge of golde or ſyluer. And in ye .xxviii. yere of his reygne ye .xiiii. kal of July ſyr Iohan erle of Rychmõde kynge Edwardes ſone wedded dame Blaunche duke Henryes doughter of Lancaſtre coſyn to the ſame Iohã by deſpenſyon of the pope/ ⁊ in the meane tyme were ordeyned Iuſtes of Lõdon thre dayes of Rogacyons/ yt is for to ſaye/ ye Mayre of London wt his .xxiiii. aldermẽ agaynſt all yt wold come/ in whoſe name ⁊ ſtede ye kyng preuely wt his foure ſones Edward Lyonell/ Iohã ⁊ Edmõd ⁊ other .xix. great lordes helden the felde wt worſhyp/ ⁊ this ſame yere as it was tolde ⁊ ſayde of them yt ſawe it there came bloode out of the tombe of Thomas ſomtyme erle of Lãcaſtre as freſſhe as ye day that he was done to dethe. And in ye ſame yere kynge Edwarde choſe his ſepulture lyggynge at weſtmynſter faſt by ye ſhryne of ſeynt Edward/ and anone after ye .xxvi. daye of October/ he went ouer ſee to Calays makynge proteſtacyõ that he wold neuer come agayne into Englande tyl he had full ended ye warre bytwene Fraũce and hym. And ſoo in the .xxvi. yere of his reygne in ye wynter tyme kynge Edwarde was and trauayled in the Ryne coſtes And aboute ſeynt hyllarye tyde he departed his hoſt ⁊ went to Bourgõ ward wt whome than met peaſybly the duke of Bourgon behyghtynge hȳ .lxx. thouſande florens that he ſholde ſpare his men ⁊ people/ ⁊ ye kynge graũted at his requeſt/ ⁊ dwelled there to ye .xxvii. day of marche ye whiche tyme came to kyng Edwardes eere ye ſtrong theues were on ye ſee vnder ye erle of ſeynt Paule ye .xv. daye of Marche lyggynge awayte vpon ye townes of haſtynge/ Rye ⁊ other places ⁊ vyllages on the ſee coſte hadde entred as enmyes into ye towne of wynchelſe/ ⁊ ſlewe all yt euer withſtode them ⁊ withſayd theyr comyng/ wherfore ye kynge was gretly meued ⁊ wrathed and he tourned agayne towarde Parys/ ⁊ cõmaunded his hoſte to deſtroye ⁊ ſle all with ſtrenghte of ſwerde that he had before hande ſpared. And the xii. daye of aprill ye kynge came to Parys ⁊ there departed his hoſt in dyuers batayles wt .iiii. C. knyghtes newe dubbed on ye one ſyde of hym. And ſyr henry duke of Lancaſtre vnder peas ⁊ trewes went to ye yates of ye Cyte proferynge thẽ yt wolde abyde a batayll in ye felde vnder ſuche cõdycyon yt yf ye kyng of Englãd were ouercome there/ as god forbede it ſhold/ yt thã he ſholde neuer chalenge ye kyngdome of Fraũce/ ⁊ there he had of them but ſhort ⁊ ſcornefull anſwere ⁊ came ⁊ tolde it to ye kynge ⁊ his lordes what he had herde ⁊ what they ſayde. And than went forth ye newe knyghtes wt many other makynge aſſaute to ye cytee ⁊ they deſtroyed ye ſubbarbes of ye cyte. And whyle tho thynges were doynge ye Englyſſhe mẽ made them redi for to be auẽged on ye ſhame ⁊ deſpite yt was done ye yere at wynchelſe ⁊ ordeyned a nauy of .lxxx. ſhyppes of mẽ of Lõdon ⁊ of other marchauntes ⁊ .xiii. thouſande men of armes ⁊ archers and went and ſerched and ſkommed ye ſee ⁊ many they toke and helde the yle of Caux/ wher foꝛe ẏ frenſſhe men ẏ is foꝛ to ſay ẏ abbot of Cluyn ẏ erle of Tankeruyll ⁊ Burſyguage ẏ tho was Steward of Fraũce wᵗ many other mẽ of ẏ ſame coũtree by ẏ comyne aſſent of ẏ loꝛde Charles ẏ tho was regẽt of Fraũce they haſted thẽ ⁊ went to ẏ kyng of Englãde aſkyng ⁊ beſechynge hym ſtedfaſt peas ⁊ euerlaſtynge vpõ certayne cõdycyõs ẏ there were ſhewed wꝛyten / ẏ whiche whã ẏ kynge ⁊ his coũſeyl had ſene it / it pleaſed hym neuer a deale / but ſythe it wolde be none other wyſe ẏ tyme of better accoꝛde ⁊ delyberacyõ / the Frenſſhe mẽ beſyly ⁊ wᵗ great inſtaũce aſked trewes ſyn ẏ ſee coſtes / ⁊ ẏ kẏge graũted thẽ / ⁊ in ẏ moꝛowe after ẏ vtas of paſke ẏ kynge tourned hȳ wᵗ his hoſt towarde Oꝛlyaũce deſtroynge ⁊ waſtynge all ẏ coũtre by ẏ way. And as they wẽt thyderwarde there fell on theym ſuche a ſtorme ⁊ tẽpeſt ẏ none of our nacyon neuer herde noꝛ ſawe none ſuche / through ẏ whiche thouſandes of our men ⁊ theyꝛ hoꝛſes in theyꝛ Iournes as it were through vengeaũce ſodeyly were ſlayne ⁊ peryſſhed / ẏ whiche tẽpeſtes were full great yet fered not ẏ kynge noꝛ moche of his people but they went foꝛth i theyꝛ vyage ẏ they had begõne / wherfoꝛe aboute ẏ feſt of Phylyp ⁊ Iacob in May faſt by in carnocũ ẏ foꝛſayd loꝛdes of Fraũce metynge there wᵗ ẏ kynge of Englãd a peſyble accoꝛde ⁊ a fynall vpon certayne condycyõs ⁊ graũtes artyculerly gadꝛed ⁊ wꝛytẽ togyder euermoꝛe to laſt dyſcretly made ⁊ to bothe the kynges ꝓfytable ⁊ to both theyꝛ realmes of one aſſent of Charles ẏ regent ⁊ gouernoure of Fraũce ⁊ of Parys of ẏ ſame reame wꝛytẽ ⁊ made vnder date of Carnocum ẏ .xv. daye of May they offred ⁊ pꝛoffred to the kynge of Englande requyꝛynge his grace in al thynges wꝛytẽ that he wolde benyngnely admytte them ⁊ hold thẽ fyrme ⁊ ſtable to thẽ ⁊ to theyꝛ heyꝛes foꝛ euermoꝛe thẽs foꝛthe / ẏ whiche thynges ⁊ articles whã kynge Edwarde had ſene them he graũted them ſo ẏ both partyes ſholde be ſwoꝛne on goddes body / ⁊ on ẏ Goſpels ẏ the foꝛſayd couenaũte ſhold be ſtablyſſhed ⁊ ſo they accoꝛded gracyouſly Therfoꝛe were oꝛdeyned ⁊ dꝛeſſed on euery ſyde two barõs two baronettes ⁊ two knyghtes to admytte ⁊ receyue ẏ othes of ẏ loꝛde Charles regent of Fraũce ⁊ of ſyꝛ Edward ẏ fyꝛſt ſone ⁊ heyꝛe of kynge Edward of Englãde. And ẏ .x. daye of May there was a ſolempne maſſe at Parys ⁊ after ẏ thyꝛde (Agnꝰ dei) ſayde wᵗ (dona nobis pacem) in pꝛeſence of ẏ foꝛſayd mẽ ẏ were oꝛdeyned to admytte ⁊ receyue the othes ⁊ of all other ẏ there myght be. So Charles layd his ryght hande on ẏ patẽte wᵗ goddes body ⁊ his lyft hande on the myſſall ⁊ ſayde we .N. ſwoꝛen on goddes bodye ⁊ ẏ holy goſpels ẏ we ſhall trewly ⁊ ſtedfaſtly holde towarde vs the peas ⁊ ẏ accoꝛd made bytwene ẏ two kynges / ⁊ in no manere to do ẏ cõtrary / ⁊ there ymõge al his loꝛdes foꝛ moꝛe loue ⁊ ſtrengthe of wytneſſe he dealed ⁊ departed the relyques of ẏ crowne of cryſte to ẏ knyghtes of Englande / ⁊ they toke curteyſly theyꝛ leue / ⁊ ẏ fryday nexte ẏ ſame othe in pꝛeſẽce of ẏ foꝛſayde knyghtes ⁊ of other woꝛthy mẽ pꝛynce Edward made at Louers. Afterwarde bothe kẏges ⁊ theyꝛ ſones ⁊ ẏ moſt noble mẽ of bothe realmes / wᵗin ẏ ſame yere made ẏ othe ⁊ foꝛ to ſtrength al theſe thẏges afoꝛeſayd the kynge of Englande aſked ẏ greateſte mẽ of Fraũce ⁊ hadde his aſkynge ẏ is to ſaye .vi. dukes .viii. erles .xv. loꝛdes all noble barõs and good knyghtes / ⁊ whan the place ⁊ tyme was aſſygned in whiche both kynges wᵗ theyꝛ counſeyl ſhold come togyder / al ẏ foꝛſayd thynges bytwene thẽ ſpokẽ foꝛ to retyfye ⁊ make fyꝛme ⁊ ſtable / ẏ kyng of Englãde anone went towarde ẏ ſee ⁊ at Hone ſter began to ſayle leuynge to his hoſtes that were lefte behynde hym bycauſe of his abſence made moche heuynes ⁊ after the .xix. daye of Maye he came into Englande ⁊ wente to his palays at Weſtmynſter on ſeynt Dunſtans daye ⁊ the thyrd day after he vyſyted Johan the kynge of Fraūce that was in the toure of London and delyuered hym frely from all maner of pryſō/ſaue fyrſte they were accorded of thre myllyons of Floreyns for his raunſome/and the kynge comforted hym and chered hym in all places with all ſolace ⁊ myrthes that longed to a kynge ī his goynge homewarde. ¶ And ẏ .ix. day of July in the ſame yere this ſame Johan kynge of Fraunce that afore laye here in hoſtage went home agayne/into his owne londe too treate of tho thynges ⁊ other ẏ longed ⁊ fallen to the gouernaūce of his realme. ¶ And afterwarde met ⁊ came togyder at Calays both two kȳges wᵗ both theyr counſeyll aboute al halowen tyde/and there were ſhewed the condycyons ⁊ the poyntes of the peas ⁊ of the accord of bothe ſydes wrytẽ/⁊ there with out ony withſayenge of bothe ſydes gracyouſly they were accorded. And there was done and ſongen a ſolempne maſſe and after ẏ thyrde (Agnꝰ dei) vpon goddes body and alſo on the maſſe boke bothe the kynges ⁊ theyr ſones ⁊ the greteſt lordes of both realmes and of theyr counſeyll that were preſente and had not ſworne before ẏ forſayd othe that they had made and cytied bytwene them as they behyghten to kepe/⁊ all other couenauntes that were bytwene them ordeyned. And in this ſame yere men beeſtes trees ⁊ houſes with ſodayne tempeſte and ſtronge lyghtnynge were peryſſhed/⁊ the deuyll appered bodely in mānes lyknes to moche people as they wente in dyuers places in the countrees/ and ſpake to them in that lyknes.

¶ How the great cōpany aroſe in Fraūce and the whyte company in Lombardye/ and of other meruaylles.

Kynge Edwarde in the .xxxvi. yere of his reygne anone after Cryſtemaſſe in the feſte of the cōuerſyon of ſeynt Paule helde his parlyament at weſtmynſter/in ẏ whiche ꝑlament was put forth ⁊ ſhewed the accord and the treates that was ſtablyſſhed ⁊ made bytwene ẏ two kynges whiche accorde pleaſed to moche people ⁊ therfore by ẏ kynges cōmaundemēt there were gadred ⁊ come togyder in weſtmynſter chirche ẏ fyrſt ſonday of lent/ẏ is to ſay ẏ .ii. kal of February/ẏ forſayd Englyſſhe mē ⁊ Frenſſhe mē where was ſonge a ſolempne maſſe of the Trynyte of the Archebyſſhop of Caūterbury mayſter Symonde Iſlepe. And whan (Agnꝰ dei) was done ẏ kyng beynge there wᵗ his ſones/⁊ alſo ẏ kynges ſones of Fraūce/⁊ other noble ⁊ great lordes/wᵗ cādel lyght ⁊ croſſes brought forthe/⁊ all ẏ were not ſworne afore ſwore ẏ ſame othe that was wrytẽ vpon goddes body and on ẏ maſſe booke in this wyſe/we. N. and. N. ſwere vpon goddes body ⁊ on ẏ holy goſpelles ſtedfaſtly to holde ⁊ kepe towarde vs the peas ⁊ ẏ accorde made bytwene ẏ two kynges and neuer for to do the contrary/and whan they hadde thus ſworne they toke theyr croſſes that theyr othes were comprehended into the notaryes. And this ſame yere it fortuned vpō the Aſſencyons euen about mydday/was ſeen ẏ clypſes of ẏ ſonne/and there folowed ſuche a droughte/that for defaute of rayne there was great brennynge of corne fruyte and hey. ¶ And in the ſame moneth the .vi. kal of Jone there fell a ſanguyne rayne almooſte lyke blode at burgon ⁊ a ſanguyne croſſe from morne vnto pryme apered and was ſeen at Boloyn in the heyre the whiche many men ſawe ⁊ after it meued and fell in the myddes of the ſee. ¶ And in the ſame tyme in Fraunce ⁊ Englande and many other landes as they that were in playne cõtrees ⁊ deſerte bare wytneſſe ſodeynly there appered two caſtels of the whiche went out two hoſtes of armed men. And that one hoſt was clothed in whyte ⁊ that other in blacke / ⁊ whan batayl bytwene them was begonne / the whyte ouercame the blacke / ⁊ anone after the blacke toke herte to them ⁊ ouercame ẏ whyte / ⁊ after ẏ they went agayne into theyr caſtels / ⁊ than ẏ caſtelles ⁊ all ẏ hoſte vanyſſhed awaye. And in ẏ ſame yere there was a great ⁊ an huge peſtylence of people ⁊ namely of men / whoſe wyues as women out of gouernaunce toke huſbandes as well ſtraungers as other lewde people / ẏ whiche forgetynge theyr honour ⁊ worſhyp coupled ⁊ maryed them wͭ thẽ ẏ were of lowe degre ⁊ lytell reputacyon. ¶ In ẏ ſame yere dyed Henry duke of Lãcaſtre. And alſo in this ſame yere Edwarde prĩce of Wales wedded ẏ coũteſſe of Kent that was ſyr Thomas wyfe of Holonde the whiche was departed ſomtyme ⁊ deuorced fro ẏ erle of Salyſbury for cauſe of the falſe knyght. ¶ And aboute this tyme began ⁊ roſe a great cõpany of dyuerſe nacyons gadred togyder / whoſe leders were Englyſſhe people wͭout ony heed ẏ whiche dyd moche harme in ẏ partye of Frãce. And not longe after there aroſe another company of dyuers nacyons ẏ was called ẏ whyte cõpany ẏ whiche in ẏ partyes of Lombardy dyde moche ſorowe. ¶ The ſame yere ſyr Iohn of Gaunte ẏ ſone of kynge Edwarde ẏ .iii. was made duke of Lancaſtre by reaſon and cauſe of his wyfe that was the doughter and the heyre of Henry ſomtyme duke of Lancaſtre.

¶ Of ẏ great wynde / ⁊ how prynce Edwarde toke the lordſhyp of Guyen of his fader ⁊ went thyder.

AND in ẏ .xxxvii. yere of kynge Edwarde ẏ .xv. daye of Ianyuer / ẏ is to ſay on ſeynt Maurys day about euẽſonge tyme there aroſe and came ſuche a wynde out of ẏ ſouth wͭ ſuche a fyerſnes ⁊ ſtrength ẏ it braſtyd ⁊ blewe downe to the grounde hygh houſes ⁊ ſtronge buyldynges toures chyrches ⁊ ſteples ⁊ other ſtronge places / ⁊ al other ſtronge workes that ſtode ſtyll were ſhaken therwith ẏ they ben yet ⁊ ſhall euermore be ẏ febler and weyker whyle they ſtande. And this wynde laſted wͭout ony ceſſyng .vii. days contynually / ⁊ anone after there folowed ſuche water in hey tyme ⁊ in ẏ harueſt tyme ẏ all felde workes were ſtrongely let and lefte vndone. ¶ And in the ſame yere prynce Edwarde toke ẏ lordſhyp of Guyhen / ⁊ dyde to kynge Edwarde his fader homage ⁊ feaute therof / ⁊ went ouer ſee into Gaſcoyne wͭ his wyfe and chyldren. ¶ And anone after kynge Edwarde made his ſone Lyonell duke of Clarence / and ſyr Edmonde his other ſone / erle of Cambrydge. And in ẏ .xxxviii. yere of his reygne it was ordeyned in ẏ parlyamente ẏ men of lawe bothe of ẏ chyrche ⁊ tẽporall lawe ſhold fro ẏ tyme forth plete in their moder tongue. ¶ And ẏ ſame yere came into Englande thre kynges ẏ is to ſaye ẏ kynge of Frãce / ẏ kynge of Cypres / ⁊ ẏ kynge of Scotlande / bycauſe to vyſyte ⁊ for to ſpeke with the kynge of Englande And after ẏ they had be here longe tyme two of them went home into theyr owne cõtrees ⁊ kyngdomes / but the kynge of Fraunce through great ſekeneſſe ⁊ malady ẏ he had abode ſtyll in Englande. And in ẏ .xxxix. yere of his reygne was a ſtronge ⁊ great froſt ⁊ ẏ laſted lõge ẏ is to ſay fro ſeynt Andrewes tyde to ẏ .xvi. kal. of

Apryll/ yͭ yͤ tylthe ⁊ ſowynge of yͤ erthe ⁊ other ſuche felde workes ⁊ hande workes were moche let ⁊ leſte vndone for colde ⁊ hardneſſe of yͤ erthe. And at orray in Brytayn was ordeyned a great deedly batayle bytwene ſyr Johñ of Moũtforde duke of Brytayne ⁊ ſyr Charles of Bloys/ but victory fell to yͤ forſayd ſyr Johñ through helpe ⁊ ſocoure of yͤ Englyſſhe men. And there were taken many knyghtes ⁊ ſquyers ⁊ other men yͭ were vnnombred/ in yͤ whiche batayle was ſlayne charles hym ſelfe w̄ all yͭ ſtode about hym ⁊ of the Englyſſhe men were ſlayne but. vii. And in this yere dyed at ſauoy Johñ yͤ kynge of Frãce whoſe ſeruyce ⁊ exequyes kynge Edwarde lete ordeyne ⁊ dydde dyuerſe places worſhypfully to be done/ ⁊ at Douer ordeyned hym worthely to be ledde w̄ his owne coſtes ⁊ expẽces/ and fro thens was brought to Frãce ⁊ buryed at ſeynt Denys.

¶ In yͤ. xl. yere of kynge Edwarde yͤ. viii. kal. of Febrwary was borne Edwarde prynce Edwardes ſone yͭ whiche whan he was. vii. yere of age dyed. And in yͤ ſame yere it was ordeyned yͭ ſeynt peters pens from yͭ tyme forth ſholde not be payed yͭ whiche kyng yne ſomtyme kynge of Englande of yͤ cõtre of Weſtſaxon yͭ began to reygne yͤ yere of our lorde god vi. C. lxxix. fyrſt graũted to Rome for the ſcole of Englande there to be contynued. And yͤ ſame yere fell ſo greate a rayne in hey tyme yͭ it waſted ⁊ deſtroyed both corne ⁊ hey. And there was ſuche a debate ⁊ fyghtynge of ſparowes by dyuers places in theſe days yͭ men founde innumerable deed in the feldes as they went. And ther felle alſo ſuche a peſtylence yͭ neuer was ſeen ſuch in no mannes days yͭ thã lyued for mẽ yͭ wente to bed hole ⁊ in good poynt ſodeynly they dyed.

¶ Alſo yͭ tyme a ſekenes yͭ mẽ call yͤ pockes ſlewe bothe men ⁊ women through theyr infectynge.

¶ And in yͤ. xli. yere of kynge Edwarde was borne at Burdeux Rycharde yͤ ſecunde ſone of prynce Edwarde of Englande/ yͤ whiche Rycharde kynge Rycharde of Amorican heued at yͤ founte ſtone after whome he was called Rycharde. And this ſame Rycharde whan his fader was deed and kynge Edwarde alſoo/ he was crowned kynge of Englande. yͤ. xi. yere of his aege through ryght lyne ⁊ herytage ⁊ alſo by the comune aſſent ⁊ deſyre of yͤ comynalte of yͤ realme.

¶ About this tyme at kynge Edwardes cõmaũdemẽt of Englande whan all yͤ caſtels ⁊ townes were yelden to hym yͭ were holdẽ in Frãce by a great cõpany aſſembled togyder ſyr Bertram Claykyn a noble knyght ⁊ a good warryour went ⁊ purpoſed hym to put Pyers kynge of Spayne out of his kyngdom w̄ helpe of yͤ mooſt party of yͤ forſayd great company truſtynge alſo vpõ helpe ⁊ fauour of yͤ pope for aſmoche as it is come to his eres yͭ yͤ ſame pyers ſholde lede ⁊ vſe a ſynfull lyfe/ yͤ whiche pyers ſmyte w̄ drede of this tydynge fled into Gaſcoyne to prynce Edwarde for to haue ſocour of hym. And whã he was fled out of Spayne Henry his broder yͭ was a baſtarde by aſſent of yͤ mooſt party of Spayne ⁊ thorowe helpe of yͤ forſayd cõpany yͭ I ſpake of fyrſt was crowned kynge of Spayne ⁊ yͤ nõbre of yͤ ſame cõpany was rekened ⁊ ſet at yͤ nõbre of. xl. M. fyghtynge men

¶ This yere in yͤ moneth of Iune there came a great cõpany ⁊ a nauy of yͤ Danes gadred them togyder in yͤ North ſee purpoſynge theym to come into Englande to reue or to robbe/ and alſoo to ſlee with whome they countred ⁊ mette in the ſee/ maryners ⁊ other good fyghtynge men of yͤ countre ⁊ dyſperpled them. And they aſſhamed wente home agayne into theyr owne countre/ but amonge yͤ other there was a boyſtous veſſell ⁊ a ſtrõge of theyr nauy yͭ was ouer ſayled by the Englyſſhe men ⁊ was peryſſhed ⁊ drenched. In the whiche yͤ Steward ⁊ other great men of Denmarke were taken pryſoners / ⁊ the kynge of Englande ⁊ his coūſeyle pryſoned thē / yͤ whiche lordes yͤ Danes afterwarde ſought them all about for to haue had thē ayene wͭ theyr goodes yͭ they had loſt / ⁊ they not well apayed ne pleaſed of yͤ anſwere yͭ they had / ⁊ they tourned homewardes agayne leuynge behynde thē in theyr Innes pryuely wryte in ſcrowes and on walles (yet ſhall Danes waſt the wanes) Than happed ther an Englyſſh wryter ⁊ wrote agaynſt the Dane in this maner (here ſhall Danes fetche theyr banes) And in this tyme Pyers yͤ kynge of Spayne wͭ other kynges yͭ is to ſaye. the kynge of Nauerne ⁊ the kynge of Malogre beynge meanes went bytwene ⁊ prayed counſeyle ⁊ helpe of ſyr Edwarde the prynce whoſe counſeyle whan he had vnderſtandynge theyr artycles ⁊ deſyre yͭ he was requyred of yͤ kynges / loth he was ⁊ aſhamed to ſay nay to thē / but netheles he was agaſt leſt it ſholde be ony preiudice ayenſt yͤ pope ⁊ longe tyme taryed thē or yͭ he wolde graūt or conſent therto tyll he had better coūſeyl ⁊ auyſemēt wͭ good delyberacyon of kynge Edwarde his fader. But whā they were wͭ hȳ euery daye ⁊ contynually beſechynge of many noble men requyred ⁊ ſpoken to / ⁊ wͭ many prayers ſend ⁊ made bytwene thē. Than prȳce Edwarde ſende to his fader both by cōplaynynge letters ⁊ alſo by cōfortable cōteynynge all theyr ſuggeſtyons ⁊ cauſes wͭ all yͤ other kȳges epyſtles ⁊ letters for to haue conforte ⁊ helpe of yͤ wronges not only done to yͤ kynge of Spayne / but alſo for ſuche thynges as myght falle to other kynges. And yet it were not the ſoner holpen ⁊ amēded though yͤ dome ⁊ helpe of knyghthode to thē yͭ it aſked ⁊ deſyred The whiche letter whā yͤ kynge ⁊ his coūſeyle had ſene ſuche a kynge ſpoylynge ⁊ robbynge wͭ moche meruayle. And ſende agayne confortable letters to prynce Edwarde his ſone ⁊ to yͤ other kȳges ⁊ warned thē for to arme ⁊ ordeyne thē agaynſt that myſdoer ⁊ to wͭſtande thē by yͤ helpe of god yͭ were ſuche ennemyes to kynges whā this noble prynce had receyued this letters hym ſelfe wͭ yͤ other kȳges before ſayd all theyr coūſeyle called togyder or yͭ he wolde vndertake yͤ quarell he bounde ⁊ knytte ſore the kynge yͭ was depoſed wͭ a great othe / yͭ is to ſaye yͭ he ſholde euer after mayntene yͤ ryght byleue ⁊ feythe of holy chyrche / ⁊ alſo wͭ al theyr mynyſters ryghtes and lybertes to defende from all theyr enemyes ⁊ euylles / ⁊ all yͭ were ther agaynſt bytterly to punyſſhe ⁊ deſtroye ⁊ all yͤ ryghtes lybertes preuileges of holy chyrche encreace ⁊ mayntene / ⁊ amende all thynges yͭ were wrongfully takē wͭdrawē ⁊ borne away by hym or by other by cauſe of hym / haſtely to reſtore agayne ⁊ to dryue ⁊ put out ſarazyns ⁊ all other myſbyleued people out of his kyngdome wͭ all his ſtrength ⁊ his power / ⁊ ſuffer ne admitte none ſuche for no maner thynge ne cauſe to dwell therin. And yͭ whan he had taken a cryſten woman he ſholde neuer come into none other womās bedde nor none other mannes wyfe to defoyle.

¶ All theſe forſayde thynges trewely for to kepe contynue ⁊ fulfyll as all his lyfe tyme he was bounden by othe afore notaryes in preſence ⁊ wytnes of tho kynges wͭ other prynces. And than yͤ gracyous prynce Edwarde vndertoke yͤ cauſe ⁊ the quarell of yͤ kynge yͭ was depoſed and behyght hym wͭ the grace of almyghty god to reſtore hym agayne to his kyngedome and lete ordeyne ⁊ gadre togyder forth wͭin all haſt his nauye wͭ men of armes for to warre and fyght in his forſayde cauſe.

¶ And in this ſame yere vpō ẏ ſande of the ſcottes ſee ẏ many a man ſawe it .iii. days togyder there were ſeen two Egles of ẏ whiche ẏ one came out of ẏ ſouthe ⁊ that other out of ẏ north / ⁊ cruelly ⁊ ſtrongely they fought ⁊ wraſtled togyder / and the ſouthe Egle fyrſt ouercame the north egle ⁊ all to rente hym wᵗ his byll ⁊ his clawes that he ſholde not reſte ne take no brethe / ⁊ after ẏ ſouthe egle flyeth home to his owne coſtes. And anone after there folowed ⁊ was ſene in ẏ morne after ẏ ſonne ryſynge / ⁊ after in the laſt days of Octobre ſauynge one manye ſterres gadred togyder on an hepe fell downe to the erthe leuynge behynde them fyre bemes in maner of lyghtnynge / whoſe flambes brent ⁊ conſumed mennes clothes ⁊ mennes heer walkynge on ẏ erthe as it was ſeen ⁊ knowē of many a man. ¶ And yet that northen wynde ẏ is euer redy ⁊ deſtymate to all yll from ſeynt Katheryns euen tyll thre dayes after loſt great good wᵗout nombre. ¶ And in this ſame dayes there felle ⁊ came alſo ſuche lyghtnynge thonder ſnowe ⁊ hayle ẏ it waſted and deſtroyed men beeſtes houſes and trees.

¶ Of the batayle of Spayne beſyde the water of Nazers ẏ was bytwene prynce Edward ⁊ ſyr Henry baſtard of Spayne

IN ẏ yere of our lorde a.M.CCC.lxvii. ⁊ of kynge Edwarde .xlii. the thyrde day of Apryll there was a ſtronge batayle and a great in a large felde called Prazeres faſt by the water of Nazers in Spayne bytwene ſyr Edwarde the prynce ⁊ ſyr Henry of Spayne / but the vyctory fell to prynce Edwarde by the grace of god. ¶ And this ſame prynce Edwarde had with hym ſyr John duke of Lancaſtre his broder and other worthy men of armes about ẏ nombre of .xxx. thouſand And the kynge of Spayne had on his ſyde men of dyuers nacyons to the nombre of an hondred thouſande ⁊ mo / wherfore the ſharpeneſſe ⁊ fyerſneſſe of his aduerſary with his full boyſtous and great ſtrength made ⁊ droue the ryghtfull partye abacke a great way / but through the grace of almyghty god paſſynge ony mānes ſtrēgth that great hoſt was dyſparpled myghtfully by ẏ noble duke of Lancaſtre ⁊ his hoſte / or that prynce Edwarde came nygh hym. And whan Henry baſtarde ſawe that / he tourned with his mē in ſo great haſt and ſtrength for to flee / ẏ a great cōpany of theym in the forſayde flood and of the brydge therof fell downe and peryſſhed. And alſo there were takē the erle of Dene ⁊ ſyr Bertram Cleykyn ẏ was chyef maker ⁊ cauſer of the warre and alſo chyef capyne of ẏ vauntwarde of the batayle wᵗ many other great lordes ⁊ knyghtes to ẏ nombre of two thouſande of whome two hondred were of Fraunce ⁊ many alſo of Scotlande / ⁊ there were felled in the felde on our enemyes ſyde of lordes ⁊ knyghtes with other meyne people to ẏ nombre of .vi.M. ⁊ more / ⁊ of Englyſſh men but a fewe. And after this the noble prynce Edwarde reſtored ẏ ſame Pyers to his kyngdom agayn / ⁊ whiche Pyers afterwarde through trechery ⁊ falſneſſe of ẏ forſayd baſtarde of ſpayne as he ſatte at his meet he was ſtrangeled ⁊ dyed. But after this victorye many noble men of England / ⁊ alſo hardy in ſpayne through ẏ flyxe ⁊ dyuers other ſekeneſſes toke theyr deth. ¶ And alſo in ẏ ſame yere in ẏ Marche was ſeen ſtella Cometa bytwene ẏ north coſtes ⁊ the weſt whoſe bemes ſtretched towarde Fraūce. And in the next yere folowynge of kynge Edwardes regne .xliii. in Apryll ſyr Lyonell kynge Edwardes ſone that was duke of Clarence wente towarde Mylayne wᵗ a choſen meyne of the gentyls of Englande for to wedde Galoys doughter ⁊ haue her to his wyf/by whome he ſholde haue halfe yͤ loꝛdſhyp of Mylayne/but after yͤ they were ſolẽply wedded ⁊ about yͤ natiuite of our lady yͤ ſame duke of Mylayne dyed. And in yͤ ſame yere yͤ frenſſhe men brake yͤ peys ⁊ trewes rydynge on yͤ kynges groūde ⁊ loꝛdſhyp of Englande in yͤ ſhyre ⁊ coūtre of Poūtyfe/⁊ toke ⁊ helde caſtels ⁊ townes/⁊ bere yͤ Englyſſh men on hande falſly yͤ they were cauſe of brekynge of trewes/⁊ in yͤ ſame yere dyed yͤ ducheſſe of Lācaſtre ⁊ is buryed in ſeynt Paules chirche. ¶ The .xliiii. yere of kynge Edwardes reygne was yͤ greateſt peſtylēce of men ⁊ of great beeſtes ⁊ by grete fallynge of waters yͤ fell at yͤ tyme there fell greate hynderynge ⁊ deſtroyēge of coꝛne in ſomoche yͤ yͤ next yere after a buſſhell of whete was ſolde foꝛ .ix. pens. And in yͤ ſame yere about yͤ laſt ende of Maye yͤ kynge helde his parliamēt at weſtmynſter in whiche parliament was ſpoken of the othe ⁊ trewes yͤ was broke bytwene hȳ ⁊ yͤ kynge of Fraūce/⁊ how he myght beſt be auēged vpō his wronge. In yͤ ſame yere in yͤ Aſſūpcyon of our lady deyed quene Phylyp of England a full noble lady at weſtmynſter full worſhypfully is buryed ⁊ entyered. And about mydſomer yͤ duke of Lancaſtre ⁊ yͤ erle of Herfoꝛde wᵗ a greate company of knyghtes went into Fraūce where as they gate thē but lytell worſhyp/foꝛ ther was a greate hoſte of yͤ Frenſſhe men vpō Calkhull brydge/⁊ another hoſt of Englyſſhe men faſt by the ſame brydge yͤ longe tyme had lyued there And many worthy ⁊ great mē of Englanne oꝛdeyned ⁊ gaue counſeyle foꝛ to fyght ⁊ gyue batayle to yͤ Frenſſh men/but yͤ foꝛeſayd loꝛdes wolde not conſente therto foꝛ noo maner thynge. ¶ And anone after it happened yͤ yͤ erle of warwyke came thyderwarde foꝛ to warre/⁊ whan yͤ Frenſſh men herde of his comynge oꝛ yͤ he came fully to lande they lefte theyꝛ tentes ⁊ pauylyons wᵗ all theyꝛ vitaylis ⁊ fled ⁊ went awaye pryuely And whan yͤ erle was comen to lande with his men he went in all haſt towarde. Noꝛmandye ⁊ deſtroyed yͤ yle of Caux wᵗ ſtrēgth of ſwerde ⁊ thꝛugh fyre/but alas in his retournynge to Englande warde home agayn at Calays he was taken wᵗ ſekeneſſe of peſtylence ⁊ dyed not leuynge behynd hȳ after his days ſo noble a knyght of armes. In which tyme reygned ⁊ warred yͤ noble knyght ſyr John Hawkewod yͤ was an englyſſh mā boꝛne/hauynge wᵗ hym at his gouernaūce yͤ whyte cōpany yͤ is afoꝛe ſayd/yͤ whiche one tyme agaynſte holy chyꝛche/⁊ another tyme ayenſt loꝛdes warred ⁊ oꝛdeyned great batayles ⁊ there in yͤ ſame coūtree he dyd many meruaylous thynges. ¶ And about yͤ cōuerſion of ſeynt Paule yͤ kynge whan he had ended ⁊ done yͤ entyerynge ⁊ exequyes wᵗ great coſtes ⁊ royaltees aboute yͤ ſepulture and buryenge of quene Phylyp his wyfe he helde a parliament at weſtmynſter in whiche parliamēt was aſked of yͤ clergy a thꝛe yeres dyme/yͤ is foꝛ to ſaye a great dyme to be pyyed .iii. yere durynge/⁊ yͤ clergy put it of ⁊ wolde not graūte it vnto Eſter next comynge/⁊ than they graūted well yͤ .iii. yere by certayn termes that dyme ſholde be payed/⁊ alſo of yͤ lay fee was a thꝛe yere .xv. graunted to the kynge.

¶ How ſyr Robert Knolles wᵗ other certayne loꝛdes of yͤ realme went ouer ſee in to Fraunce ⁊ of theyꝛ gouernaunce.

AND in the .xlv. yere of kynge Edwarde in yͤ begynnynge he with vnwyſe counſeyle ⁊ vndyſcrete boꝛowed a great ſomme of golde of yͤ prelates marchauntes ⁊ other ryche men of his realme ſayenge yͤ it ſholde be ſpended in defendynge of holy chyꝛche ⁊ of his realme. Netheles it pꝛofyted nothynge/wherfoꝛe about mydſomer after he made a great hooſt of the worthyeſt men of his realme/ ymõge whome were ſome lordes yͭ is for to ſaye yͤ lorde of fitz water / ⁊ yͤ lorde of graſſon and other worthy knyghtes of whiche yͤ kynge ordeyned ſyr Robert knolles a proued knyght ⁊ well aſſayed in dedes of armes for to be gouernour/ ⁊ yͭ thrugh his coũſeyle all thynge ſholde be gouerned ⁊ dreſſed. And whan they came into Fraunce as longe as they dwelled ⁊ helde them hole togyder yͤ Frenſſh men durſt not fal vpon thẽ. And at yͤ laſt about yͤ begỹnynge of wynter for enuye ⁊ couetyſe yͭ was ymonge them/ ⁊ ſo they ſondred ⁊ parted them into dyuerſe cõpanyes vnwyſely ⁊ folely. But ſyr Robert knolles ⁊ his men went ⁊ keped them ſauſe wᵗin a caſtell in Brytayne. And whan yͤ Frenſſhmẽ ſawe yͭ our men were deuyded into dyuerſe cõpanyes ⁊ places not holdynge ne ſtrengthynge them togyders as they ought for to do/ they fell fyrelly on our men/ ⁊ for yͤ mooſt partye toke thẽ or ſlewe thẽ/ ⁊ tho yͭ they myght take ledde wᵗ thẽ priſoners. ¶ And the ſame yere pope Urbane came fro Rome at Auynyon for this cauſe yͭ he ſholde accorde ⁊ make peas bytwene the kynge of Fraũce ⁊ yͤ kynge of Englande for euermore. But alas or he began his treates he dyed wᵗ ſekeneſſe yͤ .xxi. day of Decembre/ ⁊ was buryed as for yͤ tyme in yͤ cathedral chyrch of Auynyon faſt by the hygh aulter/ ⁊ yͤ next yere after whan he had lyen ſo his bones were taken oute of the erthe ⁊ buryed newe in yͤ abbaye of ſeynt Vyctory faſt by Marcyle / of yͤ whiche abbaye he was ſomtyme abbot hym ſelfe. And in bothe places yͭ he was buryed in there be many great myracles done ⁊ wrought thrugh yͤ grace of god to many a mannes helpe ⁊ to yͤ worſhyp of god almyghty. ¶ After whome folowed next and was made pope Gregory Cardynall Deken yͭ before was called Pyers Roger.

¶ In this ſame yere yͤ cyte of Lymoge rebelled ⁊ fought agaynſt yͤ prynce as other cytes dyd in Guyen for great taxes coſtages ⁊ rauſoms yͭ theyr were put ⁊ ſette to by prynce Edwarde/ whiche charges were importable ⁊ to chargeable/ wherfore they turned fro hym ⁊ went to yͤ kỹge of Fraũce. And whan prynce Edwarde ſawe this he was ſore chafed ⁊ agreued/ ⁊ in his tournynge homewarde agayne into Englande wᵗ ſore ſcarmuſſhes ⁊ fyghtynge ⁊ great aſſautes fought wᵗ thẽ ⁊ toke yͤ forſayd cyte ⁊ deſtroyed it almoſte to the groũde ⁊ ſlewe all yͭ he founde in yͤ cyte. And than for to ſaye yͤ ſothe for dyuers ſekeneſſe ⁊ maladyes yͭ he had / ⁊ alſo for defaute of money yͭ he myghte not withſtande ne tary on his ennemyes he hyed hym agayne into Englande wᵗ his wyfe ⁊ meyne leuynge behynde in Gaſcoyne yͤ duke of Lancaſtre ⁊ ſyr Edmonde erle of Cambrydge wᵗ other worthy ⁊ noble mẽ of armes. ¶ In yͤ .xlvi. yere of kynge Edwarde at the ordynaũce and ſendynge of kynge Edwarde / the kynge of Nauerne came to hym to Claryngdon to treate wᵗ hym of certayne thynges touchynge his warre in Normandye/ where kynge Edwarde had left certayne ſyeges in his ſtede tyll he came agayne. But kynge Edwarde myght not ſpede of that that he aſked hym. And ſo yͤ kynge of Nauerne wᵗ great worſhyppe ⁊ great gyftes toke his leue ⁊ went home agayne. ¶ And about yͤ begynnynge of Marche whan yͤ parliament at Weſtmynſter was begon yͤ kynge aſked of yͤ clergye a ſubſydye of .l. M. pounde the whiche by a good auyſemente ⁊ by a generall conuocacyon of the clergye it was graũted and ordeyned yͭ it ſholde be payed ⁊ rayſed of the lay fee. And in this parliament at yͤ requeſt ⁊ aſkynge of the lordes in hatred of men of holy chyrche/

the Chaunceler ⁊ the treſourer that were byſſhops and the clerkes of ẏ pꝛyue ſeale were remeued ⁊ put out of offyce and in theyꝛ ſtede were ſeculer men put in. And whyle this parlyament laſted ther came ſolempne enbaſſatours fro ẏ pope to trete with ẏ kynge of peas ⁊ ſayd ẏ the pope deſyꝛed to fulfyll his pꝛedeceſſoures wyll/ but foꝛ al theyꝛ connynge they ſpedde not.

¶ Of the beſyegynge of Rochell/ ⁊ how ẏ erle of Pēbꝛoke ⁊ his cōpani was takē in ẏ hauē w̄ Spanyerdes ⁊ all his ſhyps bꝛēt.

The.ix. day of June kyng Edward in ẏ.xlvii. yere of his reygne held his parlyament at Wyncheſtre ⁊ it laſted but.viii. dayes/ to whiche parlyamēt were ſompned by wꝛyte of men of holy chirche.iiii. byſſhops ⁊.iiii. abbots w̄out ony moo. This parlyamēt was holdē foꝛ marchaūtes of Londō of Noꝛwiche ⁊ of other dyuers places in dyuers thȳges ⁊ poyntes of reaſon ẏ they were defamed of/ ẏ is to ſay ẏ they were rebell ⁊ wolde aryſe agaynſt ẏ kynge/ this ſame yere ẏ duke of Lancaſtre ⁊ ẏ erle of Cambꝛydge his bꝛoder came out of Gaſcoyne into Englande ⁊ toke ⁊ wedded to theyꝛ wyues Peters doughters ſomtyme kȳge of Spayne/ of which two doughters ẏ duke had ẏ elder ⁊ the erle ẏ yōger. And ẏ ſame tyme ther were ſend two cardynals fro ẏ pope/ ẏ is to ſaye an Englyſſhe cardynall ⁊ a cardynall of Parys to treate of peas bytwene theſe two realmes/ whiche whā they had ben both longe eche in his pꝛouynce ⁊ coūtrees faſt by tretynge of ẏ foꝛſayd peas/ at ẏ laſt they toke w̄ them ẏ letters of pꝛocuracy ⁊ wente agayne to Rome w̄out ony effecte of theyꝛ purpoſe. ¶ In this yere a ſtronge batayle there was in ẏ ſee bytwene Englyſſh men ⁊ Flemynges/ ⁊ ẏ Englyſſh mē had ẏ vyctoꝛy ⁊ toke.xxv. ſhyps with ſalte ⁊ ſleynge ⁊ dꝛenchynge all the men ẏ were therin vnwetȳge them they were of ẏ countre/ ⁊ moche harme ſholde haue fallen therof had not peas ⁊ accoꝛde ſoone be made bytwene them. ¶ In this ſame yere ẏ Frenſſh mē beſyeged ẏ towne of Rochel wherfoꝛe ẏ erle of Penbꝛoke was ſend into gaſcoyne w̄ a great company of men of armes foꝛ to deſtroy ẏ ſyege whiche paſſed ẏ ſee ⁊ came ſaufe to ẏ hauē of Rochell/ ⁊ whan they were ther at the hauē mouth oꝛ that they myght entre/ ſodeynly came vpon them a ſtrōge nauy of Spanyerdes ẏ whiche ouercame ẏ Englyſſh men in moche blemyſſhynge hurtynge ⁊ ſleynge of many people foꝛ aſmoche as ẏ Englyſſh men were thā not redy foꝛ to fyght ne were ware of them. And as ẏ Spanyerdes came vpon them al ẏ Englyſſh mē eyther they were takē oꝛ ſlayne/ ⁊.x. of them were ſoꝛe woūded to ẏ deth ⁊ all theyꝛ ſhyppes bꝛent/ ⁊ there they toke the erle w̄ a great treſour of the realme of Englande/ ⁊ many other noble men alſo on mydſomer euen/ the whiche is ſeynt Etheldꝛedes day ⁊ ledde them with them into Spayne. And of this myſchefe was no great wonder/ foꝛ this erle was a full yll lyuer as an open lechoure. And alſo in a certayne parlyament he ſtode and was agaynſt the ryghtes ⁊ fraunchyſe of holy chirche. And alſo he counſeyled the kynge and his coūſeyle that they ſholde aſke mo of men of holy chyꝛche than other perſones of the laye men. And foꝛ the kynge ⁊ other men of his counſeyle accepted and toke rather yll opynyons ⁊ cauſes agaynſt men of holy chyꝛche than he dyd foꝛ to defende ⁊ meyntayne ẏ ryght of holy chirche it was after ſene many tymes foꝛ lacke of foꝛtune and grace they had not ſoo great vyctoꝛy ne power agaynſt theyꝛ enemyes as they dyd befoꝛe. ¶ This ſame yere the kynge with a great hooſte entred the ſee to reſcue the ſyege of Rochel / but yͤ wynde was euer contrary vnto hym ⁊ ſuffred hym not a longe tyme to go fer fro yͤ lande wherfore he abode a certayne tyme vpon the ſee coſtes abydynge after a good wynde ⁊ yet came it not. So at yͤ laſt he came thens w͞ his mẽ to londwarde agayne / ⁊ anone as he was at lond yͤ wynde tourned ⁊ was in another coſte than it was afore.

¶ How the duke of Lancaſtre with a grete hooſt wente into Flaũders ⁊ paſſed by Parys through Burgon and through al Fraunce tyll he came into Burdeux.

SOone after in the .xlviii. yere of yͤ reygne of kynge Edwarde yͤ duke of Lancaſtre w͞ a great power went into Flaũders ⁊ paſſed by Parys thrugh Burgon ⁊ thrugh all Fraũce tyl he came vnto Burdeux w͞out ony maner withſtãdynge of yͤ Frenſſh men / ⁊ he dyd them but lytel harme ſaue he toke ⁊ rañſomed many places ⁊ townes ⁊ many men ⁊ lete them go after freely. The ſame yere the kynge ſend certayn enbaſſatours to yͤ pope prayenge hym yͭ he ſholde leue of ⁊ medle not in his courte of yͤ kepȳge ⁊ reſeruacions of benefyces in Englande / ⁊ yͭ tho yͭ were choſen to byſſhop ſees ⁊ dygnytees freely ⁊ with full myght Joy ⁊ haue ⁊ be cõfyrmed to yͤ ſame of theyr metropolytans ⁊ Archebyſſhops as thei were wont to be of old tyme. Of theſe poyntes ⁊ of other touchynge yͤ kynge ⁊ his realme / whã they had theyr anſwere of yͤ pope / yͤ pope enioyned thẽ yͭ they ſholde certefy hȳ agayne by letter of yͤ kynges wyll ⁊ of his realme or they determyned oughte of yͤ foreſayd artycles. ¶ In this ſame yere dyed Johñ yͤ archebyſſhop of Yorke / Johñ byſſhop of Ely / Wyllyam byſſhop of worceſtre. In whoſe ſtedes folowed ⁊ were made byſſhops by auctorite of the pope / mayſter Alexander Neuyll to the archebyſſhopryche of Yorke. Thomas of Arundel to yͤ byſſhopryche of Ely / ⁊ ſyr Henry wakfelde to yͤ byſſhopryche of worceſtre. In whiche tyme it was ordeyned in yͤ parlyament yͭ all cathedral chirches ſhold Joy ⁊ haue theyr eleccõns hole ⁊ that yͤ kynge fro yͤ tyme afterward ſholde not wryte ayenſt them yͭ were choſen / but rather helpe them by his letters to theyr confyrmacyon / this ſtatute dyde moche ꝓfyte. And in this parlyamẽt was grãted to yͤ kynge a dyme of yͤ clergy ⁊ a .xv. of lay fee. ¶ In the .xlix. of yͤ reygne of kynge Edwarde dyed mayſter Wyllyam wytleyſey archebyſſhop of Cãterbury / ⁊ the monkes of yͤ ſame chirche aſked ⁊ deſyred a Cardynall of England to be archebyſſhop / ⁊ therfore yͤ kynge was agreued ⁊ ment ⁊ purpoſed to exyle yͤ mõkes of yͤ ſame / ⁊ they ſpended moche good or they myght haue yͤ kȳges grace agayne ⁊ his loue / but yet wolde yͤ kynge not cõſent to theyr eleccyon of yͤ cardynal / ne of yͤ pope alſo ne his cardynalles. ¶ And at the begynnynge of Auguſt it was treated and ſpoken at Bruges of certayn poyntes ⁊ artycles hangȳge bytwene the pope and the kynge of Englande / and this treates laſted almooſt two yere. And at the laſt it was accorded bytwene them that the pope fro yͤ tyme forth ſholde not vſe ne dele with yͤ reſeruacyons of benefyces in Englande / ⁊ that the kynge ſholde not graũte ne let no benefyces by his wryte yͭ is called (Quare impedit) But as touchynge yͤ eleccyon aboueſayd / there was no thynge touched ne done. And that was wyted and put vpon certayn clerkes yͭ whiche rather ſuppoſed and hoped to be auaunced and promoted to byſſhopryches whiche they deſyred and coueyted by yͤ courte of Rome rather than by ony other eleccions ¶ This ſame yere aboute Candelmaſſe there were togyder atte Bruges many noble & worthy men of bothe ſydes & realmes to trete of peas bytwene tho two kynges. And this tretes laſted two yere with grete coſtes & large expenſes of both partyes. And at ye laſt they wente & departed thens without ony accorde or effect. ¶ The nexte here after ye .l. yere of kyng Edward the .iii. Nō. of May beynge yet voyde & vacant ye archebyſſhopryche of Cauntterbury mayſter Symonde ſudbery byſſhop of London was made archebyſſhop & mayſter wyllyam courtenay ye was byſſhop of Herford was thā made byſſhop of Lōdō & ye byſſhop of Bāgor was made byſſhop of Herforde. ¶ And this ſame tyme in a certayne tretes & ſpekynge of peas trewes was taken bytwene Englande & Fraūce fro mydſomer to ye nexte mydſomer after. And aboute ye begynnynge of Apryll the duke of Brytayne wt many erles barons & worthy lordes & men of Englande wente ouer ſee into Brytayne where he hadde al his luſt & deſyre & purpoſe ne had ye forſayd trewes be ſo ſoone taken whiche letted them. ¶ This ſame tyme ye yle of Cōſtantyne where ye the caſtell of ſeynt Sauyour is in ye longe tyme was foughte at & beſyeged of ye Frenſſhe men than yelded to them wt all the appertenaūces to great harme & hyndrynge of ye realme of Englāde. And this ſame yere there were ſo grete & ſo paſſynge hetes & therwt all a great peſtylence in Englāde & in other dyuers partyes of ye worlde ye it deſtroyed & ſlewe vyolently & ſtrongely bothe men & womē without nōbre. This ſame yere dyed ſyr Edwarde ye lord ſpencer a worthy knyght & a bolde & in ye mynſter of Teukeſbury worſhypfully is buryed. And laſtynge this peſtylence ye pope at ye inſtaunce & prayer of an Englyſſhe Cardynall graūted to al people ye dyed in Englande ye were ſory & repentaūt for theyr ſynnes & alſo ſhryuē full remyſſyon by two bulles under lede vi. monethes than nexte to laſt. ¶ In this ſame yere the erle of Penbroke was takē and raunſomed by Bertram Claykyn bytwene Parys and Calays as he came towarde England vpon ſeynt Atheldredes day / ye whiche ſeynt as it was ſayd ye erle oftētymes had offended / & within a lytel whyle after he dyed. ¶ And in nouembre nexte after there mette at Bruges ye duke of Lancaſtre & the duke of Angoy with many other lordes and prelates of bothe realmes for to treate of peas.

¶ Of the dethe of prynce Edwarde and of the lord Latymer and dame Alyce perers through whome and her mayntenours ye realme many a daye was myſgouerned.

NOt lōge after the .li. yere of kyng Edwardes reygne he let ordeyn & holde at weſtmynſter ye grettest parlyament that was ſene many a yere afore. In whiche parlyamēt he aſked of ye comynalte of ye realme as he had done afore a great ſubſydy to be graūted to hȳ for defendynge of hȳ & his realme / but ye comyns anſwered that they were ſo ofte day by day greued and charged wt ſo many talages & ſubſydyes ye they myght no lōger ſuffer no ſuche burdens & charges & that they knewe & wyſt wel ynough ye the kyng had ynough for ſauynge of hym & of his realme yf the realme were well & truly gouerned / but ye it had be ſo longe euyll gouerned by yll offycers / ye the realme myght neyther be plētuous of chaffer & marchaūdyſe ne alſo wt rycheſſe. And in theſe thynges they proferd them ſelfe yf ye kynge wolde certaynly to preue it & ſtande by / & yf it were founde & preued afterwarde ye the kynge had nede they wold gladly euery man after his power & ſtate hym helpe and lene. And after this were publyſſhed and ſhewed in the parlyamēt many playntes & defautes of dyuers offycers of the realme ⁊ namely of the lorde Latimer ẏ kȳges chamberlayn bothe to ẏ kynge ⁊ eke to the realme. And alſo at the laſt ther was ſpoken ⁊ treated of dame Alyce pers for ẏ great wrõges ⁊ euyll gouernaũce ẏ was doon by her coũſeyle in ẏ realme / the whiche dame Alyce pers ẏ the kynge had holde longe tyme to his lemmã / wherfore it was ẏ laſſe wonder though thurgh ẏ fragilite of ẏ womãs excytynge ⁊ her ſtyrynge he conſented to her lewdneſſe ⁊ euyll counſeyle ẏ whiche dame Alyce ⁊ alſo ẏ lord Latimer ⁊ other ſuche that meued ẏ kynge to euyll gouernaũce agaynſt his profyte ⁊ ẏ realme alſo / all the comynalte asked ⁊ deſyred that they ſholde be remeued / ⁊ put awaye ⁊ in theyr ſtedes wyſe men ⁊ worthy that were trewe ⁊ wel aſſayed ⁊ prouyd / ⁊ of good gouernaũce ſholde be put in theyr ſtedes. Amõge all other ther was one amonge the comyns that was a wyſe knyght ⁊ a trewe / ⁊ an eloquent man / whoſe name was Pers de la mare / ⁊ this ſame Pers was choſen to be ſpeker for ẏ comyns in the parlyament. And for this ſame Pers tolde ⁊ publyſſhed the trouth ⁊ reherced the wronges agaynſt the forſayde dame Alyce ⁊ other certayne perſones of ẏ kynges counſeyle as he was bydden by the comyns. And alſo truſtynge moche to be ſupported ⁊ mayntayned ĩ this mater by helpe ⁊ fauour of ẏ prynce / anone as ẏ prynce was deed at ẏ inſtaũce ⁊ requeſt of ẏ forſayd dame Alyce / this Pers de la Mare was Juged to ꝑpetuall pryſon in ẏ caſtel of Notynghã. ¶ And in ẏ .vi. kal. of Juyle laſtynge ẏ ſame parlyament dyed prynce Edwarde kyng Edwardes fyrſt ſone / ẏ is to ſay on trinite ſonday in worſhyp of whiche feeſt he was wont euery yere wher ẏ euer he were in ẏ worlde to holde ⁊ make the mooſt ſolempnyte ẏ he myght / whoſe name ⁊ fortune of knyghthode / but yf it had be of another Ector all men both cryſten ⁊ hethen whyle ẏ he lyued ⁊ was in good poynt wõdred moche ⁊ dradde hym wonder ſore / whoſe bodi is worſhypfully buryed in crichirche at Caũterbury. And in this ſame yere ẏ men ⁊ the erles tenaũtes of warwyk aroſe malycyouſly ayenſt the abbot ⁊ couent of Eueſham ⁊ theyr tenauntes / ⁊ deſtroyed thabbay ⁊ ẏ towne / ⁊ woũded ⁊ bet theyr mẽ / ⁊ ſlewe many of them / ⁊ went to theyr maners ⁊ places ⁊ dyde moche harme / ⁊ brake downe theyr parkes ⁊ cloſes ⁊ ſlewe their wylde beſtes ⁊ chaced them brekynge theyr fyſſh põdes ⁊ hedes ⁊ let ẏ water of theyr pondes ſtewes ⁊ ryuers ren out ⁊ toke ẏ fyſſh ⁊ bare it wᵗ them / ⁊ dyd them al ẏ ſorowe ẏ they might / in ſo ferforth ẏ they had deſtroyed perpetuall ẏ abbay wᵗ all theyr mẽbres ⁊ appurtenaũces but yf the kynge ẏ ſooner had not holpe it ⁊ take hede therto / ⁊ therfore the kynge ſend his letters to ẏ erle of warwyk chargynge hym ⁊ cõmaũdynge hym ẏ he ſholde ſtynte redreſſe ⁊ amende the euyll dedes ⁊ brekers of his peas / ⁊ ſo by meanes of lordes ⁊ other frendes ẏ peas was made bytwene them / ⁊ for this buſynge as it is ſayd the kynge wold not be gouerned at ẏ tyme by his lordes ẏ there were in ẏ parliamẽt / but he toke ⁊ made his ſone the duke of Lancaſtre his gouernour of ẏ realme / the whiche ſtode ſo ſtyl as gouernour tyll the tyme that he dyed.

¶ The ſame yere after Candelmas or ẏ parlyament was done / the kynge asked a ſubſydy of ẏ clergy / ⁊ of ẏ lay fe / ⁊ it was graũted hym / ẏ is to ſay ẏ he ſholde haue of euery perſone of ẏ lay fee / bothe man ⁊ woman that paſſed .xiiii. yere of aege .iiii. pens oute take poore beggers that were knowen openly for nede poore beggers. And that he ſholde haue of euery man of ẏ holy chyrche ẏ was benefyced or promoted .xii. pens / ⁊ all other that were not pro ted.iiii.pens out take the.iiii.orders of ẏ freres beggers. ¶ This ſame yere after Myghelmas Rychard prynce Edwardes ſone was made prynce of wales to whome the kynge gaue ẏ duchy of cornewayle wt the erldome of cheſtre. And about this tyme ẏ Cardynall of England ẏ.iiii.day before Mary Mawdeleys day after dyner ſodeynly was ſtrykẽ wt ẏ palſy ⁊ loſt his ſpeche/⁊ on Mary Mawdeleyns day dyed

¶ Of the deth of kynge Edwarde/⁊ how ſyr Johñ Monſterwarthe knyghte was drawen and hanged for his falſneſſe.

Ryghte anone after in the.iii.yere of kynge Edwarde in ẏ begynnynge of Octobre pope Gregory ẏ.ix. brought ⁊ remeued his courte wt hym frõ Auynyon to rome. ¶ And ẏ.xii. day of Apryl Johñ Monſterwarthe knyght at London was drawen ⁊ hanged ⁊ than quartered ⁊ ſend to foure chefe townes of Englande ⁊ his heed ſmyten of ⁊ ſet vpõ London brydge For this ſame Johñ was full vntrue to ẏ kynge ⁊ to ẏ realme ⁊ couetous ⁊ vnſtable for he toke oftetymes great ſõmes of money of ẏ kȳge ⁊ his cõuſeyle for men of armes wages that he ſholde haue payed them ⁊ toke it to his owne vſe/⁊ he drad that at the laſt he ſhold be ſhent ⁊ accuſed for the ſame cauſe ⁊ fledde pryuely to the kynge of Fraũce ⁊ was ſworne to hym ⁊ became his man ⁊ behyght hȳ a great nauy out of Spayne to cõfuſyon ⁊ deſtroyenge of Englande. But the ryghtfull god to whom no preuite is vnknowẽ ſuffered hȳ fyrſt to be ſhent ⁊ ſpylte or ẏ he ſo traytouſly ⁊ falſly betrayed his lyege lorde ẏ kynge of Englande ⁊ his people in his realme/in whiche grounde this ſame Johñ was borne/⁊ wyckedly through batayle deſtroyed or he brought about his curſed purpoſe. In ẏ feeſt of ſeynt George tho nexte kynge Edwarde gaue to Rycharde of Burdeux his heyr ẏ was prynce Edwardes ſone at wyndſore thordre of knyghthode ⁊ made hym knyght/ẏ which kynge Edwarde whã he had reygned.li.yere ẏ xi.kal.of June he dyed at Shene ⁊ is buryed worſhipfully at weſtmynſter on whoſe ſoule god haue mercy. ¶ This kynge Edward was of a paſſyng goodnes ⁊ ful gracyous ymonge all worthy men of the worlde/for he paſſed ⁊ ſhone by vertu of grace gyuen to hym frõ god aboue al his predeceſſours ẏ were noble mẽ ⁊ worthy ⁊ he was a well herted man ⁊ an hardy/for he drade neuer no myſhappes ne harmes ne euyll fortune ẏ myght fall a noble warryour ⁊ a fortunate/for both on lãde ⁊ ſee ⁊ in al batayles ⁊ aſſembles wt a paſſyng glory ⁊ Ioy he had ẏ victory/he was meke ⁊ benynge homely ſobre ⁊ ſoft to all men as well to ſtraũgers as to his owne ſubiectes ⁊ to other ẏ were vnder his gouernaũce/he was deuoute ⁊ holy both to god ⁊ holy chyrche/for he worſhypped holpe ⁊ maynteyned holy chirche ⁊ their mynyſters wt al maner reuerẽce/he was tretable ⁊ wel auyſed in temporal ⁊ worldly nedes/wyſe in cõuſeyle ⁊ diſcrete ⁊ meke to ſpeke wt/in his dedes ⁊ maners gẽtyl ⁊ well taught/hauyng pyte on them ẏ were in dyſeaſe/plenteous in gyuynge of benefaytes ⁊ almes/beſy ⁊ curyous in buyldyng/⁊ lyghtly he bare ⁊ ſuffred wrõges and harmes/⁊ whã he was gyuẽ to ony occupacyon he lefte al other thȳges for ẏ tyme ⁊ tended therto/ſemely of body ⁊ a mene ſtature/hauynge alwaye to hygh ⁊ to lowe a good chere. And there ſprõge ⁊ ſhone ſo moche grace of hym ẏ what man had beholde his face or had dremed of hȳ he hoped ẏ day ẏ all thynge ſholde hap to hym Ioyfull ⁊ lykȳge. And he gouerned his kyngdom gloriouſly vnto his aege he was large in gyuȳge ⁊ wyſe in ſpẽces he was fulfylled with all honeſte of good maners and vertues / vnder whome to lyue it was as for to regne / wherfore his fader and his loos ſprange ſo ferre that it came into hethynes ⁊ Barbary ſhewynge and tellynge his worthyneſſe ⁊ manhode in al landes / ⁊ that no londe vnder heuen had brought forth ſo noble a kyng / ſo gentyl ⁊ ſo bleſſyd / or myght reyſe ſuche another whā he was deed. Neuertheles lechery ⁊ meuynge of his fleſſh haſted hym in his aege / wherfore the rather as it is to ſuppoſe for vnmeſurable fulfyllȳg of his luſt his lyfe ſhorted the ſoner. And here of take he good hede like as his dedes bereth witneſſe / for as in his begynnynge al thȳges were Ioyful and lykynge to hym / ⁊ to al people. And in his myddle aege he paſſed all people in hygh Ioye / worſhyp / ⁊ bleſſydneſſe. Ryght ſo whā he drewe into age drawynge downwarde thurgh lechery ⁊ other ſynnes lytell and lytell all tho Ioyfull and bleſſyd thynges and proſperyte decreaſed ⁊ miſhapped / and vnfortunate thȳges ⁊ vnprofytable harmes with many euyls began for to ſprynge ⁊ the more harme is it contynued longe tyme after.

CLemens ẏ .vi. was pope after Benedicte .x. yere / this man in name and dede was vertuous / ⁊ many thynges that Benedicte was rygous in / he made eaſy / ⁊ certayn that he depryued he reſtored / ⁊ the rygouſnes of the feyth of Benedicte was laudable / but moche more laudable was ẏ mekeneſſe of Clement. This mā was a noble precher ⁊ many ſermōs he gadred / ⁊ let no man paſſe frō hym but he gaue hym good coūſeyle / ⁊ deceaſed a bleſſyd man. ¶ Karolus the .iiii. was Emperour after Lodewyke .xxx. yere. This man was kynge of Beme a wyſe man ⁊ a myghty. And this man was choſen Emperour by ẏ cōmaundement of Clemens Lodewyk beynge alyue in his cōtemacy / and bycauſe he aſked mekely the popes bleſſyng ⁊ to be crowned of hym as other good kynges dyde / therfore he was protected of god ⁊ preuayled ouer all his enemyes. ⁊ mani fauourable lawes he made to ſpyrytuall mē / ẏ whiche yet are called Karolina / at the laſte he deceaſed a ryche man in vertue ⁊ goodes. ¶ Innocentius the .vi. was pope after Clement .x. yere / ⁊ he was a great louer of relygyous mē / ⁊ he founded a monaſtery in Fraūce of the ordre of Cartuſyens / ⁊ was a great canonyſt. ¶ Urban⁹ ẏ .v. was pope after Innocent / this mā was abbot of Myſſolens of the ordre of ſeynt Benet a doctour / ⁊ is taken for a ſeynt / he made the croſſe to be preched agaynſt the turkes / ⁊ he made a paſſage to the turkes. And to hym ſeynt Brygyt was ſend from Cryſt for the cōfyrmacyon of theyr rule / ⁊ than he was poyſoned ⁊ deceaſed. ¶ Gregory the .xi. was pope after hym .viii. yere. This Gregory dyde lytell / ⁊ after hym folowed the tribulacyon that our lorde ſhewed to ſeynt Brygyt for ẏ ſynne of ẏ clergy. ¶ Wenceslaus ſone to Karol⁹ aforeſayd was Emperour .xxiiii. yere / ⁊ he was a chyld ⁊ was choſen whan his fader was on lyue / but he toke no kepe of thempyre. And whan he was warned many tymes for to take hede vnto it and wolde not / he was depoſed. For he gaue all his delyte and luſt to lechery / and his ende was without honour / for he wente greatly from the maners ⁊ the vertues of his noble fader. And he was crowned with themperyall dyademe / and the wyſdome of his fader paſſed into Sygyſmonde his broder / as after it ſhall appere. ¶ Urbanus was pope after Gregory .vi. yere / this Urban was choſen in ẏ cyte of Rome by ſtrength of ẏ Romayns / but ẏ Cardynals dyde that for drede ⁊ not wylfully / wherfore they fledde to ẏ cytee of

Fundoy. And they sayde ẏ he was not pope / ⁊ chose in his place syr Robert of Gebennys the same yere ẏ whiche was called Clement ẏ .vii. ¶ Nota. And here began ẏ .xii. stryfe in ẏ chyrche. And it was more worse than euer was ony other before / for it was so subtyll / ẏ ẏ wysest men that were ⁊ ẏ best of conscyence coude not discerne to whome it was best to saye ⁊ to holde. And this stryfe dured .xl. yere with a great sclaundre vnto all ẏ clergye / and great peryll vnto mennes soules for heresyes ⁊ other euyl thynges ẏ whiche were brought in than. In somoche that there was no doctryne in the chyrche for mysdoynge. And therfore from this Urban the .vi. vnto Martyn I knowe not who was pope. The feest of ẏ vysitacyon of our lady was ordeyned by Urbane ẏ .vi. after the fourme of the sacramente of ẏ awter for a pees and an vnyte to be had ymonge them through the merytes of the blyssyd lady. ¶ Bonifacius the .ix. was pope after Urbane .xv. yere. This Boniface was chosen at Rome in the stede of Urbane / ⁊ the stryfe contynued / for Benedictus was chosen in Auynyon in ẏ place of clement and was called Petrus de luna ⁊ he dured to the counseyle of Constancium / and than he wolde not obeye / but euer abode obstynate. And at ẏ last he deceased in the kyngdom of Aragon. And he commaunded his Cardynalles to chose another pope the whiche they dyd anone. And they set vp an ydoll ⁊ named hym Clement / but they proffyted not.

¶ Circa annū dñi. M.CCC.lxxx.

¶ And after kynge Edwarde the thyrde that was borne in wyndsore reygned Rycharde of Burdeux that was prynce Edwardes sone of wales / the whiche prynce Edwarde was kynge Edwardes sone.

And after the good kynge Edwarde the thyrde that was borne at Wyndsore reygned Rycharde ẏ secunde ẏ was ẏ good syr Edwardes sone prynce of Wales / ẏ whiche kynge Rychard was borne in the cyte of Burdeux in Gascoyne and was crowned at westmynster in the .xi. yere of his age. And in ẏ .ii. yere of his reygne for the debate ẏ was bytwene the lorde Latymer and Syr Raufe Ferrers knyght ẏ was agaynste Hawell ⁊ Shakel squyers for ẏ prysoner ẏ was taken in Spayne by these two squyers / ⁊ ẏ whiche prysoner ẏ lorde Latymer and syr Raufe Ferrers wolde haue had / the whiche prysoner was ẏ erle of Dene ẏ they toke in the batayle of Spayne / wherfore these two lordes came into ẏ chyrche at westmynster / ⁊ they founde this one squyer to herynge his masse besyde seynt Edwardes shryne / ⁊ ther they slewe hym ẏ whiche was called Hawell. And Shakell was arested and put into the toure of London / ⁊ there he was longe tyme / for he wolde not delyuer the erle of Dene his prysoner vnto these two lordes / by syr Aleyn Burhyll Constable of the toure / ⁊ by syr Rauf Ferrers one of his aduersaryes / tyll the kynge had graunted hym grace. ¶ In ẏ .iii. yere of kynge Rycharde came ẏ Galeys of Fraunce into Englande vnto dyuerse portes ⁊ brent ⁊ robbed and slewe moche people of Englande / ẏ is to saye at Wynchelsee / Rye / ⁊ Hastynge / Portesmouth ⁊ Hampton / Shermore / and Grauesende / and they dyd moche harme ⁊ went home agayne. ¶ And in this same yere was a parlyament holden at westmynster / ⁊ at ẏ same parlyament was ordeyned that euery man woman ⁊ chylde that were of the age of .xiiii. yere / and aboue throughout all the realme poore folke and other shold paye to the kynge foure pens / wherfore came ⁊ befell afterwarde great myschyef and moche dyſeaſe to all the comynalte of the realme. ¶ And in yͤ .iiii. yere of kynge Rycharde the comyns aroſe vp in dyuerſe partyes of yͤ realme ⁊ dyd moche harme/ the whiche tyme they called yͤ hurlynge tyme. ¶ And they of Kente ⁊ of Eſſex made theym two chyef capteyns for to rule ⁊ for to gouerne the company of Kent ⁊ of Eſſex. That one was called Jacke ſtrawe and that other watte Tyler/ and they came ⁊ aſſembled them vpō blacke heth in Kente. And on Corpus chriſti daye after they came downe into Southwerke/ ⁊ brake vp the pryſon hous/ that is to ſaye the kynges benche and the marchelſee ⁊ delyuered out all the pryſoners. And ſoo the ſame daye they came into London ⁊ there they robbed the people/ and ſlewe all the alyens that they myght fynde in yͤ cyte and about the cyte and dyſpoyled all theyr goodes and made auowe. And on yͤ frydaye nexte folowynge after that was on the morowe ⁊ thā they came to yͤ tour of London ⁊ yͤ kyng beynge therin/ they fette out of yͤ toure the archebyſſhoppe of Caunterbury/ ſyr Symonde Sudbery/ and ſyr Roberte halys hoſpytelere pryoure and mayſter of ſeynt Johans houſe/ ⁊ a whyte frere yͤ was confeſſoure vnto kynge Rycharde/ ⁊ brought them to yͤ toure hyll and there ſmote they of theyr hedes and came agayne into London ⁊ ſlewe moche people of the cytee. And than they wente vnto the dukes place of Lancaſtre beyonde ſeynt Mary of the ſtronde that was called the ſauoye/ and there they deuoured and deſtroyed all the goodes that they therin myght fynde and bare them awaye/ and than they brente vp the place/ ⁊ than afterwarde they went to ſeynt John without Smythfelde ⁊ deſtroyed the goodes there and brent vp that houſe to the harde grounde/ and wente to Weſtmynſter and ſeynt Martyns the graūte/ and made them go out of the ſenctuary al that were within for any maner of gyrth And than came vnto the temple ⁊ to all other Innes of men of lawe ⁊ dyſpoyle them ⁊ robbe them of theyr goodes and alſo toke theyr bokes of lawe/ and than they came to London ⁊ brake vp the pryſon of Newgate ⁊ drewe out all the pryſoners felons and other/ and of bothe countrees and all the people that were within them/ ⁊ deſtroyed all yͤ bokes of the countrees. And thus they contynued bothe ſaterday ⁊ ſonday vnto yͤ monday nexte after in all theyr malyce ⁊ wyckednes. ¶ And than on monday kynge Rycharde wt his lordes yͤ were wt hym that tyme ⁊ with yͤ mayre of London wyllyam walworth yͤ was yͤ tyme came wt the aldermen ⁊ the comyns of the cytee/ and they came into Southwerke to here and to knowe yͤ intencyon of theſe rebelles ⁊ myſgouerned people. And this Jacke ſtrawe made thā a crye in yͤ felde that all yͤ people of accorde ſholde come nere and here his claymoures ⁊ his crye ⁊ his wyll. And the lordes ⁊ mayre and yͤ aldermen with the comynalte hauynge indygnacyon of his couetyſe ⁊ falſeneſſe ⁊ his foule preſumpcyon. Anone wyllyā walworth yͤ tyme beynge mayre drewe out his knyfe and ſlewe Jacke ſtrawe ⁊ anone ryght ſmote of his hede ⁊ ſet it vpon a ſpere/ ⁊ ſo it was boren thrugh London ⁊ ſette vpon London brydge. Anone theſe ryſers ⁊ myſgouerned people were vanyſſhed as it had not be they/ ⁊ than yͤ kynge of his great goodneſſe ⁊ by prayer of his lordes made ther. vi. knyghtes of good ⁊ worthy mē of the cyte of London/ yͤ is to ſay/ Wyllyam walworth at yͤ tyme mayre and ſlewe Jacke ſtrawe ⁊ yͤ ſeconde was Nicholas brembre/ ⁊ the thyrde John Phylipot/ and the fourth Nycholas twyforde/ and yͤ fyfthe Roberte launde/ and the ſyxth Roberte gyſton. And than the kynge with his lordes & knyghtes retourned agayne to the toure of London / & there he reſted hym tyll his peple were better reſted & ſet in reſt & peas. And thā by proceſſe of tyme as they myght take & get theſe rebelles & ryſers they hāged them vpō the nexte galowes thrughout euery lordſhyp in ẏ realme of Englande by .xl. by .xxx. by .x. and by .xii. euer as they myght be goten & taken in ony partes.

¶ And in ẏ .v. yere of kynge Rychardes reygne was ẏ great erth quake & was generall thrughout ẏ worlde ẏ wedneſday after whytſondaye in ẏ yere of our lorde. M.CCC.lxxxii. wherfore al maner people were ſore agaſt and aferde longe tyme for drede of vengeaūce ẏ oure lorde ſhewed & dyd.

¶ And in ẏ .vi. yere of kynge Rycharde / than ſyr Henry ſpenſer byſſhop of Norwiche went wt a great company ouer ſe into Flaunders & there they gate ẏ towne of Grauenynge & the towne of burburghe / Dunkerk / & Newport / where they laded and fraughted .lx. ſhyppes wt pelage for to haue comen into Englande wt theyr ſhyppes & goodes. And ẏ byſſhop of Norwich & his counſeyle lete brenne theſe ſhyppes wt all ẏ pelage in ẏ ſame hauen into harde aſſhes / & at Dunkerke was done a batayle bytwene ẏ Flemynges & ẏ Englyſſhe men. And at that batayle were ſlayne a great multytude of the Flemynges & a great nombre. And thā wente the byſſhop wt his retynue to ypres & beſeged it a longe tyme but it myght not be goten / & ſo lefte that ſege & came agayne into Englande / for our Englyſſhe men were foully bewrayed / & many dyed on the flyxe. And in this yere came quene Anne into Englande for to be ſpouſed to kynge Rycharde. And her fader was emperoure of Almayne & kynge of Beme / & with her came ẏ duke of Taſſel her uncle and many other worthy lordes & knyghtes of her coūtre of beme & of other duche tongues to do her ſeruyce & worſhyppe. And ſyr Symond beuerle a worthy knyght of the garter & other knyghtes & ſquyers ẏ were ẏ kynges embaſſatours brought her into Englande & ſo forthe to London. And ẏ people of ẏ cyte / ẏ is to ſaye ẏ mayre & the aldermen & all the comyns rode agaynſt her to welcome her / & euery mā in good araye / & euery crafte wt his owne lyuery in ẏ beſt maner wyſe & mette with her on ẏ blacke heth in kent / & ſo brought her vnto London thrugh ẏ cyte & ſo forth vnto weſtmynſter vnto ẏ kynges palays. And there ſhe was ſpouſed vnto kynge Rycharde well & worthely in the abbaye of weſtmynſter & there ſhe was crowned quene of Englande. And all her frendes that came wt her had great gyftes & were well cheryſſhed and refreſſhed as longe tyme as they abode there.

¶ And in ẏ ſame yere there was a batayle done in the kynges palays at weſtmynſter for certayne poyntes of treaſon of ſyr Johā Anſley knyght defendaunt / and Carton ſquyer the appellaunt. But this ſyr Johā Anſley ouercame this Carton / & made hym to yelde hym within ẏ lyſtes. And anone was this Carton dyſpoyled of his harneys & drawen oute of ẏ lyſtes & ſo forthe vnto Tyburne & ther he was hanged for his falſeneſſe.

¶ And in ẏ .viii. yere of the reygne of kynge Rycharde ſyr Edmonde of Langley / the erle of Cambrydge kynge Rychardes vncle went into Portyngale with a fayre company of mē of armes & archers in ſtrengthynge and helpynge ẏ kynge of Portyngale agaynſt the kynge of Spayne & his power / and there ẏ kynge of Portyngale had the vyctory of his enmyes through helpe & confort of our Englyſſhe men. And whan ẏ Journay was done the erle of Cambrydge came home agayne with his people into Englande a haſt bleſſyd be god & his bleſſyd gyftes. Amen. ¶ And this ſame yere kynge Rycharde helde his Cryſtmas in ye maner of Eltham. ¶ And the ſame yere ye kynge of Armony fled oute of his owne lande & came into Englande for to haue helpe & ſocour of our kynge agaynſt his enemyes that had dryuen hym oute of his royalme. And ſo he was brought vnto ye kynge to Eltham there as ye kynge helde his royal feeſt of Cryſtmas. ¶ And there our kynge welcomed hym / & dyd hym moche reuerence & worſhyp & commaunded all his lordes to make hym all ye chere that euer they coude. And than he beſought ye kynge of his grace & helpe and of his comforte in his nede / & that he myght be brought agayne to his kyngdome. For ye Turkes had deſtroyed ye mooſt parte of his londe / & how he fled for drede / & came hyder for ſocour & helpe. And than ye kynge hauynge on hym pyte & compaſſyon of his grete myſchyef and greuous dyſeaſe anone he toke his counſeyle & aſked what was beſt to do. And they anſwered & ſayd yt it lyked hym to gyue hym ony good it were well done. And as touchynge his people for to trauayle ſo ferre into our londes it were a great Jeoparty. And ſo the kynge gaue hym golde & ſyluer and many other ryche gyftes & Jowels & betaught hym to god / & ſo he paſſed agayne out of Englande. ¶ And this ſame yere kynge Rycharde wt a royall power went into Scotlande for to warre vpon the Scottes for the falſeneſſe & deſtruccyon that ye Scottes had done vnto the Englyſſhe men in the marches. And than the Scottes came downe to ye kynge for to trete wt hym and with his lordes for trewes as by certayne yeres / And ſo our kynge & his counſeyle graunted them trewes for certayne yeres / & our kynge tourned hym agayne into Englande. And whan he was come vnto Yorke there he abode & reſted hym there. And there ſyr John Holande ye erle of Kentes broder ſlewe the erles ſone of Stafforde & his heyre wt a dagger in ye cyte of Yorke / wherfore the kynge was ſore anoyed & greued & remeued thens & came to London. And ye mayre wt the aldermen & ye comyns wt all ye ſolempnyte that myght be done rode agaynſt ye kynge and brought hym royally through ye cyte and ſo forth to weſtmynſter to his owne palays. ¶ And in the .ix. yere of kynge Rychardes reygne he helde a parlyament at weſtmynſter / & there he made two dukes and a markeys / & fyue erles. The fyrſt yt was made duke was ye kynges vncle ſyr Edmonde of Langley erle of Cambrydge & hym he made of Yorke / & his other vncle ſyr Thomas of wodſtok yt was erle of Bukyngham hym he made duke of Glouceſtre. And ſyr Robert Veer yt was erle of Oxforde hym he made markeys of Deuelyn. And Henry of Bolyngbroke ye dukes ſone of Lancaſtre hym he made erle of Derby. And ſyr Edwarde the dukes ſone of Yorke hym he made erle of Rutlande. And ſyr John Holande that was the erle of Kentes broder he dyde make erle of Huntyngdon. And ſyr Thomas Moubray hym he made erle of Notyngham / and ye erle marſhall of Englande. And ſyr Mychell de la pole knyght hym he made erle of Southfolke & Chaunceler of Englande. And ye erle of Marche at ye ſame parlyament holde at weſtmynſter in playne parlyament amonges all the lordes & comyns was proclaymed erle of ye Marche and heyre parent to the crowne of Englande after kynge Rycharde / the whiche erle of the Marche went ouer the ſee into Irlande vnto his lordſhyppes and londes / for ye erle of Marche is erle of Vlſter in Irlande & by ryght lyne & herytage. And there at the caſtell of his he laye that tyme/⁊ there came vpō hym a great multytude in buſſhmentes of wylde Iryſſhe men for to take hym ⁊ deſtroye hym. And he came oute fyerſly of his caſtell w̄ his people ⁊ manly fought with thē ⁊ there he was taken ⁊ hewē all to pyeces ⁊ ſo he dyed vpon/whoſe ſoule god haue mercy.

¶ And in the .x. yere of kynge Rychardes reygne ẏ erle of Arundell went to the ſee with a greate nauy of ſhyppes ⁊ armed w̄ men of armes ⁊ good archers. And whā they came in ẏ brode ſee they mette w̄ the hole flete ẏ came with wyne laden frō Rochell/the whiche wyne were enmyes goodes. And there oure nauy ſet vpō them ⁊ toke them all and brought them vnto dyuerſe portes ⁊ hauens of Englande ⁊ ſome to London/and there ye myght haue hadde a tonne of Rochell wyne of ẏ beſte for .xx. ſhellynge ſterlynge/and ſo we hadde grete chepe of wyne in Englande that tyme thanked be god almyghty.

¶ How the fyue lordes aroſe at Ratcote brydge.

AND in ẏ reygne of kynge Rycharde ẏ .xi. yere than fyue lordes aroſe at Ratcote brydge in ẏ deſtruccyon of the rebelles ẏ were ẏ tyme in all ẏ realme. ¶ The fyrſt of theſe fyue lordes was ſyr thomas of wodſtok ẏ kynges vncle ⁊ duke of Glouceſtre. And the .ii. was ſyr Rycharde erle of Arundell. And the .iii. was ſyr Rycharde erle of warwyke. The .iiii. was ſyr Henry bolynbroke erle of Derby. The fyfth was ſyr Thomas Mowbraye erle of Notyngham. And theſe fyue lordes ſawe ẏ myſcheyf ⁊ myſgouernaunce ⁊ ẏ falſneſſe of the kynges coūſeyle/wherfore they that were ẏ tyme cheyf of ẏ kynges counſeyle fled out of this lande ouer ſee that is to ſaye ſyr Alyſander Neuell/the Archebyſſhop of york/⁊ ſyr Roberte Lewe markeys of Deuelyne ⁊ erle of oxforde/and ſyr Mychell de la Pole/erle of Southfolke ⁊ Chaunceler of Englande. And theſe thre lordes went ouer ſee ⁊ came neuer ayen for there they dyed. And than theſe fyue lordes aboue ſayde made a parlyamēt at weſtmynſter ⁊ there they toke ſyr Robert Treſylyam the Juſtyce/⁊ ſyr Nichol Brembre knyght ⁊ cytezeyn of London/and ſyr Johan Salyſbury a knyght of the kȳges houſholde ⁊ vſſhe ſergeaunt of armes/⁊ many more of other people were taken ⁊ Iudged vnto ẏ deth by ẏ counſeyle of theſe fyue lordes in that parliament at weſtmynſtre for ẏ treaſon that they put vpō thē to be drawen frome the toure of London thrughout ẏ cytee/⁊ ſo forth vnto Tyburne ⁊ there they ſholde be hāged ⁊ theyr throtes to be cut and thus they were ſerued ⁊ dyed. And after that in this ſame parliamēt at weſtmynſtre was ſyr Symond Beuerle that was a knyght of ẏ garter/and ſyr Johñ Beauchamp knyght ẏ was Stewarde of ẏ kȳges houſholde/⁊ ſyr James Berners were for Iudged vnto ẏ deth ⁊ thā they were ledde on fote to ẏ toure hylle and there were theyr hedes ſmyten of ⁊ many other more by theſe .v. lordes. ¶ In this ſame parliament ⁊ in the .xii. yere of kynge Rychardes regne he lete crye ⁊ ordeyne a generall Juſtes ẏ is called a tournement of lordes ⁊ knyghtes/⁊ this Juſtes ⁊ tornemēt were holdē at Lōdō i ſmythfeld of al maner of ſtraūgers of what lande or countree ẏ euer they were ⁊ thyder they were ryght welcome ⁊ to thē ⁊ to all other was holden opē houſholde ⁊ great feeſtes/and alſo great gyftes were geuē to all maner of ſtraūgers. And of the kynges ſyde were all of one ſute/theyr cotes/theyr armure/ſheldes horſe trappures ⁊ all was whyte hertes with crownes about theyr neckes ⁊ chaynes of golde hangynge there vpon and ẏ crowne hangynge lowe before the hertes body/the whiche herte was yͤ kynges lyueraye yͭ he gaue to lordes ⁊ ladyes knyghtes and ſquyers for to knowe his houſholde from other people. And in this feeſt came to yͤ Juſtes .xxiiii. ladyes ⁊ led .xxiiii. lordes of yͤ garter wͭ chaynes of golde ⁊ all yͤ ſame ſutes of hertes as it is before ſayd frõ yͤ toure on horſbacke through the cyte of London into ſmythfelde there that yͤ Juſtes ſholde be holden. And this feeſt ⁊ Juſtes was holden generall for al tho yͭ wolde come thyder of what londe ⁊ nacyon yͭ euer they were. And this was holden durynge .xxiiii. days of yͤ kynges coſtes/⁊ theſe .xxiiii. lordes to anſwere all maner people yͭ wolde come thyder/⁊ thyder came yͤ erle of ſeynt Poule of Fraũce ⁊ many other worthy knyghtes wͭ hym of dyuers partyes full worthyly arayed. And out of Holande ⁊ Henaude came the lorde Oſtreuant yͭ was the dukes ſone of Holand ⁊ many other worthy knyghtes wͭ hym of Holande full well arayed. And whan this feeſt ⁊ Juſtynge was ended yͤ kynge thanked this ſtraũgers ⁊ gaue them many ryche gyftes/⁊ ſoo they toke theyr leue of yͤ kynge ⁊ other lordes ⁊ ladyes ⁊ went home ayen into theyr owne countrees wͭ great loue ⁊ moche thanke.

¶ And in yͤ .xiii. yere of kyng Rychardes reygne there was a batayle done in yͤ kynges palays at weſtmynſtre bytwene a ſquyer of Nauerne yͭ was wͭ kynge Rycharde/⁊ another ſquyer yͭ was called Johan walſſhe for poyntes of treaſon yͭ this Nauerne put vpõ this walſſheman/but this Nauerne was ouercome and yelde hym recreaũt to his aduerſary. And anone he was dyſpoyled of his armure and drawen out of the palays to Tyburne ⁊ there was hanged for his falſneſſe.

¶ And in yͤ .xiiii. yere of kỹge Rychardes reygne ſyr Johñ of Gaunt duke of Lancaſtre went ouer ſee into Spayne for to chalenge his ryght yͭ he had by his wyfes tytle vnto yͤ crowne of Spayne wͭ a greate hoſte of people/⁊ he had wͭ hym yͤ ducheſſe his wyfe ⁊ his thre doughters ouer ſee into ſpayne/⁊ there they were a great whyle/⁊ at yͤ laſt yͤ kynge of ſpayne began to treate wͭ yͤ duke of Lancaſtre ⁊ they were accorded togyder through theyr bothe cõſeyle in this manere yͭ yͤ kynge of ſpayne ſholde wedde yͤ dukes doughter yͭ was yͤ ryght heyre of Spayne/⁊ he ſholde gyue vnto the duke golde ⁊ ſyluer yͭ were caſte into great wedges ⁊ many other Jewels aſmoche as .viii. charyetes myght carye. And euery yere after durynge the dukes lyfe ⁊ yͤ ducheſſe his wyfe .x.M. marke of golde of whiche golde yͤ auenture ſholde be to thẽ of Spayne ⁊ yerely brynge vnto Bayon to yͤ dukes aſſygnes by ſuerte made. And alſo the duke maryed another of his doughters vnto yͤ kyng of Portyngale the ſame tyme/⁊ whan he had done ſo he came home agayne into Englande and his good lady his wyfe alſo/but many worthy men deyed vpon yͤ flyx. ¶ In the .xv. yere of kynge Rychardes reygne he helde his Cryſtmaſſe in the maner of wodſtok ⁊ there yͤ erle of Penbroke a yonge lord and tendre of aege wolde lerne to Juſte wͭ a knyght yͭ was called ſyr Johñ of ſeynt Johñ/and rode togyder in yͤ parke of wodſtocke/⁊ there this worthy erle of Penbroke was ſlayne with that other knyghtes ſpere as he caſte it frome hym whan that they hadde coupled/and thus the good erle made there his ende/⁊ therfore the kynge and the quene made moche ſorowe for his dethe. ¶ And in yͤ .xvi. yere of kynge Rychardes reygne Johan hende beynge that tyme mayre of London and Johñ walworth ⁊ Hẽry vanner beynge ſhreues of London/that ſame tyme a bakers man bare a baſket of horſe brede into Fleteſtrete towarde an hoſtre and there came a yonge man of ẏ byſſhop of Salyſbury that was called Romayne and he toke a horſ lofe out of the baſket of the bakers / ⁊ he aſked hym why he dyd ſo and this Romayne tourned agayne ⁊ brake ẏ bakers heed / ⁊ neighbours came out and wolde haue areſted this Romayne ⁊ he brake from them ⁊ fledde to his lordes place ⁊ the Conſtable wolde haue had hym out / but the byſſhops men ſhytte faſt the gates ⁊ kepte the place ẏ no man myght entre / ⁊ than moche more people gadred thyder ⁊ ſayd ẏ they wolde haue hym out or els they wolde brenne vp the place and all that were within. And than came the Mayre ⁊ ſhreues with moche other people ⁊ ceſed ẏ malyce of the comyns ⁊ made euery man to go home to theyr houſes ⁊ kepe peas. And this Romayns lorde ẏ byſſhop of ſalyſbury mayſter Iohñ Waltham that at that tyme was treſourer of Englande went to ſyr Thomas Arūdel archebyſſhop of yorke and Chaunceler of Englande / ⁊ there ẏ byſſhop made his cōplaynt vnto ẏ Chaunceler on ẏ people of the cyte of Lōdon. And thā theſe two byſſhops of great malyce ⁊ vengeaūce came vnto ẏ kynge at wyndſore ⁊ made a great cōplaynt vpon the Mayre ⁊ ſhreues. And anone all ẏ Cyte afterwarde came before the kynge ⁊ his coūſeyle / ⁊ they caſt vnto the cyte a greuous herte ⁊ wōders great malyce. And anone ſodeynly ẏ kȳge ſend for the mayre of London ⁊ the ſhereues / ⁊ they came to hym in ẏ caſtell of wyndſore And the kynge rebuked the Mayre ⁊ ſhreues full foule for the offence that they had done agaynſt hym and his offycers ī his chambre at London / wherfore he depoſed and put out the Mayre ⁊ bothe ſhreues / and this was done the .xiiii. daye before ẏ feeſt of ſeynt Iohñ Baptyſt. And than ẏ kynge called to hym a knyght ẏ was called ſyr Edwarde dalyngrygge and made hym wardeyne ⁊ gouernour of the cyte ⁊ chambre of London ⁊ ouer all his people therin / ⁊ ſo he kepte that offyce but foure wekes bycauſe that he was ſo gentyll ⁊ tendre to the cyteſyns of London / wherfore the kynge depoſed hym and made ſyr Bawdewyne radyngton knyghte ẏ was Controller of the kynges houſholde wardeyne ⁊ gouernour of his chambre and of his people therin / ⁊ choſe to hym two worthy men of ẏ cyte to be ſhreues with hym to gouerne ⁊ kepe ẏ kynges lawes in the cyte / ẏ one was called Gylbert maweſeld ⁊ that other Thomas newton ſhreues. And than the Mayre ⁊ the two ſhreues ⁊ all the aldermen with al ẏ worthy craftes of London wente on fote to the Toure of London / ⁊ there came out the Conſtable of the Toure ⁊ gaue the Mayre ⁊ ſhreues theyr othe ⁊ charge as they ſholde haue taken in ẏ eſcheker of weſtmynſter in ẏ kynges courte of his Iuſtyces ⁊ barons of ẏ eſcheker / ⁊ than went they home agayne And than the kynge ⁊ his coūſeyle for the great malyce ⁊ deſpyte ẏ they had to ẏ cyte of London remeued all his courtes frō weſtmynſter vnto ẏ cyte of yorke / that is to ſaye ẏ chaūceler / ẏ eſcheker / ẏ kynges benche / ⁊ the comyn place / and ther they helde all theſe courtes of lawe fro mydſomer / that is to ſay the feeſt of ſeynt Iohñ Baptyſt vnto ẏ feeſt of Cryſtmaſſe nexte comynge. And than the kynge ⁊ his coūſeyle ſawe it not ſo profytable there as it was at London / than anone he remeued it agayne to London ⁊ ſo to weſtmynſter for great eaſe of his offycers ⁊ a vātage to ẏ kynge ⁊ all ẏ comyns of the realme. And whan the people of London ſawe ⁊ knewe ẏ theſe courtes were come agayne and the kynge ⁊ his people alſo / than the Mayre ⁊ the aldermen with the chefe comyns of the cyte let gader a great ſomme of golde of all the comyns of the cyte / and ordeyned & made great ryaltees agaynſte his comynge to London to haue his grace & good lordſhyp/ & alſo theyr lybertees & fraūchyſes graūted to them agayne as they were wont to haue afore tyme. And through great inſtaūce & prayer of ye quene & of other lordes & ladyes the kȳge graūted them grace/ & this was done at Sheene in ſothery. And than the kynge within two dayes after came to Londō/ and the Mayre of the cyte with the ſhreues aldermen & all the worthy men of the cyte afterwarde rode agaynſt hym in good aray to the heth on this ſyde of Shene/ ye Mayre ſubmyttynge them humbly & mekely wt all maner obeyſaunce vnto hym as they ought to doo. And thus they brought the kynge & the quene to Londō/ & whan the kynge came to the gate of Londō brydge there they preſented hym wt a mylke whyte ſtede ſadled & brydled/ & trapped with cloth of golde and reed partyed togyder/ and the quene a palfrey all whyte in the ſame araye trapped with whyte & reed/ & all the cōdytes of London ranne wt wyne bothe whyte & reed/ for all maner people to drynke who wolde. And bytwene ſeynt Paule & the croſſe in chepe there was made a ſtage a ryall ſtandynge vpon hygh/ & therin were many aūgelles with dyuers melodyes and ſonges. And than an aungell came downe from the ſtage on hygh by a vyce and ſet a crowne of golde ryght with ryche perles & precyous ſtones vpō the kynges hed & another vpon the quenes hed. And ſo the cytezyns brought ye kynge and ye quene to weſtmynſter into theyr palays. And than on ye morne after the mayre & the ſhereues & the aldermen of London came vnto the kyng to his palays at weſtmynſter & preſented hȳ with two baſyns of ſyluer & ouergylted full of coyned golde the ſome of .xx. hondred pounde prayenge hym of his hygh mercy and grace & lordſhyp and ſpecyally grace that they myght haue his good loue with the lybertes & fraūchyſes lyke wyſe as they were wont for to haue before tymes and by his letters patentes & his chartre confyrmed. And the quene & other worthy lordes & ladies fel on theyr knees & beſought the kynge of grace to cōfyrme this. Thā the kynge toke vp the quene & graunted her all her aſkynge. And than they thanked the kynge & the quene & wente home agayne. ¶ And in the .xvi. yere of kynge Rychardes reygne certayn lordes of Scotlande came into England for to get worſhyp as by fayte of armes/ this were the perſones. ¶ The erle of Marre & he chalenged ye erle Marſhal of Englande to Juſt with hym certayne poyntes on horſbacke with ſharpe ſperes. & they rode togider as two worthy knyghtes & lordes certayne courſes/ but not the ful chalenge that the ſcottyſhe erle made/ for he was caſt both hors & man & two of his rybbes broken wt ye fall & ſo he was borne thēs out of ſmythfelde home to his inne/ & wtin a lytel tyme after he was caryed home in a hors lyter & at yorke he dyed. And ſyr wyllyam Darell knyght & the kȳges banerer of Scotlande than made another chalenge wt ſyr Pers curtayne knyght & the kynges banerer of Englāde of certayne courſes yet on horſbacke in the ſame felde/ & whan he had ryden certayne courſes & aſſayled he myght not haue the better he gaue it ouer & wolde no more of his chalenge with ſyr Pers courtayne knyght & the kynges banerer of Englande & turned his horſe & rode home to his inne. And on Cokborne a ſquyer of Scotlande chalenged ſyr Nycholl Hawberke a knyght of certayn courſes yet with ſharpe ſperes & rode .v. courſes togyder & at euery courſe the Scotte was caſte downe bothe horſe and man/ and thus our englyſſhe lordes thāked be god had the ſelde. ¶ And in the .xvii. yere of kynge Rychardes reygne dyed yͤ good gracyous quene Anne that was wyfe to kynge Rycharde in yͤ manoyre of Shene in the ſhyre of Surrey on Whytſondaye / ⁊ than was ſhe brought to London ⁊ ſo to Weſtmynſter / ⁊ there was ſhe buryed and worthely entyerid beſyde ſeynt Edwardes ſhryne / on whos ſoule almyghty god haue pyte and mercy. Amen.

¶ How kynge Rycharde eſpouſed dame Iſabell yͤ kynges doughter of Frāce in the towne of Calays / ⁊ brought her into Englāde ⁊ let her be crowned quene in yͤ abbaye of ſeynt Peters of Weſtmynſter.

IN the .xx. yere of kynge Rychardes reygne he went hym ſelfe ouer ſee to Calays with dukes / erles / lordes ⁊ barons ⁊ many other worthy ſquyers with great araye ⁊ comyn people of yͤ realme in good araye as longed to ſuche a kynge and prynce of his nobley and of his owne perſone to do hym reuerence ⁊ obſeruaunce as ought to be done to theyr lyege lorde and ſo myghty a kynge ⁊ emperour in his owne to abyde ⁊ receyue ther yͤ worthy ⁊ gracyous lady yͤ ſholde be his wyfe a yonge creature of .xix. yere of age dame Iſabell yͤ kynges doughter of Frāce ⁊ other worthy lordes of great name both dukes and knyghtes with moch other people yͤ came to the towne of Grauenynge ⁊ two dukes of Fraunce that one was the duke of Burgoyne and that other the duke of Barre that wolde no ferder leſſe thā they had pledges. And than kynge Rycharde delyuered two pledges for them for to go ſafe ⁊ come ſafe his two worthy vncles / the duke of Glouceſter ⁊ yͤ duke of Yorke ⁊ theſe two wente ouer yͤ water of Grauenynge ⁊ abode there as for pledges to the tyme that the maryage was done / ⁊ than theſe two dukes of Fraunce were come agayne vnto grauenyng water / and than theſe two worthy dukes came ouer yͤ water at Grauenynge ⁊ ſoo to Calays with this worſhypfull lady dame Iſabell that was the kynges doughter of Frāce and with her came many a worthy lorde ⁊ ladyes ⁊ knyghtes ⁊ ſquyers in the beſt araye that myght be ⁊ ſo brought her into the towne of Calays / ⁊ there ſhe was receyued with al yͤ ſolempnyte ⁊ worſhyp that myght be done to ſuche a lady. And than they brought her vnto the kynge / and yͤ kynge toke her ⁊ welcomed her ⁊ all her fayre cōpany ⁊ made ther all yͤ ſolempnyte that myght be done. And than yͤ kynge ⁊ his counſeyle aſked of the frenſhe lordes whyther all the couenaūtes ⁊ forwardes with the compoſycyon yͤ were ordeyned ⁊ made on bothe partyes ſholde be truly kepte and holde bytwene them. And they ſayd ye / ⁊ there they ſwore and toke theyr charge vpon a boke and made theyr othe well ⁊ truly it to holde in all maner poyntes ⁊ couenauntes wᵗout contradyccyon or delay in ony maner wyſe. And than was ſhe brought to ſeynt Nycholas churche in Calays ⁊ ther ſhe was worſhyply wedded with yͤ moeſt ſolempnyte yͤ ony kynge or quene myght be / ⁊ archebyſſhops ⁊ byſſhops ⁊ all yͤ mynyſtres of holy churche / ⁊ that they were brought to yͤ caſtell ⁊ ſet to mete / and were ſerued with all delycaſye of ryall metes ⁊ drynkes plenteuouſly to al maner of ſtraūgers ⁊ al other ⁊ no creature warned yͤ feeſt / but al were welcome for there were great halles and tentes ſet vpon the grene about the caſtel to receyue al maner of people / ⁊ euery offyce redy to ſerue them al. And thus this worthy maryage was ſolemly done ⁊ ended with al ryalte. And than theſe two worthy dukes of Fraunce with theyr people toke theyr leue of the kynge ⁊ of the quene ⁊ wente agayne vnto Gauntynge water / ⁊ there the Frenſſhe lordes / that is to ſaye ỷ two dukes and all theyr meyny were comen ouer the water to Gauntynge and there mette with our two dukes / ⁊ euerychone toke leue at other and ſo they departed / ⁊ our lordes came agayne vnto Calays / ⁊ the Frenſſhe lordes went ouer the water and ſo home into Fraunce agayne. And anone after the kynge made hym redy w the quene and all his lordes and ladyes ⁊ all theyr people with them and came ouer the ſee into Englande and ſo vnto London / and the Mayre and the ſhreues with all the aldermen and worthy comyns rode agaynſt them vnto the blacke heth in to Kent / and there they mette with the kynge and the quene ⁊ welcomed them ⁊ that in good araye / and euery man in the clothynge of his crafte ⁊ theyr mynſtrels before them. And ſo they brought them vnto ſaynt Georges barre in Southwerk and there they toke theyr leue / ⁊ the kynge ⁊ the quene rode to Kenyngton / ⁊ the the people of Londō tourned home agayne / ⁊ [illegible] agayne to Londō brydge there was ſo great preſſe of people that on boys ⁊ on foote that there were dede on the brydge .ix. perſones of men ⁊ women and chyldren on whoſe ſoules god haue mercy and pyte. Amen. And than afterwarde the quene was brought to ỷ toure of London / ⁊ there ſhe was all nyght / and on the morowe ſhe was brought through the cyte of London ⁊ ſo forth vnto Weſtmynſter ⁊ there ſhe was crowned quene of Englande / ⁊ than ſhe was brought agayne vnto the kynges palays / and there was holde open courte ⁊ a ryall feeſt at her crownacion of almaner people that thyder came. And this was done the ſondaye next afore the feeſt of ſaynt Clement / in the .xx. yere of kynge Rycharde regne. And the the .xv. daye of Auguſt next after by the excytacyon and fals counſeyle ⁊ for great wrathe ⁊ malyce ỷ the kynge had of olde tyme to his vncle ỷ good duke of Glouceſtre and ỷ erle of Arundel ⁊ to ỷ erle of Warwyk. Anone the kynge by his euyll excytacyon ⁊ his euyll counſeyle ⁊ malyce late in the euenynge the ſame day aboue ſayd made hym redy w his ſtrength ⁊ rode in to Eſſex from the towne of Chelmeſforde and ſo came to Pleſſhe ſodeynly there ſyr Thomas of Woodſtocke ỷ good duke of Glouceſtre laye / ⁊ the good duke came to welcome the kynge anone / ⁊ the kynge areſted ỷ good duke hym ſelfe w his owne body / ⁊ ſo he was ladde downe to ỷ water and anone put into a ſhyppe ⁊ lad to Calays ⁊ brought into ỷ capytayns warde to be kepte in holde by ỷ kynges cōmaundement. And that tyme therle Marſhall was capytayne of Calays. And anone after by commaundement of the kynge ⁊ by his fals counſeyle cōmaunded the capytayn to put hym to dethe. And anone certayne yemen that had ỷ good duke in kepynge toke theyr counſeyle howe that they ſholde put hym to dethe. And this was theyr appoyntment ỷ they ſholde come vpon hym when he were in his bedde and a ſlepe on a fether bedde / ⁊ anone they bounde hym hande and fote ⁊ charged hym to lye ſtyll. And whan that they had done thus they toke two ſmall towelles ⁊ made on them two ſrynynge knottes ⁊ caſt the towelles aboute his necke / ⁊ than they toke the fether bedde ỷ lay vnder hym ⁊ caſte it vpon hym and than they ỷ lay there bytwene the towelles / and ſome laye vpon ỷ fether bedde and vpon hym vnto the tyme that he was dede bycauſe that he ſholde make no noyſe / ⁊ thus they ſtrangled this worthy duke vnto ỷ dethe / vpon whoſe ſoule god for his hye pyte haue mercy. Amen.

¶ And whan the kynge had thus done this worthy duke and his vncle and ſend hym to Calays he came agayne to Londõ in all the haſte with a wonders great people. And as ſoone as he was come he ſende for the erle of Arundell / ⁊ for the good erle of Warwyk. And anone as they came he areſted theym hym ſelfe / ⁊ syr John Cobham and syr John Cheyne knyghtes he areſted them in yͤ ſame manere tyl he made his parlyamẽt / ⁊ anone they were put into holdes / but the erle of Arundell wente at large vnto yͤ parlyament tyme / for he fonde ſuffycyent ſurety to abyde yͤ lawe ⁊ to anſwere to all maner poyntes that the kynge ⁊ his counſeyle wolde put vpon hȳ.

¶ And the .xxi. yere of kynge Rycharde's reygne he ordeyned hym a parlyament at Weſtmynſter whiche was called the great parlyament. And this parlyament was made for to Iudge theſe thre worthy lordes ⁊ other mo as they lyſt at that tyme. And for that Iudgement yͤ kynge let make in al the haſte a longe hous ⁊ a large of tymbre the whiche was called an halle ⁊ couered with tylewerke ⁊ it was open all aboute on bothe ſydes ⁊ at the endes yͤ all maner of men myght ſe throughout / and there yͤ courte was holden vpon theſe fore ſayd lordes ⁊ Iudgemẽt gyuẽ at this fore ſayd parlyament. And for to come to this parlyament the kynge ſend his wrytes to euery lord / baron / knyght / and ſquyer in euery ſhyre throughout Englande yͤ euery lorde ſholde gadre ⁊ brynge his retynu wt hym in as ſtronge ⁊ in the beſt aray yͤ they myght gette in mayntenynge and in the ſtrengthynge of the kyng agaynſt them yͤ were his enemyes / ⁊ that this were done in all the haſte ⁊ come to hym on peyne of deth. And the kynge hym ſelfe ſende into Cheſterſhyre to cheftaynes of yͤ countree / ⁊ they gadred ⁊ brought a great ⁊ an huge company of people bothe of knyghtes and ſquyers ⁊ yͤ moſt party of yemen of Cheſtre ſhyre / whiche yemen ⁊ archers the kynge toke to his owne courte and gaue theym lyuery of courte and good wages to be kepers of his owne body bothe by nyghte ⁊ by daye aboue all other perſones ⁊ moſt loued and beſt truſte / the whiche ſoone afterwarde tourned yͤ kyng to great loſſe ⁊ ſhame hyndrynge ⁊ his vtter vndoynge ⁊ deſtruccyon as ye ſhall here afterwarde. And that tyme came syr Henry of Derby with a great meyne of men of armes ⁊ archers / and the erle of Rutlande came with a ſtronge power of People both of mẽ of armes and archers / and the erle of Kent brought a great power of mẽ of armes ⁊ archers / yͤ erle Marſhall came in yͤ ſame manere / ⁊ the lorde Spenſer in the ſame manere / the erle of Northumberlande and syr Henry Percy his ſone / ⁊ syr Thomas Percy the erles broder / all theſe worthy lordes brought a fayre meyny ⁊ a ſtronge power / ⁊ eche man in his beſt araye / and the duke of Lancaſtre ⁊ the duke of Yorke came in yͤ ſame manere wt men of armes ⁊ archers folowynge yͤ kynge / ⁊ syr Wyllyã Scrope treſourer of Englande came in yͤ ſame manere. And thus in this aray came al the worthy men of this lande vnto our kynge / ⁊ all theſe people came to Londõ in one daye / in ſomoche that euery ſtrete and lane in Londõ and in the ſubbarbes were full of them lodged ⁊ .x. or .xii. myle aboute London on euery way. And theſe people brought yͤ kynge to Weſtmynſter and went home agayn to they lodgynge bothe lorde ⁊ man / ⁊ than on the monday the .xii. day of Septembre yͤ parlyament began at Weſtmynſter whiche was called the great parlyament. And on yͤ ſyxt day nexte after yͤ erle of Arũdell was brought into the parlyament amonge all yͤ lordes and yͤ was on ſeynt Mathewes daye the apoſtle ⁊ euangelyſt / ther he was for Iuged vnto the deth in this halle that was made in the palays at Weſtmynſter. And this was his Iudgement / that he sholde go on fote with his handes bounde behynde hym from ŷ place that he was Iudged vnto & so forth thrugh the cyte of London vnto the Toure hylle and there to be smyten of / & so it was done in dede in the same place. And .vi. of the grettest lordes that sate on his Iudgement rode with hym vnto the place there he was done to the deth / & loke that the execucyon were done after the dome / & by ŷ kynges commaundement with them wente on fote men of armes & archers a great multytude of Chesshyre men in kepynge of the lordes that brought this erle to his dethe / for they were in drede lest ŷ erle sholde be rescowed and taken from them whan they came in to London. Thus he passed forth thrugh the cyte vnto his deth / and there he toke it full pacyently / on whose soule god haue mercy. Amen. And than came ŷ Austyn freres & toke vp ŷ body & the heed of this good erle & bare it home to theyr place & buryed hym in theyr quere / & on ŷ morne after was syr Rycharde erle of Warwyke brought into the parlyament there as the erle of Arundell was forIudged / & they gaue ŷ erle of warwyk the same Iudgement that the forsayd erle had / but ŷ lordes had compassyon of hym bycause he was of more greater age & relesed hym into perpetuall pryson / & put hym into ŷ yle of Man. And than on the mondaye next after the lorde Iohn Cobham of Kent / & syr Iohn Cheyn knyghtes were brought also into the same parlyament in the same hal / & there they were forIudged for to be hanged & drawe / but thrugh ŷ prayers & great instaūce of all the lordes that Iudgement was forgyuen to them and relesed into perpetuall pryson. ¶ And in this same yere was Rycharde Whytyngton Mayre of London / & Iohn Wodecocke & Wyllyam Askam shryues of London. And they ordeyned at euery gate of Londō durynge this same parlyament the kynge watche of men of armes & archers / & thrugh out euery warde also. And ŷ kynge made v. dukes and one markeys & foure erles / and the fyrst of them was the erle of Derby & he was made duke of Herforde / and the seconde also was the erle of Rutlande & he was made duke of Albemarle / & ŷ thyrd was ŷ erle of Kent & he was made duke of Surrey / & the fourth was the erle of Huntyngdō & he was made duke of Excestre / & the fyfth was the erle of Notyngham & he was made duke of Northfolke And ŷ erle of Somerset was made markeys of Dorset / & the lorde Spencer was made erle of Gloucestre / & the lorde Neuyll of Raby was made erle of Westmerland / & syr Thomas percy was made erle of Worcestre / & syr Wyllyam Scrope that was tresorer of Englonde was made erle of Wylshyre / & syr Iohn Mountagu erle of Salysbury. And whan ŷ kynge had thus done he helde the parliament & grete feest vnto all his lordes & to all maner of people that thyder wolde come. ¶ And this same yere dyed syr Iohn of Gaunt ŷ kynges vncle & duke of Lācastre in the bysshops Inne in holborne / & was brought fro thens to seynt Paule / & there ŷ kynge made and helde his enterement well and worshyp with all his lordes in ŷ chyrche of seynt Paule in London & there he was buryed besyde dame Blounche his wyfe ŷ was doughter & heyre vnto the good Henry that was duke of Lancastre. ¶ In the same yere there fel a dyssencyon bytwene the duke of Herforde and the duke of Norfolke / in so moche ŷ they waged batayle & cast downe theyr gloues & thā they were take vp & ensealed ŷ batayle Iorned & the daye sette / & the place assygned where and whan / & this sholde be at Couentre. And thyder came the kynge ŵ all his lor des at ẏ day ⁊ was ſet in ẏ ſelde ⁊ thā the ſe .ii. woꝛthy loꝛdes came into ẏ ſelde wel and clene armed ⁊ well arayed wͭ al their wepen ⁊ redy to do theyꝛ batayle ⁊ were redy in ẏ place foꝛ to fyght at vtteraūce. But ẏ kynge bad them ceſſe ⁊ toke ẏ quarel in to his hande. And foꝛth with ryght there preſente exyled ẏ duke of Herdfoꝛde foꝛ terme of .x. yere / ⁊ the duke of Noꝛfolke foꝛ euermoꝛe. And ſyꝛ Thomas of arūdell archebyſſhoppe of Caūterbury was exyled the ſame tyme foꝛ euer ⁊ depoſed oute of his ſee foꝛ malyce of ẏ kynge. And anone theſe thꝛe woꝛthy loꝛdes were commaunded ⁊ defended the kynges realme And anone they gate thē ſhyppes at dyuerſe hauens ⁊ went ouer ſee into dyuerſe landes eche his waye. And the duke of Noꝛfolke wente to Venece ⁊ there he dyed on whoſe ſoule god haue mercy. amen And than kynge Rycharde made a clerke of his ſyꝛ Roger walden archebyſſhop of Caūterbury. ¶ And in ẏ .xxii. yere of kynge Rychardes reygne by falſe counſeyll ⁊ ymagynacyon of coueytous men ẏ were about him were made ⁊ oꝛdeyned blanke chartres ⁊ made to be enſealed of all maner ryche men thꝛoughout ẏ realme. In ſomoche ẏ they cōpelled dyuers people to ſet theyꝛ ſeales therto. And this was done foꝛ greate coueytyſe / wherfoꝛe all good hertes of the realme were clene tourned awaye fro the kynge foꝛ euer after. And ẏ was vtterly his deſtruccyō ⁊ ende to him that was ſo hygh ⁊ ſo excellente pꝛynce ⁊ kynge ⁊ thꝛough couetous ⁊ falſe cōſeyle falſly betrayed. Alas foꝛ pyte ẏ ſuche a kynge myght not ſe. And than kynge Rycharde ſet his kyngdome ⁊ his royall lande of Englande to ferme vnto foure perſones / whiche were theſe. Syꝛ wyllyam ſcrop erle of wyltſhyꝛe ⁊ treſourer of Englande / ⁊ ſyꝛ Iohā Buſſhe / ⁊ Henry grene / ⁊ ſyꝛ Iohā bagot knyghtes ẏ whiche tourned them to myſchyef ⁊ dethe wͭin a lytel tyme as ye ſhal fynde here afterwarde wryten. ¶ And than kynge Rycharde made great oꝛdynaunce ⁊ went hym ſelf ouer ſee into Irlande ⁊ many greate loꝛdes wͭ hym wͭ a great hoſt foꝛ to ſtrength theyꝛ kynge wͭ men of armes / archers / ⁊ moche great ſtuffe ⁊ ryght good oꝛdynaūce as longed vnto warre / and oꝛ he paſſed ouer ſee he oꝛdeyned ⁊ made ſyꝛ Edmond of Langley ẏ duke of yoꝛke his lyftenaūt of Englande in his abſence wͭ the gouernaūce and coūſeyll of theſe .iiii. knyghtes that had taken Englande to ferme of the kynge. And thā he paſſed ẏ ſee ⁊ came into Irlande ⁊ there he was well ⁊ woꝛthely receyued. And theſe rebelles ẏ ben called wylde Iryſſhe mē came downe to the kynge ⁊ yelded thē too hym bothe body ⁊ goodes all at his owne wyll / ⁊ ſwoꝛe vnto hym to be his liege men / ⁊ there dyd to hym homage ⁊ feaute ⁊ good ſeruyce / ⁊ thus he cōquered ẏ moſte parte of Irlande in a lytel tyme. And whyle that kynge Rycharde was thus in Irlande ſyꝛ Henry of Bolyngbroke erle of Derby ẏ ẏ kynge had made befoꝛe duke of Herfoꝛde / ẏ whiche duke the kynge had exyled out of this lande was comen agayne into Englande foꝛ to chalenge ẏ dukedom of Lancaſtre as foꝛ his ryght ⁊ trewe herytage ẏ he came downe out of Fraūce vnto Calays. And there mette hym ſyꝛ Thomas of Arundell ẏ was archebyſſhop of Caunterbury ẏ was exyled out of Englande / ⁊ with hym came ẏ erle of Arūdell his ſone ⁊ heyꝛe the whiche was in kepynge of ſyꝛ Iohā ſhelley knyght ſomtyme wͭ the erle of Huntyngdon ⁊ wͭ ẏ duke of Exceſtre ẏ whiche was tho in ẏ caſtell of Reygate in ſouthſir. / ⁊ there he ſtale hym away ⁊ came to Calays ⁊ there he was keped well and woꝛthely tyll theſe other two loꝛdes were comen to Calays. ¶ And than this woꝛthy duke ⁊ ſyꝛ Thomas of Arundell Archebyſſhop of Cauterbury ſhypped in to ẏ hauen of calays ⁊ drewe theyꝛ cours noꝛth warde ⁊ arryued i yoꝛke ſhyꝛe at Rauenſpoꝛne faſte by wydelyngton / ⁊ there he came ⁊ entred fyꝛſte ẏ lande ⁊ two loꝛdes wᵗ hym ⁊ theyꝛ nauy. And ſo than mo the people of ẏ realme ẏ whan they herde of his comynge ⁊ knewe where ẏ he was and anone they drewe vnto hym ⁊ welcomed theſe loꝛdes ⁊ ſo gaue them courage in all maner thynge ⁊ ſoo paſſed foꝛthe in to ẏ lande ⁊ gadꝛed moche people to them And whan kynge Rycharde herd ⁊ wyſt that theſe two loꝛdes were comen agayne into Englande and alſo were landed. Than the kynge lefte his oꝛdynaunce in Irlande ⁊ came into englande warde in all the haſt that he myght ⁊ came to ẏ caſtell of flynte ⁊ there he abode to take his counſeyll ⁊ what myght he done / but to hym came anone. And than ſyꝛ Thomas Percy erle of woꝛceſter that was ẏ kynges ſtewarde wyſt ⁊ knewe all this / anone he came into ẏ hall ymonge all ẏ people / ⁊ bꝛake ẏ yerde of the royall kynges houſholde / ⁊ anone euery man was diſpyled ⁊ wente his way ⁊ foꝛſoke theyꝛ mayſtre ⁊ ſouerayne loꝛde ⁊ lefte hym alone. And thus was kynge Rycharde bꝛought downe ⁊ deſtroyed ⁊ ſtode hym ſelf alone wᵗoute comfoꝛte oꝛ ſocoure oꝛ of ony good coūſeyll of ony man / alas foꝛ pyte of this royall kynge. And anone came woꝛde ẏ ſyꝛ Henry of Bolyngbꝛoke was vp with a ſtronge power of people and that all ẏ ſquyers of Englande reyſe vp the ſhyꝛes in ſtrengthynge of hym agaynſte kynge Rycharde. And thus ſoone he was come out of the Noꝛthe countre to Bꝛyſtowe ⁊ there he mette with ſyꝛ wyllyam Scrope erle of wylteſhyꝛe ⁊ treſourer of Englande and with ſyꝛ Johan Buſſhe ⁊ ſyꝛ Henry grene / ⁊ Johan Bagot but he eſcaped from them ⁊ went ouer ſee into Irlande / ⁊ theſe thꝛe knyghtes were takē ⁊ theyꝛ heedes ſmyten of / ⁊ thus they deyed foꝛ theyꝛ falſe coueytyſe. And than was kyng Rycharde taken ⁊ bꝛought vnto ẏ duke / and anone ẏ duke put hym in faſt warde and ſtronge holde vnto his cōmynge to London. And thā was there a rumoꝛe in London ⁊ ſtronge noyſe ẏ kynge Rycharde came to Weſtmynſtre / ⁊ the people of London caſte thyder ⁊ wolde haue done moche harme ⁊ hurte in theyꝛ woodneſſe had not ẏ mayꝛe ⁊ aldermen ⁊ other woꝛthy men ceſſed them wᵗ fayꝛe woꝛdes and tourned them home agayne vnto Londō And there was ſyꝛ Johā ſlake deane of ẏ kynges chapell of Weſtmynſtre taken ⁊ bꝛought to London and put in pꝛyſon in Ludgate. And after that Johan Bagot was taken in Irlande and ſo bꝛought to London ⁊ put in pꝛiſon in Newgate there to be kepte ⁊ abyde his anſwere. And ſoone after the duke bꝛought kynge Rycharde pꝛyuely vnto London ⁊ put hym in ẏ toure vnder ſure kepynge as a pꝛyſoner. And thā came ẏ loꝛdes of the realme wᵗ all theyꝛ coūſeyll vnto ẏ toure to kynge Rycharde ⁊ ſayd to hym of his myſgouernaunce ⁊ extoꝛcyon ẏ he had done made and oꝛdeyned to oppꝛeſſe al ẏ comyn people ⁊ alſo to all ẏ realme. Wherfoꝛe al ẏ comyne people of ẏ realme wolde hym hyue deposed of his kyngdome. And ſoo he was deposed at ẏ tyme in ẏ toure of London by all his loꝛdes counſeyll ⁊ commune aſſent of al the realme. And than he was put frome ẏ toure vnto ẏ caſtell of Ledes in Kent / and there he was kept a whyle And than he was had from thens vnto ẏ caſtell of Pountfret in the Noꝛth countre to be kepte in pꝛyſon / ⁊ ryght ſoone after there he made his ende. And than whan kynge Rycharde was deposed ⁊ had reſygned his crowne ⁊ his kyngdome ⁊ was kepe saff in holde / than all ẏ lordes of the realme with the comyns assent ⁊ by accorde chose this worthy lorde syr Henry of Bolyngbroke erle of Derby / duke of Herford / ẏ duke of Lancastre by ryght lyne and herytage ⁊ for his knyghtly manhode ẏ the people founde in hym before all other they chose hym ⁊ made hym kynge of Englande amonges them.

INnocencius ẏ .vii. was chosen at Rome and regned but two yere. And than Gregory the .xii. was after hym .ix. yere ẏ came was before. Than was Alexander chosen in ẏ counseyll of Pysan and he was called fyrste Petrus de candida ⁊ so was put the yere to stryfe euerychone of theese his fayde he was pope / than was there a counseyll at Pysan where they began to make a concorde ⁊ there they deposed the two ⁊ the thyrde stode / ⁊ so was more deuysyon made than before / for ẏ they obeyed hym nat. ¶ Roberte was Emperoure after Wenslaus .x. yere this man was duke of Bauary ⁊ erle of Palatyne a iust man and a good / ⁊ was crowned of Boniface the .ix. This man entred Italy w a great hoost of Almaynes agaynst Johan the duke of Galyas / but with an lytyl honoure he retourned agayne ⁊ was iudged worthy to suffre for his tyrannyes. ¶ Johan the .xxiii. succeded Alexander .iiii. yere / ⁊ fyrst he began well / but an euyll ende / ⁊ he was in ẏ counseyll at Constaunce ⁊ offred hym to resygne the popehode ⁊ after secretly ⁊ vnnethly he fledde awaye / but it profyted hym not / for he was taken ⁊ constreyned to peas ⁊ was made a Cardynal ⁊ buryed at Florens. Sygismundus was Emperoure after Roberte .xxviii. yere / ⁊ he was sone to Karolus ẏ kynge of Hungary ⁊ made [illegible] [illegible] emperoure. This man holpe [illegible] thorough his meruayllous prudence ⁊ wytte / for he spared no labour ne nothynge ẏ he hadde tyll he had made a full peas amonge ẏ clergy. And he had .ix. batayles agaynst ẏ Turke / ⁊ euer he had the vyctory / ⁊ what more all thynge that euer was wryten in louynge to Constantyne Theodosie Karolo Otto may truely be wryten of hym. And he was crowned in Hungary ⁊ deceassed a blessyd man.

¶ Circa annu dñi. M.CCCC.vii.

¶ Of syr Henry of Bolyngbroke Erle of Derby ẏ reygned after kynge Rycharde whiche was ẏ .iiii. Henry after ẏ conquest.

ANd after kynge Rycharde ẏ secunde was deposed ⁊ out of his kyngdome ẏ lordes ⁊ ẏ comyns all with one assent and other worthy of ẏ realme chose Henry of Bolyngbroke erle of Derby sone ⁊ heyre of John duke of Lancastre for his worthy manhode that ofte tyme had be founde in hym ⁊ in dedes proued vpon. Seynt Edwardes day ẏ confessour he was crowned kynge of Englande at Westmynster by assent of all ẏ realme next after the deposynge of kynge Rycharde. Than he made Henry his eldest sone prynce of Wales ⁊ duke of Cornewayle and erle of Chester. And he made syr Thomas of Arundell Archebysshop of Caunterbury agayne as he was before. And syr Roger Walden ẏ kynge Rycharde had made Archebysshop of Caunterbury he made bysshop of London / for that tyme it stode voyde. And he made the erles sone of Arundell that came w hym ouer the see frome Calays into Englande erle of Arundell as his fader had ben ⁊ put hym in possessyon of all his landes. And he made homage ⁊ feaute vnto his leige lorde the kynge as all other lordes had done. And than anone he sent kynge Rychard in the castell of

de and with ſyr Johan Buſſhe ⁊ ſyr Henry grene / ⁊ Johan Bagot but he eſcaped
kynge Rycharde was depoſed ⁊ had reſygned his crowne ⁊ his kyngdome ⁊ was

worthy duke ⁊ ſyr Thomas of Arundell Archbyſſhop of Caūterbury ſhypped into ẏ hauen of calays ⁊ drewe theyr cours north ward ⁊ arryued i yorke ſhyre at Rauenſpurne faſte by wydelyngton / ⁊ there he came ⁊ entred fyrſte ẏ lande ⁊ two lordes wͭ hym ⁊ theyr nauy. And ſo than my the people of ẏ realme ẏ whan they herde of his comynge ⁊ knewe where ẏ he was and anone they drewe vnto hym ⁊ welcomed theſe lordes ⁊ ſo gaue them courage in all maner thynge ⁊ ſoo paſſed forthe into ẏ lande ⁊ gadred moche people to them And whan kynge Rycharde herd ⁊ wyſt that theſe two lordes were comen agayne into Englande and alſo were landed. Than the kynge lefte his ordynaunce in Irlande ⁊ came into englande warde in all the haſt that he myght ⁊ came to ẏ caſtell of ſlynte ⁊ there he abode to take his counſeyll ⁊ what myght he done / but to hym came anone. And than ſyr Thomas Percy erle of worceſter that was ẏ kynges ſtewarde wyſt ⁊ knewe all this / anone he came into ẏ hall ymonge all ẏ people / ⁊ brake ẏ yerde of the royall kynges houſholde / ⁊ anone euery man was diſpled ⁊ wente his way ⁊ forſoke theyr mayſtre ⁊ ſouerayne lorde ⁊ lefte hym alone. And thus was kynge Rycharde brought downe ⁊ deſtroyed ⁊ ſtode hym ſelf alone wͭoute comforte or ſocoure or of ony good coūſeyll of ony man / alas for pyte of this royall kynge. And anone came worde ẏ ſyr Henry of Bolyngbroke was vp with a ſtronge power of people and that all ẏ ſquyers of Englande ryſe vp the ſhyres in ſtrengthynge of hym agaynſte kynge Rycharde. And thus ſoone he was come out of the Northe countre to Bryſtowe ⁊ there he mette with ſyr wyllyam Scrope erle of wylſhyre ⁊ treſourer of Englande and with ſyr Johan Buſſhe ⁊ ſyr Henry grene / ⁊ Johan Bagot but he eſcaped from them ⁊ went ouer ſee into Irlande / ⁊ theſe thre knyghtes were take ⁊ theyr heedes ſmyten of / ⁊ thus they deyed for theyr falſe couetyſe. And than was kyng Rycharde taken ⁊ brought vnto ẏ duke / and anone ẏ duke put hym in faſt warde and ſtronge holde vnto his cōmynge to London. And thā was there a rumoure in London ⁊ ſtronge noyſe ẏ kynge Rycharde came to weſtmynſtre / ⁊ the people of London raſſe thyder ⁊ wolde haue done moche harme ⁊ hurte in theyr woodneſſe had not ẏ mayre ⁊ aldermen ⁊ other worthy men ceſſed them wͭ fayre wordes and tourned them home agayne vnto Londō And there was ſyr Johā ſlake deane of ẏ kynges chapell of weſtmynſtre taken ⁊ brought to London and put in pryſon in Ludgate. And after that Johan Bagot was taken in Irlande and ſo brought to London ⁊ put in pryſon in Newgate there to be kepte ⁊ abyde his anſwere. And ſoone after the duke brought kynge Rycharde pryuely vnto London ⁊ put hym in ẏ toure vnder ſure kepynge as a pryſoner. And thā came ẏ lordes of the realme wͭ all theyr coūſeyll vnto ẏ toure to kynge Richarde ⁊ ſayd to hym of his myſgouernaunce ⁊ extorcyon ẏ he had done made and ordeyned to oppreſſe al ẏ comyn people ⁊ alſo to all ẏ realme. Wherfore al ẏ comyne people of ẏ realme wolde hym haue depoſed of his kyngdome. And ſoo he was depoſed at ẏ tyme in ẏ toure of London by all his lordes counſeyll ⁊ comune aſſent of al the realme. And than he was put frome ẏ toure vnto ẏ caſtell of Ledes in Kent / and there he was kept a whyle And than he was had from thens vnto ẏ caſtell of Pountfret in the North countre to be kepte in pryſon / ⁊ ryght ſoone after there he made his ende. And than whan kynge Rycharde was depoſed ⁊ had reſygned his crowne ⁊ his kyngdome ⁊ was

ſeruyd to be canonyſed. This man holpe ÿ chyrche through hys meruaylous pru
all other lordes had done. And than ano ne deyed kynge Rychard in the caſtell of
P.iii.

kepe full in holde / than all ÿ lordes of the realme with the comyns aſſent ÿ by accorde choſe this worthy lorde ſyr Henry of Bolyngbroke erle of Derby / duke of Herforde & duke of Lancaſtre by ryght lyne and herytage / & for his ryghtfull manhode ÿ the people founde in hym before all other they choſe hym & made hym kynge of Englande amonges them.

INnocencius ÿ .vii. was choſen at Rome and lyued but two yere. And than Gregory the .xii. was after hym .ii. yere & more was debate. Than was Alexander choſen in ÿ counſeyll of Pyſan and he was called by name Petrus de Candia & ſo was put the other ſtyle euerychone of the which ſayde he was pope / than was there a counſeyll at Pyſan where they began to make a concorde & there they depoſed the two & the thyrde ſtode / & ſo was more deuyſyon made than before / for ÿ they obeyed pacifyed not. ¶ Roberte was Emperour after Wenſlaus .ix. yere. This man was duke of Bauary & erle of Palaten a iuſt man and a good / & was crowned of Boniface the .ix. This man entred Italy with a great hooſt of Almayns agaynſt Johan the duke of Galyas / but with an heuy hoſte he tourned agayne & was holde worthy to ſuffre for his ryghte wyſnes. ¶ Johan the .xxiii. ſucceded Alexander .iiii. yere / & fyrſt he began well for an bytce / & he was in ÿ counſeyll at Conſtance & offred hym to reſygne the popehede ÿ after ſecretly & vnknowe he fledde awaye / but it proffyted hym not / for he was taken & commytted to pryſon & was made a Cardynall & buryed at Florens. Sigiſmundus was Emperoure after Roberte .xxvii. yere / & he was ſone to Karolus & kynge of Hungary & made to hym prynce and he was ſo deuoute to god that he deſeruyd to be canonyſed. This man holpe ÿ chyrche through hys meruaylous prudence & wytte / for he ſpared no labour ne nothynge ÿ he hadde tyll he had made a full peas amonge ÿ clergy. And he had .ix. batayles agaynſt ÿ Turke / & euer he had the victory / & what more all thynge that euer was wryten in louynge to Conſtantyne Theodoſio Karolo Otto may truely be wryten of hym. And he was crowned in Hungary & deceſſed a bleſſyd man.

¶ Circa annum dñi. M.CCCC.vii.

¶ Of ſyr Henry of Bolyngbroke Erle of Derby ÿ reygned after kynge Rycharde whiche was ÿ .iiii. Henry after ÿ conqueſt.

AND after kynge Rycharde ÿ ſecũde was depoſed & out of his kyngdome ÿ lordes & ÿ comyns all with one aſſente and other worthy of ÿ realme choſe Henry of Bolyngbroke erle of Derby ſone & heyre of Johñ duke of Lancaſtre for his worthy manhode that oftetyme had be founde in hym & in dedes proued vpõ ſeynt Edwardes day ÿ cõfeſſour he was crowned kynge of Englande at Weſtmynſter by aſſent of all ÿ realme next after the depoſynge of kynge Rycharde. Than he made Henry his eldeſt ſone prynce of Wales & duke of Cornewayle and erle of Cheſter. And he made ſyr Thomas of Arundell Archebyſſhop of Caunterbury agayne as he was before. And ſyr Roger Walden ÿ kynge Rycharde had made Archebyſſhop of Caunterbury he made byſſhop of London / for that tyme it ſtode voyde. And he made the erles ſone of Arundell that came with hym ouer the ſee frome Calays into Englande erle of Arundell as hys fader had ben & put hym in poſſeſſyon of all his landes. And he made homage & fealte vnto his lyege lorde the kynge as all other lordes had done. And than anone deyed kynge Rychard in the caſtell of

Pountfret in the Northcountre / for there he was enfamined vnto deth by his keper For he was kepte there .iiii. or .v. days frō mete or drynke / & ſoo he made his ende in this worlde / yet moche people in Englande and in other landes ſaid he was alyue many a yere after his deth / but whether he was alyue or deed þ people helde their falſe opynyon & byleue þ many had & moche people came to great myſchyefe & ſoule dethe as ye ſhall here afterwarde. And whan kynge Henry wyſte þ he was deed he let ſere hym in þ beſte manere & cloſed it in a fayre cheſte wt dyuerſe ſpyces & bawmes & cloſed hym in a lynen clothe all ſaufe his vyſage and þ was left open þ al men myght ſe his perſone frome all other men. And ſo he was brought to London wt torchelyght brennynge to ſeynt Paules chirche & there he had his maſſe dirige with moche reuerence and ſolempnyte of ſeruyce. And whan all this was done than he was brought frome ſeynt Paules vnto þ abbay of weſtmynſtre & there he had his hole ſeruyce agayn. And fro weſtmynſtre he was brought to Langley and there he was buryed / vpon whoſe ſoule god haue mercy Amen. ¶ And in þ fyrſt yere of kynge Henryes reygne he helde his cryſtmas in the caſtell of wyndeſore. And on þ .xii. euen came þ duke of Aumarle vnto the kynge & tolde hym þ he & þ duke of Surrey & þ duke of Exceſtre & þ erle of Saleſbury & the erle of Glouceſtre / & other more of theyr aſſynyte were acorded to make a mommynge vnto þ kyng on .xii. day at nyght / & there they purpoſed to ſle the kynge in the reuelynge. And thus the duke of Aumarle warned the kynge. And than the kynge came to London pryuely in all the haſt þ he myght to get hym helpe ſocoure & comforte and counſeyll. And anone theſe other þ wold haue put þ kynge to deth fled in all þ haſt þ they myght for they knewe well that theyr counſeyll was bewrayed. And than fled þ duke of Surrey & the erle of Salyſbury with all theyr meyne vnto þ towne of Cyrceſtre. And there the people of the towne wolde haue areſtyd them / & they wolde not ſtande to theyr areſtynge / but ſtode at defence and fought manly / but at the laſt they were ouercomen & taken. And there they ſmote of þ dukes hede of Surrey & þ erles hede of Salyſbury / and many other more / and there they put theyr quarters into ſackes & theyr hedes on poles borne on hye & ſo they were brought through the cytee of London to London brydge / & there theſe hedes were ſet vpon hyghe / theyr quarters were ſende to other good townes and Cytees of Englande and ſet vp there. At Oxforde was taken Blounte knyght / and Benet Cely knyght / and Thomas wynterſall ſquyer and there beheded & quartred & the knyghtes hedes were ſet vpō poles and brought to London and ſet vpō London brydge / and the quarters ſed forth to other good townes.

¶ And in þ ſame yere at Pryttelwell in a mylle in Eſſex there lay Johan Holande the duke of Exceſtre was taken with the comyns of the countre / and they brought hym frome the mylle to þ Plaſſhe and to the ſame place þ kynge Rycharde had reſted ſyr Thomas of wodſtok the duke of Glouceſtre & ryght there in þ place they ſmote of the dukes hede of Exceſtre and brought it into London vpon a pole / and it was ſette vpon London brydge.

¶ And in þ ſame yere at Bryſtowe was taken the lorde Spenſer that kynge Rycharde had made erle of Glouceſtre / and the comyns of the towne of Bryſtowe toke hym and brought hym into þ market place of the towne / and there they ſmote of his hede and ſend it vnto London / and there it was ſet vpō London brydge. And in this ſame yere was ſyr Bernarde Brokeys knyght taken ⁊ areſted ⁊ put in the toure of Londõ / ⁊ ſyr John Shelly knyght and ſyr John Mawdelyn ⁊ ſyr Wyllyam Ferybe perſones of kynge Rychardes / ⁊ they were areſted ⁊ put into the toure of London / ⁊ thyder came ẏ kynges Juſtyces ⁊ ſatte vpon them in ẏ toure of London / ⁊ there they were dampned al foure vnto deth / ⁊ ẏ dome was gyuen vnto ſyr Bernarde Brokeys that he ſholde go on fote frome ẏ toure through ẏ cyte of London vnto Tyburne ⁊ there to be hanged and after his heed ſmyten of / ⁊ ſyr John Shelly knight / ⁊ ſyr John Mawdelyn ⁊ ſyr wyllyã Ferybe perſones were drawen throughout ẏ cyte of Londõ to Tyburne ⁊ there they were hanged ⁊ theyr heedes ſmytten of ⁊ ſet on London brydge / ⁊ in ẏ ſame yere kynge Henry ſende quene Iſabell home agayne into Fraunce ẏ whiche was kynge Rychardes wyfe / ⁊ gaue her golde ⁊ ſyluer ⁊ many other Iewels ⁊ ſo ſhe was diſcharged of all her power and ſend out of Englande. And in ẏ ſecõde yere of kynge Henry the fourth was ſyr Roger Claryngton knygh ⁊ two of his men and ẏ pryoure of Launde / ⁊ .viii. freres mynors ⁊ ſome mayſtres of dyuynyte ⁊ other for treaſõ ẏ they wrought agaynſt the kynge were drawen ⁊ hanged at Tyburne all .xii. perſones. And there began a great dyſſencyon ⁊ debate in the coũtre of wales bytwene ẏ lorde Grey rythen ⁊ Owen of Glendor ſquyer of wales / and this Owen arered a great nombre of the walſhe men / ⁊ kepte all ẏ coũtre aboute ryght ſtrongely ⁊ dyd moche harme ⁊ deſtroyed ẏ kynges townes ⁊ lordeſhyppes throughout all wales ⁊ robbed ⁊ ſlewe ẏ kynges people bothe Englyſſh ⁊ walſhe and thus he endured a .xii. yere largely. And he toke the lorde Grey rythen pryſoner ⁊ kepte hym faſt in holde tyll he was raunſomed of pryſoners of the marche / ⁊ kepte hym longe tyme in holde. And at ẏ laſt he made hȳ wedde one of his doughters / ⁊ kept hym there ſtyll with his wyfe ⁊ ſoone after he dyed. And than kynge Henry knowynge this myſchyef deſtruccyon ⁊ treaſon ẏ this Owẽ had wrought and anone he ordeyned a ſtrõge power of mẽ of armes ⁊ archers and moche other ſtuffe ẏ longed to warre for to abate ⁊ deſtroye ẏ malyce of this falſe walſhe man And than ẏ kyng came into wales wt his power for to deſtroy this Owẽ ⁊ other rebelles falſe walſhe men / and anone they fledde into ẏ mountayns / ⁊ there myght ẏ kynge do them no harme in no maner wyſe for ẏ moũtayns / ⁊ ſo ẏ kynge came agayne into Englande for loſynge of moche of his people / ⁊ thus he ſped not there. ¶ In ẏ ſame yere was great ſcarſyte of whete in england for a quarter of whete was at .xvi. ſhyllȳge / ⁊ there was marchaundyſe of Englande ſende into Pruce for whete / ⁊ anone they had laden and fraught ſhyppes ynoughe ⁊ came home in ſauſte thãked be god of all his gyftes.

¶ And in the .iii. yere of kynge Henryes reygne there was a ſterre ſene in ẏ fyrmament ẏ ſhewed hym ſelfe through all the worlde for dyuerſe tokens ẏ ſholde befall ſoone after / ẏ whiche ſterre was named by clergye Stella cometa / ⁊ on ſeynt Mary mawdelenes day next folowynge in ẏ ſame yere was ẏ batayll of Shrowſbury / ⁊ thyder came ſyr Henry Percy the erles ſone of Northumberlande wt a greate multytude of men of armes and archers and gaue a batayll to kyng Henry ẏ .iiii. through ẏ falſe ⁊ wycked counſeyll of ſyr Thomas Percy his vncle erle of Worceſtre / ⁊ there was ſyr Henry Percy ſlayne ⁊ the moſte parte of his people in ẏ felde ⁊ ſyr Thomas Percy taken ⁊ kepte faſte in holde two dayes tyl ẏ kynge hadde ſet in reſt his people on both ſydes. And thā ſyꝛ Thomas percy was Iudged to be dꝛawē ⁊ hanged ⁊ his heed ſmyten of foꝛ his falſe treaſon at Shꝛowesbury ⁊ his heed brought to London ⁊ ſet on London bꝛydge. And yͤ other people yͭ there was ſlayn on both partyes yͤ kynge lette bury. And there was ſlayne on yͤ kynges ſyde i yͤ batayle yͤ erle of Staffoꝛde/ and ſyꝛ Walter Blunte in yͤ kynges cote armure vnder yͤ kynges baner/ ⁊ many moꝛe worthy mē wyͭ whoſe ſoule god haue mercy. Amen.

¶ And in yͤ .iiii. yere of kynge Henryes reygne came yͤ Emperour of Conſtantynople wͭ many greate lordes ⁊ knyghtes ⁊ moche other people of his cūtre in Englande to kynge Henry wͭ hym to ſpeke ⁊ to dyſporte ⁊ to ſe yͤ good gouernaunce ⁊ condicions of our people ⁊ to knowe yͤ cōmodytees of Englande/ ⁊ our kyng wͭ all his loꝛdes goodly ⁊ worſhypfully receyued ⁊ welcomed hym ⁊ all his meny yͭ came wͭ hym ⁊ dyd hī all yͤ worſhyp yͭ they coude ⁊ myght. And anone yͤ kynge commaūded all maner offycers yͭ he ſholde be ſerued as royally as it longed to ſuche a worthy loꝛde ⁊ Emperoure on his owne coſt as longe as he ⁊ his men were in Englande. ¶ And yͤ ſame yere came dame Iane yͤ duches of Bꝛytayne into Englande and landed at falmouth in Cornewayle/ and fro thens ſhe was brought to yͤ cyte of wyncheſtre ⁊ there ſhe was wedded to kynge Henry yͤ .iiii. in the abbay of ſeynt Swythyns with all yͤ ſolēpnyte yͭ myght be done ⁊ made/ and ſoone afterward ſhe was brought frome thens to London/ ⁊ the mayꝛe ⁊ yͤ aldermen wͭ yͤ comyns of yͤ cyte of London rode agaynſt her ⁊ welcomed her ⁊ brought her through yͤ cyte of London to Weſtmynſtre ⁊ there ſhe was crowned quene of Englande ⁊ there the kynge made a royall feeſt foꝛ her ⁊ foꝛ all maner of men that thyder wolde come.

¶ And in yͤ ſame yere dame Blaunche yͤ eldeſte doughter of kynge Henry the .iiii. was ſende ouer ſee wͭ yͤ erle of Somerſet her vncle ⁊ wͭ mayſter Rycharde Clyffoꝛde than byſſhop of Worceſtre ⁊ wͭ many other loꝛdes knyghtes ladyes/ ⁊ worthy ſquyers as longed too ſuche a noble kynges doughter ⁊ came into Coleyne. And thyder came yͤ dukes ſone of Barre with a fayꝛe meny ⁊ receyued this worthy lady/ ⁊ yͤ byſſhop of Worceſtre wedded ⁊ ſacred them togyder as holy chyꝛche it wolde. And there was made a royall feeſt ⁊ a great Iuſtynge in yͤ reuerēce ⁊ worſhyp of them ⁊ al yͤ people yͭ thyder came. And whan this maryage ⁊ feeſt was done the erle ⁊ yͤ biſſhop ⁊ al their meny toke their leue of yͤ loꝛde and the lady ⁊ came home agayne into Englande in ſaufte thanked be god. ¶ And in yͤ .v. yere of kynge Henryes reygne the loꝛde Thomas his ſone went ouer ſee ⁊ yͤ Erle of Kente and many other loꝛdes and knyghtes with men of armes and archers a great nombꝛe to chaſtyſe the rebelles that afoꝛe had done moche harme to our Englyſſhe men and marchaūtes/ ⁊ to many townes ⁊ poꝛtes in Englande on the ſee coſtes. And yͤ loꝛde Thomas the kynges ſone came into Flaunders befoꝛe a towne that is called Scluſe ymonge all yͤ ſhyppes of dyuerſe nacyons yͭ were there/ ⁊ after there they rode with theyꝛ ſhyppes ymonge them ⁊ wente on lande ⁊ ſpoyled them there two dayes ⁊ came agayne to theyꝛ ſhyppes ⁊ toke the bꝛode ſee ⁊ there they met with thre Carackes of Iene yͭ were laden with dyuerſe marchaūdyſe ⁊ well manned and they fought togyder longe tyme/ but the Englyſſhe men had yͤ vyctoꝛy ⁊ brought the Carackes into the Cambꝛe befoꝛe Wynchelſe and there they caſted all theſe goodes/ and one of theſe Carackes was ſodaynly brent there. And the loꝛdes and theyr people tourned thē home agayne ⁊ wente no ferder at ẏ tyme. ¶ And ẏ ſame tyme Serle yeman of kynge Rychardes robes came into Englande oute of Scotlande ⁊ tolde to dyuerſe people that kyng Rycharde was on lyue in Scotlande ⁊ ſo moche people byleued his wordes / wherfore a great parte of ẏ people of ẏ realme were in great errour ⁊ grutchynge ayēſt the kynge through informacyō of fals lesynges that this ſerle had made / for moche people truſted ⁊ byleued his ſayenge But at the laſt he was taken in the north coūtre ⁊ there by lawe Judged to be drawē through euery cytee ⁊ good borough towne ī englande / ⁊ ſo he was ſerued / ⁊ at ẏ laſt he was brought to londō to ẏ gylde hal before ẏ Juſtyce ⁊ there he was Judged for to be brought to ẏ Toure of London ⁊ there to be layd on an hurdell ⁊ thā to be drawen through ẏ cyte of Londō to Tyburne ⁊ there to be hāged ⁊ thā quartred ⁊ his heed ſmyten of ⁊ ſet on London brydge ⁊ his quarters to be ſend to foure good townes of Englande ⁊ there ſet vp ⁊ thus was he rewarded for his fals treaſon. ¶ And in the. vi. yere of kynge Henryes reygne the erle of Marre of Scotlāde by ſafe conduyte came into Englande to chalenge ſyr Edmonde erle of Kente to certayne courſes of warre on horſbacke. And ſo this chalenge was accepted ⁊ graūted ⁊ the place take in ſmythfelde at London / ⁊ this erle of Marre came proudly into the felde as his chalenge aſked / and anone came the erle of Kent ⁊ rode to the ſtatte ⁊ manly rode togyder w ſharpe ſpeers dyuerſe courſes / but the erle of Kent had the felde ⁊ gate hym moche worſhyp and thanke of all maner men for his manfull dedes. ¶ And in the. vii. yere of kyng Henryes reygne ſyr Rycharde Scrop archebyſſhop of yorke ⁊ the erle Marſhal of Englande gadred to thē a ſtronge power ayenſt kynge Henry. And ẏ kynge herynge therof in all the haſt that he myght came with his power Northward ⁊ mette with thē at yorke ⁊ there were theſe two lordes taken ⁊ brough to the kynge. And anone ẏ Judges were ſet ⁊ theſe two lordes brought forth ⁊ ther they were Judged to deth ⁊ both theyr hedes ſmyten of and there they made an ende / on whoſe ſoules god for his pyte haue mercy. Amē And whan this was done ẏ kynge came to London agayne and there reſted hym. Anone god of his great goodneſſe wrought and ſhewed many great myracles for this worthy clerke archebyſſhop of yorke that thus was done to dethe. ¶ And in ẏ viii. yere of kynge Henryes reygne dame Luce the dukes ſyſter of Mylan came in in Englande ⁊ ſo to London / ⁊ there was wedded to ſyr Edmonde erle of Kente in the pryory of ſeynt Mary oueres in ſouthwarke with moch ſolempnyte and great worſhyp / the kynge was there him ſelf ⁊ gaue her at the chyrche dore / ⁊ whā that they were wedded ⁊ maſſe was done the kynge his owne perſone brought ⁊ ladde this worthy lady into ẏ byſſhops place of wyncheſtre ⁊ there was a wōders great feeſt holden to all maner of people ẏ wolde come. ¶ And the ſame yere ſyr Robert Knolles knight a worthi warryour dyed at his manoyr in Norfolke / ⁊ from thens he was brought to Londō on a hors bere with moche torche lyght / and ſo he was brought to the white freres in Fleteſtret and there was done ⁊ made for hym a ſolempne feſte ⁊ a ryall enterrement for tho that thyder wolde come bothe ryche and pore / ⁊ there lyeth buryed by dame Conſtāce his wyfe in the myddes of the body of the chyrche vpō whoſe ſoule god haue mercy. Amē. ¶ And in this ſame yere ſyr Thomas Rampſton knyght Conſtable of the Toure of London was drenched at

London brydge as he came fro weſtmynſter inwardes to the Toure in a barge/⁊ all through lewdneſſe. And in ẏ ſame yere dame Phylyp the yonger doughter of kynge Henry was ladde ouer ſee with ſyr Rychard the dukes broder of yorke/⁊ ſyr Edmonde Courteney byſſhop of Norwyche ⁊ many other lordes knyghtes ⁊ ſquyers ladyes ⁊ gentylwomē that apperteyned to ſuche a kynges doughter ⁊ came to Denmarke/⁊ the kynge receyued this worthy lady for his wyfe/and welcomed theſe worthy lordes ⁊ dyd to them moche worſhyp/⁊ they were brought to a towne that was called London in Denmarke ⁊ there was this lady wedded ⁊ ſacred to ẏ kynge of Denmarke/Norway/⁊ Swythen ⁊ there was crowned quene of Denmarke with moche ſolempnyte/⁊ there was made a ryal feeſt. And whā this feeſt and maryage was done ⁊ ended theſe lordes ⁊ ladyes toke theyr leue of the kynge and ẏ quene ⁊ came agayne into Englande in ſauete thanked be god. ¶ And in the viii. yere of kynge Henryes reygne there was a mā that was called ẏ walſſhe clerke/⁊ he apeched a knyght ẏ was called ſyr Perceuale Sowdon of treaſon/⁊ there they were Joyned to fyght to ẏ vtteraūce within lyſtes/⁊ the day and place ⁊ tyme aſſigned ⁊ lymytted to be done ⁊ ended in Smythfelde/at whiche daye tho two perſones came into the felde ⁊ fought ſore ⁊ myghtely togyder/but at ẏ laſt ẏ knyght ouercame ẏ clerke ⁊ made hym yelde hym as recreaūt of his fals empechemēt ẏ he had layd on hym/⁊ than was he dyſpoyled of his armure ⁊ drawen out of the feld to Tyburne ⁊ there was he hanged and ẏ knyght taken to grace ⁊ was a good mā. ¶ And in ẏ ſame yere ẏ erle of Northumberlande ⁊ ẏ lorde Bardolfe came out of Scotlande in preiudyce ⁊ deſtruccyon of kynge Henry/wherfore they of ẏ North countree aroſe vpon them ⁊ fought with them ⁊ dyſcomfyted them ⁊ toke them ⁊ ſmote of theyr hedes ⁊ quartered theyr bodyes ⁊ ſende the hed of ẏ erle ⁊ a quarter of ẏ lorde Bardolfe to London and there they were ſet vpō Londō brydge for fals treaſō that they had purpoſed agaynſt ẏ kynge. ¶ And in ẏ .ix. yere of kynge Henryes reygne was ſyr Edmonde Holande erle of Kent made Amerall of Englande for to kepe the ſee/and he wente to the ſee with many ryall ſhyppes that were full well arayed and apparayled ⁊ enarmed with many a good man of armes and archers and of good defence of warre in the kynges name of Englande/⁊ ſo he landed at the laſte in ẏ coſte of Brytayne in ẏ yle of Bryak with al his folke/⁊ he beſyeged the caſtell ⁊ aſſauted it/⁊ they withſtode hym with great defence ⁊ ſtrength. And anone he layde his ordynaunce/⁊ in the lyenge of a gonne there came a quarell ⁊ ſmote the good erle Edmonde in the hed and there he caught his deth wounde/but yet they lefte not tyl that they had goten the caſtell ⁊ all that were therin. And there this good lorde dyed vpon whoſe ſoule god haue mercy. Amen. ⁊ than this meyny came home agayne into Englande wt ẏ erles body ⁊ was buryed ymonge his aunceſtres ryght worthely. ¶ And in ẏ ſame yere was a great froſt in Englande ẏ dured .xv. wekes longe. ¶ And ī the .x. yere of kynge Henryes reygne ẏ fourth came the Seneſſhall of Henaude wt other meyny in Englande to ſeke auentures and to get hȳ worſhyp in dedes of armes bothe on horſbacke ⁊ on fote at all maner poyntes of warre. And the Seneſſhall chalenged ẏ erle of Somerſet/⁊ the erle delyuered hym full manfully of all his chalēges and put his aduerſary to the worſt in all poyntes ⁊ wāne there great worſhyp ⁊ ẏ degree of ẏ felde. And on ẏ nexte day after came into the feld another men of armes of the Seneſſhals partye / ⁊ agaynſt hym came ſyr Rycharde of Arundel knyght / ⁊ the Henaude had the better of hym on foer lone poynt / for he brought hym on his knee. And on the thyrde daye came in an other man of armes into ẏ felde / ⁊ ayenſt hym there came ſyr Johñ Cornewayle a knyght and manly ⁊ knyghtly he quytte hym in all maner poyntes ayenſt his aduerſary ⁊ had the better in the felde. And on the fourth daye came an other man of armes of Henaude into ẏ felde / ⁊ ayenſte hym came ſyr Johñ Chaynes ſone ⁊ manly quytte hym agaynſt his aduerſary / for he caſte horſ and man into the felde / and the kynge for his manhode at that tyme dubbed hym knyght. And on ẏ fyfth day there came another man of armes of the Henaudes partye into the felde / ⁊ to hym came in ſyr Johñ Stewarde knyght / ⁊ manfully he quytte hyſ in all maner poyntes ⁊ had the better. And on ẏ ſyxth daye after came another Henaude / and to hym came wyllyam porter ſquyer ⁊ manfully he quytte hym and had the better in the felde / and the kynge dubbed him knyght that ſame tyme. And on the ſeuenth day after came another man of armes of Henaude into the feld / ⁊ to hym came Johñ Standyſſhe ſquyer ⁊ manfully he quytte hym on his aduerſary and had ẏ better of hym in the felde / and there the kynge dubbed hym knyght that ſame day. And on the ſame day cam an other man of armes of Henaude / ⁊ to hym came a ſquyer of Gaſkoyne / and proudly and manly he quytte hym of his aduerſary and had ẏ better of hym in the felde / and anone the kynge dubbed hỹ knyght. And on ẏ .viii. day came into the felde two other men of armes of Henaud / and with them were two ſowdyours of Calays ẏ whiche were two brethern ẏ were called Burghes / ⁊ they wel ⁊ manly quytte them ſelfe vpon theyr aduerſaryes ⁊ had ẏ better of them in the felde / ⁊ thus ended theſe chaléges with many greate worſhyppes. And thā the kynge at ẏ reuerence of theſe worthy ſtrāgers made a great feeſt and gaue to them many great ⁊ ryche gyftes / ⁊ than they toke theyr leue ⁊ went home agayne into theyr owne coūtre.

¶ And in the .xi. yere of kynge Henryes reygne the fourth there was a great batayll done in Smyth felde bytwene two ſquyers / that one was called Glouceſtre that was the appellaūt and Arthur was the defendaunt / ⁊ well and manly they fought togyder longe tyme / and the kynge for theyr manfulneſſe and of his grace toke theyr quarell into his hande ⁊ made them to go oute of the felde at ones and ſo they were deuyded of the batayll ⁊ the kynge gaue them grace

¶ And in the .xii. yere of kynge Henryes reygne ẏ fourth Ryddye a ſquyer of Wales that was a rebel a ryſer and ſupporter to Owen of Glendre ẏ dyde moche deſtruccyon to the people of Wales was taken ⁊ brought to London ⁊ there he came afore ẏ Juſtyces ⁊ was dampned for his treaſon / ⁊ than he was layd on an hurdell ⁊ ſo drawe to Tyburne through ẏ cyte ⁊ there he was hanged ⁊ ſet downe agayne ⁊ his heed ſmyten of ⁊ ẏ body quartred ⁊ ſende to foure townes ⁊ his heed ſet vpon London brydge.

¶ And in the .xiii. yere of kynge Henryes reygne tho dyed ſyr Johan Beaufforde erle of Somerſet that was capytayne of Calays ⁊ was buryed at the abbay of the Toure hyll / on whoſe ſoule god haue mercy amen. And in ẏ ſame yere ẏ lorde Thomas kynge Henryes ſone wedded the counteſſe of Somerſet.

¶ And in this ſame yere came ẏ enbaſſatours of Fraunce into Englande fro ẏ duke of Burgoyne vnto ẏ prynce of Englande kynge Henryes ſone ⁊ heyre for to haue helpe ⁊

socour of men of armes & archers ayenst the duke of Orlyance. And the kynge sent ouer see the erle of Arundell, syr Gylberte Umfreuyll erle of Kent, & the lorde Cobham syr John Oldcastell, & many other good knyghtes & worthy squyers & men of armes & good archers into Fraunce & came to Parys to ẏ duke of Burgoyne & there he receyued & welcomed these Englysshe men ẏ lordes & all other meyny. And whan it was done hym to wete that the duke of Orlyance was come into Seynt clowdes fast by Parys with a great nombre of men of armes and arbalasters, thyder went our Englysshe men & fought with them & gate the brydge of Seynt clowde and there they slewe many Frensshe men & arbalasters & the remenaunt fledde & wolde no longer abyde. And than our Englysshe men came agayne to Parys where they toke theyr leue of the duke & came saue agayne into Englande & ẏ duke gaue them great gyftes. & anone after the duke of Orlyaunce sent embassatours into Englande to kyng Henry the fourth besechynge hym of his helpe & socour ayenst his deedly enemy ẏ duke of Burgoyne. And than the kynge made Thomas his sone duke of Clarence & his other sone John duke of Bedforde & his other sone Umfrey duke of Gloucestre, & syr Thomas Beaufort erle of Dorset, & the duke of Aumarle he made duke of Yorke. And than the kyng ordeyned his sone syr Thomas the duke of Clarence Thomas Beaufort erle of Dorset & syr John Cornewayle with many other worthy knyghtes & squyers & men of armes & archers to go ouer see into Fraunce to helpe the kynge & the socouryng of the duke of Orlyance. And these worthy lordes with theyr retynue shypped at Hampton and londed ouer the see into Normandy & marched towardes. And there mette with them the [illegible] at theyr londynge with [illegible] thousande men of armes of Frensshe men & there were slayne of armes with them & all were put to flyght & taken of them. And [illegible] hondred men of armes and .xii. hondred horses without them that were slayne in ẏ felde. And so they rode forth thrughout all Fraunce & toke castels & townes & slewe many Frensshe men that wythstode them, and toke many prysoners as they rode. & so they passed forth tyll they came to Burdeux and there they rested them a whyle [illegible] ẏ souldyers in pease & rested tyll the wynter was redy for to sayle. And than ẏ duke with his meyne came home into Englande in sauftee thanked be god. ¶ And in ẏ same yere was ẏ kynges coyne chaunged thrughout Englande by ẏ kynge & his counseyll, ẏ is to say the noble, halfe noble & ferthynge of golde. ¶ And ẏ .xiiii. yere of kynge Henryes reygne ẏ fourth he let make galeys of warre, for he had hoped to haue passed ẏ great see & so forth to Jherusalem & there to haue ended his lyfe, but god vysyted hym so soone after with maladye & greate sekenesse ẏ he myght not wel endure no whyle so feruently he was taken & brought in bed at Westmynstre i a fayre chambre, & as he lay in his bedde he asked his chamberlayne what he called ẏ chambre ẏ he lay in. And he answered & sayd Jherusalem. And than he sayd that the prophecy sayd ẏ he sholde make an ende & dye in Jherusalem. And than he made hym redy vnto god & dysposed all his wyl. And soone after he dyed & was caryed by water from Westmynster in a barge vnto Feuersham, & from thens he was caryed to Caunterbury by londe with moche worshyp bryngynge into the abbay of Crystchirch & there he was entered & buryed besyde seynt Thomas of Caunterbury shryne [illegible] worthy kynge [illegible] in the yere of our lorde .M.CCCC. and .xii. vpon whoſe ſoule god haue mercy. Amen.

Martyn ẏ .v. was pope after Johñ .xiii. yere / this man was choſe by the coũſeyll of Cõſtantynoble ⁊ the other was depoſed that ſtroue / ⁊ ſo came peas in the chirche the whiche longe tyme afore was deſyred ⁊ neceſſary for the defence of the fayth. This was the myghtyeſt pope that euer was of rycheſſe / and a great Judge / he edifyed townes / walles / ⁊ ſtretes / ⁊ he deſtroyed herefyes / and he dyde moche good through ẏ noble prynce Sygyſmonde. And he gadred moche money for to get the holy lande agayne / but deth came vpon hym ⁊ letted hym / ⁊ he made a coũſeyll afore his deth for that mater ⁊ there he deceaſed. ¶ Eugenius was pope after Martin .xvii. yere. This eugenius was choſe peaſybly after ẏ dethe of Martyn ⁊ no man doubted but he was pope / but ſoone after he was expulſed from Rome / for it was ſo that he fledde naked / alſo he was cyted to ẏ coũſeyll of baſylyens and depoſed / but he dyſcharged hym not ⁊ for that began ẏ ſtryfe agayn ẏ whiche ſtode to his deth / ⁊ thoſe ẏ fauoured hym ſayd he was worth moche louynge / ⁊ the contrary ſayd thoſe ẏ were agaynſt hym but what ſomeuer he was after he had taken ẏ dygnyte vpon hẏ afore he was of great abſtynence ⁊ good fame / ⁊ what he dyd after ẏ I leue to ẏ Judgemẽt of god.

¶ Circa annũ dñi. M.CCCC.xxi.

¶ Of kynge Henry the fyfthe that was kynge Henryes ſone.

AND after the deth of kyng Henry the fourth reygned kynge Henry his ſone that was borne at Mounmouth in Wales that was a worthy kynge ⁊ a gracyous man and a great conquerour. And in the fyrſt yere of his reygne for great loue and goodneſſe he ſende to the freres of Langlye there as his fader had do burye kynge Rycharde the ſecũde ⁊ let take his body out of ẏ erth agayne ⁊ dyde brynge it to weſtmynſter in a ryall chare couered with blacke veluet ⁊ baners of dyuers armes aboute ⁊ all ẏ horſes drawynge the chare were trapped in blacke ⁊ betẽ with dyuers armes / ⁊ many a torche brennynge by all ẏ way tyll he came to weſtmynſter / ⁊ there he let make for hym a ryall ⁊ ſolempne entyrement ⁊ buryed hym by quene Anne his wyfe as his owne deſyre was on ẏ ferder ſyde of ſeynt Edwardes ſhryne in ẏ abbay of ſeynt Peters in weſtmynſter on whoſe ſoule god haue mercy. ¶ And in this ſame yere were a certayne of lollers takẽ ⁊ fals heretykes that had purpoſed throuth fals treaſõ for to haue ſlayne our kynge / ⁊ for to haue deſtroyed all ẏ clergy of ẏ realme and they myght haue had theyr falſe purpoſe. But oure lorde god wolde not ſuffre it / for in haſte oure kynge had warnynge therof ⁊ of all theyr fals ordynaũce ⁊ workynge ⁊ came ſodeynly wt his power to ſeynt Johãs wtout ſmythfeld ⁊ anone they toke a certayne of ẏ lollers ⁊ fals herytykes ⁊ brought thẽ to ẏ kynges pſence / ⁊ there they tolde all theyr fals purpoſe ⁊ ordynaunce how they wolde haue done ⁊ wrought yf they myght haue reygned ⁊ had theyr wyll / ⁊ there they tolde whiche were theyr cappytayns ⁊ gouernours / ⁊ thã ẏ kyge cõmaũded thẽ to ẏ toure of Lõdõ ⁊ thã toke mo to thẽ bothe wtin ẏ cyte ⁊ wtout ⁊ ſend thẽ to Newgate ⁊ to both coũters / ⁊ thã they were brought in examynacyõ afore ẏ clergy ⁊ ẏ kyges Juſtyces ⁊ there they were cõuycte for theyr fals hereſy / ⁊ dampned before ẏ Juſtyce for theyr fals treaſon / ⁊ this was theyr Jugemẽt ẏ they ſhold be drawen frõ ẏ toure of Londõ to ſeynt Gyles felde ⁊ there to be hanged ⁊ bꝛent on ẏ galowes. And there was take ſyꝛ Roger Acton knyght foꝛ heresy ⁊ eke foꝛ treaſon agaynſt ẏ kynge ⁊ the realme/ ⁊ he came afoꝛe ẏ clergy ⁊ was cõuycte foꝛ his heresye ⁊ dampned befoꝛe ẏ Juſtyce to be dꝛawen frome ẏ toure of London thꝛough ẏ cyte to ſeynt Gyles ⁊ to be hãged ⁊ bꝛēt.

¶ And in ẏ ſecũde yere of kynge Hẽryes reygne he helde a cõuſeyl of all the loꝛdes of ẏ realme at Weſtmynſter and there he put hym this demaunde and prayed ⁊ besoughe them of theyꝛ goodneſſe ⁊ of their good cõuſeyll ⁊ good wyll to ſhewe hȳ as touchynge ẏ tytle of ẏ ryght that he had to Noꝛmandy Gaſcoyne ⁊ Guyon ẏ whiche ẏ kynge of Fraũce wythhelde wrongfully ⁊ vnryghtfully/ the whiche his aũceſters befoꝛe hym had by true tytle of cõqueſt ⁊ ryght herytage/ the which Noꝛmandy/ Gaſcoyne ⁊ Guyen ẏ good kynge Edwarde of Wyndſoꝛe ⁊ his aũceſtres befoꝛe hȳ had holden all theyꝛ lyues tyme. And his loꝛdes gaue hym cõuſeyll to ſend enbaſſatours to ẏ kynge of Fraũce ⁊ his cõuſeyll ẏ he ſholde gyue vp vnto hym his ryght herytage/ ẏ is to ſay Noꝛmandy Gaſcoyne ⁊ Guyẽ the whiche his pꝛedeceſſours had holden afoꝛe hym/ oꝛ els he wolde it wynne with ſtrength of ſwerde in ſhoꝛte tyme with ẏ helpe of almyghty god. And than ẏ Dolphyn of Fraunce anſwered to our enbaſſatours ⁊ ſayde i this maner/ ẏ the kynge was ouer yonge ⁊ to tendꝛe of age to make ony warre as agaynſt hym ⁊ was not lyke yet to be a good warrioure to do ⁊ make ſuche a conqueſt there vpon hym. And ſomwhat in ſcoꝛne ⁊ deſpyte he ſende to hym a tonne full of tenes balles bycauſe he wolde haue ſomwhat to play withall foꝛ hym ⁊ foꝛ his loꝛdes/ foꝛ that wolde become hym better than to mayntayne ony warre. And than anone our loꝛdes that were enbaſſatours toke theyꝛ leue ⁊ came into Englande agayne ⁊ tolde the kynge ⁊ his counſeyl of the vngoodly anſwere that they had of the Dolphyn/ ⁊ of the pꝛeſent ẏ whiche he had ſend to our kynge.

¶ And whan ẏ kynge had herde theyꝛ woꝛdes and the anſwere of the Dolphȳ he was wõder ſoꝛe agreued ⁊ ryght euyll apayde towarde the Frenſhe mẽ ⁊ towarde the kynge ⁊ the Dolphyn/ and thought to auẽge hym on them as ſoone as god wolde ſende hym grace ⁊ might ⁊ anone let make tenes balles foꝛ the Dolphyn in all ẏ haſte that he might/ ⁊ they were great gõſtones foꝛ the Dolphyn to playe withal. And than anone the kynge ſende foꝛ all his loꝛdes ⁊ helde a great cõuſeyll at Weſtmynſter ⁊ tolde to them ẏ anſwere ẏ they had of the Dolphyn ⁊ of his woꝛthy pꝛeſent ẏ he ſend to hym ⁊ to his loꝛdes to playe wᵗal. And there the kynge ⁊ his loꝛdes were accoꝛded that they ſholde be redy in armes wᵗ theyꝛ power in the beſt araye ẏ myght be done/ ⁊ get all the men of armes ⁊ archers ẏ myght be gotẽ and all other ſtuffe that longed to warre ⁊ to be redy wᵗ al theyꝛ retynue to mete at Southhampton by Lammaſſe nexte folowynge without ony delay/ wherfoꝛe ẏ kynge oꝛdeyned his nauey of ſhyppes wᵗ all maner ſtuffe ⁊ vytayle that longed to ſuche a warryour of all maner oꝛdynaũce in the hauẽ of Southhampton vnto the nombꝛe of. CCC. and. xx. ſayles. And thã fell there a great dyſeaſe and a foule myſchefe/ foꝛ there were thꝛe loꝛdes whiche ẏ the kynge truſted moche on/ ⁊ thꝛough falſe couetyſe they had purpoſed ⁊ ymagyned ẏ kynges deth ⁊ thought to haue ſlayne hym ⁊ al his bꝛethern oꝛ he had taken ẏ ſee/ whiche thꝛe loꝛdes were named thus/ ſyꝛ Rycharde erle of Cãbꝛydge bꝛoder to ẏ duke of yoꝛke/ the ſeconde was ẏ loꝛde Scrope treſourer of Englande/ the thyꝛd was ſyꝛ Thomas Gray knyght of the North countre. And theſe thre lordes aboue ſayd for lucre of money had made a promeſſe vnto yͤ Frenſſhe men for to haue ſlayne kynge Henry yͤ fyfth ⁊ all his brethern by a falſe trayne ſodaynly or they hadde be ware. But god almyghty helde his holy hande ouer them ⁊ ſaued theym frome theſe peryllous menye. And for to haue done this they receyued of yͤ Frenſſh men a myllyon of golde/and yͭ was there openly knowen/⁊ for theyr falſe treaſon they were all thre Judged vnto the deth and this was yͤ Judgemẽt yͭ they ſholde be lad through Hampton without north gate there to be heded/and thus they ended theyr lyues for theyr falſe couetyſe ⁊ treaſon. And anone after as all this was done yͤ kynge ⁊ all his meny made them redy ⁊ went to ſhyp ⁊ ſayled forthe wͭ.xv. hondred ſhyppes ⁊ aryued within Seyn at Kydecauſe vpon our lady euen the Aſſumpcyon in Normandye wͭ all his ordynaũce. And ſo went hym forth to Harflet ⁊ he beſyeged the towne all about by lande ⁊ eke by water ⁊ ſend to yͤ Capytayne of the towne ⁊ charged hym to delyuer yͤ towne. And yͤ Capytayne ſayd yͭ he wold delyuer hym none/ne none he wold hym yelde/but bad hym do his beſt. And than our kynge layd his ordinaũce vnto yͤ towne/that is for to ſay Gonnes/Engynnes ⁊ trypgettes ⁊ ſhotte ⁊ caſt at yͤ walles ⁊ eke vnto the towne/⁊ caſte downe bothe toures ⁊ towne ⁊ layd them vnto yͤ erthe and there he played at yͤ tenes with his harde gonne ſtones. And they that were within yͤ towne whan they ſholde playe theyr ſonge was wel away ⁊ alas yͭ euer ſuche tenes balles were made/⁊ curſed all tho yͭ warre begã ⁊ yͤ tyme yͭ euer they were borne. ¶ And on yͤ morowe yͤ kynge dyd crye at euery gate of the towne that euery man ſholde be redy on the morowe erly to make aſſaute vnto yͤ towne. And wyllyam Boucher ⁊ Johñ Graunt with .xii. other burgeys worthy men came to yͤ kynge ⁊ beſought hym of his royall pryncehode ⁊ power to withdrawe his malyce ⁊ deſtruccyõ yͭ he dyd to thẽ ⁊ beſought hym of .viii. dayes of reſpyte ⁊ trewes yf ony reſcowe myght come to them ⁊ elles to yelde vp the towne to hym wͭ all theyr goodes/⁊ than yͤ kynge ſend forth yͤ cappytayne ⁊ kept yͤ remenaũte ſtyl wͭ hym ⁊ yͤ lorde Gancort yͭ was cappytayne of yͤ towne wente forth to Royn in all yͤ haſt vnto the Dolphyn for helpe ⁊ ſocour but there was none ne noo man of reſcowe/for the Dolphyn wold not abyde/and thus this Cappytayne came agayne vnto the kyng ⁊ yelded vp yͤ towne ⁊ delyuered hym the keyes ⁊ bad hỹ go ⁊ put out all yͤ Frenſſh men bothe men women ⁊ childrẽ ⁊ ſtuffe his towne of Harflet wͭ Englyſſhe people And the kynge ſend into Englande ⁊ dyd crye in euery good towne of Englande yͭ what crafty man wolde come thyder ⁊ enhabyte hym there in yͤ towne he ſhold haue houſe ⁊ houſholde to hym ⁊ to his heyres for euermore. And thyder wente many dyuerſe marchauntes ⁊ crafty men ⁊ enhabyted them there to ſtrẽgth yͤ towne and were welcome. And whan the kynge ſawe yͭ this towne was well ſtuffed both of vytayles ⁊ of men this worthy prynce toke his leue ⁊ went to Calays warde by lande/⁊ the Frenſſhe men herde of his comynge they thought for to haue ſtopped hym his waye yͭ he ſholde not paſſe that waye/⁊ in all the haſt yͭ they myght brake al yͤ brydges where that as ony paſſage was for horſe and man in ſomoche that there myght no man paſſe ouer yͤ ryuers nother on horſe ne fote/but yf he ſholde haue be drenched. And therfore our kynge wͭ all his people wente and ſought his way fer vp to Parys warde ⁊ there was all yͤ royall power of Fraunce aſſembled and redy to gyue hym batayll ⁊ for to deſtroye all his people/ But almyghty god was his guyde ⁊ ſaued hym ⁊ all his meny ⁊ defended hȳ of his enmyes power ⁊ purpoſe thāked be god that ſaued ſo his owne knyght and kynge in his ryghtfull tytle. And than our kynge beholdynge ⁊ ſeynge yͤ great multytude ⁊ nōbre of his enmyes to withſtande his way ⁊ gyue hym batayll/ than yͤ kynge wᵗ a meke herte ⁊ a good ſpyryte lyfte vp his handes to almyghty god ⁊ beſought hym of his helpe/ ⁊ yͤ daye to ſaue his trewe ſeruaūtes. ¶Than our kynge gadred all his lordes ⁊ other people aboute hym ⁊ bad thē be of good chere/ for they ſholde haue a fayre and a gracyous vyctorye ⁊ yͤ better of all theyr enmyes/ ⁊ prayed thē to make thē redy vnto yͤ batayll/ for he wolde rather be deed yͤ day in yͤ felde/ than to be taken of his enmyes/ for he wolde neuer put yͤ realme of Englande to raunſome for his perſone. And the duke of yorke fell on his knees ⁊ beſought yͤ kynge of a bone yͭ he wolde graūte hym yͤ daye yͤ auaūtwarde in his batayll/ ⁊ yͤ kynge graūted hȳ his aſkynge ⁊ ſayde gramercy coſyn of yorke and prayed hym to make hym redy. And than bad he euery man to ordayne hym a ſtake of tree ⁊ ſharpe bothe endes yͭ yͤ ſtake myght be pytche in the erthe a ſlope yͭ theyr enmyes ſhold not ouercome thē on horſbacke/ for yͭ was theyr falſe purpoſe ⁊ arayed them for to ouer ryde our meny ſodaynly at yͤ fyrſt comyng on of them at the fyrſt brunte. And all yͤ nyght before yͤ batayll/ yͤ Frenſhe men made many grete fyers ⁊ moche reuell wᵗ howtynge and ſhowtynge ⁊ played our kynge ⁊ his lordes at yͤ dyce/ and an archer alway/ for a blanke of theyr money/ for they wende yͭ all had ben theyrs/ yͤ morne aroſe yͤ daye ganne ſprynge/ ⁊ yͤ kynge by good auyſe let araye his batayll ⁊ his wynges and charged euery man to kepe them hole togyder ⁊ prayed them all to be of good chere. And whanne they were redy he aſked what tyme of day it was ⁊ they ſaid pryme. ¶Than ſayd our kynge now it is good tyme for al Englande prayed for vs/ and therfore be of good chere ⁊ lette vs goo to our Iourney. And thā he ſayd wᵗ an hygh voyce in yͤ name of almyghty god ⁊ ſeynt George auaūte Baner and ſeynt George this day thyn helpe. And than yͤ Frēſhe men came prychynge downe as they wolde haue ouer ryden al our meny/ but god and our archers made thē ryght ſoone to ſtomble/ for our archers ſhotte neuer arowe amyſſe/ but it periſſhed ⁊ brought vnto yͤ grounde bothe horſe ⁊ man/ for they ſhotte that day for a wager. And our ſtakes made thē toppe ouer terue eche one ouer other yͭ they laye on hepes two ſperes length of hyght. And our kyng with his meny/ and with his men of armes ⁊ archers that ſhacked on them ſo thycke with arowes and layde on with ſtaues ⁊ oure kynge wᵗ his handes foughte manly that day. And thus god almighty and ſeynt George brought oure enemyes to grounde ⁊ gaue vs yͤ day yͤ vyctory. ¶There were ſlayne of Frenſhe men that daye in yͤ felde of Agyncourt more than .xi. M without pryſoners yͭ were taken/ ⁊ there were nombred that daye of Frenſhe men in yͤ felde more thā ſyxe ſcore .M. but god that daye fought for vs. And after came there tydynges to our kynge that there was a newe batayll of Frēſhe mē ordayned redy for to ſtele on hym ⁊ came towardes hym. And anone our kynge lette crye that euery man ſholde doo ſlee his pryſoners that he hadde taken/ and anone too make theym agayne redy for to fyghte with the Frenſhe men. And whan they ſawe that oure men kylled downe theyr pryſoners than they dyde withdrawe them ⁊ brake theyr batayll and all theyr araye. And thus our kynge as a worthy conquerour had that daye the vyctory in the felde of Agyncourte in Pycardy. And than our kynge retourned agayne there that the batayll was for to ſe what people were ſlayne of Englyſſhemen / and yf ony were hurte ẏ they myght be holpen. And there were deed in ẏ felde ẏ duke of Barrye / the duke of Alaunſon / ẏ duke of Brabande / ẏ erle of Nauerne chyef conſtable of Fraunce / ⁊ .viii. erles / ⁊ ẏ archebyſſhop of Sanſe / ⁊ of good barons a .C. ⁊ more / ⁊ of worthy knyghtes of greate alyaunce of cote armures a .M. ⁊ .v.C. ⁊ ſo of Englyſſhe men was deed ẏ daye the good duke of yorke ⁊ ẏ erle of Southfolke / ⁊ of all other Englyſſhe men there were not deed paſſynge .xxvi. bodyes thanked be god. And this batayll was on frydaye whiche was ſeynt Cryſpyne ⁊ Cryſpinianes daye in ẏ moneth of Octobre / ⁊ anone ẏ kynge cōmaunded to bury them and ẏ duke of Yorke to be caryed forth wᵗ hym ⁊ ẏ erle of Southfolk. And there were pryſoners ẏ duke of Orlyaunce / ẏ duke of Burbō ẏ erle of vendome ẏ erle of ewe the erle of Rychemonde ⁊ ſyr Burſycault Marchall of Fraunce / ⁊ many other worthy lordes were take there in this batayle of Agyncourt ⁊ were brought vnto the towne of Calays ⁊ ſo ouer ẏ see wᵗ ẏ kynge into England and landed at Douer in Kent wᵗ all his pryſoners in ſaufte thanked be god almyghty / ⁊ ſo came to Caunterbury ⁊ offred at ſeynt Thomas ſhryne / ⁊ ſo he rode forth through ẏ countre of Kent ẏ nexte waye vnto Eltham ⁊ there he reſted tyll ẏ he wolde come to London. And than the mayre of London ⁊ ẏ aldermen ſhreues / with all the worthy commyners ⁊ craftes came to ẏ blacke heth well and worthely arayed for to welcome our kynge wᵗ dyuerſe melodyes / ⁊ thanked almyghty god of his gracious victory ẏ he ſhewed for hȳ. And ſo ẏ kynge ⁊ his pryſoners paſſed forth by them tyll he came to ſeynt thomas wateryng / ⁊ there met with hym all relygyous men with proceſſyon ⁊ welcomed hym / ⁊ ſo ẏ kynge came rydynge wᵗ his pryſoners through ẏ cyte of London where ẏ thā was ſhowed many a fayre ſyght at all ẏ conduytes ⁊ at ẏ croſſe in chepe as in heuenly aray of aungelles / archaūgelles patryarkes prophetes ⁊ vyrgynes wᵗ dyuerſe melodyes ſenſynge ⁊ ſyngynge to welcome ẏ kynge ⁊ all the conduytes rennynge wᵗ wyne ⁊ ẏ kynge paſſed forthe to ſeynt Paules and there met wᵗ hym .xxiii. byſſhoppes all reueſted ⁊ myterd wᵗ ſenſers too welcome ẏ kynge ⁊ there they ſōge for his gracyous vyctory Te deū laudamꝰ. And there the kynge offred ⁊ toke his horſe and rode to weſtmynſtre / ⁊ than ẏ mayre toke his leue of ẏ kyng ⁊ rode home agayne.

¶ And in ẏ .iii. yere. of kynge Henryes reygne ẏ fyfth came ẏ Emperour of Almayne kynge of Rome ⁊ of Hungrye into Englande ⁊ ſo to the cytee of London. And ẏ mayre and ẏ aldermen wᵗ ẏ ſhreues and worthy craftes of London by ẏ kynges cōmaundement met with hym on ẏ blacke hethe in ẏ beſt aray ẏ they coude on horſbacke / and there they welcomed hym ⁊ brought hym vnto London wᵗ moche honour and greate reuerence. And at ſeynt Thomas wateryng there met wᵗ hym ẏ kynge wᵗ all his lordes in good araye. And there was a worthy metynge bitwene ẏ Emperoure ⁊ kynge Henry ẏ fyfth ⁊ there they kyſſed togyder ⁊ enbraced eche other and than ẏ kynge toke ẏ Emperour by ẏ hande ⁊ ſo they came rydynge through ẏ cyte of London vnto ſeynt Paules and there they alyghted ⁊ offred ⁊ all ẏ byſſhoppes ſtode reueſted wᵗ ſenſers in theyr handes ſenſynge to thē. And than they toke theyr bᵘᵗ lette them paſſe in peas on payne of dethe. And there paſſed out of the towne in one day more than .xv. C. women. And the kynge lette ſtuffe ẏ towne ⁊ caſtell wᵗ Englyſſhe men ⁊ ordayned there two capytaynes/ ẏ one for ẏ towne ⁊ ẏ other for the caſtell/ ⁊ charged them vpon theyr lyues to kepe well ẏ towne ⁊ ẏ caſtell. And or that our kyng went thens he gat Waleys Newelyn and layd a ſyege to Chyrburche/ ⁊ ẏ ſyege layde ẏ duke of Glouceſtre wᵗ a ſtronge power ⁊ a myghty/ ⁊ by proceſſe of tyme ⁊ made there a Capytayne of the ſame towne. ¶ And this ſame tyme the good erle of warwyke layde a ſyege vnto Dountfront ⁊ gatte it ⁊ put therin a Capytayne. And for to ſpeke more of the erle of Marche that the kynge ordeyned tho to ſcoure the ſee ⁊ to kepe the coſtes of Englande for all maner of Enemyes/ ẏ wynde aroſe vpon them ẏ they wende all to haue ben loſte/ but through the grace of almyghty god ⁊ good gouernaũce they rode afore ẏ yle of wyght all ẏ ſtorme. And there was loſte two Carackes ⁊ two Balyng[illegible]s wᵗ marchaũdyſe ⁊ other goodes ⁊ all ẏ people ẏ were wᵗ them/ ⁊ another Caracke broke vp before Hampton and threwe his maſte ouer the walles of the towne/ and this was on ſeynt Bartholomeus daye. And whan all this ſtorme was ceſſed this worthy erle of the Marche toke his ſhyppes wᵗ his meny ⁊ wente to the ſee and landed in Normandye at Hogges ⁊ ſoo rode forth towardes ẏ kynge/ ⁊ euer as he came ẏ Frenſſhe men fled. And there came to them an anthony pygge ⁊ folowed ẏ hooſt all the waye tyll they came to a great water/ ⁊ there they dradde to haue be drenched for the water cloſed them ſo ẏ they myghte noo where gette out. But at the laſte god almyghty and this pygge brought theym all ſaufe oute/ and there they caught them a gyde that knewe all the countre aboute and he brought theym through a quyche ſande and ſoo into an yle/ and they toke manye pryſoners by the way towarde the kyng in theyr Journey/ and ſo they came vnto Cane. And there ẏ kynge welcomed hym ⁊ toke his waye at Argẽtun/ ⁊ anone tho it was yelden to the kynge ⁊ they hadde theyr lyues ⁊ went theyr way. And than our kynge remeued vnto a ſtrõge towne that tho was called Ceſe/ and there was a fayre mynſtre and they yelded it vp anone vnto the kynge. And than the kynge wente frome thens to alaunſone ⁊ wan the towne and the brydge/ and the kynge ſende ẏ erle of warwyke to a towne that was called Beleſme with a great ⁊ ſtronge power/ and anone they yelde it ⁊ put them al to the kynges grace ⁊ in his mercy/ ⁊ ſo dydde many ſtronge townes ⁊ caſtels ẏ were in tho partyes. And fro thens they went into Vernyll in Perche/ ⁊ anone it was yelden to ẏ kynge bothe ẏ towne ⁊ ẏ caſtell/ ⁊ bodyes ⁊ goodes to ẏ kynges grace/ ⁊ ſo ẏ kynge gat ⁊ conquered all the townes and caſtelles pyles ſtrengthes and abbayes vnto the cyte of Rone.

¶ And in the fyfth yere of kynge Hẽryes reygne the fyfth/ syr Johan Oldcaſtell ẏ was the lord cobham was areſted for hereſye ⁊ brought vnto the Toure of London/ and anone after he brake the Toure and went into wales and there he kepte hym longe tyme. And at the laſt the lorde powys toke hȳ but he ſtode at great defẽce longe tyme ⁊ was ſore wounded or he wolde be taken/ ⁊ ſo ẏ lorde Powes men brought hym out of wales vnto London agayne in a whyrlcole ⁊ ſo he was brought too Weſtmynſtre/ and there was examyned of certayne poyntes that were put vpõ hym/ and he ſayd not naye/ and ſo he was conuycte of the clergye for his hereſye/ ⁊ dampned before the Juſtyces vnto the deth for treaſon. And than he was ladde to the Toure agayne/ and there he was layd on an hurdell ⁊ drawe through the Cytee to ſeynt Gyles felde/ and there was made a newe payre of galowes and a ſtronge chayne ⁊ a coller of yren for hym and there he was hanged ⁊ brente on the galowes and al for his lewdneſſe and his fals opynyons.

AND in the .vi. yere of kynge Henrye yͤ fyfth/ he ſend his uncle ſyr Thomas Beauforde duke of Exceſtre wͭ a fayre meyny of men of armes ⁊ archers before the cyte of Rone ⁊ there deſplayed his baner ⁊ ſend his herawdes unto the towne and badde them yelde that cite unto our kynge theyr lyege lord/ ⁊ they ſayd he toke the none to kepe ne none he ſholde haue there but yf it were dere bought and meued with theyr handes/ for other anſwere wolde they none gyue but gunnes. And there the duke toke good auyſement of the grounde all about. And anone there yſſued out of yͤ cytee a great meyny of men of armes bothe on horſbacke ⁊ on fote/ ⁊ anone our meyny mette with them and ouer threwe a great hepe of them/ ⁊ there were take ⁊ ſlayne .xxx. perſones of full ryght good mennes bodyes ⁊ the remenaunte fledde agayne into the towne/ ⁊ the duke went to Pount de larche unto yͤ kyng/ and tolde hym all how that he had ſpedde and how that he lyked the grounde And anone as yͤ duke was gone they caſt downe all the ſubbarbes aboute the cyte unto the harde grounde/ for bycauſe the kynge ſholde there no refreſſhynge haue at his comynge. And upon the fryday before Lammaſſe daye than nexte folowynge our kynge wͭ his hooſt came before Rone/ and anone he ſet his ſeege rounde about that cyte/ and anone he let laye his ordynaunces to the towne. And the kyng with his lordes were lodged within the charterhous and great ſtrength about them/ and that was in the eeſt partye of yͤ cyte/ and than yͤ duke of clarence lodged hym with all his ſtrength ⁊ power at the weſt ende in a waſte abbaye before the porte Chaus. And yͤ duke of Exceſtre with his meyny in the north ſyde before the porte Beauuoyſyn. And bytwene the duke of Clarence and the duke of Exceſtre was yͤ erle Marchall lodged with moche people and a ſtronge power before yͤ caſtel gate. And than the erle of Ormonde with the lorde haryngton/ and alſo the lorde Talbot with theyr retynue and cõpany nexte to hym. And than ſyr Iohñ Cornewayle with many other noble knyghtes ⁊ ſquyers of name with all theyr retynue laye with yͤ noble duke of Clarence. And than from the duke of Exceſtre towardes the kynge were lodged the lorde Roos/ ⁊ the lorde wyllybe with the lorde Phehewe/ and ſyr Wyllyam porter knyght with all theyr retynewe before the porte of ſeynt Hylary. And than was the erle of Morteyne with his retynue lodged in the abbaye of ſeynt Katherynes. And yͤ erle of Salyſbury with his retynue lay on that other ſyde of ſeynt Katherynes/ and ſyr Iohñ Gray knyght was lodged at yͤ abbaye that is called le mount de ſeynt Mychell. And ſyr Phylyp Leche knyght the kynges treſourer was lodged bitwene yͤ water of Seyn and the abbay and kepte the warde under the hyll. And the baron of Carowe was lodged under the water ſyde for to kepe the paſſage. And Jenyco the ſquyre laye nexte hym on the water ſyde/ and theſe two ſquyers kepte manly the water of Seyne ⁊ fought with theyr enemyes oftetymes. And on yͤ other ſyde of Seyne laye yͤ erle of Huntyngdon and mayſter Neuyl the erles ſone of weſtmerlande/ and ſyr Gylbert Umfreuyll erle of

Ponte / ⁊ ſyr Rycharde erle of Arundel / ⁊ the lorde Ferrers with theyr retynue before the porte du pount / and eche of theſe lordes had ſtronge ordynaunce / and the kynge dyde make at Pont de larche ouer the water of Seyn a ſtronge ⁊ a myghty chayne of yren ⁊ put it through great pyles faſte pyght in ẏ grounde ⁊ ẏ went ouer the ryuer of Seyne that no veſſel myght paſſe that in no kynde. And aboute that chayne the kyng let make a brydge ouer the water of Seyne that man ⁊ hors ⁊ al other caryage myght go to ⁊ fro at all tymes whan nede were. And thã came the erle of warwyke ⁊ had goten Dolfront vnto kynge Henry of Englande. And anone the kynge ſende ẏ erle of warwyke to Cawdebecke for to beſyege it. And whan he came before the towne he ſende his heraudes to the capytayne and badde hym yelde vp the towne vpon payne of deth / ⁊ anone he layde his ſyege. And the capytayne beſought ẏ erle that he myght come vnto his preſence and it pleaſed hym and ſpeke with hym. And ſo the good erle graũted hym for to come / ⁊ than he came out and foure other burgeys came with hym and entreated ſo with this erle that this ſame towne was vnder compoſycyõ to be done as the cytee of Rone dyd / ⁊ the erle graunted and conſented therto vpon this condycyon that the kynges nauy of Englande with his ordynaunce myght paſſe vp by them in ſaufte without ony maner of lette or deſturbaũce / and to his compoſycyon they ſet to theyr ſeales / and ẏ ſhyppes paſſed vp by them in ſaufte ⁊ came before the cyte of Rone vnto an honderd ſhyppes ⁊ there they caſte theyr ankers / ⁊ than this cite was beſyeged both by lande and by water. And whã all this was done ⁊ the ſhyppes comen vp / than came the erle of warwyke agayne to the kynge ⁊ lodged hym byfore the abbay of ſeynt Katherynes ⁊ ẏ kynge tyll that the abbaye entreated ⁊ ſo was yelden vnto the kynge. And than he remeued hym thens ⁊ lodged hym before ẏ porte Martynvyle / ⁊ tho was ẏ erle of Salyſbury commaunded by the kynge for to make hym redy for to ryde / but there came haſty tydynges ⁊ made hym to abyde / ⁊ ſo he retourned agayne ⁊ lodged hym beſyde the good erle of Huntyngdon tyll ẏ the ſyege was ended. And than came ẏ good duke of Gloceſtre the kynges broder from the ſyege of Chyrbourgh the whiche he had wonne ⁊ goten ⁊ ſtuffed it agayne vnto ẏ kynges behofe ⁊ profyte vnto the crowne of Englande / ⁊ whan he was comen to ẏ kynge before Rone he lodged with great ordynaũce before the porte ſeynt Hylary more nerer the towne ⁊ his enemyes thã ony other lay by .xl. roddes of lẽgth within ſhotte of quarell / ⁊ with hym lay ẏ erle of Suffolke ⁊ the lord of Burgeyny with all theyr retynue ⁊ ſtronge ordynaunce ⁊ manly ⁊ proudly fought euery daye with theyr enemyes euer whã they yſſued out of the cyte. And than came the pryour of Kylmayne of Irlande ouer the ſee to the kynge wᵗ a fayre meyny of men of armes after theyr owne coũtre gyſe to ẏ nombre of .xvi. hondred good mennes bodyes / ⁊ ẏ kynge welcomed thẽ ⁊ made them good chere. ¶ And than came tydynges to the kynge that ẏ kynge of Fraũce ⁊ the Dolphyn with the duke of Burgoyne wolde come downe ⁊ reſkowe the Cytee of Rone with a ſtronge power of all maner of nacyons ⁊ breke the ſyege / ⁊ caſteth hym to entre on the north ſyde of ẏ hooſt bycauſe that there was the beſt entrynge ⁊ mooſt playne / ⁊ therfore the kynge aſſygned ẏ pryour of Kylmayne wᵗ his power ⁊ lodged hym on the north ſyde of the hooſt for to ſtoppe theyr paſſage / ⁊ was by ẏ foreſt of Lyons / ⁊ of this ordynaũce they were full glad ⁊ ſo they wente forth in all haſt ⁊ kepte ẏ grounde ⁊ the place ẏ the kynge ⁊ his counſeyll had aſſygned / ⁊ they quyte them as good warryours to theyr kynge.

¶ Now wyll I tell you whiche were the chefe capytaynes ⁊ gouernours of ẏ cyte of Roan. Mon ſyr Guy Botiler was chefe capytayne both of ẏ cyte ⁊ of the caſtell / ⁊ Mon ſyr Termygan he was capytayn of porte Caux. Mon ſyr de la Roche he was capytayne of ẏ bylners. Mon ſyr Anthony he was Leuetenaūte of Mon ſyr Guy Botiler. Henry Chaunchyn he was the capytayne of ẏ porte de la poſt. John Mantreuas was capytayne of the porte de la caſtell. Mon ſyr de Pyzaux he was capytayne of ẏ porte of ſeynt Hylary. The baſtarde of Tyne he was capytayne of the porte Martynuyle. And graunde Jakes a worthy warryour he was capytayne of all men of warre / and he was gouernour outwarde bothe on horſbacke and on fote of al men of armes / whan they yſſued out of the cyte of all ẏ portes than he arayed them as they ſholde encountre with oure enmyes. And eche of ẏ capytaynes ladde fyue thouſande men of armes ⁊ ſome mo. And at ẏ fyrſt comynge of our kynge there were nombred by heraudes to thre hondred thouſande men ⁊ women ⁊ chyldren what yonge and olde / ⁊ amonge all theſe was many a manful man of his handes and ſo they preued them whā they yſſued out of ẏ cyte both on horſbacke ⁊ on fote / for they came neuer at one gate alone but at thre or foure gates ⁊ at euery gate two or thre thouſande of good mēnes bodyes armed ⁊ manfully encountred wt our Englyſhe mē ⁊ moche people ſlayne dyuerſe tymes with gonnes / quarelles ⁊ other ordynaūce. And this ſyege dured .xx. wekes and euer they of ẏ towne truſted to haue be reſkowed but there came none / ſo at ẏ laſt they kepte the towne ſo longe ẏ there dyed many a thouſande within the towne for defaute of mete of men ⁊ chyldren / for they had eten theyr horſes / dogges / ⁊ cattes that were in the towne. And oftentymes the men of armes drone out ẏ poore people at the gates of the towne for ſpendynge of vytayles / ⁊ anone our Englyſſh men drone them into the towne agayne. So at the laſte the capytayne of ẏ towne ſawe ẏ myſchefe and that they were not reſkowed / ⁊ alſo the ſcarcyte of vytayle / ⁊ that ẏ people deyed ſo for defaute of mete euery day many thouſandes / ⁊ alſo ſawe yonge chyldren lye ⁊ ſouke theyr moders pappes and were deed. Thā anone they ſende to the kynge beſechynge hym of his grace ⁊ mercy ⁊ brought ẏ keys of ẏ towne vnto the kynge ⁊ delyuered the towne to hym and all the ſowdyours voyded ẏ towne with theyr horſes ⁊ harneys / ⁊ ẏ comyns of the towne for to abyde ⁊ dwell ſtyll in the towne yerely to paye to hym ⁊ to his ſucceſſours for all maner cuſtomes and fee fermes ⁊ hacrentes. And than ẏ kynge entred into ẏ towne ⁊ reſted hym in the caſtell tyl the towne was ſet in rule and in gouernaunce.

¶ How ẏ kynge of Englande was made enherytour and regent of Fraūce / ⁊ how he wedded quene Katheryne.

AND anone after ẏ Roan was goten / Depe ⁊ many other townes in the baſe Normandye gaue them ouer with oute ſtroke or ſyege whan they vnderſtode that the kynge had goten Roan. Alſo this yere had be a peas made ⁊ ſworne bytwene ẏ duke of Burgoyne ⁊ the Dolphyn whiche were ſworne on goddes body that they ſholde loue and aſſyſte eche other agaynſt theyr enemyes. And after this contrary to this othe the duke Johā of Burgoyne was ſlayne and pyteouſly murdred in the presence of the Dolphyn wherfore ye Frensshmen were greatly displeased / and of very necessyte laboured to haue a treaty with the kynge of Englande / for ye kynge of Englande wanne of them day by day townes / castelles / and fortresses. ¶ And this same yere was quene Jane arested and brought into ye castell of Ledes in Kent. And one frere Randulfe a doctour of dyuynyte her confessour whiche afterward was slayne by ye persone of the Toure fallyng at wordes and debate. And afterwarde quene Jane was delyuered. ¶ And in ye vii. yere bothe the kynge of Frāce and of Englande were acorded and kynge Henry was made heyre and regent of Frāce and wedded dame Katheryne ye doughter of Frāce at Troyes in Champayne / on Trinite sonday. And thus was made by the meane of Phylyp newe made duke of Burgoyne whiche was bounde to kynge Henre to auenge his faders deth and was become Englysshe. And thā the kynge with his newe wyfe went to Parys where as he was ryally receyued / and from thens he went with his lordes and the duke of Burgoyne and many other lordes of Fraunce and layde sege to dyuerse townes and castels ye helde of the Dolphyns partye and wanne them / but ye towne of Melon helde lōge tyme for ther in were good defenders. ¶ In ye viii. yere the kynge and the quene came ouer see and landed on Candelmasse daye in ye mornynge at Douer. And the xiiii. day of Feuerer the kynge came to Londō / and the quene came the xxi. daye of the same moneth / and the xxiiii. of the same she was crowned at Westmynstre. ¶ Also that same yere anone after Ester ye kynge helde a parlement at Westmynstre / at whiche he purposed it was ordeyned ye golde in Englysshe coyne shulde be weyed / and none receyued but by weyght. And anone after Wytsontyde the kynge sayled to Calays and passed forthe in to Frāce. And in ye xxii. daye of Marche before the kynge came ouer ye duke of Clarence was slayne in Fraunce and dyuers other were taken prysoners as the erle of Huntyngton / the erle of Somerset with dyuerse other / and al was bycause they wolde not take none archers with them / but thought to haue ouercome ye Frensshmē them selfe without archers / and yet whā he was slayn ye archers came and rescowed the body of the duke whiche they wolde haue caryed with them / god haue mercy on his soule he was a valyaūt man. And the same yere bytwene Crystmasse and Candelmasse the towne of Melon was yelden vnto ye kynge. ¶ In the ix. yere on seynt Nycholas daye in Decembre was borne Henry the kynges fyrste begoten sone at Wyndsore / whose godfaders at ye font stone was syr Henry bysshop of Wynchestre and Johū duke of Bedforde / and ye duchesse of Holande was godmoder / and Henry Chycheley archebysshop of Caūterbury was godfader at cōfyrmynge. ¶ And in the x. yere the cyte of Meus in Brye was goten whiche had ben longe besyeged. And this same yere ye quene shypped at Hamptō and sayled ouer to the kynge in Frāce where she was worshypfully receyued of ye kyng and also of the kynge of Fraunce her fader and of her moder / and thus kyng Henry wanne fast Frāce and helde great estate and sat at a greate feest in Parys crowned and ye quene also whiche had not ben sene before / and all people resorted vnto his courte / but as to the kynge of Frāce he helde none estate ne rule but was lefte almoost alone. ¶ Also in this yere the wedercocke was set vpon Poules steple at Londō. And this yere in the moneth of Auguste the kynge waxed seke at Boys de vyncene / and whan he sawe he shulde dye he made his testament and deuysed many noble thynges for his soule and deuoutly receyued all the ryghtes of holy chirche/in ſoo ferre forth that whan he was anoynted he ſayd the ſeruyce with the preeſt/⁊ at the verſe of the pſalme of (Miſere mei deus) that was (Benigne fac dñe in bona voluntate tua ſyon: vt edificentur muri hieruſalem) he badde tary there ⁊ ſayd thus. O good lorde thou knoweſt ẏ myn entent hath ben ⁊ yet is yf I myght lyue to reedyfye the walles of Iheruſalē. And thā the preeſt proceded forth and made an ende. And anone after this mooſt noble prynce ⁊ vyctoryous kynge floure in his tyme of cryſten chyualrye/ whome all the worlde doubted gaue his ſoule into the handes of god and deyed ⁊ made an ende of his naturall lyfe at the forſayd Boys de vyncene beſyde Parys the.xxxvi.yere of his aege/on whoſe ſoule god haue mercy. Amen. Than was the body enbaumed ⁊ cered and layd in a ryall chare ⁊ an ymage lyke to hym was layd vpō the corps open with dyuerſe baners ⁊ horſes couered rychely with the armes of Englande ⁊ Fraūce/ ⁊ alſo the olde armes of ſeynt Edwarde/ ſeynt Edmonde/ ⁊ other with great multytude of torches with whome went ẏ kynge of Scotland and many other lordes whiche accompanyed ẏ body tyll it came to Weſtmynſtre by London in Englande/ ⁊ in euery towne by ẏ waye he had ſolempnely his dyryge on the euen ⁊ maſſe on the morne ⁊ moch almes was gyuen to poore people by the waye. And the.vii.daye of Nouembre after ẏ corps was brought through Londō with great reuerēce ⁊ ſolempnyte to weſtmynſter where as he now lyeth/ it was worſhypfully buryed/ ⁊ after was layde on his tombe a ryall ymage lyke hym ſelf of ſyluer ⁊ gylte whiche was made at the coſte of quene Katheryne. And thus ended ⁊ is entered ⁊ buryed ẏ noble kynge Henry the fyfth/ vpon whoſe ſoule and al cryſten ſoules god haue mercy. Amen.

¶ Of the lawe of kynge Henry the fyfth/ and what he ordayned for kynge Rycharde and for hym ſelfe after his deth/

Here is to be noted that this kynge Henry the fyfth was a noble prynce after he was kynge ⁊ crowned how be it before in his youth he had bē wylde recheles ⁊ ſpared no thynge of his luſt ne deſyres but accōpliſſhed thē after his lykynge but as ſone as he was crowned anoynted ⁊ ſacred anone ſodaynly he was chaūged into a new man ⁊ ſet al his entent to lyue vertuouſly in mayntaynynge of holy chirche/ the deſtroyenge of herytykes/ kepynge Iuſtyce ⁊ defendynge of his realme ⁊ ſubgettes ⁊ for aſmoch as his fader had depoſed by his labour ẏ good kynge Rychard ⁊ pyteouſly made hȳ to dye/ ⁊ for ẏ offence done to hym agaynſt his legeaūce he had ſend to Rome to be aſſoiled therof. for whiche offence our holy fader the pope enioyned him to make hȳ to be prayed for perpetually/ ⁊ lyke as he had done to be takē frō hym his naturall lyf therfore he ſholde do fynde.iiii.tapers to brēne perpetually about his body ẏ for ẏ extynccyon of of his bodely lyf his ſoule may euer be remēbred ⁊ lyf in heuē ī ſpirituall lyf/ ⁊ alſo that he ſholde euery weke on ẏ daye as it came about of his deth haue a ſolempne maſſe of requiē ⁊ on ẏ euen afore a dirige with.ix.leſſons ⁊ a dole to poore people alway on ẏ day of a.xi.ſhyllynges and.viii. pens to be deled peny mele/ ⁊ ones in the yere at his anniuerſary his enteremēt to be holden in ẏ mooſt honeſt wyſe/ ⁊ to be deled ẏ day.xx.poūd in pens to poore people/ ⁊ to euery monke.xx.ſ̄/ whiche al theſe thynges perfourmed this noble kyng for his fader/ for kynge Henry the fourth his fader perfourmed it not durynge his lyfe/ of whome as it is ſayd that god dyd touche hym ⁊ was lepre or that he dyed.

¶ And alſo this noble prynce let do cal al the abbotes ⁊ pryours of ſeynt Benettes ordre in Englande ⁊ had al them into the chapytre hous of weſtmynſter for ye reformacyon of theyr ordre wherin he had communycacyõ / ⁊ alſo with byſſhops ⁊ men of the ſpyrytualte / in ſo ferre forth ye they doubted ſore as that he wolde haue had ye tẽporalties out of theyr handes / wherfore by ye aduyſe labours ⁊ procurynge of ye ſpyrytualte encouraged ye kynge for to chalẽge Normãdy ⁊ his ryght in Frãce to ye entente to ſet hym a worke there ye he ſholde not ſeke none occaſyons to entre in to ſuche maters / ⁊ than all his lyfe tyme afterwarde he laboured ⁊ was beſye in ye warre in cõquerynge a great parte of the realme of Frãce / ⁊ ſo afterward that by the grement of ye kynge Charles he had the gouernaunce ⁊ the rule of ye realme of Frãce / ⁊ he was proclamed regent and heyre of Frãce. And ſoo notwithſtandynge for all this greate warre ye he had / neuertheleſſe yet he remembred his ſoule ⁊ alſo thought ye he was mortall ⁊ nedes muſte dye / for whiche cauſe he ordeyned by his lyfe tyme ye place of his ſepulture where as he is buryed / and hath euery day thre maſſes perpetually ſongen in a chapel ouer his ſepulture of the whiche ye myddle maſſe ⁊ the fyrſt ⁊ the laſte maſſe ſhalbe as it is aſſygned by hym as it appereth by theſe verſes folowynge.

Henrici miſſe quinti ſunt hic tabulate.
Que ſucceſſiue ſint ꝑ monachos celebrate

¶ Die dñica.

Prima ſit aſſũpte de feſto virginis alme.
Poſcit poſtremã xp̃s de morte reſurgens

¶ Feria ſecunda.

Prima ſalutate de feſto virginis extat
Nũciat angelicis laudẽ poſtrema choris

¶ Feria tercia.

Eſſe deum natũ de virgine prima fatetur
Cõmemorat natũ ſic vltima miſſe mariã

¶ Feria quarta.

Prima celebret ad honor pneumatis almi
Vltima cõceptã denunciat eſſe mariã

¶ Feria quinta.

Semper prima coli debet de corpore xp̃i
Vltima ſit facta de virgine purificata.

¶ Feria ſexta.

Conuenit vt prima celebret de cruce ſctã
Atq; ſalutate ſiet poſtrema maria.

¶ Sabbato.

Oĩs ad ſctõs eſt prima colenda ſupernos
Vltima de requie ꝑ defunctis petit eſſe
Semper erit media de ꝓpietate dñi.

¶ And yet the noble kynge Henry ye fyfth founded two houſes of relygyon one is called Syon beſyde Braynforde of the ordre of ſeynt Brygytte bothe of men ⁊ women ⁊ on ye other ſyde of the ryuer of Tamyſe an hous of monkes of Chartrehous / in whiche two places he is contynually prayed for nyght ⁊ daye / for euer whan they of Syon reſt than they of ye Chartrehous do theyr ſeruyce / and in lyke wyſe whan they of ye Chartrehous reſt ye other goth to / ⁊ by ryngynge of the belles of eyther place eche knoweth whã they haue ended theyr ſeruyce whiche be nobly endowed / ⁊ do dayly there great almes dedes / as in ye chartrehous certayne chyldrẽ be foũde to ſcole / ⁊ at Syon certayn almes gyuen dayly. And yet beſyde al this he founded a recluſe the whiche ſhall be alway a preeſt to pray for hym by the ſayd chartrehous whiche preeſt is ſuffycyently endowed for hym ⁊ a ſeruaunt. Lo here may all prynces take enſample by this noble prynce ye reygned ſoo lytell tyme not fully .x. yere ⁊ dyde ſo many noble actes as well for his ſoule to be perpetually remembred ⁊ prayed for / as in his cõqueſtes ⁊ he beynge ĩ his moſte luſty age depoſed ⁊ eſchewed ſyn ⁊ was a great Juſtycer / in ſomoche ye all ye prynces of cryſtendome drad hym ⁊ alſo of also of hethenes/ ⁊ he had determyned in hym ſelfe yf god wolde haue ſpared hym to haue warred on the ſaraſyns and for to knowe ẏ ayde of other prynces ⁊ all ẏ paſſages in ẏ Journeye he ſende a knyght of Henaude named Hugh de Lanoye vnto Iheruſalē/ but or he retourned he dyed at Boys de Vyncenne in the .xxxvi. yere of his age/ on whoſe ſoule god haue mercy. Amen.

Felix ẏ .v. was pope whan Eugenius was depoſed .ix. yere. This Felix was duke of Sauoye a deuoute prynce and an olde man/ and he ſawe his chyldes chylde. This man whan he lyued an holy lyfe was choſen pope of ẏ counſeyle of Baſyle/ ⁊ Eugeny was depoſed. ⁊ there was ſtryfe longe tyme/ ⁊ he had no great obedyence for ẏ depoſycyon of Eugenye. And at ẏ laſt Eugeny deceſſed/ ⁊ than Felix reſygned to Nycholas for fauoure of peas to be had ⁊ he was made Legate of Fraunce ⁊ Cardynall of Sabian'. This was ẏ .xxiii. ſtryfe bytwyxt Eugeny ⁊ Felix ⁊ it dured .xvi. yere ⁊ this was a newe cauſe ⁊ neuer ſene before/ for ẏ counſeyle of Baſyle depoſed Eugeny ẏ very pope/ and there was no more for he obeyed not the decrees of ẏ counſeyle of Cōſtantinople as they ſayde ne he charged not to obeye ẏ counſeyle of Baſyle/ but he ſayde rather the contrary ſholde be done than as they decreed. Wherfore there aroſe a greate alteracion in that mater/ for ſome ſayd one way ⁊ ſome another ⁊ coude not accorde to this day/ for ẏ one partye ſayd ẏ ẏ coūſeyle was aboue ẏ pope/ ⁊ another party ſayd ẏ contrary ẏ the pope was aboue ẏ counſeyle/ but they lefte it vndetermyned/ and therfore god muſt dyſpoſe for ẏ beſt. ¶ Albert was Emperoure after Sygyſmonde one yere. This Albert was ẏ duke of Auſtre ⁊ neuewe to Sygyſmonde/ and therfore he was kynge of Beme ⁊ of Ungary for his doughter/ for other heyre he lefte none. This man was Emperour of Almayne/ but anone he was poyſoned ⁊ dyed/ and he was in all thynges a vertuous man ẏ al men ſayde ẏ he was a preſydent of all kynges. ¶ Fredericus ẏ thyrde was Emperour after hym. This Frederyke was duke of Oſteryke ⁊ choſen Emperoure of Almayne/ but it was longe or he was crowned of ẏ pope for deuyſyon/ and at ẏ laſt there was made an vnyte/ and he was crowned wt a great honoure of ẏ pope in ẏ cytee ⁊ was a prayſable man ⁊ a quyete ⁊ of a ſynguler pyte ⁊ he hated not the clergy he wedded the kynges doughter of Portyngale/ ⁊ in his tyme whyles ẏ he reygned he made a grete conuocacyon of prynces in Ratyſpona for ẏ Incurs of ẏ Turkes/ ⁊ ſhewed vnto them ẏ now wtin .xx. yere cryſtendome was made leſſe by .ii. Empyre/ ⁊ he warned thē ẏ they ſholde be redy to reſyſte hȳ. And ẏ imperyall cyte of Conſtantynople was taken at the ſame tyme of ẏ myſbyleuynge Turkes ⁊ betrayed by a Januens whome for his laboure ẏ Turke made a kynge as he promyſed hym/ ⁊ ẏ .iii. day he called hym to hym ⁊ dydde hange hym for his dyſceyte to his mayſter. And there was great ſorowe ⁊ wepynge amonge the cryſten people for ẏ loſſe of ẏ noble cyte/ for many a cryſten was ſlayne ⁊ innumerable were ſolde/ ⁊ the Emperoure was ſlayne/ ⁊ for enuye ẏ Turke cauſed his heed to be ſmytē of whā he was deed And almooſt all ẏ fayth in ẏ lande of grece fayled. ¶ Nicholas the .v. a Januens was pope after Felix .viii. yere. This Nicholas was choſen at Rome in the place of Eugeny/ ⁊ yet ẏ ſtryfe henge ſtyll/ and a lytell ⁊ a lytell they obeyed hym/ and al men merueyled ẏ a mā of ſo pore a nacyon ſholde obteyne agaynſt ẏ duke of Sauoy ẏ whiche was choſyn ⁊ ayed almoſt to all the prynces of cryſtendome and eueryche one left hym. Thã in the yere after there was a peas made / & felix reſygned for it pleaſed our lorde his name to be gloryfyed by an obiecte of yͤ worlde as yͤ Januens was in cõparyſon of yͤ pope. This Nicholas was a mayſter in deuynyte / & an actyf man & a ryche man in conſcyence and many thynges yͤ were fallen he buylded agayne. And all the walles of Rome he renewed for drede of the Turke. And there was a verſe made of this vertue & publyſſhed in the cyte (Lux fuiſti mũdo ceſſit felix Nicholao) And that in the yere of oure lorde. M.CCCC.xix. The yere of grace with a great deuoſyon was confyrmed & innumerable people wente to the apoſtles ſetes.

¶ How kynge Henry yͤ ſyxte reygned beynge a chylde not one yere of age / and of the batayle of Vernoyle in Perche.

After kynge Henry the fyfth reygned Henry his ſone but a chylde & not fully one yere of age / whoſe reygne began yͤ fyrſt daye of Septẽbre in yͤ yere of our lorde. M.cccc.xxii. This kynge beynge in his cradle was moche doubted & drade bycauſe of yͤ great conqueſt of his fader and alſo the wyſedome and guydynge of his uncles yͤ duke of Bedforde & the duke of Glouceſter. ¶ This yere the .xxi. daye of Octobre deyed Charles yͤ kynge of Fraunce / & lyeth buryed at ſeynt Denys. And yͤ duke of Bedforde was made regent of Fraũce / & yͤ duke of Glouceſtre was made protectour & defendour of Englande. ¶ And in yͤ fyrſt daye of Marche after was ſyr Wyllyam Tayloure preeſt degraded of his preeſthode / & on yͤ morowe after he was brente in Smythfelde for heresy. ¶ This yere ſyr James Stewarde kynge of Scottes maryed dame Jane yͤ ducheſſe doughter of Clarence yͤ whiche ſhe had by her fyrſt huſbande yͤ erle of Somerſet at ſeynt Mary ouerys.

¶ Alſo this yere yͤ .xvii. daye of Auguſte was yͤ batayle of Vernoyll in Perche bytwene yͤ duke of Bedforde regent of Fraunce & yͤ duke of Alanſome whiche was a ful great batayle. The duke of Bedford had on his ſyde yͤ erle of Salyſbury Mountagu & yͤ lorde Talbot & al yͤ power yͤ he coude make in Normãdy & yͤ garyſons kepe and alſo many Capytayns wᵗ moche people of yͤ duke of Burgoyne. And on that other ſyde was yͤ duke of Alanſome / yͤ duke of Turon yͤ was yͤ erle of Douglas / & yͤ erle of Boughan wᵗ many erles of Fraunce & a great cõpany of Scottes & armynakes. And thã yͤ erle Douglas called yͤ duke of Bedforde in ſcorne John wᵗ yͤ leden ſwerde. And he ſend hym worde agayne yͤ he ſholde fynde yͤ day yͤ his ſwerde was of ſtele. And yͤ batayle Joyned on bothe ſydes & fought longe tyme yͤ there wyſt no mã who ſholde haue yͤ better a great whyle / but at yͤ laſt as god wolde yͤ victory fel unto the Englyſſhe partie / for there were ſlayne yͤ erle Douglas whiche a lytell before was made duke of Turo / yͤ erle Bughan / yͤ erle Almarre / yͤ erle of Tonnar / yͤ erle of Vaſtedor & yͤ vycounte of Nerbon whiche was one of the yͤ ſlewe yͤ duke John of Burgoyn knelynge before yͤ Dolphyn & many more unto yͤ nombre of .x.M. & more. And there was taken pryſoners yͤ duke of Alanſome and many other lordes & gentylles of Fraunce / but Scottes that daye were ſlayne downe ryght the ſubſtaunce of theym all. ¶ And the thyrde yere of kynge Henry the ſyxte the duke of Glouceſtre maryed the ducheſſe of Hollande and wente ouer ſee with her into Henaude for to take poſſeſſyon of his wyues enherytaũce where he was honorably receyued and taken for lorde of that lande/but ſoone after he was fayne to retourne home agayne in to Englande and left his wyfe ⁊ al his treſoure yͭ he hadde brought wͭ hym in a towne that is called Mounſe in Henaude/whiche promyſed to be trewe to hym. Notwithſtandynge they delyuered yͤ lady to yͤ duke of Burgoyne whiche ſend her to Gaunt. And frō thens he eſcaped in a mannes clothynge and came into zelande to a towne of her owne called Myzyte. And frome thens ſhe wente to a towne in Hollande called yͤ Gowde/⁊ there ſhe was ſtronge ynough and withſtode the forſayd duke of Burgoyne. ¶ And ſoone after yͤ duke of Glouceſtre ſende ouer ſee into zelande yͤ lorde Fytz Water with certayne men of armes and archers for to helpe ⁊ ſocoure the forſayd ducheſſe of Holande/whiche landed in a place in zelande called Byrwers hauē/where yͤ lordes of yͤ coūtre came downe ⁊ fought wͭ hȳ/⁊ in cōclusyon he was fayne to wͭdrawe hym ⁊ his meny to yͤ ſee agayn. But yet he ſlewe ⁊ hurte dyuers lordes ⁊ moche people of yͤ ſame coūtre/⁊ ſo retourned home agayn into Englād wͭ his meny ⁊ preuayled nothynge. ¶ And alſo this ſame yere the erle of Salyſbury/yͤ erle of Suffolke/yͤ lorde Wylleby/⁊ yͤ lorde Scales wͭ theyr retynewe layd ſyege to yͤ cyte of Mauns yͤ whiche cyte was yolden to theym wͭ many other ſtronge townes ⁊ caſtels to yͤ nombre of xxxvi. ¶ This tyme all Normandye ⁊ a great parte of Fraunce vnto Orlyaunce was vnder the obeyſaunce of yͤ kynge of Englande/⁊ all the remenaunt of Fraunce was in great trybulacyon ⁊ myſchyef.

¶ How there was lyke to haue ben a great fraye bytwene the Cardynall ⁊ the duke of Glouceſtre. And of yͤ coronacyon of kynge Henry yͤ ſyxte bothe in Englande and in Fraunce.

IN yͤ fourthe yere yͤ ſame nyght yͭ yͤ mayre of London Iohn̄ Couentre hadde taken his charge was a great watche in London for a fraye yͭ was bytwene yͤ byſſhop of Wynchestre/⁊ the duke of Glouceſtre protectour. ⁊c. For yͤ mayre wͭ the people of yͤ cyte wolde abyde by yͤ duke of Glouceſtre as protectoure ⁊ defendour of yͤ realme/but by labour of lordes that wente bytwene/and in eſpecyall by yͤ labour of yͤ prynce of Portyngale/there was a poyntement taken yͭ there was no harme. ¶ And after yͤ batayle of Vernoyle in Perche/the duke of Bedforde came ouer into Englande. And on whytſondaye this ſame yere at Leyceſtre he dubbed kyng Henry knyght/⁊ forth wͭ yͤ ſayd kynge Henry dubbed all theſe knyghtes whoſe names folowe/yͭ is to wyte ſyr Rycharde duke of Yorke/alſo yͤ ſone ⁊ heyre of Northfolke/yͤ erle of Oxforde/the erle of Weſtmerlande/yͤ ſone ⁊ heyre of the erle of Northumberlande/yͤ ſone ⁊ heyre of the erle of Vrmonde/yͤ lorde Roos/ſyr Iames botteler/yͤ lord Matrauas/ſyr Henry gray of Tankeruyle/ſyr wyllyā neuyl/lorde Fawconbrydge/Syr George Neuyll lorde Latymer/yͤ lorde welles/yͤ lorde Barkle/yͤ ſone ⁊ heyre to yͤ lorde Talbot/ſyr Rauſe grey of werke/ſyr Robert vere/ſyr Rycharde Graye/ſyr Edmonde hongerforde/ſyr Iohn̄ botteler/ſyr Raynolde Cobham/ſyr Iohan paſſheley/ſyr Thomas tūſtal. Iohn̄ chydiok/ſyr Rauf langeford/ſyr Wyllyam drury/ſyr wylliam Thomas. Rycharde carbonel/ſyr Rycharde wydevyle/ſyr Iohn̄ ſhyrdelowe/Syr wyllyam Chayn/ſyr wyllyam Babyngton/ſyr Iohn̄ Iune/⁊ ſyr Gylberte beauchāpe. ¶ Ite in yͤ .v. yere yͤ duke of Bedforde wͭ the ducheſſe his wyfe wente ouer ſee to Calays/⁊ a lytell before wente ouer ſee Henry byſſhoppe of Wynchestre. And on yͤ daye of yͤ Annuncyacyon of our lady in our lady chyrche at Calays ẏ byſſhoppe of Wyncheſtre as he hadde ſonge maſſe was made Cardynall ⁊ he knelynge before ẏ hygh awter the duke of Bedforde ſet the hat vpon his hed/and there were his bulles redde aſwell of his charge as of the reioyſynge of his benefyces ſpirituall ⁊ temporall. ¶ And this ſame yere was great habundaunce of rayne/ ẏ the ſubſtance of heye ⁊ alſo of corne was deſtroyed/for it rayned almooſt euery other day. ¶ And this ſame yere ẏ good erle of Salyſbury ſyr Thomas of Mountagu layde ſyege vnto Orlyaunce/at ẏ whiche ſyege he was ſlayne with a gonne ẏ came out of ẏ towne/on whoſe ſoule god haue mercy. Amen. For ſyth that he was ſlayne Englyſſhe men neuer gate nor preuayled in Fraunce/but euer after began to loſe lytell and lytell tyll all was loſte.

¶ Alſo this ſame yere a Bryton murdred a good wydowe in her bedde wͭout algate whiche wydowe founde hym for almeſſe and he bare away all ẏ ſhe hadde/⁊ after this he toke the gyrthe of holy chyrche at ſeynt George in Southwarke/and there he toke ẏ croſſe ⁊ forſwore this lande/and as he went it happened ẏ he came by the place where he dyd this curſed dede in ẏ ſuburbes in London. And ẏ women of ẏ ſame paryſſhe came out wͭ ſtaues ⁊ canel donge ⁊ ſlewe ⁊ made an ende of hym there. Not withſtandynge ẏ conſtables and many other men beynge preſent for to kepe hym/for there were ſoo many women and had no pyte. ¶ Alſo this ſame yere ẏ duke of Northfolke wͭ many gentylmen and yomen toke his barge/ẏ .viii. daye of Nouembre at ſeynt Marye oueres for to haue gone thorugh London brydge/and thrugh myſgydynge of the barge it ouerthrewe on ẏ pyles/⁊ many men drowned but the duke hymſelf wͭ two or thre leped vpon pyles and ſo were ſaued wͭ helpe of men that were aboue ẏ brydge wͭ caſtynge downe ropes/by ẏ whiche ropes they ſaued them ſelfe. This ſame yere on ſeynt Leonardes day kynge Henry beynge .vii. yere of age was crowned at Weſtmynſtre at whoſe Coronacyon were made .xxxvi. knyghtes. ¶ This yere on ſeynt Georges day he paſſed ouer ſee to Calays towarde Fraūce. ¶ About this tyme ⁊ afore ẏ reame beyng in great myſery ⁊ trybulacyon the Dolphyn began to make warre ⁊ gate certayne places ⁊ made dyſtreſſes vpō the Englyſſhe men by ẏ meane of his Capytaynes/ ẏ is to ſaye la Heer ⁊ Poton de ſayntraylles/⁊ in eſpecyall a mayde the whiche they named la pucelle de dieu.

This mayde rode lyke a womā and was a valyaūt capytayne amonge them and toke vpon her many great enterpryſes in ſomoche ẏ they had a byleue for to haue recouered al theyr loſſes by her. Notwithſtandynge at ẏ laſte after many great feates/by the helpe ⁊ prudence of ſyr Iohan Luxemburgh ẏ whiche was a noble Capytayne of ẏ duke of Bourgoyn ⁊ many Englyſſh men Pycardes ⁊ Burgonyons whiche were of oure partye before ẏ towne of Compyne ẏ .xxiii. daye of Maye the forſayd pucell was taken in the felde armed lyke a mā ⁊ many other capytaynes wͭ her ⁊ were all brought to Rone ⁊ ther ſhe was putte into pryſon. And there ſhe was Iudged by lawe to be brēt. And thā ſhe ſayd ẏ ſhe was wͭ chylde/wherby ſhe was a whyle reſpyted. But in concluſyon it was founden ẏ ſhe was not with chylde/⁊ than ſhe was brent in Rone/and ẏ other Capytayns were put to raunſome and entreated as mē of warre ben acuſtomed. ¶ And this ſame yere about candelmaſſe Rycharde hunder a wulle packer was dampned for an heretyke ⁊ brente at toure hylle. ¶ And aboute myddelenten ſyr Thomas baggely preeſt ⁊ vycare of the

Mauen in Eſſex beſyde walden was dyſgraded ⁊ dãpned for an heretyke ⁊ brente in ſmythfelde. ¶ And alſo in yͤ ſame yere whyles yͤ kynge was in Fraũce there were many heretykes ⁊ lolardes yͭ had purpoſed to make a ryſynge ⁊ caſt bylles in dyuers places/ but bleſſyd be almyghty god yͤ capytayne of thẽ was taken whoſe name was Wyllyã Mãdeuyll a weuer of Abendon ⁊ baylyf of yͤ ſame towne/ whiche named hymſelfe Jacke Sharpe of wygmoreſlande in wales. And afterwarde he was beheded at yͤ forſayde Abẽdon in yͤ whytſonweke on yͤ tewſday. ¶ In this ſame yere the .vi. daye of Decembre kynge Henry the .vi. was crowned kynge of Fraunce at Parys in the chyrche of our lady wͭ great ſolempnyte/ there beynge preſente yͤ Cardynall of Englande/ yͤ duke of Bedforde/ ⁊ manye other lordes of Fraũce ⁊ of Englande. And after this coronacyon ⁊ great feeſt holden at Paris the kẏge retourned frome thens to Rone and ſo towarde Calays/ ⁊ yͤ .ix. day of February landed at Douer/ whome all yͤ comuners of kent met at Beramdon bytwene Caunterbury ⁊ Douer all in reed hodes/ and ſo came forth tyll he came to the blacke hethe where he was mette with yͤ mayre Johñ Wellys with all yͤ craftes of London clothed all in whyte/ and ſo they brought hym vnto London yͤ .xxi. day of the ſame moneth. ¶ And this ſame yere was reſtraynte of the wulles of Calays made by yͤ ſouldyours bycauſe they were not payed of theyr wages/ wherfore yͤ duke of Bedforde regent of Fraũce beynge than capytayne came to Calays the tewſdaye in the Eſter weke. And than on the morowe after many ſouldyours of yͤ towne were areſted and put into warde. And in yͤ ſame weke he rode to terewyn/ and by the meane of yͤ byſſhop of Terewyn he wedded yͤ erles doughter of ſeynt Paule ⁊ came agayne to Calays/ ⁊ than the .xi. daye of June on ſeynt Barnabeys daye there were foure ſouldyours of Calays yͭ were yͤ chief cauſers of yͤ reſtraynt of yͤ wulles byheded yͭ is to wyte Johan Maddeley/ Johñ Laũday/ thomas palmyer/ ⁊ Thomas Talbot/ ⁊ an hondred ⁊ ten banyſſhed oute of yͤ towne that ſame tyme/ and before were banyſſhed an hondred ⁊ .xx. ſouldyours. And on mydſomer euen after came yͤ lorde reggent ⁊ his wyfe to London.

AND than aboute this tyme dyed pope Martyn/ and after hym Eugeny the .iiii. was pope. This man was peaſybly choſen in yͤ courte of Rome by yͤ Cardynalles ⁊ was very ⁊ Indubytate pope/ but wͭin a ſhorte tyme after he was put and expulſed out of Rome in ſuche a manere yͭ he was fayne for to flee naked. ¶ In this ſame tyme was yͤ counſeyle of Baſyle/ to the whiche coũſeyle Eugeny yͤ pope was cyted to come/ ⁊ bycauſe yͭ he came not they depoſed hỹ/ but he roughte not ne ſet not therby but gate yͤ cyte of Rome and abode ſtyl pope .xii. yere. ¶ This tyme aboute whytſontyde yͤ heretykes of Praghe were deſtroyed/ for at two Journeys were deſtroyed of theym more than .xxiii. M. with theyr Capytaynes/ yͭ is to were Procapius Saplico ⁊ Lupus preſbyter. ¶ There was taken on lyue mayſter Peres clerke an Englyſſhe man ⁊ an heretyke. And alſo the ſame yere was a ſtronge froſt ⁊ longe durynge the whiche laſted .xi. wekes/ for it began vpon ſeynt Katherynes euen/ and laſted vnto ſeynt Scolaſticus day in February/ in the whiche tyme yͤ vyntage yͭ came frome Burdeux came ouer ſhoters hylle. ¶ This yere was the counſeyle of Aras and a great treate bytwene yͤ kynge of Englãde and the kynge of Fraunce where were aſſembled many great lordes of bothe partyes at whiche counſeyle was offred to yͤ kynge of Englande great thynges by yͤ meane of a Legate that came fro Rome yͤ whiche was Cardynall of ſeynt Croſſe / whiche offers were refuſed by the Cardynall of Englande / ⁊ other lordes yͤ there were for yͤ kynge / wherfore yͤ duke of Burgoyne yͤ whiche hadde ben longe Englyſſhe ſworne forſoke our partye and retourned Frenſſhe by yͤ meane of yͤ forſayd Legate / ⁊ made a peas wͭ the Frenſſhe kynge receyuynge of yͤ kȳge for recompenſynge of his faders deth yͤ coũtre of ponu / yͤ lordſhyp of macon wͭ moch other as it is ſpecifyed in yͤ ſayd treaty. And ſo our embaſſatoures came home agayne in worſe caſe than they went out. For they loſt there the duke of Burgoyne whiche had ben wͭ his Burgoynons ⁊ pycardes a ſynguler helpe in all yͤ conqueſt of Normandy ⁊ of Fraunce. ¶ This ſame yere was a great batayle on the ſee bytwene yͤ Jenewes ⁊ the kynge of Aragon / of whiche batayle the Jenewes hadde yͤ vyctory / for they toke yͤ kynge of Aragon / yͤ kynge of Nauerne / ⁊ yͤ great mayſter of ſeynt James in Galyce wͭ .iii.C. knyghtes ⁊ ſquyers and moche other people / ⁊ this was on ſeynt Dominicus day. And this ſame yere were ſeen thre ſoñes at ones / and anone folowed yͤ thre folde gouernaũce in the chyrche / yͤ is to wete of Eugeny of yͤ counſeyle and of neutralyte. ¶ And this ſame yere. M.cccc.xxxiiii. was a paſſyng great wynde by whiche ſteples houſes ⁊ trees were ouerthrowe. ¶ About this tyme was an holy mayde in Hollande called Lydwith whiche lyued only by myracle not etyng ony mete. ¶ This yere the duke of Burgoyne began his ordre at Lyle of the golden Fleys ⁊ ordeyned certayne knyghtes of yͤ ſame ordre / ⁊ made ſtatutes ⁊ ordynaũces moche accordynge vnto the ordre of yͤ garter. Alſo this ſame yere yͤ Frenſſhmen had enterpryſed to ſteie Calays in yͤ fyſſhynge tyme / for many botes of Fraũce had ſaufcondytes to come to Calays for to take herynge. And yͤ ſouldyours of yͤ towne had a coſtome to come to yͤ chyrche ⁊ leue theyr ſtaues ſtãdynge at yͤ chyrche dore / whiche ſtaues yͤ Frenſſhe men yͤ were arayed lyke fyſſhers had purpoſed for to haue ſtolen theyr ſtaues ⁊ wepẽ for to haue wonne ſo yͤ towne / but one of them lay wͭ a comune woman yͤ nyght before / ⁊ he tolde her theyr counſeyl / ⁊ ſhe on the morowe tolde it to yͤ lyftenaũt whiche forthwith all cõmaũded yͤ euery mã ſholde kepe his wepen in his hande ſaketynge tyme or other. And whan yͤ Frenſſhe men perceyued this yͤ they were myſpoynted they ſayled ſtreyght to Depe ⁊ ſtale ⁊ toke that towne. And on newe yeres day after they toke Harflete. And thus yͤ Englyſſhe mẽ began to loſe a lytell ⁊ lytell in Normandye.

¶ How Calays ⁊ Guynes were beſyeged by yͤ duke of Burgoyn / ⁊ how they were reſcowed by yͤ duke of Glouceſtre.

This yere was a great noyſe al england thrugh how yͤ duke of Burgoyn wold come ⁊ beſyege calays / wherfore yͤ erle of Mortayne wͭ his armye yͤ he had to haue go wͭ hym into Fraũce was cõmaũded ⁊ charged yͤ he ſholde go to Calays / whiche was at yͤ tyme wel vitayled and manned / for ſyr Johñ Ratclyfe was lyftenaũte of yͤ towne for yͤ kynge / ⁊ yͤ baron of Dudlay lyftenaunte of the caſtell. ¶ And the .ix. day of July yͤ duke of Burgoyne with all yͤ power of Flaũders and moche other people came before Calays and ſet his ſyege about yͤ towne / and euery towne of Flaunders hadde theyr tentes by them ſelfe. And this ſyge endured thꝛe yere. In the meane whyle the duke of Glouceſtre beynge protectour of Englande toke yͤ mooſt parte of all the loꝛdes of Englande ⁊ went ouer yͤ ſee to Calays foꝛ to reſcowe the towne oꝛ foꝛ to fyght wͭ the duke ⁊ his hooſt yf they wold haue byden. This tyme London and euery good towne of Englande ſende ouer the ſee to this reſcowe certayne people well arayed of the beſt ⁊ choſen men foꝛ yͤ warre. And the ſecunde daye of Auguſt yͤ foꝛſayd duke of Glouceſtre aryued at Calays wͭ all his army and .v. hondꝛed ſhyppes ⁊ moo. And yͤ duke of Burgoyne ⁊ al his hooſt yͭ laye in the ſyege/ as ſoone as they eſpyed the ſayles in yͤ ſee/ befoꝛe they appꝛoched Calays hauen ſodeynly in a moꝛnỹge departed from the ſyege/ leuynge behynde hym moche ſtuffe ⁊ vytayle ⁊ fledde into Flaunders ⁊ Pycardy. And in lyke wyſe dyde the ſyege that laye befoꝛe Guynnes wher as they of Guynnes toke the great gonne of bꝛaſſe called Dygeon ⁊ many other great gonnes ⁊ ſerpentynes/ ⁊ whan the duke of Glouceſtre was aryued with his hooſt he went into Flaũders/ ⁊ there he was .xii. dayes ⁊ dyde but lytell harme excepte that he bꝛente two fayꝛe vyllages Poperynge ⁊ Belle/ ⁊ other houſes whiche were of no ſtronge buyldynge/ ⁊ ſo he retourned home agayn. ¶ And this ſame yere yͤ kynge of Scotlande beſyeged Rokeſbourgh wͭ moche people. But ſyr Rafe Gꝛaye departed from yͤ caſtel ⁊ oꝛdeyned foꝛ a reſcowe. But as ſoone as yͤ kynge of Scotland vnderſtode his departynge ſodeynly he bꝛake his ſyege ⁊ wẽt his way and left moche oꝛdynaũce behynde hym where he gate hym no woꝛſhyp. ¶ This ſame yere the ſecunde daye of Ianyuere quene Katheryne the whiche was yͤ kynges moder and wyfe to kynge Henry the fyfth dyed ⁊ departed out of this woꝛlde and was bꝛought royally thꝛugh Londõ ⁊ ſo to weſtmynſter ⁊ there ſhe lyeth woꝛſhypfully buryed in our ladyes chapell. ¶ Alſo this ſame yere the fourth daye of Ianyuere fell downe yͤ gate with yͤ toure on it on London bꝛydge towarde Southwerke wͭ two arches ⁊ all yͭ ſtode theron. ¶ This ſame yere was a great treaty holden bytwene Gꝛauelỹge and Calays bytwene the kynge ⁊ the duke of Burgoyne where was in the kynges name the Cardynall of Englande/ the duke of Noꝛfolke and many other loꝛdes/ ⁊ foꝛ the duke of Burgoyne was the ducheſſe hauynge ful power of her loꝛde as regent ⁊ lady of his landes where was taken by the aduyſe of bothe partyes an abſtynence of warre foꝛ a certayne tyme in yͤ name of yͤ ducheſſe ⁊ not of the duke bycauſe he had gone from his othe ⁊ legeaunce that he had made to kynge Henry the fyfth/ therfoꝛe yͤ kynge neuer wolde wryte ne appoynt to haue to do with hym after/ but all in the ducheſſe name. ¶ Alſo this ſame yere quene Iane dyed the ſecũde daye of Iule whiche had ben wyfe to kynge Henry yͤ fourth ⁊ was caryed from Bermondſey to caũterbury where ſhe lyeth buryed by kynge Henry her huſbande. ¶ This ſame yere dyed al the lyons in yͤ Toure of London/ the whiche had not ben ſeen many yeres afoꝛe.

¶ How Owen a ſquyer of wales yͭ hadde wedded quene Katheryne was areſted/ ⁊ of yͤ ſcyſme bytwene Eugeny ⁊ Felix.

IN the .xv. yere of kynge Henry the ſyxth dyed Sygiſmõde Emperour of Almayne ⁊ knyght of yͤ garter/ whoſe terement the kynge kepte at ſeynt Paule in Londõ royally/ where was made a ryall herſe/ ⁊ the kynge in his eſtate clad in blewe was at euen at dirige ⁊ on yͤ moꝛne at maſſe. ⁊c. And after hym was elect ⁊ choſen Alberte duke of Oſtryche whiche had wedded Sygyſmōdes doughter for to be Emperour. ¶ This man was taken ⁊ receyued to be kynge of Beme ⁊ Hungary bycauſe of his wyfe ẏ was Sygyſmondes doughter whiche lefte none other heyre after hȳ. ¶ This Albert was Emperour but one yere/for he was poyſoned ⁊ ſo dyed/ ſome ſayd ẏ he dyed of ẏ flyx/but he was a vertuous man ⁊ pytefull/ſomoche ẏ all the people that knewe hym ſayd that the worlde was not worthy to haue his preſence. ¶ This yere one Owen a ſquyer of wales a man of lowe byrthe/whiche had many a daye before ſecretely wedded quene Katheryne/⁊ had by her thre ſones ⁊ one doughter/⁊ he was taken ⁊ cōmaunded to Newgate to pryſon by my lorde of Glouceſter protectour of the realme. And this yere he brake ẏ pryſon by the meane of a preeſt ẏ was his chapelayne/⁊ after was takē agayn by my lorde Bemonde ⁊ brought agayne to newgate/⁊ afterwarde delyuered at large/⁊ one of his ſones afterwarde was made erle of Rychemōd ⁊ another erle of Penbroke/⁊ the thyrde a monke of weſtmynſtre/whiche monke dyed ſoone after. ¶ This ſame yere alſo on Newe yeres day at Bernardes caſtell fell downe a ſtake of wood ſodeynly at after none ⁊ ſlewe thre mē myſcheuouſly ⁊ foule hurte other. ¶ Alſo at Bedforde on a ſherethurſday were .xviii. mē murdred without ſtroke by fallȳge downe a ſtayre as they came out of ẏ comyn hall ⁊ many ſore hurte. ¶ In ẏ .xviii. yere ſyr Rycharde Beauchamp the good erle of warwyk dyed at Roen he beynge that tyme lewtenaūt of the kynge in Normandy/⁊ from thens his body was brought to warwyk wher he lyeth worſhypfully in a new chapel on ẏ ſouth ſyde of ẏ quere. ¶ Alſo this yere was a great derthe of corne through out all Englande/for a buſſhell of whete was worth .xl. pēs in many places of englāde ⁊ yet had thei not ynough/wherfore Steuen browne ẏ tyme mayre of Londō ſend into Pruce ⁊ broughte to Londō certayne ſhyppes ladē with rye whiche dyd moche good to the pore people/for corne was ſo ſcarſe in Englande ẏ in ſome places of Englande pore people made them breed of ferne rotes. ¶ This yere ẏ generall cōſeyle of Baſyle depoſed Eugeny ⁊ they choſe Felix ẏ was duke of Sauoy/⁊ than began ẏ ſcyſme whiche endured vnto the yere of our lorde. M.CCCC.xlviii. This felix was a deuoute prynce ⁊ ſawe his ſones ſone/⁊ after lyued an holy lyfe/ and was choſen pope of ẏ cōſeyle of Baſyle ⁊ Eugeny depoſed. And ſoo ẏ ſcyſme was lōge tyme/⁊ this Felix had but lytel obedyence bycauſe of ẏ naturalyte/for ẏ mooſt parte ⁊ well nygh all cryſtendome obeyed ⁊ reputed Eugeny for very pope of them both/for both occupyed durȳge ẏ lyfe of Eugeny. ¶ This ſame yere ſyr Rycharde ẏ was vycar of Hermettſworth was degraded of his preeſthode at Paules ⁊ brent at toure hyll as for an heretyke on ſeynt Botulphes daye/how well at his deth he dyed a good cryſtē man/wherfore after his deth moche peple came to ẏ place wher he was brēt ⁊ offred ⁊ made an hepe of ſtones ⁊ ſet vp a croſſe of tre ⁊ helde hym for a ſeynt tyll ẏ mayre ⁊ ſhereues by ẏ kynges cōmaundement ⁊ of byſſhops deſtroyed it ⁊ made there a donge hyll. Alſo this yere ẏ ſhreues of Londō ſet out of ſeynt Martyns ẏ graūde of ẏ ſentwary .v. perſones whiche afterward were reſtored agayne to ẏ ſentwary by ẏ kynges Juſtyces. And after Alberte ẏ thyrde Frederik was choſen Emperour/this Frederyk the duke of Oſtryche was longe Emperour ⁊ dyfferred to be crowned at Rome bycauſe of ẏ ſcyſme/but after that vnyte was had he was crowned with ẏ imperyal dyademe with great glory and triumphe of pope Nicholas ẏ .iiii. This was a peaſyble mã / quyete ⁊ of ſinguler pacyence not hurtȳge ẏ chyrch / he wedded the kynges doughter of Portyngale.

¶ How the ducheſſe of Glouceſtre was areſted for treaſon and cõmytted to perpetuall pryſon in the yle of Man / and of the dethe of mayſter Roger Bolyngbroke.

IN this ſame yere Elynor Cobham ducheſſe of Glouceſtre was areſted for certayne poyntes of treaſon layde agaynſt her / wherupõ ſhe was examyned in ſeynt Steuens chapel at weſtmynſter afore the archebyſſhop of Cãterbury / ⁊ there was ſhe enioyned to open penaunce to go through chepe berȳge a taper in her hande ⁊ after to perpetuall pryſon in the yle of Man vnder ẏ kepynge of ſyr Thomas ſtanley. Alſo ẏ ſame tyme was areſted mayſter thomas ſouthwel a chanon of weſtmynſter / mayſter Iohñ hume a chapelayne of the ſayd lady / mayſter Robert Bolynbroke a clerke vſynge Nygromancy / ⁊ one Margery iourdemayne called ẏ wytche of Eye beſyde weſtmynſter / there were areſted as for beynge of coũſeyle w ẏ ſayd ducheſſe of Glouceſtre / ⁊ for mayſter Thomas ſouthwell dyed in ẏ Toure the nyght before he ſholde haue reygned on ẏ morne / for he hymſelfe ſayd ẏ he ſholde dye i his bedde ⁊ not by Iuſtice. ¶ And in ẏ .xx. yere mayſter Iohñ hume ⁊ mayſter Roger Bolynbroke were brought to the gylde hall in London / ⁊ there before ẏ Mayre ẏ lordes ⁊ chefe Iuſtyces of Englande were reyned ⁊ dampned both to be drawe / hanged ⁊ quartred / but mayſter Iohñ hume had his charter ⁊ was pardoned by ẏ kynge / but mayſter Roger was drawen to Tyborne where he confeſſed ẏ he dyed gyltes of this mater ⁊ neuer had treſpaſſed in that he dyed fore. Notwithſtandynge he was hanged heded ⁊ quartred / vpon whoſe ſoule god haue mercy. Amen. And Margery iourdemayne was brent in ſmythfelde. ¶ Alſo this yere was a great fray in London in Flete ſtrete by nyght tyme bytwene men of courte ⁊ mẽ of London / ⁊ dyuerſe men ſlayne ⁊ ſome hurte / ⁊ one Herbotell was the chefe cauſer of the myſgouernaũce ⁊ affray. ¶ Alſo this yere at the cheſynge of the Mayre of Londõ the comyns named Robert Clopton ⁊ Raulyn Holande tayler / ⁊ the aldermen toke Roberte Clopton and broughte hym at the ryght hande of the Mayre / as cuſtome is. And than certayne taylers ⁊ other hande crafty mẽ cryed nay nay not this mã but Raulyn Holande / wherfore the Mayre that was pacyſſye ſend them that ſo cryed to Newgate / where they abode a great whyle and were punyſſhed. In this ſame yere were dyuers enbaſſadours ſend into Guyen for a maryage for the kynge for the erles doughter of Armynak the whiche was concluded / but by ẏ meanes of ẏ erle of Suffolke it was let ⁊ put a parte. And after this ẏ ſayde erle of Suffolke wente hȳſelfe ouer ſee in Fraũce ⁊ there he treated ẏ maryage bytwene the kyng of Englãde ⁊ the kȳges doughter of Cecyle and of Iheruſalem. And the nexte yere it was cõcluded fully that maryage / by whiche maryage ẏ kynge ſholde delyuer to the fader the duchy of Angeo and the erledome of mayne whiche was the keye of Normãdye. Than departed ẏ erle of Suffolke with his wyfe ⁊ dyuerſe lordes ⁊ knyghtes in ẏ moſt royall eſtate that myght be out of Englãde with newe chares and palfreys whiche went through the Chepe and ſo wente ouer the ſee and receyued her / and than after in the lente brought her to Hampton where ſhe landed / ⁊ there was royally receyued. ¶ And vpon Candelmas euen before by a gre te tempeſt of thondre and lyghtnynge at after noone Paules ſtople was ſet on fyre in the myddes of the ſhafte in ẏ tymbre / whiche was quenched by force of labour ⁊ ſpecyally by the morowe maſſe preeſt of the Bowe in chepe whiche was thought impoſſyble / ſaue onely the grace of god.

¶ This yere was the erle of Stafforde made ⁊ create duke of Buckyngham / the erle of warwyk duke of warwyk / the erle of Dorſet markys of Dorſet / ⁊ the erle of Suffolk was made markys of Suffolk.

¶ How kẏge Henry wedded quene Margarete / ⁊ of her crownacyon.

This yere kynge Henry maryed at Southwyk quene Margarete / ⁊ ſhe came to Londõ ẏ. xxviii. day of May And by the waye all ẏ lordes of Englande receyued her worſhypfully in dyuers places / ⁊ in eſpecyall the duke of Glouceſtre And on the blacke hethe the mayre with all the aldermen / ⁊ all ẏ craftes in blewe gownes brauded with ẏ deuyſe of theyr crafte that they myght be knowen / mette with her with reed hodes ⁊ broughte her to London / where were dyuers pagentes ⁊ cõtenaũce of dyuers hyſtoryes ſhewed in dyuerſe places of ẏ cyte royally ⁊ coſtly And the. xxx. daye of Maye the forſayde quene was crowned at weſtmynſter / and there was Juſtes thre dayes durynge wͭ in ẏ Sentuary before ẏ abbay. ¶ This yere the pryour of Kylmayn apeled ẏ erle of Ormonde of treaſon / whiche had a day to them aſſygned for to fyght in Smythfelde / ⁊ the lyſtes were made / ⁊ the felde dreſſed. But whan it came to poynt / the kynge cõmaũded ẏ they ſholde not fyght but toke the quarell into his hande. And this was done at the inſtaũce ⁊ labour of certayne prechers ⁊ doctours of London as mayſter Gylbert worthẏgton perſone of ſeynt Andrewes in Holborne / ⁊ other.

¶ Alſo this yere came a great embaſſadoure into Englande out of Fraũce for to haue concluded a perpetuall peas / but in cõcluſyõ it tourned vnto a trewes for a yere.

¶ Aboute this tyme dyed ſeynt Barnardyne a gray frere whiche began the newe reformacyõ of that ordre in many places in ſomoche that they that were reformed ben called Obſeruaũtes / whiche Obſeruaũtes ben greatly encreaſed in ytaly ⁊ in Almayn. This Barnardyne was canonyſed by pope Nicholas ẏ. v. in the yere of oure lorde. M. CCCC. L. Johannes de Capiſtrano was his diſcyple / whiche profyted moche to ẏ reformacyon of ẏ ordre for god hath ſhewed many a fayre myracle. ¶ Alſo here is to be noted ẏ from this tyme forwarde kynge Henry neuer proſpered ne went forwarde / but fortune began to tourne from hẏ on all ſydes / as well in Fraũce / Normandye / Guyen / as in Englande. Some men holde opynyon ẏ kynge Henry gaue commyſſyon plenarly to ſyr Edwarde hull / ſyr Robert Roos deane of ſeynt Seuerynes / and other to conclude a maryage for hym with the erle of Armynakes ſyſter / whiche was promyſed as it was ſayd ⁊ cõcluded / ⁊ after broken / ⁊ he wedded quene Margarete as is ſayd afore / ⁊ a full dere maryage for the realme of Englande. for it was knowen verely that for to haue her delyuered was ẏ duchy of Angeo ⁊ the erledome of Mayne / whiche was ẏ key of Normandy for ẏ frenſhmẽ to entre. And aboute this the ſayd Markys of Suffolke aſked in playne parlyament a fyftene ⁊ an halfe to fetche her out of Fraũce. Lo what a maryage was this as to the cõparyſon of ẏ other maryage For ther ſholde haue ben delyuered ſo many caſtels ⁊ townes in Guyen / ⁊ ſomoche golde ſholde haue bẽ gyuen with her that all Englande ſholde haue be therby enryched/but contrary wyſe fel/wherfore euery great prynce ought to kepe his ꝓmeſſe. For bycauſe of brekynge of this promeſſe ⁊ for maryage of quene Margarete what loſſe hathe ẏ realme of Englande had/by loſynge of Normandy ⁊ Guyen/by dyuyſyon in ẏ realme/ẏ rebellynge of comyns agaynſt theyr prynce ⁊ lordes. What dyuyſyon ymonge ẏ lordes/what murdre ⁊ ſleynge of them/what feldes foughte ⁊ made/in concluſyon ſo many ẏ many a man hath loſt his lyfe/⁊ in cõcluſyon ẏ kynge depoſed/⁊ the quene with her ſone fayne to flee into Scotlande/⁊ frome thens into Fraũce/⁊ ſo to Loreyne the place that ſhe came fyrſt fro. Many men deme that the brekynge of ẏ kynges promeſſe to the ſyſter of ẏ erle of Armynak was cauſe of his great loſſe and aduerſyte.

¶ How the duke of Glouceſtre the kynges vncle was areſted at the parlyamẽt of Bury/⁊ of his dethe/and how Angeo in Mayne was delyuered.

IN ẏ.xxvi. yere of kynge Henry was a parlyament at Bury called ſeynt Edmondes bury/aboute whiche was cõmaũded all the comyns of ẏ coũtre to be there in theyr mooſt beſt defenſyble aray for to wayte vpon the kynge. To whiche parlyament came the duke of Glouceſtre Umfrey ẏ kynges vncle/whiche had be protectour of Englande all ẏ nonage of the kynge. And anone after as he was in his lodgynge was areſted by ẏ Uycoũte Beaumont ẏ Cõſtable of Englande/whiche accõpanyed ẏ duke of Buckyngham/⁊ many other lordes. And forth w all his ſeruaũtes were cõmaũded to departe frõ hym/⁊.xxxii. of the chefe of them were areſted ⁊ ſend to dyuers pryſons/⁊ anone after this ſayd areſte ẏ ſayd duke was on the morowe deed/on whoſe ſoule god haue mercy/but how he dyed ⁊ in what maner ẏ certente is not knowẽ/ſome ſayd he dyed for ſorowe/ſome ſayde he was murdred bytwene two fether beds/ſome ſayd ẏ a ſpit was put in his foũdamẽt/but how he dyed god knoweth/to whom nothynge is hyd/⁊ thus deed he was layde open ẏ all men myght ſe hym/⁊ ſo bothe lordes ⁊ knyghtes of the ſhyre with burgeyſes came ⁊ ſawe hym lye deed/but woũde ne token coude they not perceyue how he dyed. Here may mẽ marke what this world is. This duke was a noble man and a great clerke/⁊ ruled worſhypfully ẏ reame to ẏ kynges behofe/⁊ neuer coude be foũde faute in hym. But enuy of them ẏ were gouernours ⁊ had promyſed ẏ duchy of Angeo ⁊ the erledome of Mayn cauſed ẏ deſtrucyon of this noble man/for they drad ẏ he wolde haue empeſſhed ẏ delyueraunce/⁊ after they ſende his body to ſeynt Albons with certayne lyghtes to be buryed. And ſo ſyr Gernays of Clyftõ had than ẏ charge to cõuey the corps/⁊ ſo it was buryed at ſeynt Albons in the abbaye. And fyue perſones of his houſholde were ſende to London/⁊ there were they areyned ⁊ Iuged to be drawen ⁊ hanged/⁊ alſo quartred. Of whome the names were/ſyr Roger chamberlayn a knyght/⁊ one Mydelton a ſquyer. Arthur a ſquyer/⁊ Rychard Nedhã/whiche.v. perſones were drawen frõ ẏ toure of London through Chepe to Tyborne/⁊ there let downe quycke/and than ſtrypped to haue ben heded and quartred. And than the Markys of Suffolke ſhewed there for them ẏ kynges pardon vnder his great ſeale/⁊ ſo they were pardoned of the remenaunt of all that other execucyon/and had theyr lyues/⁊ ſo they were brought agayne to London/and after freely delyuered. Thus began greate trouble in this reame of Englande for the dethe of this noble duke of Glouceſtre/⁊

all the comyns of the realme began for to murmure for it and were not contente. ¶ After that pope Eugeny was deed Nicholas þ fyfth was elect pope/ this Nicholas was choſe for Eugeny yet hangynge þ ſcyſme/ not withſtandynge he gate þ obedyence of all cryſten realmes/ for after he was electe & ſacred pope/ certayne lordes of Fraũce & of Englande were ſende unto Sauoye to pope Felyx/ for to entreate hym to ceaſe of the papacy. And by the ſpecyall labour of the byſſhop of Norwyche & the lordes of ſeynt Johñs he ceaſed þ ſeconde yere after þ pope Nicholas was ſacred/ & þ ſayd Felix was made Legate of Fraunce & cardynall of Sauoy/ & he reſygned þ hole papacy to Nicholas/ & after lyued an holy lyfe and dyed an holy man/ & as it is ſayd almyghty god ſhewed myracles for hym. This was þ .xxiii. ſcyſme bytwene Eugeny & Felyx/ & dured .xvi. yere. The cauſe was this/ the generall counſeyle of Baſyle depoſed Eugeny/ whiche was onely pope & indubytate/ for as moche as he obſerued not & kepte the decrees & ſtatutes of the counſeyle of Conſtance/ as it is ſayd before/ neyther he rought not to gyue obedyence to þ generall coũſeyle in no maner wyſe/ wherfore aroſe a great altercacyon amonge wryters of this mater (pro et contra) whiche can not accorde unto this daye/ one partye ſayth þ the coũſeyle is aboue þ pope/ & þ other partye ſayth nay/ but þ pope is aboue þ coũſeyle. God bleſſed aboue al thỹge gyue & graũt his peas in holy churche ſpouſe of cryſt. Amẽ. ¶ This Nicholas was of Jene comen of lowe degre/ a doctour of dyuinite/ an actyfe man he reedyfyed many places þ were brokẽ & ruynous/ & dyde make a wall aboute the palays/ & made the wal newe aboute Rome for drede of þ turkes. ¶ And þ people wõderd & greatly meruayled of þ ceaſynge & reſygnynge of pope Felix to pope Nicholas/ cõſyderynge that Nicholas was a man of ſo homely a byrthe/ & that other was of affynyte to all þ mooſt partye of cryſtẽ prynces/ wherfore ther was a verſe publyſſhed/ as afore is ſayde.

¶ How ſyr Franſoys Aragonys toke Fogyers in Normandye. And of the loſſe of Conſtantynople by the turke.

IN the yere of kynge Henry .xxvii. beynge trewes bytwene Fraũce & Englande/ a knyght of the Englyſſhe partye named ſyr Fraunces Aragony toke a towne in Normandye named Fogyers agaynſt the trewes/ of whiche takynge began moche ſorowe & loſſe/ for this was þ occaſyon by þ whiche þ Frenſſhman gate all Normandye. ¶ Aboute this tyme the cyte of Conſtantynople/ whiche was the imperyall cyte of all grece was taken by the Turkes infydeles/ whiche was betrayed as ſome olde opynyon/ & the Emperour takẽ & ſlayne/ & that ryall churche of ſeynt Sophia robbed & dyſpoyled/ & the relyques and ymages and þ rode drawen aboute the ſtretes/ whiche was done in deſpyte of Cryſten feyth/ & ſoone after all cryſten feyth in Grece peryſſhed & ceaſed. There were many cryſten men ſlayne/ & innumerable ſolde and put in captyuyte. By the takynge of this towne the Turke greatly was enhaũced in pryde/ & a great loſſe to all cryſtendome. ¶ In the .xxviii. yere was a parlyament holden at weſtmynſter/ & from thens adiourned to the blacke freres at London/ & after criſtmas to weſtmynſter agayn. ¶ And this ſame yere Roberte of cane a man of þ weſt countre with a fewe ſhyppes toke a great flete of ſhyppes comynge out of þ bay lade wt ſalte/ whiche ſhyppes were out of Pruce/ Flaũders/ Holande/ & zelande/ & brought them to Hampton/ wherfore þ marchau tes of England beynge ĩ Flaūders / were areſted in Brydges. Ypre ⁊ other places ⁊ myght not be delyuered ne theyr dettes dyſcharged / tyll they hadde made apointmēt for to paye ẏ hurtes of thoſe ſhyppes whiche was payd by ẏ marchaūtes of ẏ ſtaple euery peny / and i lyke wyſe ẏ marchaūtes ⁊ goodes beynge in Danſke / were alſo areſted. And made great amendes ¶ This ſame yere ẏ Frenſſh mē in a mornynge toke by a trayne the towne of Poūte all Arche / ⁊ therin ẏ lord Fauconbrydge was taken priſoner / and after ẏ in Decembre Rone was takē ⁊ loſt beynge therin ſyr Edmonde duke of Somerſet / ⁊ the erle of Shrewſbury / ẏ whiche by a poyntment left pledges and loſt all Normandy ⁊ came home into Englande ⁊ durynge ẏ ſayd parlyamēt ẏ duke of Suffolke was areſted / ⁊ ſēd into ẏ toure ⁊ there he was a moneth / and after ẏ kynge dyd do fetch hym oute / for whiche cauſe al ẏ comunes were in a great rumoure / what for the delyueraūce of Angeo ⁊ Mayn ⁊ after leſynge of all Normandye and in eſpecyall for ẏ dethe of the good duke of Glouceſter / in ſomoche in ſome places men gadred and made them Capytayns / as Bleuberde ⁊ other / whiche were takē ⁊ put to deth / ⁊ than ẏ ſayd parlyamēt adiourned was to Leyceſtre. And thyder the kyng brought with hym ẏ duke of Suffolk / and whā ẏ comyns underſtode that he was out of ẏ Toure and comē thyder / they deſyred for to haue executyō on them that were cauſe of the delyueraunce of Normādye / and hadde be cauſe of the dethe of the duke of Glouceſtre / and hadde ſolde Gaſcoyn and Guyan / at ẏ whiche they named to be gilty / the duke of Suffolk as chyef / the lord Saye / the byſſhop of Salyſbury / Danel ⁊ many mo. And for to peas the comyns / ẏ duke of Suffolke was exyled out of Englande for. v. yere. ¶ And ſo durynge the parlyament he went into Norfolke / and there he toke his ſhyppynge / for to go out of the realme of Englande into Fraunce. ¶ And this yere as he ſayled on the ſee a ſhyp of warre called Nicholas of ẏ toure met wᵗ his ſhyp ⁊ foūde hym therin / whome they toke out / and brought hym into theyr ſhyp to ẏ mayſter ⁊ to ẏ capytayne ⁊ there he was examyned ⁊ at ẏ laſt Judged to deth. And ſo they put hym in a caban ⁊ his chapelayn wᵗ hym for to ſhryue hym. And that done they brought hym into Douer rode / ⁊ ſet hym into the bote / ⁊ ſmote there of his heed. And brought the body a lande upon ẏ ſandes / ⁊ ſet ẏ heed therby. And this was done ẏ fyrſt day of Maye. Lo what auayled hym al his delyueraūce of Normandye. And there maye ye ſe how he was rewarded for ẏ dethe of the duke of Glouceſtre / thus began ſorowe upon ſorowe / and dethe for dethe.

¶ How this yere was Inſurrecyon in Kente of ẏ comyns / of whome Jacke cade an Iryſſhe man was Capytayne.

THe yere of oure lorde. M. cccc. ⁊. l. was ẏ great grace of ẏ Jubyle at Rome / where was great pardon in ſomoche ẏ from all places in cryſtendome / grete multytude of people reſortyd thyder. And in the ſame yere was a great aſſemble ⁊ gaderynge togyder of the comunes of Kent into great nombre. And made an inſurrecyon / ⁊ rebelled agaynſt ẏ kynge and his lawes / ⁊ ordayned them a Capytayne called Johan Cade an Iryſſhman whiche named hym ſelfe Mortymer / coſyn to the duke of Yorke. And this Capytayne helde them togyder / ⁊ made ordynaunces ymonge them ⁊ brought them to the blacke hethe / where he made a byl of petycyons to the kynge ⁊ his coūſeylle ⁊ ſhewed what Iniuryes ⁊ oppreſſyons the poꝛe comyns ſuffred / ⁊ vnder colour foꝛ to come to his aboue / ⁊ he had a great multytude of people. ¶ And ẏ .xxvii. day of June ẏ kynge ⁊ many loꝛdes Capytaynes / ⁊ men of warre wente towarde hym to ẏ blacke hethe. And whan ẏ Capytayne of Kente vnderſtode ẏ comynge of the kynge with ſo great puyſſaunce / he withdrewe hym ⁊ his people to ſenoke a lytell vyllage. ¶ And the .xxviii. daye of June he beynge withdrawe ⁊ gone ẏ kynge came wᵗ his armye ſet in oꝛdre ⁊ enbatayled to ẏ blacke hethe / ⁊ by aduyſe of his counſeyle / ſende ſyꝛ Umfrey Staffoꝛde knyght and wyllyam Staffoꝛde ſquyer two valyaunt Capytaynes / with certayne people foꝛ to fyght wᵗ ẏ capytayne ⁊ to take ⁊ bꝛynge hym ⁊ his acceſſaryes to ẏ kynge whiche wente to Senoke. And the capytayne with his felawſhyp ⁊ mette wᵗ thē / and fought agaynſte thē / ⁊ in concluſyon ſlewe them bothe / ⁊ as many as abode ⁊ wolde not yelde them were ſlayne. ¶ Durynge this ſkyꝛmyſſhe fel a great variaūce amonge ẏ loꝛdes men ⁊ comyne people beynge on blacke heth agaynſt theyꝛ loꝛdes ⁊ capytaynes ſayenge playnly ẏ they wolde go vnto ẏ Capytayne of Kente / to aſſyſt ⁊ helpe hym / but yf they myght haue execucyō on ẏ traytours beyng about the kynge / wherto ẏ kyng ſayd nay. And they ſayd playnly ẏ ẏ loꝛde Saye treſourer of Englande / ⁊ the byſſhop of Salyſburye / ⁊ ẏ baron of Dudly / the abbot of Glouceſtre / Danyell ⁊ Treuilyon / ⁊ many moꝛe were traytours / ⁊ woꝛthy to be hedd, wherfoꝛe to pleaſe ẏ loꝛdes meny ⁊ alſo ſome of ẏ kynges hous ẏ loꝛde Saye was areſted ⁊ ſende to ẏ toure of London And than ẏ kynge herynge tydynges of the dethe ⁊ ouerthꝛowynge of ẏ Staffoꝛdes he withdꝛewe hī to London / ⁊ frome thens to Kelyngworth / foꝛ the kyng ne ẏ loꝛdes durſt not truſt theyꝛ owne houſholde men. ¶ Than after that the Capytayne had hadde this vyctoꝛy vpon the Staffoꝛdes anone he toke ſyꝛ Umfryes ſalet ⁊ his bꝛygādynes ſmyte full of gylte nayles / ⁊ alſo his gylde ſpoꝛes / ⁊ arayed hym lyke a loꝛde ⁊ capytayne and retoꝛned with all his meny ⁊ alſo moꝛe than he had befoꝛe to ẏ blacke hethe agayne. To whome came ẏ Archebyſſhop of Caūterbury / and the duke of Bokyngham to ẏ blacke hethe / and ſpake with hym. And as it was ſayd they founde hym wytty in his talkynge and his requeſt / and ſo they departed. ¶ And the thyꝛde day of July he came and entred into London with all his people. And there dyd make cryes in the kynges name ⁊ in his name that noo man ſholde robbe / noꝛ take noo maner goodes / but yf he payed foꝛ it. And came rydynge thꝛough the cyte in great pꝛyde and ſmote his ſwerde vpon London ſtone in canwykſtrete. And he beynge in ẏ cyte ſende to ẏ toure foꝛ to haue ẏ loꝛde Saye And ſo they fette hym / and bꝛought hym to the yelde halle befoꝛe ẏ mayꝛe ⁊ the aldermen / where ẏ he was examyned. And he ſayd he wold ⁊ ought to be Judged by his perys. And ẏ comyns of kent toke hȳ by foꝛce frome the Mayꝛe ⁊ offycers that kepte hym / ⁊ toke hym to a pꝛeeſt to ſhꝛyue hym. And oꝛ he myght be halfe ſhꝛyuē they bꝛought hym to the ſtandarde in the Chepe ſyde / and there ſmote of his hedd on whoſe ſoule god haue mercy. Amen. And thus deyed ẏ loꝛde Saye treſourer of Englande. After this they ſet his hedd vpon a ſpere / and bare it all aboute ẏ cyte And ẏ ſame day aboute myle ende Cromere was hedded. And the daye befoꝛe atte after noone / the Capytayne with a certayne of his men wente to Phylyppe Malpas houſe / ⁊ robbed hym / ⁊ toke awaye moche good. And frome thens he wente to ſeynt Margaretes patens to one Gerters hous/ ⁊ robbed hym. ⁊ toke a way fro hym moche good alſo/ at whiche robbynge dyuerſe mē of London of theyr neyghbours were at ⁊ toke parte wᵗ theym. For this robbynge ẏ peoples hertes fell from hym/ ⁊ euery thryfty man was afred/ for too be ſerued in lyke wyſe. For there was many a man in London that awayted ⁊ wolde fayne haue ſene a comyne robbery whiche almyghty god forbyd. For it is to ſuppoſe yf he had not robbed/ he myghte haue gone ferre/ or he had be withſtande. For the kynge ⁊ all the lordes of ẏ realme of Englande were departed/ except ẏ lorde Scales/ ẏ kepte the toure of London.

¶ And the fyfth daye of Julie he dyd do ſmyte of a mannes heed in Southwerke. And ẏ nyght after the Mayre of London with ẏ aldermen ⁊ comyns of ẏ cyte concluded to dryue awaye ẏ Capytayne and his hooſt/ ⁊ ſende to ẏ lorde Scales to the toure ⁊ to Mathe gouth a Capytayne of Normandye/ that they wolde that nyght aſſayle ẏ Capytayne with them of Kent. And ſo they dyd ⁊ came to London brydge/ in Southwerke or ẏ Capytayne had ony knowlege therof/ ⁊ they fought with them ẏ kept the brydge. And ẏ Kentyſſhmen wēt to harneys/ ⁊ came to ẏ brydge and ſhot ⁊ fought with them and gate ẏ brydge/ ⁊ made theym of London to flee and ſlewe many of them/ ⁊ this endured all the nyght to ⁊ fro/ tylle one of ẏ clocke of the morowe. And at ẏ laſte they brente the drawe brydge/ where many of theym of London were drowned. In ẏ whiche nyght Sutton an aldermā of Londō was ſlayne Roger Jeyſaunt/ Mathe gough/ and many other. And after this the chaūcelor of Englande ſend to ẏ Capytayne a pardon generall for hym ⁊ for his meny. And than they departed frō Southwerke euery mā to his owne hous. And whā they were all departed ⁊ gone there was proclamacyons made in Kente/ Southſex and other places that what man coude take ẏ capitayne quycke or deed ſholde haue a thouſande poūde. And after this Alexander Yden a ſquyer of Kente toke hym in a garden in Southſex. And in ẏ takynge Johñ cade capytayne was ſlayne/ ⁊ beheded ⁊ his heed ſet vpō London Brydge. And anone after the kyng came into Kent/ and dyd his Juſtyces ſytte at Caunterbury/ ⁊ enquyred who were cauſers ⁊ chyefe cauſe of this Inſurreccyon. ⁊ there were. viii. mē iudged to deth i one day/ ⁊ in other places more. And fro thēs the kynge wente into Southſex/ ⁊ into ẏ weſt countree/ where a lytell before was ſlayne the byſſhoppe of Salyſbury. And this ſame yere were ſo many Judged to deth that thre heedes ſtode vpon Londō brydge at ones.

¶ Of the felde that ẏ duke of Yorke toke at Brentheth in Kente/ and of ẏ byrth of prynce Edwarde/ ⁊ of the fyrſt batayll at ſeynt Albons/ where the duke of Somerſet was ſlayne.

In the. xxx. yere of ẏ kynge ẏ duke of Yorke came oute of ẏ Marche of Wales/ with the erle of Deuenſhyre and the lorde Cobham ⁊ great puyſſaunce for reformacyon of certayne Iniuryes and wronges/ ⁊ alſo to haue Juſtyce vpon certayne lordes beynge about the kynge/ ⁊ toke a felde at brentheth beſyde Dertforde in kent/ whiche was a ſtronge felde for whiche cauſe the kynge with all his lordes went vnto ẏ blacke heth wᵗ a ſtronge and a greate multytude of people armed and ordayned for ẏ warre in the beſt wyſe. And whan they hadde muſtred on the hethe/ certayn lordes were tho ſend to hym for to treat ⁊ make apoyntmēt with hym whiche were the byſſhop of Ely/ the byſ ſhop of wyncheſtre / therles of Salyſboury ⁊ warwycke / ⁊ they concluded that the duke of Somerſet ſholde be had to warde / ⁊ to anſwere to ſuche artycles as the duke of Yorke ſholde put on hym / ⁊ than the duke of yorke ſholde breke his felde / and come to yͤ kynge / whiche was all promyſed by the kynge. And ſo the kynge cōmaunded yͤ the duke of Somerſet ſholde be hadde into warde. And than yͤ duke of yorke brake vp his felde ⁊ came to yͤ kynge. And whan he was come contrary to yͤ promyſe afore made yͤ duke of Somerſet was preſent in the felde a waytynge and cheyf about yͤ kyng / ⁊ made yͤ duke of yorke ryde before as a pryſoner through Lōdon. And they wolde haue put hȳ in holde. But a noyſe aroſe yͭ yͤ erle of Marche his ſone was commynge with .x.M. mē to London warde / wherfore yͤ kynge ⁊ his coūſeyll fered. And than they concluded that the duke of Yorke ſholde departe at his owne wyll. ¶ About this tyme begā great deuyſyon in Spruſe bytwene yͤ greate mayſter ⁊ the knyghtes of yͤ duchye ordre / whiche were lordes of yͤ countre / for the comyns ⁊ townes rebelled agaynſt yͤ lordes and made ſoo great warre that at the laſte they called the kynge of Pole to be theyr lorde / the whiche kynge came ⁊ was worſhyphully receyued. And beſyeged the caſtell of Marienburgh / whiche was the cheyf caſtell of ſtrength of all the lande / and wan it / and droue out yͤ mayſter of Danſke / ⁊ all other places of that lande / and ſo they that hadde ben lordes many yeres loſte all theyr owne ſeygnourye and poſſeſſyons in tho landes. ¶ And in the yere of the Incarnacyon of our lorde .M.CCCC.liiij. on ſeynt Edwardes day quene Margarete was delyuered of a fayre prīce whiche named was Edwarde. ¶ That ſame day Iohan Norman was choſen to be Mayre of London. And the daye that he ſholde take his othe at weſtmynſtre he went thyder by water wͭ all yͤ craftes / where afore tyme yͤ mayre aldermen ⁊ yͤ craftes rode on horſbacke yͤ whiche were neuer vſed after. For ſyth yͤ tyme they haue euer gone by water in botes ⁊ barges. ¶ Ye haue wel vnderſtāde before how yͤ contrarye of yͤ promyſe of yͤ kynge ⁊ alſo concluſyons taken bytwene yͤ kynge ⁊ yͤ duke of yorke at Brentheth yͤ duke of Somerſet wēt not to warde / but abode about yͤ kynge / ⁊ had great rule / ⁊ anone after he was made Capytayne of Calays / ⁊ ruled yͤ kynge ⁊ his realme as he wolde / wherfore yͤ great lordes of the realme ⁊ alſo yͤ comyns were not pleaſed For whiche cauſe yͤ duke of yorke / yͤ erle of Warwyke / yͤ erle of Salyſbury wͭ many knyghtes ⁊ ſquyers / and moche other people came to remeue yͤ ſayde duke of Somerſet / ⁊ other fro yͤ kynge. And yͤ kynge herynge of theyr comȳge thought by his counſayll for to haue gone weſtewarde ⁊ not for to haue met wͭ theym. And had wͭ hym yͤ duke of Somerſet / yͤ duke of Bokyngham / the erle of Stafforde / yͤ erle of Northūberlande / yͤ lorde Clyfforde / ⁊ many other. ¶ And what tyme that yͤ duke of Yorke ⁊ his felawſhyppe vnderſtode yͤ the kynge was departed with the lordes frome London / anone he chaunged his waye / ⁊ coſted the cōtre ⁊ came to ſeynt Albons yͤ .xxiij. day of Maye / ⁊ there met with yͤ kynge / to whome the kynge ſende certayn lordes / and deſyred them to kepe the peas and departe / but in concluſyon whyle they treated on yͤ one ſyde / the erle of warwycke wͭ the Marche men ⁊ other entred into the towne on that other ſyde / and fought agaynſt the kynge ⁊ his partye / ⁊ ſo began yͤ batayll and fyghtynge / whiche endured a great whyle / But ī cōcluſyon the duke of yorke obteyned / and hadde the vyctory in that Iourneye / In whiche was ſlayne ŷ duke of Somerſet the erle of Northumberlande/ ŷ lorde of Clyfforde/ ⁊ many knyghtes ⁊ ſquyers ⁊ many more hurte/ ⁊ on ŷ morowe after they brought the kynge in great eſtate to London/ whiche was lodged in the byſſhops palays of London. And anone after was a great parliament at London/ in whiche parlyament the duke of Yorke was made protectour of Englande/ and the erle of warwyke Capytayne of Calays/ the erle of Salyſbury Chaunceler of Englande. And all ſuche perſones as had the rule before about the kynge were ſet a parte/ ⁊ myght not rule as they dyd before. ❡ And this ſame yere deyed pope Nicholas the fyfth/ ⁊ after hym was Calyxte the thyrde. This Calixte was a Catalane/ ⁊ the actes of hym ſhall be ſhewed here after folowynge. ❡ In this ſame yere felle a great afraye in London agaynſt ŷ Lombardes/ the cauſe began bycauſe of a yonge man toke a dager frome a Lombarde ⁊ brake it/ wherfore ŷ yonge man on ŷ morowe was ſend for to come before the mayre ⁊ the aldermen/ ⁊ there for the offence he was cōmytted to warde/ and than ŷ mayre departed fro the yelde hall for to go home to his dyner/ but in ŷ chepe the yonge men of the mercerye for the mooſt partye prentyſes helde ŷ Mayre ⁊ Shyreſs ſtyll in chepe ⁊ wolde not ſuffre them to departe vnto ŷ tyme ŷ theyr felowe/ whiche was cōmitted to warde were delyuered/ ⁊ ſoo by force they reſcowed theyr felowe frome pryſon. And that done ŷ Mayre departed ⁊ ŷ ſhyreſs alſo ⁊ ŷ pryſoner delyuered/ whiche yf he had be put to pryſon he had be put in Jeopardy of his lyfe. And than began a rumoure in the cite agaynſt the Lombardes. And ŷ ſame euenynge the handcrafty men of ŷ towne aroſe/ ⁊ ranne to the Lombardes houſes and diſpoyled ⁊ robbed dyuerſe of theym/ wherfore ŷ Mayre ⁊ ŷ aldermen came with the honeſt people of the cyte ŷ droue them thens ⁊ ſende ſome of them ŷ had ſtolen to Newgate. And ŷ yonge mā that was reſcowed by his felowes ſawe this great rumoure affraye ⁊ robbery enſewed of his fyrſt meuynge to ŷ Lombarde departed and wente to weſtmynſter to ſeyntwary/ or els it had coſt hym his lyfe for anone after came downe an Oyer determyne/ for to do Juſtyce on all them ŷ ſo rebelled in the cyte agaynſte the Lombardes/ on whiche ſate wͭ the mayre ŷ tyme Wyllyam marowe ŷ duke of Bokyngham/ ⁊ many other lordes to ſe execucyon done/ but ŷ comyns of ŷ cyte ſecretely made them redy and dyd arme theym in theyr houſes ⁊ were in purpoſe to haue rongen the comyn belle/ whiche is called bowe belle/ but they were let by ſad men whiche came to the knowlege of ŷ duke of Bokyngham ⁊ other lordes. And incontynent they aroſe/ for they durſt no lenger abyde for they doubted that the hole cyte ſholde haue ryſen agaynſt them. But yet neuertheleſſe .ii. or .iii. of ŷ cyte were Judged to dethe for this robbery/ ⁊ were hanged at Tybourne. ❡ And anone after the kynge ⁊ ŷ quene/ and other lordes rode to Couentre and withdrewe them fro London for this cauſe. And a lytell before the duke of yorke was ſend for to grenewych ⁊ there was dyſcharged of ŷ protectourſhyp/ ⁊ ŷ erle of Saleſbury of his Chaūcelerſhyp. And after this they were ſend fore by preuy ſeale for to come to Couentre/ where they were almooſt deceyued and the erle of warwycke alſo ⁊ ſholde haue ben deſtroyed yf they had not ſene wel to.

❡ How the lorde Egremonde was taken by the erle of Salyſbury ſones/ and of ŷ robbynge of Sandwyche.

This yere were taken .iiii. great fyſſhes bytwene Erethe and London. That one was called Mors maryne / yͤ .ii. was a ſwerde fyſſhe / and yͤ other twayne were whales. ¶ In this ſame yere for certayne affrayes done in yͤ north countre bytwene lorde Egremond ⁊ the erle of Salyſburyes ſones yͤ ſayd lorde Egremonde whome they had condempned in a great ſomme of money to yͤ ſayd erle of Salyſbury / ⁊ therfore he was commytted vnto pryſon in Newgate in London / where whan he had be a certayne ſpace he brake the pryſon / ⁊ thre pryſoners with hym and eſcaped ⁊ went his way. ¶ Alſo this yere yͤ erle of Warwycke ⁊ his wyfe went to Calays wͭ a fayre felawſhyp ⁊ toke poſſeſſyon of his offyce. ¶ About this tyme was a great reformacyon of many monaſteryes of relygyon in dyuerſe partyes of yͤ worlde / whiche were reformed after the fyrſt Inſtitucyon / ⁊ contynued in many places. ¶ This ſame yere was a grete batayll in yͤ marches bytwene yͤ lande of Hungry and Turkey at a place called Septerbrad / where Innumerable turkes were ſlayne more by myracle thā by mannes hande / for onely yͤ hande of god ſmote them. Seynt Iohn of Capyſtrane was there preſent ⁊ prouoked yͤ cryſten people beynge than aferde for to purſue after yͤ Turkes / where an Infynyte multytude were ſlayne ⁊ deſtroyed / ⁊ yͤ Turkes ſayd that a great nombre of armed men folowed them that they were aferde to tourne agayne / ⁊ they were holy aungelles. ¶ This ſame yere yͤ pryſoners of Newgate in London brake theyr pryſon / and went vpō yͤ ledes ⁊ fought agaynſt them of yͤ cyte ⁊ kepte yͤ gate a longe whyle / but at the laſt the towne gate yͤ pryſon on them. And than they were put in fetters ⁊ yrons and were ſore punyſſhed in enſample of other. ¶ In this yere alſo ther was a grete erthquake in Naples in ſomoche that there peryſſhed .xl. M. people that ſanke there into the erthe. ¶ Alſo in the .xxxvi. yere ſeynt Oſmonde ſomtyme byſſhop of Salyſbury was canonyſed at Rome by pope Calixt / ⁊ the .x. day of Iule he was tranſlated at Salyſbury by yͤ byſſhop of Caunterbury and many other byſſhops. ¶ And in Auguſte after ſyr Pers de braſay ſeneſchall of Normandye wͭ yͤ Capytayne of Depe ⁊ many other Capytaynes ⁊ men of warre wente to the ſee with a great Nauy / ⁊ came into yͤ downes by nyght. And on the morne erly before day they landed ⁊ came to Sandwyche / bothe by lande ⁊ water ⁊ toke yͤ towne / ⁊ ryfled and dyſpoyled it. And toke many pryſoners / ⁊ left yͤ towne al bare / whiche was a ryche place / ⁊ moche good therin. And ladde with them many ryche pryſoners. ¶ In yͤ ſame yere in many places of Fraūce / Almayne / Flaundres / Holande and Zelande / chyldre gadred them togyders by great companyes for to go on pylgrymage to ſeynt Mychels mounte in Normandy / whiche came fro farre coūtrees / wherof yͤ people merueyled. And many ſuppoſed yͤ ſome wycked ſpyryte moued them to do ſoo / but it dured not longe bycauſe of the longe waye ⁊ alſo for lacke of vytayle as they went. ¶ In this yere Reynold Pecoke byſſhop of Cheſtre was founde an heretyke / ⁊ yͤ thyrde daye of Decēbre was abiured at Lambeth in preſence of the Archebyſſhop of Caunterbury / ⁊ many other byſſhops doctours ⁊ lordes temporall / and his bokes brente at Paules croſſe. ¶ And ye haue herde before how certayne lordes were ſlayne at ſeynt Albons / wherfore was alwaye a grutchynge / and moche hatred by yͤ heyres of thē that ſoo were ſlayne agaynſt the duke of Yorke / the erles of Warwycke ⁊ of Salyſbury / wherfore the kynge by the aduyſe of his counſeyll ſende for them vnto London to whiche place the duke of Yorke came ẏ .xxvi. day of January wͭ .iiii.C. men ⁊ lodged hym at Baynerdes caſtel in his owne place. ¶ And ẏ .xv. day of January came ẏ erle of Salyſbury with .v.C. men ⁊ was lodged in the Erber his owne place. ¶ And thā came ẏ duke of Exceſtre ⁊ of Somerſet wͭ .viii.C. men / ⁊ lay without temple barre. ¶ And ẏ erle of Northumberlande / and ẏ lorde Egremōde / ẏ lorde Clyfforde wͭ .xv.C. men / ⁊ lodged wtout ẏ towne. ¶ And ẏ Mayre ẏ tyme Geffray Boloyne / kepe great watche weth the comyns of the cyte / ⁊ rode about the cyte by Holborne and Fleteſtrete / wͭ a .v. M. men well arayed ⁊ armed for to kepe ẏ peas. ¶ And the .xxiiii. day of February ẏ erle of Warwyke came to Londō frō Calays well beſene ⁊ worſhypfully wͭ .v.C. men. ĩ reed Jakettes browdred with a ragged ſtaffe behynde ⁊ before / ⁊ was lodged at the gray freres. ¶ And ẏ .xv. day of marche ẏ kynge came to London ⁊ ẏ quene. And there was accorde and peas made ymonge the lordes / and they were ſet in peas. And on our lady daye ẏ .xv. daye of marche / in the yere of our lorde .M.cccc. and .lviii. the kynge ⁊ the quene ⁊ all the lordes wente on proceſſyon at Paules in London / ⁊ anone after ẏ kynge ⁊ the lordes departed / ⁊ in this yere was a great fray in Fleteſtrete bytwene men of courte and men of the ſame ſtrete. In whiche fraye the quenes Attourney was ſlayne.

¶ How ẏ kynges houſholde made a fray agaynſt the erle of warwyke / and of the Iourneye at blorheth.

Alſo this ſame yere as the erle of warwyke was at counſeyl at weſtmynſter all the kynges houſholde meny gadred them togyder / for to haue ſlayne the erle / but by ẏ helpe of god ⁊ his frendes he recouered his barge / and eſcaped theyr euyll enterpryſe / how well ẏ cokes came rennynge oute wͭ ſpyttes ⁊ peſtels agaynſt hym. And ẏ ſame day he rode to wardes warwyke / ⁊ ſoone he gat hym a commyſſyon ⁊ went ouer ẏ ſee towardes Calays. ¶ Soone after this ẏ erle of Salyſbury commynge to London was encoūtred at Blorheth wͭ ẏ lorde Audley / ⁊ moche other people ordayned to deſtroy hȳ but he hauynge knowlege ẏ he ſholde be mette wͭ he was accompanyed with his two ſones ſyr Thomas ⁊ ſyr Iohan Neuell / and a great felaweſhyp of good men. And ſo they fought togyder / where the erle of Salyſbury wanne the felde. And the lorde Audley was ſlayne / ⁊ many gentyl men of Cheſſhyre / ⁊ moche people hurte and the erles two ſones were hurte / ⁊ goynge homewarde afterwarde they were take ⁊ had to Cheſtre by ẏ quenes meny. ¶ After Calixte Pius was pope / ⁊ was choſen this yere. M.CCCC.lviii. and he was called before Eneas an eloquēt man and a poete laureate. He was embaſſatour of ẏ Emperours before tyme. And he wrote in ẏ counſayll of Baſyle a noble treatyſe for ẏ auctoryte of the ſame. Alſo he canonyſed ſeynt Katheryne of Senys. This pope ordayned great indulgence ⁊ pardon to them that wolde go and warre agaynſt the Turke / and wrote a pyſtle to the great Turke exhortynge hym to become Cryſten. And in the ende he ordayned a paſſage agaynſt ẏ Turke at Ankon / to whiche moche people drewe oute of all partyes of cryſtendome / of the people he ſende many home agayne bycauſe they ſuffyſed not / ⁊ anone after he dyed at the ſayd Ankon / the yere of our lorde. M.CCCC.lxiiii. the .xiiii. daye of Auguſt.

¶ How Andrewe Trollop and ẏ ſouldyours of Calays forſoke the duke of Yorke.

and theyr mayſter the erle of Warwyke in the weſt countre.

THe duke of yorke / yͤ erles of Warwyke ⁊ of Salyſbury ſawe yͤ gouernaunce of yͤ realme ſtode mooſt by the quene ⁊ her coũſeyll / ⁊ how yͤ great prynces of yͤ lande were not called to counſeyle but ſet a parte / and not onely ſo / but it was ſayd through the realme yͤ tho ſayd lordes ſholde be deſtroyed as openly was ſhewed at blorheth by them yͤ wolde haue ſlayne yͤ erle of Salyſbury. Than for ſaluacyon of theyr lyues ⁊ alſo for the comyn wele of the realme thought for to remedy theſe thynges aſſembled theym wt moche people / ⁊ toke a felde in yͤ weſt coũtre to whiche yͤ erle of warwyke came frõ Calays wt many of yͤ olde ſouldyours / as Andrewe Trollop ⁊ other / in whoſe wyſdome as for the warre he truſted moche vpon. And whan they were thus aſſembled ⁊ made theyr felde / yͤ kynge ſend out his cõmyſſyons ⁊ preuy ſeales vnto all yͤ lordes of his realme / to come ⁊ wayte on hym in theyr mooſt beſt defenſable araye. And ſoo euery man came in ſuche wyſe yͤ yͤ kynge was ſtronger ⁊ had more people than yͤ duke of yorke ⁊ therles of Warwyke ⁊ of Salyſbury / for it is here to be noted yͤ euery lorde in Englande durſte not dyſobeye yͤ quene / ſoo ſhe ruled peaſybly all that was done about yͤ kynge whiche was a good ⁊ a well dyſpoſed man. And than whan yͤ kynge was come to yͤ place where they were yͤ duke of yorke ⁊ his felowſhyp made theyr felde i yͤ ſtrõgeſt wyſe / ⁊ purpoſed verely to abyde and haue foughten / but in yͤ nyght Andrewe Trollop ⁊ all yͤ olde ſouldyours of Calays wt a great felawſhyp ſodaynly departed oute of yͤ dukes hooſt / ⁊ went ſtrayght vnto yͤ kynges felde / where they were receyued ioyouſly / for they knewe the entent of the other lordes / ⁊ alſo the maner of theyr felde. And than yͤ duke of yorke wt the other lordes ſeynge thẽ deceyued / toke a counſeyll ſhortly in yͤ ſame nyght / ⁊ departed frome yͤ felde / leuynge beyonde them the mooſt party of theyr people to kepe yͤ felde tyll on yͤ morowe. Than yͤ duke of yorke wt his ſecunde ſone departed through wales towarde Irlande / leuynge his eldeſt ſone the erle of Marche wt therles of warwyke ⁊ of Salyſbury / whiche rode togyder wt thre or foure perſons ſtreyght into Deuẽſhyre / ⁊ there by helpe ⁊ ayde of one Denham gatte a ſhyp whiche coſt .xi. ſcore nobles / ⁊ wt the ſame ſhyp ſayled fro thẽs into gerneſye / ⁊ there refreſſhed them / ⁊ fro thens ſayled to Calays / where they were receyued into yͤ caſtel by the poſterñ or they of yͤ towne wyſt of it. And yͤ duke of yorke toke ſhyppynge in wales and ſayled ouer into Irlande / where he was well receyued.

¶ How yͤ erles of Marche / warwycke ⁊ Salyſbury entred into Calays / ⁊ how yͤ erle of warwycke wente into Irlande.

THan kynge Henry wt his hooſt in yͤ felde not knowynge of this ſodayne departynge / on yͤ morow fonde none in yͤ felde of yͤ ſayd lordes ſende oute in all yͤ haſt men for to folowe ⁊ purſue after to take theym / but they met not wt thẽ as god wolde. And thã yͤ kynge went to Ludlowe / ⁊ diſpoyled yͤ caſtell ⁊ yͤ towne / and ſend yͤ ducheſſe of yorke ⁊ her chyldren to the ducheſſe of Bokyngham her ſyſter / where ſhe was kepte longe tyme after. And forthwith the kynge ordeyned yͤ duke of Somerſet to be Capytayne of Calays / and theſe other lordes ſoo departed as afore is ſayd were proclamed rebelles ⁊ great traytours. Than the duke of Somerſet toke to hym all yͤ ſouldyours that departed fro the felde/and made hym redy in all the haſte for to go to Calays ⁊ take poſſeſſyon of his offyce. And whan he came he founde therle of Warwyk therin as Capytayne/⁊ the erle of Marche ⁊ of Salyſbury alſo/⁊ than he lāded by Scales ⁊ wēt to Guynes ⁊ there he was receyued. And it fortuned that ſome of tho ſhypps ẏ came ouer with hym came into Calays hauen by theyr free wyl/for ẏ ſhypmen ought more fauour to therle of Warwyk than to ẏ duke of Somerſet/in whiche ſhyppes were taken dyuerſe men/as Jenyn Fynkle/Johñ felowe/Kaylles/⁊ purſer/whiche were behedded ſoone after in Calays/and after this came mē dayly ouer ẏ ſee to theſe lordes to Calays/⁊ began for to were ſtronger ⁊ ſtrōger/⁊ they borowed moche good of the Staple. And on ẏ other ſyde ẏ duke of Somerſet beynge in Guynes gate people to hȳ whiche came out ⁊ ſcarmyſſhed with them of Calays/⁊ they of Calays with thē/whiche endured many dayes. Durȳge this ſcarmyſſhynge moche people came ouer dayly vnto theſe lordes. Than on a tyme by thaduyſe ⁊ cōuſeyll of ẏ lordes at Calays ſend ouer maiſter Denham with a great felyſhyp to Sandwyche/whiche toke ẏ towne ⁊ therin ẏ lorde Ryuers ⁊ the lorde Scales his ſone/⁊ toke many ſhyppes in the hauen/⁊ brought them all to Calays with whiche ſhyppes many maryners of theyr free wyll came to Calays to ſerue ẏ erle of Warwyk. And after this the erle of Warwyk by ẏ aduyſe of the lordes toke al his ſhyppes ⁊ māned them well ⁊ ſayled hym ſelfe into Irlande for to ſpeke wͭ the duke of yorke/⁊ toke his aduiſe how they ſholde entre into England. And whan he had be there ⁊ done his erādes/he retourned agayne towarde Calays/⁊ brought with hym his moder ẏ counteſſe of Salyſbury. And comynge in ẏ weſt countree on the ſee the duke of Exceſtre Admyrall of Englande beynge in ẏ grace of deu accōpayned wͭ many ſhyppes of warre met wͭ the erle of Warwycke ⁊ his flete/but they fought not/for ẏ ſubſtaūce of ẏ people beynge wͭ the duke of Exceſtre ought better wyll ⁊ fauoure to ẏ erle of Warwyck than to hym/⁊ they departed ⁊ came ſafe to Calays. ¶ Than ẏ kynges cōuſeyll ſeyng ẏ theſe lordes had gotten thoſe ſhyppes fro Sandwyche ⁊ takē ẏ lord Ryuers ⁊ his ſone ordayned a garnyſon at Sādwyche to kepe ẏ towne/⁊ made one Moūford capytayne of ẏ towne/⁊ ẏ no man/vytayller ne marchaūt ẏ ſholde go to Flaūders ſholde go to Calays. Thā they of Calays ſeyinge this/made Dēhā and other to go to Sandwyche ⁊ aſſayled ẏ towne by land ⁊ by water ⁊ gat it/⁊ brought ẏ capytayne ouer ſee ⁊ ſmote of his heed/⁊ yet dayly men came ouer to them fro al partyes.

¶ How therles of Marche/of Warwyk ⁊ of Salyſbury entred into Englande/and of the felde of Northampton where dyuerſe lordes were ſlayne.

AND after this the forſayd erles of Marche/Warwyk ⁊ Salyſbury came ouer to Douer with moch people ⁊ there landed/to whome al ẏ coūtre drewe ⁊ came to London all armed/⁊ for to let ẏ lordes of ẏ kynges cōuſeyll knowe theyr trouth ⁊ alſo theyr entente/aſſembled thē and tolde them ẏ they entēded no harme to ẏ kynges perſone ſaue that they wold put from hym ſuche perſones as were abowte hym. And ſo departed frō London with a great puyſſaūce towarde Northampton/where ẏ kynge was accompanyed wͭ many lordes/and made a ſtrong felde wͭout ẏ towne. And there bothe partyes mette ⁊ was fought a great batayl. In whiche batayll were ſlayne the duke of Bokyngham ⁊ ẏ erle of Shrewesbury the vycount Beamonde / ẏ lorde Egremonde ⁊ many other knyghtes ⁊ ſquyers / ⁊ other alſo / ⁊ the kynge hym ſelf was taken in ẏ felde / ⁊ afterwarde brought to London. And anone after was a parlyament at weſtmynſter / durynge whiche parlyament ẏ duke of yorke came out of Irlande / wͭ the erle of Rutlāde / rydinge wͭ a great felawſhyp into ẏ palays at weſtmynſtre / ⁊ toke the kynges palays ⁊ came into ẏ parlyamēt chambre / ⁊ there toke ẏ kȳges place ⁊ clamed ẏ crowne as his propre enherytaūce ⁊ ryght / ⁊ caſt forth in wrytynge his tytle. ⁊ alſo how he was ryghtfull heyre / wherfore was moche to do / but in concluſyon it was apoynted ⁊ cōcluded ẏ kynge Henry ſholde reygne ⁊ be kynge durynge his naturall lyfe / for aſmoche as he had be kynge ſo longe ⁊ was poſſeſſed / ⁊ after his deth the duke of yorke ſholde be kynge ⁊ his heyres kynges after hym / ⁊ forthewith ſholde be proclamed heyre apparaūt and ſholde alſo be protectour ⁊ regente of Englande durynge the kynges lyfe with many other thynges ordayned in ẏ ſame parlyament / ⁊ yf kynge Henry durynge his lyfe went frome his apoyntement or ony artycle cōcluded in ẏ ſayd parlyamēt he ſholde be depoſed / ⁊ the duke ſholde take ẏ crowne ⁊ be kynge. All whiche thynges were enacted by thauctoryte of the ſame / at whiche parlyamente ẏ comyns of ẏ realme beynge aſſembled in the comyn hous / comonynge ⁊ treatynge vpon ẏ tytle of ẏ forſayde duke of yorke / ſodaynly fell downe the crowne whiche henge thā in the myddes of ẏ ſayde hous whiche is the frayter of the abbaye of weſtmynſter whiche was taken for a prodygye or token that ẏ reygne of kynge Henry was ended And alſo the crowne whiche ſtode on the hyghest toure of the ſteple in the caſtell of Douer / fell downe this ſame yere.

¶ How ẏ duke of yorke was ſlayne / ⁊ of ẏ felde of wakefelde / ⁊ of ẏ ſecūde Journey at ſeynt Albons by ẏ quene ⁊ the prynce.

Bycauſe ẏ quene with ẏ prynce her ſone was in ẏ northe / ⁊ abſent her fro the kynge / ⁊ obeyed not ſuche thȳges cōcluded in ẏ parlyament / was ordeyned that ẏ duke of yorke as protectour ſholde go northwarde to brynge ẏ quene / ⁊ ſubdue ſuche as wold not obey / with whome went the erle of Salyſbury / ſyr Thomas Neuyll his ſone / with moche people / and at wakefelde in Cryſtmas weke / they were ouerthrowe ⁊ ſlayne by lordes of ẏ quenes party / ẏ is to wete / the duke of yorke was ſlayne / the erle of Rutlande / ſyr Thomas Neuyll ⁊ many mo / ⁊ the erle of Salyſbury was taken ⁊ other / as John harowe of London capytayne ⁊ ruler of the fotemen ⁊ hannſon of Hull / whiche were brought to Poūfret / ⁊ there beheded and theyr hedes ſend to yorke / ⁊ ſet vpō ẏ gates / ⁊ thus was the noble prynce ẏ duke of yorke ſlayne / on whoſe ſoule god haue mercy. And this tyme the erle of Marche beynge in Shrowyſbury herynge ẏ deth of his fader / deſyred ayde of the towne to auenge his faders deth / ⁊ fro thens went to wales / ⁊ at Candelmaſſe after he had a batayll at Mortymers croſſe agaynſt ẏ erle of Penbroke ⁊ of wylſhyre / where the erle of Marche had the vyctory. Thā the quene with theſe lordes of the north after that they had dyſtreſſed ⁊ ſlayne ẏ duke of yorke ⁊ his felyſhyp came ſouthwarde with a great multytude of peple for to come to the kynge ⁊ vndo ſuche cōcluſyons as had be taken before by ẏ parlyament Agaynſt whoſe comynge ẏ duke of Norfolke / the erle of warwyke wͭ moche people ⁊ ordynaūce wente to ſeynt Albons / ⁊ had kynge Henry wͭ them / ⁊ there encountred togyder in ſuche wyſe / ⁊ fought ſo ẏ the duke of Noꝛfolke ⁊ therle of Warwyk with many other of theyꝛ party fled ⁊ loſt ẏ Journey / where ẏ kynge Henry was taken wͭ the quene ⁊ pꝛynce Edward his ſone / whiche two had gote ẏ felde. Than the quene ⁊ her partye beynge at her aboue ſend anone to Londō / whiche was on an aſſhewenſdaye the fyꝛſt daye of Lente foꝛ vitayl / foꝛ whiche ẏ Mayꝛe oꝛdayned by thaduyſe of ẏ aldermen ẏ certayne cartes lade wͭ vytayll ſholde be ſend to ſeynt Albons to them / ⁊ whan the cartes came to Crepple gate / ẏ comyns of ẏ cyte ẏ kepte the gate toke ẏ vytayll fro ẏ cartes ⁊ wolde not ſuffre it to paſſe. Than were there certayne aldermē ⁊ comyns apoynted to go to Bernet to ſpeke wͭ the quenes counſayll to entreate ẏ the noꝛtherne men ſhulde be ſend home agayne into theyꝛ countre / foꝛ ẏ cyte of London dꝛad to be dyſpoyled yf they had come. ¶ And durȳg this treatyſe tydynges came ẏ ẏ erle of Warwyke had mette wͭ the erle of March on Cotteſwolde comȳge out of Wales with a great meyny of Walſſh men / and that they both were comynge to Londonwarde. Anone as theſe tydynges were knowen the treatyſe was bꝛoke / foꝛ ẏ kyng / quene / pꝛynce ⁊ all ẏ other loꝛdes ẏ were wͭ them departed fro ſeynt Albons noꝛthwarde with al theyꝛ people / yet oꝛ they departed thens they behedded ẏ loꝛde Bonuyll ⁊ ſyꝛ Thomas Kyryell whiche were take in ẏ Journey done on Shꝛouetewſdaye. ¶ Than ẏ ducheſſe of yoꝛke beynge at London / heryng of ẏ loſſe of ẏ felde of ſeynt Albons ſende ouer ſee her .ii. yonge ſones George ⁊ Rycharde / whiche wente to Utryght / ⁊ Philip Malpas a ryche marchaūt of London. Thomas Uaghan ſquyer / mayſter William Hatclyf ⁊ many ⁊ other / ferynge of ẏ comynge of ẏ quene to London / toke a ſhyppe of Andwarpe to haue gone into Zelande / and on ẏ other coſt were taken of one Colōpne a Frenſſhe man a ſhyppe of warre / and he toke them pꝛyſoners / and bꝛought them into Fraunce / where they payed great good foꝛ theyꝛ rauſō / ⁊ there was great good ⁊ rycheſſe in ẏ ſhyppe.

¶ Of the deſpoſynge of kynge Henry the .vi. And how kynge Edwarde the fourth toke poſſeſſyon / ⁊ of the batayll on Palm ſondaye / and how he was crowned.

THan whan ẏ erle of Marche ⁊ the erle of Warwycke had met togyder on Cotteſwold / incontynent they concluded to go to London / ⁊ ſend woꝛde anone to the Mayꝛe and to the cyte that they wolde come / ⁊ anone the cyte was gladde of theyꝛ comynge / hopynge to be releued by them / ⁊ ſo they came to London. And whan they were come ⁊ had ſpoken with the loꝛdes ⁊ eſtates beynge there / concluded foꝛ aſmoche as kynge Henry was gone with them noꝛthward / that he had foꝛfeyted his crowne ⁊ ought to be depoſed accoꝛdynge vnto the actes made ⁊ paſſed in the laſt parlyament. And ſo by the aduyſe of the loꝛdes ſpyꝛytuall ⁊ tempoꝛall than beynge at London / the erle of Marche Edwarde by the grace of god eldeſt ſone of ẏ duke Rycharde of yoꝛke / as ryghtfull heyꝛe / and nexte enherytour to his fader / the fourth daye of Marche / the yere of our loꝛde god .M.CCCC.lx. toke poſſeſſyon of the realme at Weſtmynſter in ẏ churche of the abbay / and offred as kyng with the ceptre royall. To whome all the loꝛdes ſpyꝛytuall and tempoꝛall dyd homage / as to theyꝛ ſoueraygne loꝛd ⁊ kynge. And foꝛthwith it was pꝛoclaymed thꝛough the Cytee kynge Edwarde the fourth by name. And anone after the kynge rode in his ryall eſtate noꝛthwarde with all his loꝛdes to ſubdue his ſubgectes that tyme beynge in the noꝛth / and foꝛ to auenge his faders deth. And on Palmſondaye after he had a great batayl in the north coūtre at a place called Towton / not ferre from Yorke / where with the helpe of god he gate the felde ⁊ had the victory / where were ſlayne of his aduerſaryes .xxx. thouſand men ⁊ moo / as it was ſayd by them that were there. In whiche batayll was ſlayne the erle of Northumberlande / the lorde Clyfforde / ſyr Iohn̄ Neuyll the erle of weſtmerlādes broder / Andrewe Trollop and many knyghtes and ſquyers. Than kynge Henry that had ben kynge / beynge with yͤ quene and the prynce at Yorke herynge the loſſe of that felde and ſomoche people ſlayne ⁊ ouerthrowē / anone forthwith departed all thre with yͤ duke of Somerſet / the lorde Roos / ⁊ other towarde Scotlande. And yͤ nexte daye after kyng Edwarde with all his armye entred into Yorke / ⁊ was there proclaymed kȳge and obeyed as he ought to be. And the mayre and comyns ſwore to be his lyege men / ⁊ whan they had taryed a whyle in yͤ north and that all the north coūtre had tourned to hym he retourned ſouthwarde / leuynge behynde him the erle of warwyke in the partyes to gouerne and rule that coūtre. And aboute Mydſomer after / the yere of our lorde .M.cccc.lx. and the fyrſte yere of his reygne he was crowned at weſtmynſter / ⁊ anoynted kynge of Englande / hauynge poſſeſſyon of all the realme.

Calixtus the thyrd was pope after Nicholas thre yere ⁊ .v. monethes This Calixte was an olde man whan he was choſen pope / ⁊ was contynually ſeke ſo he myght not fulfyl his deſyre whiche he entended to do agaynſt yͤ Turkes / for deth came vpon hym. And he was choſen in the yere of our lorde .M.cccc.lv. and he dyed the .vi. daye in the whiche he made the fyguracyon / ⁊ alſo he canoniſed ſeynt Vyncent a frere precher / and there was a great reformacyon of many monaſteryes in dyuerſe partyes of the worlde / ⁊ theſe reformacyons were made many tymes / but almooſt none abode / but they retourned agayne as they were afore by ſucceſſyon of tyme after the deth of the worſhipful faders. The feeſt of the Tranſfyguracyon was ordayned of Calixte / for yͤ gyfte of grace of the meruaylous vyctory done agaynſt the Turke in Hungary on ſeynt Sixtus daye. M.cccc.lvii. For there was a meruaylous vyctory gyuen to cryſten men in Hungary agaynſt yͤ great Turke and there he loſt many a man and fledde ſhamefully for drede of his enemyes / and no man folowed hym / but alone yͤ hande of god fered the Turke and his hooſt on ſeynt Calixtes daye. Seynt Iohn̄ de Capiſtrano was there ſene preſent / ⁊ he prouoked the people that were aferde to folowe the myſbyleuynge Turkes / ⁊ there fell a greate vengeaunce on them / for the Turkes ſayd yͤ there was ſo great a nombre of knyghtes that folowed them that vnneth they durſte loke backwarde / and therfore they fledde and lefte all theyr treſour behynde them / ⁊ they were angelles that cauſed them to flee. Nota.

Pryntters of bokes were myghtely multyplyed ī Magūce / ⁊ throughout yͤ worlde / ⁊ there began fyrſt / ⁊ there helde theyr craftes / and this tyme many men began to be more ſubtyl in craftes ⁊ ſwyfter than euer they were afore.

Pius yͤ ſeconde was pope after Calixte .vi. yere. This pius was choſen in the yere of oure lorde .M.cccc.lviii. ⁊ he was called Eneas an eloquent man ⁊ a great oratour ⁊ laureate poete / ⁊ in the counſeyll of Baſyle he wrote a noble treatyſe for the auctoryte of yͤ ſame. This man deſyred to haue a paſſage to the Turke ⁊ moche people of dyuerſe countrees came to Rome / and he gaue them his bleſſyge and ſend them home agayne / for they were not ſuffycyent for the Turkes hooſt / ⁊ anone after he deceaſed.

Paulus a venicyan was pope after Pius .vii. yere / this Paulus was choſen in yͤ yere of our lorde .M.CCCC. lxviii. And anone he halowed the feeſt of the preſentacion of our lady as Pius did This man was a tough man i ryghtwiſneſſe / and he ſayde it was better to make fewe thynges ⁊ kepe them ſtedfaſtly thā for to make many / ⁊ ſoone reuoke them. And he made a great palays at ſeynt markes / and he deceaſed or he has ended it in the yere of our lorde. M.cccc.lxxi. ¶ Leodiſt / the lãde of Like was oppreſſed with many trybulacyōs / and after in the yere of our lorde. M.cccc.lxviii. vtterli it was deſtroyed by Karolum the duke of Burgoyne / the whiche wedded dame Margarete ſyſter to kynge Edwarde the fourth of Englande. Alſo the ſame Karolum entred in yͤ lande of Gelder / and conquered it all. The yere of grace alſo was chaunged by pope Paule for fauour of mannes ſoule from .xxv. yere to .xxv. yere. And bycauſe that curſedneſſe abounded ſo ſore / grace abounded alſo ſore.

Sixtus the fourth a Ieneuoys ⁊ a frere mynor was pope after paule This man was generall in the ordre of yͤ frere mynors ⁊ he was Cardynall. And he was choſen in the yere of our lorde. M cccc.lxxi. And was called Frauncilcus de Sauona / of good fame and vertuous / he was choſē Cardynall without his knowlege tyll he was made / and the ſame yere that he was choſen pope / the Turke had taken from cryſten men two Empyres ⁊ foure kyngdomes .xx. prouynces / ⁊ two hondred cytees / and had deſtroyed men ⁊ womē without nombre / and that meued the pope that he ſhold dyſpoſe hym to go to withſtande hym. And for an armye to be made agaynſt the Turke the pope gaue great indulgences of pardon of the treſory of the chirche vnto al cryſtē realmes that he myght ordayne ſome treſoure to withſtande that miſbyleued Turke. And in the realme of England Johñ abbot of Abyngdon was the popes Legate to dyſpoſe this goodly treſoure of yͤ chyrche to euery faythful man that was dyſpoſed ⁊ that wolde able hym to receyue it.

¶ Here endeth this preſente Cronycle of Englande with the fruyte of tymes / compyled in a boke / ⁊ alſo Imprynted by one ſumtyme ſcole mayſter of ſeynt Albons / vpon whoſe ſoule god haue mercy. Amen ¶ And newly Imprynted i Fleteſtrete at the ſygne of the ſonne / by me Wynkyn de Worde. In the yere of oure lorde god. M. CCCCC. and .xx.